



LONG LIVE SUMMONS

BOOK 02

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Long Live Summons

(召唤万岁)

by

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

(霞飞双颊)

Synopsis

The Soaring Dragon Continent is a world of summons, you can only become strong if you become a summoner! Yue Yang, an average high school boy, was suddenly transported into this world. When he woke up, he was greeted with a lot of worried faces and found out that he had assumed another person's identity. Turns out he's the good-for-nothing third son of the Yue Family, who had just recently drowned himself because of a failed engagement. Unlike the third son of the Yue Family who was useless in summoning, Yue Yang succeeded in making a contract with a summoning grimoire on his first try, even when the other guy failed for the past fifteen years. Others would have a headache making contracts with beasts afterwards, but countless beasts tried to gain favour with Yue Yang instead, acting like a good kid before him.

Yue Yang the brat, however, didn't feel grateful at all: "Scram, Mythical Beasts! Do you think you are cool like that? Go away from me now, I only like beautiful summons!"

Even when royal families approached him for his talents, the shameless brat replied, "I'm not interested in government stuff, I'm only interested in beauties!"

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Janet, May, Sheng, Andy, Shiro, Augere, Yunichan, Taffy, youcanbeKing, Sephilia, Zaza, Shiroyukineko, Ignis @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

Translation Edits by Khh, Rango, Krithika, Based Jessica @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101 – Yue Yang Storming Out

“Fight!” Behind the Torture Chamber Elder, there were 2 red-robed officers. They were the Torture Chamber Executors that enforced the Clan’s Laws, the cream of the crop amongst the elites.

Once they saw that this trash Third Young Master had completely rebelled and had disregarded the Clan’s rules, they quickly ordered the elite guards into formation. The other party had a Level 5 Bronze-ranked Two-headed Demonic Wolf, which was extremely fast and had terrifying attack power, therefore fighting it alone was definitely courting death. Although there were many Puppet Beasts, they had no sentience. So long as the opponent lured them, they would immediately be thrown into disarray and be unable to fulfill their main purpose. They would only be able to impede the enemy at most.

The Torture Chamber Elder was so angry that he almost suffered from internal injuries and passed out. He was completely unable to give any orders for the time being.

The two red-robed officers took charge and ordered the elite troops to form a container-like formation, deciding to capture this trash Third Young Master before doing anything else.

Of course, Hui Tai Lang would not go head-to-head with a dozen or so Puppet Beasts. Earlier in the Aries Temple, it had already experienced what being a meat lure for the enemy meant. Luring these Puppet Beasts was now a simple task for it. Let alone a flat and spacious area like this, even at the Demon’s Blood Pond, with that kind of vicious terrain, Hui Tai Lang was still able to escape

unscathed while it was being chased by a whole family of Hydras. Moreover, it was not just once that Yue Yang made him go back into the marsh to lure the Hydras. Luring enemies, in Hui Tai Lang's opinion, was a task that was easier for it to do than for an old cat to catch a young rat!

It nimbly jumped around the clumsy Puppet Beasts, occasionally lifting its leg up to pee on the Puppet Beasts' legs.

If the Puppet Beasts had intelligence, they would have already been driven mad.

A wise man of the Soaring Dragon Continent once said: "Like Master, Like Beast." It was probably most accurate when used to describe Yue Yang and Hui Tai Lang!

Soon enough, all the Puppet Beasts were lured into confusion by Hui Tai Lang.

All those Puppet Beasts of different sizes had crowded around each other. They followed Hui Tai Lang and wandered far away with clumsiness that was beyond comparison.

The Elite Guards realised that this Two-headed Demonic Wolf was even craftier than a human, making them speechless with worry and shock. They hurriedly summoned strengthening-type beasts in order to supplement their battle strength. At the same time, they shouted and beat the backends of their spears against the ground, like an army, encouraging one another and boosting morale. They were the elites of the elite. Having gone through

training as tough as that of an army's elite unit, they were very different from normal guards. Each of them had strength that equalled a normal guard captain's. In battle skills, each of them had learned the Yue Clan's Spear Technique. Although it was only four moves, it was still many times stronger than the normal guards' Breaking Iron Blade Technique and Crushing Stone Hammer Technique.

“Clan's Law! Clan's Law! Clan's Law!”

The elite guards gave a loud rallying cry, their voices were getting louder and louder, and finally, they ended the cry with a vigorous explosion of sound which resounded into a deafening roar.

The red-clothed officer saw that it was a good opportunity and pointed at Yue Yang with his crimson spear: “Capture all of them and bring them to Torture Chamber to stand trial!”

Yue Bing was worried that her elder brother would be heavily outnumbered, and got off the carriage: “Elder brother, I'll help you!”. She wanted to summon her Grimoire, but was stopped by Yue Yang: “Seventh Sister, the fun part has yet to begin! You are elder brother's secret weapon, right now, you still do not need to take part. Stay in the carriage and look after Fourth Mother and Shuang-er!”

He felt that if they exposed their overpowering strength too early, they wouldn't be able to fight later battles as easily, thus, he did not summon the Barbaric Cow Shadow. He also did not summon the Gold King Beast Bloody Queen, for now there was still

no need to use them! He didn't even use the Hui Jin Magic Blade or the Crescent Blade. He only pulled out a bundle of solid wooden rods from the carriage roof that he had made by chopping a tree and shaping it. They had merely displayed a few battle skills; who didn't know how to do that! Although Yue Yang mainly cultivated the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, when it came to comprehending the simple and crude Yue Clan's Spear Technique, he was still much better than those of the Yue Clan who had immersed themselves in practicing it for decades .

Most importantly, Yue Yang was an expert in pretense. He was also selfish, keeping the most formidable part of Yue Clan Spear Technique to himself, unwilling to reveal it because he was afraid that others would secretly try to learn it by watching. He only used pounding, piercing, sweeping, thrusting, hacking, deflecting, jabbing, and spinning techniques that were similar to Rod Techniques.

That's why, he had prepared a bunch of rods, wielding one with each hand. He also had a few more rods on his back, which he could use to replace broken ones and beat these dogs anytime.

This way, he could beat others up peacefully and would not need to be worried about getting his spear technique stolen.

“Having a loud voice does not mean that you are right, but having a bigger fist does!” Yue Yang could summon his beasts to beat these people up. However, he didn't do it as he thought that beating people up personally would be more enjoyable. He had never liked to reason; he only liked the notion of returning violence with violence. If he had to reason, wouldn't he be able to

do it more efficiently by doing it while trampling on a person's back?

“Charge!” The two red-robed officers waved their hands and the elite troops behind them formed a spearhead formation as they brandished their spears, roaring loudly as they charged towards Yue Yang.

If this move was used on the battlefield against normal soldiers, it might be able to forcefully bore a hole through the enemies. However, these elite soldiers were facing a crazily strong and despicable opponent like Yue Yang, practically making their assault a big mistake.

Yue Yang loudly exhaled and gathered strength in his arms, before throwing out his rod like a pike.

The rod made a fierce, whistling sound as it flew into the abdomen of one of the captains, who was at the forefront of the battle formation.

If not for this fellow having a strengthening-type beast that protected his body like an Iron Armour, the rod would probably have pierced through him immediately. The Iron Armor broke upon the impact and the rod pierced through his abdomen like a spear, almost pass through his back. The elite-troop squad leader immediately threw up fresh blood upon receiving the injury.

He moaned painfully as he tumbled backwards.

The strongest part of their spear formation was broken by Yue Yang with just one move.

The troops on the two sides couldn't react in time and continued to charge forward with all their might. The people in the middle were hindered by the fallen squad leader and were not able to keep their formation. As a result, their formation became entangled. If they were normal soldiers, they would probably have collapsed. In the midst of this disorder, Yue Yang appeared like a Death God. His body rose up high into the air as he raised his rods to the sky. In the next moment, the rods that held a power of three hundred thousand kilos smashed down into the ground.

There were at least 5 to 6 elites that couldn't react in time and were smashed by Yue Yang's rod. They fell and didn't get up again.

Yue Yang, who managed to break into the middle of the battle formation, used the two rods in his hands and swung them all over the place. He didn't even need any kind of Rod Techniques now, there would be people wherever he swung anyway.

When one of his rods broke, he took another rod from his back.

“Look at my [Dog-Beating Staff Technique](#), it's a technique created especially for beating dogs!” Yue Yang thought that this was the most enjoyable beating he had ever given in his lifetime. These guards were all elites, hence most of them had a tall and sturdy physique. They had strengthening-type beasts to protect their bodies too. They were not like those kinds of people that were made of tofu, so the feeling Yue Yang would get from his hands while beating them up was extremely invigorating.

(Shiro: Reference to the Dog Beating Staff Technique, a martial art skill from Jin Yong Wuxia novels.)

Yue Yang continued to violently beat everyone up, to the point that in the end, all his rods ended up breaking. He waved his fists and gave up on the Dog Beating Staff Technique that he had plagiarized, plagiarizing a certain [Fist of the North Star Technique](#) instead, hitting everyone in his path. In just a moment, everything seemed to scatter about. With almost every blow, there would be teeth broken and blood strewn all over like rain. The two red-robed officers watched from the back with dumbstruck expressions. It was not until now that they finally realized that the useless Third Young Master, although he couldn't contract beasts, was actually a crazily strong guy in martial arts.

“Oh my god, this brat is just like his father, he is an idiot who focuses on training his physical skills!” The two red-robed officers almost fainted; they had never thought that this trash, that everyone bullied, actually had such fearful strength.

“Fortunately he couldn't contract with beasts, otherwise...”

“Why are you guys still frozen? Take the little girl and A Xian down, and this brat would definitely listen to orders like a good boy then! What use would using violence do? Do you want all your beasts to die?” The Torture Chamber Elder could finally think clearly. Seeing the whole situation in chaos, he was so angry that his beard started to tremble. He ordered his two subordinates to take down the beautiful woman and the little girl immediately, utterly discomfited.

“But Lady Xian and Ninth Young Mistress can’t fight with martial art skills at all... If we were to accidentally slip...” The two red-robed officers found the Elder’s orders a little difficult to execute.

They were only the descendants of the extended family. It was fine if they had only bullied the Third Young Master, since he was useless and unsuccessful. Furthermore, the Third young Master’s and Miss Xue’s engagement made a lot of people jealous. There were many people who liked to bully him in secret, and usually this bullying did not leave any gossips or rumours behind.

Lady Xian was the Fourth Lady. If they endangered her, even if Fourth Master did not pursue the matter, it was hard to say if the Fourth Master would not use this matter to threaten them in the future. Ninth Young Mistress was still a kid, and no one could predict what kind of future she would have. What if she succeeded in contracting a grimoire and was fancied by one of the Four Great Sects or the Royal Households? If that really happened, they would be really unlucky. In the Yue Clan, it was taboo to attack women and small children. If they received orders to arrest Third Young Master, they would grit their teeth and do it even if it was difficult. But if they attacked women and children, when the Clan Master knew about it, he would probably explode with anger. He would definitely order them to be killed immediately without a second word. If that time came, how many lives did they have to spare?

At that time, who would protect them?

Seeing that they didn’t listen to his orders, the Torture Chamber Elder was extremely furious. He immediately glared at the two red-

robed officers, “If problems arise, I’ll take responsibility for them. Execute my orders immediately, otherwise I’ll dispose of you guys!”

The two red-robed officers immediately charged towards the horse carriage. Of course, they still didn’t dare to attack the beautiful woman inside the horse carriage. They simply killed the two horses outside.

The bald Torture Chamber Elder was furious. He personally summoned a powerful Iron-clawed Bear in order to supplement his strength.

In the next moment, he immediately charged towards the horse carriage.

He had actually wanted to take down Yue Yang personally, but seeing that Yue Yang’s martial arts skills was beyond frightening and extremely quick, he was afraid that he would be cooked alive with one slip up if he was not careful enough. If he really received this brat’s attack, even if he wasn’t injured, it would hurt his reputation. He would be humiliated in front of his subordinates and it would probably be difficult to convince the others in the future. Hence, the Torture Chamber Elder decided to take down the women and children first. As for the this trash Third Young Master, it wouldn’t be too late for him to bind with a rope, make him kneel in front of him and torture him later on!

“You’re asking for death!” Yue Yang was furious, even though this was also his ploy. All it takes was for the Torture Chamber Elder to attack the beautiful lady. Playing on this point, no matter

if it's skills or justification, he would be able to beat down the vile people of the Yue Family completely.

However, when he saw the Torture Chamber Elder trying to attack sneakily, he could not suppress the exploding anger in his heart.

Moving as fast as lightning, he pounced towards the Torture Chamber Elder.

The Torture Chamber Elder had also constantly taken note of Yue Yang's actions and was secretly vigilant. Upon discovering that Yue Yang abandoned the elite guards and rushed over, he laughed coldly.

He forcefully threw the pike in his hand towards the carriage, then unleash his beast's strongest power and returned to face Yue Yang.

Regardless whether the thrown pike had killed the beautiful lady and the girl, when the time came, the blame could be pushed to the two elite underlings. As for the trash Third Young Master, how would he be able to endure the provocation of having to watch his mother and sister die? If his will and mental concentration wavered, would he still be a worthwhile opponent? By relying on the bear's humongous strength, together with the strengthened claws, would trash that is unable to contract with any beast or summon a Guardian Beast be able to go against me? (this is the elder's perspective i suppose)

The bald Torture Chamber Elder's eyes flashed with a cold light. Raising his enlarged right bear claw, he heavily struck down on Yue Yang, who had pounced towards him.

Die together with your mother and sister!

He smiled coldly inside: "Trash does not have the right to live in this world."

It's just that, what he didn't see that just an inch before his long spear penetrated the tyres, it was completely covered with ice. Half a second later, it was smashed into smithereens. This was Xiao Wen Li's signature move. Yue Yang was not an idiot. He wouldn't make Yue Bing, who had no guarding experience, be the only one to protect the beautiful woman and little girl, who could not practice any kind of martial arts. He had left Xiao Wen Li inside since the beginning and ordered her to protect the horse carriage. Otherwise, he wouldn't stage this trap to entice the Torture Chamber Elder to attack. Yue Yang was even more assured with Xiao Wen Li's protecting abilities than his own.

Although there wouldn't be a problem, the Torture Chamber Elder's vile actions thoroughly infuriated the guy from another world.

A man should fight with his life and his own power to determine win or loss; having no complaints even if he were beaten to death!

However, attacking weak women who did not have any battle power and were unarmed, even using a spear to attack them

viciously and attempting to kill them, was he still even a human?

“Arrrrrggggghhhhhhh!” Yue Yang was completely enraged. Did he want to kill the women he protected? That was equivalent to seeking death! Pay with your life! Let alone becoming enemies with the Yue Clan, even if he would make enemies with all the strong rankers in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent, he must kill this fellow.

He was simply not fit to be a human!

Chapter 102 – I'm Taking Back Our Pride

Every beast has its weakness.

The biggest difference amongst fighting beasts, was that the weaknesses of powerful beasts could not be found, while it could be easily discerned for inferior beasts.

Strengthening-type beasts did not seem to have any weaknesses on the surface; neither did they have any attack usage limits like elemental-type beasts, nor were they unable to protect their owners while attacking like fighting-type beasts. As for special-types, most of them belonged to the living category, deemed by many to be the worst of the worst and were even less worthy of comparison. Strengthening-type beasts appeared to be the most superior, as they could merge with their owners and augment their strength...but everyone in the Soaring Dragon Continent knew that strengthening category beasts definitely had a fatal weakness. As long as this fatal weakness was attacked, no matter if it was the beast or the owner, they would definitely suffer severe damage.

When fighting against enemies that possessed strengthening-type beasts, the only thing to be done was to discover its weakness and ruthlessly attack it.

This was exactly what Yue Yang was doing!

Yue Yang initially had little understanding about strengthening-type beasts, but while at the sky pavilion, the knowledgeable Master of Luo Hua City had been keen on imparting some

knowledge regarding beasts to the foolish thief who did not know even the basics....

Amongst all the knowledge she had shared, the weakness of an Iron-clawed Bear had also been mentioned!

After invoking support from the Iron-clawed Bear, the owner would have skin as tough as the Iron-clawed Bear's hide, bones as solid as iron, claw-like fingernails, would be impervious to weapons, and would also possess extraordinary strength.

However, it had an obvious weakness, which was the white, crescent-shaped mark on its chest. If this mark was to be attacked, both the owner and the beast would sustain injuries that were several times greater than normal.

“Hong!”, The Torture Chamber Elder's huge bear claws swiped at thin air and heavily smashed down onto the ground.

The stone slabs on the road immediately cracked extensively and crumbled. Deep cavities and spider web-shaped cracks appeared on the once level road.

“Die!” The earlier strike had only hit an afterimage of Yue Yang. Yue Yang who had already went berserk had a movement speed that far surpassed what the Torture Chamber Elder's eyes could perceive. He did a midair spiral flip, borrowing the spiralling force to drive a chunk of broken spear heads deep into the chest of the transformed Torture Chamber Elder. While the Torture Chamber Elder miserably howled at the pain of having his weakness heavily

attacked, Yue Yang's fists followed; throwing left hooks, right hooks, uppercuts, and jabs, relentlessly attacking and sweeping with elbows in all directions. Yue Yang then leapt up like a panther, and tightly pressed the Torture Chamber Elder's bald head with his hands while madly kneeing the Torture Chamber Elder's face, which was gradually reverting back from its transformation. Every single one of the Torture Chamber Elder's teeth were shattered and sent flying out of his mouth.

Blood splattered out from the Torture Chamber Elder's face, causing him to look abnormally horrendous.

The Torture Chamber Elder felt so much pain that he wanted to die and discovered that his weakness had been broken through, while his beast was nearing death. He immediately panicked, wanting to flee in retreat and not bother about anything else.

But in his disoriented state, he started moving towards the beautiful woman inside the horse carriage... The two-red robed officers watched with a dumbstruck expression and could only feel powerless towards their superior. It was fine if he didn't beg for forgiveness or ran away while at death's door, but he instead wanted to kill the Fourth Mother who Yue Yang wanted to protect the most?

Did he want to drag someone down with him in his death?

Even if he was violent and vengeful, he couldn't be so contemptible as to do this, right?

If he really did this, he was practically forcing his opponent to kill him... Since he could not defeat him head-on, he actually decided to hold his opponent's mother and sister hostage. Wasn't this simply going overboard?

In reality, in their opinion, if the Torture Chamber Elder had not forced the situation so stubbornly, this useless Third Young Master would probably not have gone on a rampage. Even if he did, he would probably not become as enraged as he was now, and would probably not be so adamant on killing the Torture Chamber Elder! The situation right now was very clear. The Third Young Master had actually been training his martial art skills diligently all along. He had been training in secret and had always stayed low-key without letting anyone from the Clan know of this secret. After he contracted a grimoire, he had probably wanted to return to the Clan to wash away his reputation of being a useless person, but he just had to meet with this kind of situation. Hence, it was difficult for him even if he hadn't wanted to go on a rampage!

This was simply leaving someone with no choice!

(Ignis: The original saying is to force the tiger back up the mountain. The author probably meant that it is forcing a situation where there is no other way but to return back.)

“Ha, ha, ha, ha!” In order to survive, the Torture Chamber Elder slashed his claws at random in every direction without taking note of his surroundings and ran straight forward.

“Stubborn chap, I will rip you to pieces!” When Yue Yang saw that the elder wanted to drag the beautiful woman along with him

to death, his anger rose to the point that it could burn away half the sky. He chased after him with lightning speed, deeply digging his five fingers into the Torture Chamber Elder's back. Yue Yang had wanted to dig out his heart and instantly kill him, but the Torture Chamber Elder, not wanting to die, fled from Yue Yang with all his might. That had actually allowed him to escape from Yue Yang's attack, while he rushed to the side of the horse carriage.

Yue Yang was so angry that his face was distorted like a demon.

He rapidly shot over, wrapping both of his legs around the right leg of the Torture Chamber Elder and did a handstand, driving the Torture Chamber Elder's body into the air.

Yue Yang then jackknifed his body forward and flung the Torture Chamber Elder's body into the air. The Torture Chamber Elder flew in a high arc... even before he hit the ground, the thoroughly angered Yue Yang had drew the Crescent Blade from the carriage and pounced forward.

“Vicious, violent, wanting to pull someone along with you in your death, wanting to have someone accompany you in your coffin!” Yue Yang yelled, punctuating each phrase by repeatedly slashing the Torture Chamber Elder with his Crescent Blade, causing flesh and bones to splatter. As soon as the Torture Chamber Elder fell to the ground, the furious Yue Yang hacked away his four limbs and madly landed tens of slashes on the seemingly disappearing bear transformed body. The Torture Chamber Elder looked like a dead pig under a butcher's chopper, with his body parts scattered all over the place. When the blood

soaked Yue Yang lifted his Crescent Blade one last time, preparing to behead the Elder, there was a sudden shout from someone in the distance: “STOPPPP!”

“Stop...there is still hope if you stop now!”

A rosy-faced old man with white hair was quickly riding toward them on a huge deer. He had not yet arrived, but his voice had already reached Yue Yang.

Seeing this person, Yue Bing’s face turned into joy and her expression turned emotional, “Fifth Grandfather, you have to uphold justice for us! We are not wrong, they were the one who forced Brother to fight, they bullied us first...”

The deer-riding old man arrived and saw that the whole area had turned into a slaughterhouse. The strong stench of blood filled the air as countless casualties laid on the ground, moaning and crying. He was speechless and could only stare dumbstruck for a moment.

Even though he was someone with an abundance of life experiences, he could not help but jump in fright.

How had things become such a mess?

It looks like the Fourth Household had landed themselves in a huge predicament!

“San-er, no matter whose fault this matter was, you should put

down your weapon first. If you kill the Torture Chamber Elder now, no matter how right you were in the beginning, and no matter how many grievances you had suffered since the beginning, you would only be in the wrong at the end! Listen to your Fifth Grandfather's advice, put down your weapon before this matter takes a permanent turn for the worse! Elder Brother Hai (Clan Master) is not around and the three Grand Elders are in isolation. A-Shan (Yue Shan – First Master) is the acting Clan Leader right now, you wouldn't be able to go against him with brute force! Listen to your Fifth Grandfather, put down your weapons and wait for me here while I call Elder Brother Hai back...If you feel that you are right and are not afraid of arguing with the others, Fifth Grandfather will support you guys. However, you must not kill the Torture Chamber Elder. He might just be another pawn. You are a smart kid. I think that you should understand what I just said!" The deer-riding elder immediately advised Yue Yang.

(Ignis: Yue Yang is addressed as San-er as he is the Third Young Master. It is a more affectionate way of addressing the younger generations)

"I was once an orphan, as well as trash, bullied by everybody. I had no support and in order to survive, I had to grit my teeth and endure. However, after Fourth Mother took me in, I once again had a mother and a warm little family! Since then, I was determined that if anyone was to harm my home, or my mother, even if he was the Emperor, I will definitely kill him!" Yue Yang's gaze was ice cold, and continued: "Today, let me, this trashy Third Young Master, tell the world using blood. It's fine to bully me, so long as your fist is bigger than mine, and you have sufficient reason to do so! But, whoever thinks of harming my family members, I will kill without regard!"

Yue Yang lifted his blood coated Crescent Blade, and with a determined gaze, slashed it downwards.

Fresh blood surged from neck of the Torture Chamber Elder, who had been on the brink of death. The deformed Torture Chamber Elder's head rolled a few metres away on the ground.

As the Deer-riding old man saw this, he bitterly shut his eyes in grief and shook his head, sighing deeply: "San Er, I know that you feel indignant, but is this really worth the trouble? With this one slash of yours, the situation has become difficult to salvage!"

The demon-like Yue Yang who was soaked with blood from head to toe started laughing maniacally, "As a dignified man, would I still be called a man if I couldn't even protect my own family? Don't even mention this Torture Chamber Elder who absolutely deserved his death and is unable to pay for his crimes by dying. Even if it a more powerful person, or the strongest Ranker, I would still have killed him without mercy! Whoever wishes to touch a strand of hair on my family would need to step over my dead body first!"

On hearing what her son said, the beautiful woman was instantly moved and began to cry loudly.

Even the usually obstinate little lady, Yue Bing, hid her face and cried. Tears fell like pearl beads from a broken string, through her fingers.

As the deer-riding elder heard what Yue Yang said, he nodded his

head and sighed. It seemed that he felt very vexed. Finally, he steadied his nerves, and advised: “San-er, since you have decided, Fifth Grandfather will not say much. I hope that you will remain here and wait for Elder Brother Hai to return and take charge of the situation. San Er, your temper is like your father’s, but being too aggressive is not good. Back then if he had not... You should all just wait here, and not respond to anyone’s provocation or fall into others’ traps. I will immediately go and find Elder Brother Hai!”

“Thanks. However, what I, this useless Xiao San, wants to do right now is not to await death but to use my strength to tell the Clan to not treat our tolerance as our weakness! Today, the Fourth Branch will not tolerate your tyranny anymore. I want to bring Fourth Mother, Bing-er, and Shuang-er to the Yue Clan Castle! It does not matter if the Yue Clan welcomes us or not, we will still return home and take back the pride that belongs to us... I have said it earlier, regardless of whom it may be, I will treat those that blocked our path as enemies and kill them. Let’s see who has the guts to stop me from bringing Fourth Mother home!” Yue Yang bellowed loudly. The Yue Clan Guards that were watching from a surrounding distance were so frightened that they began to flee in all directions.

“If you are like this, how could you go to the Yue Clan Castle? San-er, did you know that some of the Clan’s members actually desire for you to do so!” The deer-riding elder painstakingly continued to advise Yue Yang.

“It does not matter if it’s against a mountain of daggers or a sea of flames, I will still charge! My Fourth Mother was very kind and forbearing, but I, as her son, will not simply stand by while watching her getting bullied by others! It is only because Fourth

Mother was there in the past that I am able to stand here today. Hence, today, I will be here for Fourth Mother!“ Yue Yang held a blade in one hand, while he pulled the ropes off the corpses of the dead horses with another.

(Ignis: to climb a mountain of daggers or go through a sea of flame is a chinese saying that means to go against all odds)

He slung the blood-dyed ropes over his shoulders and pulled the horse carriage, trudging forward slowly .

Dignity cannot be bestowed upon you by another person.

It had to be fought for, using one’s own hands and power...

Under the complicated gaze of the deer-riding old man, and the supervision of the red-clothed executioners, the blood-soaked Yue Yang pulled the carriage and slowly walked past the Yue Clan Village, towards the Yue Clan Castle.

Wherever he passed by, all the Yue family guards and kinsmen would disperse quickly in fear!

Yue Yang looked up at the majestic Yue Clan Castle, located halfway up the mountain in the distance. He then looked at the sky, and a burst of passion coursed through his veins, ‘Pitiful guy, are you watching this? I really hope you can see this. Here, I will stand on your behalf and take back the pride that you lost!’

Chapter 103 – Breaking New Realm In The Battle

Yue Bing was unyielding; she wiped her tears away, got down from the carriage and helped Yue Yang pull the carriage. Yue Yang was afraid that there would be people mounting a sneak attack on them, so he advised her to go back into the carriage. But Yue Bing shook her head instead, walked to the back of the carriage and pushed it with all of her might. Silently and determinedly, she tried to show her cherished desire to walk together with her brother and share his burden. Yue Yang knew that she had an unyielding personality, so he didn't say anything much any more, letting her do as she pleased. The beautiful woman wiped away her tears and hugged the small girl tightly, sitting inside the carriage quietly.

She knew that she couldn't go down from the carriage, or she might trouble her son and daughter. Hence, no matter how panicked and frightened she was, she could only bite her lips and sit inside the carriage, letting her children pull and push her up to the Yue Clan's Castle.

Although they would return to Yue Clan Castle once a year, this year's was the proudest and greatest moment of her life.

With a son and daughter like this, she felt that she was the happiest mother in the world!

The happiest person currently was actually Yue Shuang, the small girl, who was perfectly sleeping soundly in her mother's embrace.

She was still too young to understand; Yue Yang was afraid that she will be too frightened if she saw such violence, so he had earlier bought a “Fragrant Sleeping Flower” from Green Bamboo city, and induced her into deep sleep. This idea had to be credited to the Master of Luo Hua City. She was extremely knowledgeable about botany and had casually mentioned to Yue Yang about the effects of the “Fragrant Sleeping Flower” during their journey to the pavilion in the Sky Island.

Along the way, there were people who frequently spied on them, while others stalked them from a distance.

Yue Yang was unconcerned about the appearance of these people.

Contrarily, Hui Tai Lang repeatedly bared his fangs and snarled deeply, seemingly to warn others that he would kill whoever came too close.

They had travelled ten miles over the meandering mountain road.

The road had been relatively levelled and had resting points at certain intervals. Even so, it would be unbearable for ordinary warriors to pull a carriage up the mountain! Yue Bing was so tired that she was panting and sweating profusely. She did not train her physical skills often, and coupled with the fact that she did not contract any strengthening-type beasts, her physique was no better than an ordinary warrior. She was, however, extremely resolute, and determinedly pushed the carriage despite being exhausted.

Even if it was just a little bit, she hoped that she would be able to be of help to her brother!

Yue Yang was hardly weary from pulling the carriage. After countless months of diligent training and the enhanced physique from practicing the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, it was as if he had the fearsome strength of the Barbaric Cow Shadow. Yue Yang also used his extremely powerful perception and Divine Vision to scour for information on nearby enemies.

The geniuses from the same generation, the First Young Master Yue Tian and Fourth Young Master Yue Yan might have appeared and passed by, but Yue Yang wouldn't be able to recognize them.

However, he felt that amongst the people who had been spying on them earlier, one of them must have been present.

Yue Yang saw a figure that was riding atop a Flaming Lion, who seemed to be imitating Yan Po Jun a little, but was neither as imposing nor as elegant. Yue Yang guessed that the person might have been Yue Yan, but he recalled that Yue Bing mentioned that Yue Tian also had a Flaming Lion beast, so he was a little unsure. Back then when the Yue Clan lavishly purchased the two Flaming Lion beast eggs, the pitiful guy had unsuccessfully tried to contract with one. Yue Yan, who was a few days younger than him, had instead managed to contract with it. And thus, the pitiful guy's pitiful life began.

There were also several other more powerful figures, who were

probably the elders of the Clan.

Their strength was not inferior to the Torture Chamber Elder. In fact, if Yue Yang had not grasped and intensely attacked the fatal weakness of the Torture Chamber Elder, it would be difficult to defeat him without using the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi or his summoned beasts!

Though whoever it may be, Yue Yang ignored their spying.

He slowly walked while pulling the carriage, along the foot of the mountain and through the wide mountain path, all the way to the entrance of the Yue Clan Castle.

The majestic Yue Clan Castle was much grander and taller than Iron Fist City on the third level of Tong Tian Tower, which the humans had used as a stronghold against the demonic armies. Atop the 30-meter tall and straight mountain rampart, 15-meter walls of black stone were constructed. It was fully equipped with arrow towers, gate towers, guard stations, patrol passages, sentry posts etc, making it a fort that could be easily defended and difficult to conquer.

While Yue Yang did not bring any troops, should there be a war and both sides entered a confrontation, it would be futile to even think of gnawing at the Yue Clan Castle which was armed to the teeth.

In front of the Yue Clan Castle, there were about ten dark figures who were waiting quietly for Yue Yang's arrival.

The drawbridge was raised and the castle gates were tightly shut, clearly showing their intentions. It looks like they would definitely prevent Yue Yang from bringing the beautiful woman into the Yue Clan Castle. Yue Yang had long ago predicted this and even felt it was inevitable that a huge fight would break out later.

The enemy had already laid down this scheme, and only had to wait for him to act rashly. Now that they achieved this objective, there was no reason to let him off easily.

Yue Yang felt that it was all the better, giving him the opportunity to unleash his rampage!

“San-er, Clan Lord Shan said that he is unable to discipline you, yet cannot bear to enforce the clan’s law on you and cut off the bloodline of the Third and Fourth branches. He has personally left to get your grandfather back, so that he could be the judge for this matter. Just wait here and lay out your reasons when the time comes!” A white-haired old man holding a green cane emerged from the crowd, and calmly said. He had a peaceful and amicable look around him, but as for his true intentions, nobody knew.

“Is that so? If that’s the case, could it be that all of you, esteemed seniors, are gathered here to welcome this trash Third Young Master back home?” When Yue Yang heard what the old man said, he burst into laughter.

“We may stop pursuing the matter of Torture Chamber Elder’s death in the meantime, but we will definitely not allow you to

continue injuring people!” Another black-clothed man in his fifties strode out, strictly warning Yue Yang with a manner like a stringent and unfriendly character from a traditional play.

“Don’t be angry. We are all from the same family and we are all brothers. This may all be just a misunderstanding. There will be a decision when the Clan Lord is back!” This time a green-robed man stepped out, playing the good guy.

“Since no one is welcoming me, this trash Third Young Master home, I shall just find my own way around!” Yue Yang lifted the Crescent Blade in his hand, crook his finger and flicked onto the blade. A surge of Innate Qi was unleashed and the Crescent Blade shook with a mysterious wave immediately. The vibrating Crescent Blade emitted a sweet-sounding buzz that was filled with dense murderous intent. The Crescent Blade looked like a monster that relished drinking fresh blood, whizzing in excitement.

Yue Yang’s attitude clearly displayed his intention of forcing his way into the Yue Clan Castle, fighting to the end.

Everybody silently took precautions, afraid that they might be the next one to end up like the Torture Chamber Elder.

Everybody knew the capabilities of the Torture Chamber Elder. They understood that this trash Third Young Master, being able to kill him on the spot, was no longer the loser that didn’t dare to look up or stand up for himself.

The masses were extremely curious. Could it be that before Yue

Qiu died in his battle, he had secretly imparted all of his best skills and techniques to his son?

Right now, it seemed like this useless Third Young Master who had secretly honed his skills had finally mastered them successfully. Because of that, he had decided to come back home to get back the justice that he deserved and wash away his reputation of a trash!

The crowds were especially certain about this as they saw Yue Yang holding his Crescent Blade, instead of a spear. That was because Yue Qiu, who was the only clansman that managed to reach level 7 [Overlord] at that time, achieved it using his self-created Sword Technique. He was renowned throughout the world for using this Sword Technique, and not the traditional Yue Clan's Spear Technique. Today, although Yue Yang had initially used Rod Techniques to fight, he had used the Crescent Blade to kill the Torture Chamber Elder in the end. This confirmed that Yue Yang had practiced the Eight Hungry Blades Beheading Technique, which Yue Qiu self-created back then.

“Xiao San, you dare to be disrespectful in front of these four elders and all these seniors?” The black-clothed man roared with rage.

“I may acknowledge that everyone here is my senior, but this Crescent Blade in my hands doesn't! I will still say the same old words. I want to go home and whoever blocks me, shall die!” Yue Yang replied to him coldly. Since they were going to fight, then he should make it a big and lively battle. His enemies were indeed cunning and treacherous; but this was actually nothing to him. In

the face of absolute power, all trickery and schemes were garbage! He wouldn't allow them to lead him by the nose. Right now, they would have to fight him regardless of whether they wanted to or not! It wouldn't make a difference in killing one or two more people, since he had already killed the Torture Chamber Elder. He had returned with the intention to pick a fight with his Clan, so why should he care about being respectful to them!

Yue Yang slowly lifted the Crescent Blade, becoming solemn in an instant. His breathing became indistinct and gradually disappeared.

The people on the other side couldn't help but be frightened upon seeing this.

This stance looked exactly like one of the stances of Yue Qiu's world destroying Sword Technique, Earth Splitting Slash!

Atop the castle walls, two figures suddenly appeared at a corner, discretely observing the entire situation....

"It's pointless to say any more. Any senior who wants to come at me, must first talk to the Crescent Blade in my hand!" Yue Yang flew like a bird and leapt high in the sky. His arms were drawn-out in the air as he gracefully glided for more than ten meters in distance.

The Crescent Blade in his hands had transformed into a stream of light, looking extremely sharp, as if it had its own mind.

With a speed of light, Yue Yang appeared in front of the black-clothed man. In a blink, the cold light of death encroached between the eyebrows of the black-clothed man and he became absolutely terrified, as though he fell into a deep and icy pit. This was the first time in his life that he had come so close to death! Just as the black-clothed was about to be killed, there was a flash of golden light. An orange shield extended from behind him, deflecting the Crescent Blade at the very last moment.

It was the cane-holding elder.

He summoned a Silver Grimoire and raised a Halo Shield, saving the black clothed man just in time.

Although everyone knew that this useless Third Master would rise in revolt and attack them, they hadn't imagined that his speed would be so fast.

Seeing that the attack hadn't hit, Yue Yang landed down as lightly as if he were flying, his body as agile as a dragonfly touching the surface of water. He shot forward towards the orange shield, and with an even faster speed, jumped into the air, twisted his body and slashed the green-robed man on the other side with his blade. This slash was ten times stronger than his previous move. In comparison, the previous slash was only a warm-up, while this one was a genuine, fatal strike!

(Ignis: Dragonfly touching the surface of the water is a chinese idiom to depict an agile and nimble method of moving.)

“It’s ‘Earth Splitting Slash’, hurry up and get away!” The cane-holding elder could not assist him in time, frantically called out to the green-robed man.

The green-robed man’s soul had longed since escaped his body from fright. He commanded his beast, the Armored Monitor Lizard, to jump up and use its hard body to block Yue Yang’s slash. At the same time, he quickly retreated at a tremendous speed.

The two elders simultaneously raised their shields with the intent of blocking Yue Yang’s fatal strike for the green-robed man.

They hoped that their shields would be able block the Yue Yang’s blade, which had an edge that looked like it could split jade.

The blade flashed.

The floor remained intact, and the spirit beast remained unharmed. But the green-robed man that had fled behind the two shields had an expression of great shock.

When everyone saw that he was unaffected, they all inwardly sighed in relief. It was a good thing he had made it; otherwise, that slash definitely would’ve taken his life. Suddenly, everyone’s gazes shifted up. The Armored Monitor Lizard, which had been ordered by its master to jump up, fell flat towards the ground and crashed with a bang. Despite having a metal-like plate of armor, its entire body had been split in half, immediately meeting a tragic end. Everyone’s hearts felt a chill; as expected from Yue Qiu’s world destroying Sword Technique!

This slash had actually instantly killed a level 3 Armored Monitor Lizard!

As the people looked back at the green-robed man, they all felt glad for him. He had fortunately been able to escape this calamity. Otherwise, he would've definitely been instantly killed on the spot, just like the Armored Monitor Lizard.

However, a frightened look suddenly colored the green-robed man's face. His hands were twitching a little, as if he wanted to grab his own throat.

Everyone watched in fear as a red line on the green-robed man's neck began to expand. The green-robed man clutched his throat tightly, as if he wanted to stop the strong outflow of blood. The cane-holding elder had already taken out his best healing stone, but before he could activate it, the green-robed man's entire torso exploded open with a boom. Everyone caught a glimpse of his inner organs as his blood burst out, splashing into the air.

Like his beast, his whole body was cut into two by the edge of Yue Yang's sharp blade; his chest and abdomen were all cut open!

The green-robed man, whom everyone thought to have escaped from Yue Yang, was actually killed instantly in one slash!

The cane-holding elder and the others looked at Yue Yang, absolutely terrified. They were trying to determine how much of his father's fighting skills this brat had mastered to have such a

frightening amount of strength. Suddenly, Yue Yang closed his eyes and started to meditate. Steam emitted from his body and a heavenly glow seemed to appear on his face. It was as if he was exploring the breakthrough to a new realm. Immediately, everyone felt a perilous feeling in their hearts. Could it be that this brat had a breakthrough after unleashing that slash?

Could it be that this guy had experienced a new breakthrough of a skill in the midst of the battle?

Heavens! If he broke through another layer, wouldn't he become the Yue Clan's second Yue Qiu?

"Everybody attack him together!" The cane-holding elder no longer cared about his identity. Taking the lead, he pounced forward at lightning speed. He brandished his cane towards Yue Yang's head, attacking ferociously.

The attackers did not understand the ridiculing smile that Yue Yang had on his lips.

Yue Yang smiled like a hunter who had seen his prey falling into his trap.

"This is not good! Quickly kill him!"

The black-clothed man also brandished his long spear, driving it towards Yue Yang's heart like a poisonous dragon.

Seeing these vicious and murderous attacks, one of the two figures watching from atop the gate tower seemingly wanted to fly down and assist Yue Yang. However, he was stopped by the other towering dark figure, who said a few words. The figure that initially wanted to assist Yue Yang stopped in his tracks, nodding his head silently.

Two people stood on top of the gate tower, quietly observing.

At that moment, a bright glow, as bright as a river of stars, flashed with an incomparable brilliance.

It became an amazing sight; akin to a spiraling vortex like the expanding Milky Way. Yue Yang, who was initially in a meditative state, suddenly straightened his body. His eyes suddenly glared open; like a demon, his eyes were crimson red in color! The air that his body was emitting suddenly burst like a flash flood, exploding around his body with a loud, thundering boom, shaking all of the earth.

The smoke from the explosion immediately surrounded the two people with the weakest abilities, rigidly shrouding them.

Yue Yang's crimson eyes were wide open in fury. His entire person seemed to have gone mad, like a demonic god. He stood tall and straight unyieldingly, looking down with a disposition of someone that was unparalleled under the heavens, coldly confronting all of his enemies' combined attacks.

His left hand held his Crescent Blade while his right grasped the

Hui Jin Magic Blade. The glow from the two blades quickly brightened, glowing as fiercely as the sun!

This, this was the real destructive First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash!

Chapter 104 – A Likeable Bandit's Theory

When Yue Yang brandished the two blades that were shining with the heat of the sun, the four most capable elders immediately retreated as quickly as possible.

After all, they were all cunning people who would always leave themselves some room to escape.

The two people who had previously been overpowered by Yue Yang were not in life-threatening danger, even though they were rolling on the ground like a gourd.

The most unfortunate one, however, was the black-clothed man who still foolishly charged forward, preparing to assassinate Yue Yang. He didn't know that the other four elders had already retreated long ago. He wielded his pike with all his might and flew straight at Yue Yang. By the time he realized that there was a blazing light that blinded his eyes, it was too late to retreat. The steel pike in his hands crumbled and silently turned into metal slags when it collided violently with the explosive blaze. When the first 'sun' flared on his body, the black-clothed man felt that his body was melting from the intense heat of the sun. When the second 'sun', which was smaller in volume but ten times stronger, blew up on him, he felt himself being annihilated into nothingness in an instant.

The two figures standing atop the castle, who were watching Yue Yang's dual blade slashes, looked considerably stirred.

One of the two figures shook his head, as he somberly spoke with an aged voice, “This is not the First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash, it’s only just a normal sword technique. Seems like it’s a technique that he comprehended by himself.”

“So you are saying that he is just like his father, a genius who can create his own technique?” The other figure questioned.

“It could be that someone is teaching him in secret.” The aged voice replied, in a suspicious tone.

There was another change in the situation below.

There were no injuries on the black-clothed man. Even his clothes remained orderly. However, the pupils of his eyes were widely dilated... Although he appeared untouched on the surface, he had already been killed instantly.

The remaining four elders, on the other hand, looked quite miserable. There were multiple scars on each of their bodies.

Although they had been cunning enough to retreat from the battlefield in time to save themselves, Yue Yang’s violent sword technique had left both their bodies and reputations covered in dirt.

The tightly shut castle gate slowly opened, and the drawbridge was lowered down.

A scholarly-looking man wearing a robe as white as snow strided out from within, walked straight towards Yue Yang who was composing himself. His face, which looked cultured and refined due to his extremely mature and well maintained complexion, revealed a smile as refreshing as a spring breeze. He nodded courteously, “San-er, it’s really you... When I heard the servant’s report, I could not believe my ears. I am more than pleasantly surprised, and had immediately informed Father about your arrival. I hope that he would also receive this news quickly and be happy. He has not had a pleasant surprise for a long time now... This is really a good thing, Third Brother (Yue Yang’s dad) finally has a qualified successor now.”

When Yue Yang heard it, he couldn’t help but shiver inwardly.

This fellow seemed to be the substitute Clan Master of the Yue Clan, Yue Shan. Seeing his all-too-innocent face, it seems like he was planning to cleanly push all the blame away from himself.

If Yue Yang had not known from the start that Yue Shan was a ruthless and vicious bastard, who harbored ill intentions behind his refreshing smile, he would probably have mistakenly believed that Yue Shan was a good uncle who cared about the well-being of his nephew. Seeing Yue Shan pretending to give him the sincerest of smiles, Yue Yang thought that even an Oscar wouldn’t be sufficient to award him for his talent in acting.

Damn. He was really worthy of his reputation as a capable government official of Da Xia Empire. He was different than other ordinary villains; in terms of politics, wisdom, and EQ, he was extremely exceptional.

With just one look, Yue Yang had already known that Yue Shan was not going to be an easy opponent to handle.

This fellow not only had extraordinary capabilities, but he was also extremely forbearing.

On the outside, he always pretended to be a modest and refined gentleman. Wasn't he just like the Yue Buqun of this world?

(Ignis: [Yue Buqun](#) is a villain from 'Xiao Ao Jiang Hu', aka 'The Smiling, Proud Wanderer', a popular wuxia novel by Jin Yong. Pretty much appeared scholarly and refined but was actually a false gentleman.)

Against such a person, if Yue Yang wanted to play mind games, he would simply be fighting against Yue Shan's specialty. If that really happened, Yue Shan would probably be so happy that he would be too full to eat... The best way to deal with such people was to employ violence – the most brutal, overbearing and straightforward violence. Yue Yang wanted to ruthlessly beat him to the ground, step on his head, and mock him mercilessly. That would have been the best method treatment for Yue Shan.

However, as much as Yue Yang would really have liked to slash his smiling face with his Crescent Blade, he refrained from doing so. This was because Yue Shan was not simply a man harboring evil intentions behind his smile, but he was also a Level 6 [Elder].

Level 6 [Elder]. He was the strongest human opponent that Yue

Yang had ever met to date.

“San-er, we are all one family. If we live in harmony, all of our endeavours would be successful. Put down your weapons quickly. If there were any misunderstandings, we can talk about it and clear it up. Everyone here are understanding people, there is no reason for them to not hear your explanation. A-Xian, you shouldn't be afraid too. As long as I live, I will protect the safety of your Fourth Branch.” Other than advising Yue Yang, Yue Shan also courteously bowed towards the beautiful woman who was sitting inside the carriage.

Who would have ever thought that the person who was saying all this had been the mastermind behind everything that had happened?

Yue Yang thought to himself that if his IQ was a little bit lower, he would probably already have been sold as a slave and even help Yue Shan count the money earned from selling him.

Yue Yang felt that if he tried to speak to Yue Shan, this bastard, he would probably be overpowered by his status as the substitute Clan Master. As his junior, he would definitely be in a disadvantageous position. The only way was to be reckless and get his way with violence.

Aren't you a hypocrite who wants to pretend that you cared about your nephew? I'll help you to accomplish that.

An intelligent method must be used to deal with a fool.

On the other hand, using a foolish method to deal with an intelligent person could sometimes also be effective.

The guy from another world arrogantly raised his heroic looking brows. A slight sneer could be seen at the corner of his mouth, while he took a tone that sounded sincere to the utmost: “Lately, this Little Nephew had been encountering difficulties in his training and was finding it hard to improve his battle skills. I wonder if it is possible for First Uncle to provide this nephew with some pointers?”

He wasn’t merely casually speaking; he had already begun to charge his Innate Qi in the Crescent Blade.

He didn’t even need Yue Shan to reply. As long as an opportunity presented itself, the Crescent Blade would immediately slash towards Yue Shan’s head....Wanting to compete in scheming? Bring it on!

Yue Yang inwardly sneered and knew that he could compete with this guy in scheming. Besides using his barbarous force, he would also be hypocritical. He wanted to see how long Yue Shan could keep that smile on his face.

The four elders, as well as the two uncles who had fallen over in shock, were dumbstruck upon hearing what Yue Yang said.

They did not dare to believe what they had heard.

They looked at each other, thinking that Yue Yang had become insane.

In the Yue Clan, in terms of strength, the Clan Master Yue Hai who had reached the pinnacle of a Level 6 Advanced [Senior Elder]'s power would be the strongest in terms of power. Below him, it would be the three Grand Elders and his eldest son Yue Shan. The three Grand Elders were advancing in age and had never bothered about the clan's affairs. Since they only focused on researching the bequeathed techniques of the clan, they could be excluded from the ranking. Thus in the entire Yue Clan, the second in terms of strength would be the eldest son Yue Shan, who was a Level 6 Intermediate [Elder].

If not for the fact that he had that level of strength, how would Yue Shan be able to strongly convince the entire clan and take up the role of substitute Clan Master?

Now, this was something strange. A good-for-nothing, who could not form a contract even with the trashiest of beasts, actually dared to challenge the substitute Clan Master of the Yue Clan?

Could it be that Yue Yang thought Yue Shan's rank of a Level 6 [Elder] was just a pretext?

Or could it be that, by mastering some techniques inherited from his father, Yue Yang had thought he could rise to the heavens?

Even Yue Qiu back then would not have dared to say that he

could easily defeat his older brother Yue Shan, let alone Yue Yang, who was just a kid from the younger generation.

Upon reaching Level 6, regardless of which type of beast was contracted, a warrior's strength would increase by at least ten times over that of a Level 5 [Grandmaster]... only somebody who had transcended the realm of a Level 6 [Elder] would have the qualifications to be at the apex in the future. He would also be officially recognized by the country. In the eyes of a warrior that is at the apex, anybody at Level 6 or lower were all tiny and powerless.

Putting aside the fact that this tiny and powerless trash Third Young Master had dared to attack a Level 5 elder, he even dared to challenge Yue Shan, who was at Level 6?

“This is all your First Uncle's fault. I had been constantly busy with the affairs of the empire and had neglected my nephew. San-er, if you say that you have something that you do not understand, I will try my best to help.” Although Yue Shan was smiling, Yue Yang could see the killing intent that had flashed deep in his pupils.

Yue Shan did not conceal himself as he knew that this brat Yue Yang was also intelligent. Between intelligent people, there was no need for excessive pretense.

The words between the two of them were only for others to listen.

At this moment, both of them were itching to kill one another. Yet on the surface, one was a modest nephew seeking pointers, while the other was a magnanimous and benevolent uncle teaching his nephew...

The moment that Yue Yang begun collecting power in the Crescent Blade, Yue Shan summoned a Gold Grimoire with a smile on his face. He then quickly summoned a silver-ranked beast to fuse with his body and slowly retrieved a long sword that was tied to his waist. He spoke with an abnormally gentle tone: “San-er be careful, the blade has no eyes, so take care not to overdo things. Don’t try to show off too much and hurt yourself in the end.”

“Then I would also advise First Uncle not to be muddle-headed, and be careful too.” Yue Yang brandished his Crescent Blade, slashing it heavily forward.

Yue Yang unleashed a slash that could split the heavens and earth, the one he had used to instantly kill the black-clothed man, who was a Level 4-Intermediate [Champion].

However, Yue Shan simply extended one hand and easily received the blow.

Yue Yang raised his eyebrows as he realized that Yue Shan’s summon was quite strange. It wasn’t simply an ordinary strengthening-type beast, it was actually a special-type octopus beast. Yue Shan’s arms had actually turned into an octopus’ arms that could receive strong impacts with its softness. Countless suction holes appeared on his arms, and it sucked dry the energy that Yue Yang had charged into his Crescent Blade. On the other

side, the long sword in Yue Shan's hands had also turned into thousands of sharp darts. Countless sharp shadows flew straight towards Yue Yang's body. Yue Yang's level 2 [Divine Vision] could see that not only Yue Shan's octopus beast could transform his arms into octopus arms, it could also apply poison to Yue Shan's weapons. He definitely couldn't avoid Yue Shan's attack, because if he did, Fourth Mother and the little girl behind him would definitely die if they were shot by the arrows.

He was indeed a ruthless bastard, his moves were so savage and malicious.

“Second Slash: Heaven and Earth Collapse!” In reality, Yue Yang did not know any of Yue Qiu's sword techniques. However, in order to hide the fact that he had the Innate [Invisible Sword Qi], he drew everyone's attention towards Yue Qiu's Sword Techniques.

When he unleashed his move, he had also tried to imitate the stance of that sword technique.

A fierce look flashed across Yue Shan's expression, “Not bad, but the power was a little bit lacking,”

Yue Shan seemed to have an idea to break Yue Yang's Second Slash: Heaven and Earth Collapse. His arms, that had originally transformed into an octopus' arms, suddenly underwent a quick transformation. Darkness shrouded him, almost as if he was trying to unleash a sneak attack on Yue Yang.

Suddenly, Yue Shan stood tall and upright, and before a second even passed, he had returned his appearance to being the modest and refined man he had been previously.

He didn't make a move, allowing Yue Yang to slash at his forehead with the Hui Jin Magic Blade.

However, a large figure suddenly appeared in the middle of Yue Yang and Yue Shan. Yue Yang didn't care about who that was, as he assumed an eager opponent restraining the power was too late and violently slashed down at the figure. The figure neither retreated nor disappeared, it used his strong body to receive the heavy slash from Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade. A deafening boom resounded when the figure's body collided with the Magic Blade. In the next moment, to Yue Yang's surprise, his Hui Jin Magic Blade had actually bounced back upon impact. That figure, on the other hand, was like a statue of iron. He did not move at all from the impact, and he also did not receive any damage from his attack.

"Your strength is quite powerful, I felt a little pain just now," That tall figure brushed away his armour that had been broken to pieces with his hands.

"Ah?" Yue Yang thought that this person was really powerful. Wasn't this defense too powerful to be true?

When he observed clearly, he saw an old man with white hair, who did not have an arm and a leg. However, his Qi was as ferocious as a fierce lion. He had a tall figure, towering as a mountain. He was only standing idly in front of him, yet he gave

the feeling that not even an army with thousands of soldiers and horses would be able to pass through him.

Yue Yang had never met him, but he could tell that this old man was the Yue Clan's Clan Master with one look.

Of course, he was also the Great Marshall of the Da Xia Emperor that had just retired. He was the pitiful guy's grandfather who had the nickname of 'One-armed War God', Yue Hai.

He had such a frightening Qi that was definitely accumulated from his experience in the battlefield. No one would be able to fake such a fierce Qi.

Yue Yang realized that compared to his son Yue Shan, this Yue Hai had even more abilities that Yue Yang couldn't see through with his level 2 [Divine Vision]. However, even with the abilities that Yue Yang could see through with his [Divine Vision], they were enough to make Yue Yang's heart shiver with alarm secretly.

This pitiful guy's grandfather, old man Yue Hai, had an extremely strong Gold King Beast in his arsenal.

It was like a strengthening-type Guardian Beast, fusing into the old man's, Yue Hai, body and living together with its master.

However, Yue Yang was definitely sure that this Gold King Beast wasn't a Guardian Beast.

That was because a Guardian Beast would never die, and it would always heal back to its original form if it was injured. However, the Gold King Beast in the old man Yue Hai's body that was incomparably strong was also disabled like his master, lacking a leg and an arm. As for its type, Yue Yang couldn't see through it in the meantime. However, he thought that it could be the legendary Mother Earth Bear.

Not only does this old man Yue Hai was a Level 6 Advanced [Senior Elder], he also had ample experience in war. His killing intent was as sharp as a sword, he was indeed as strong as the rumors.

Although Yue Shan was also a level 6 Ranker, he was like a teenager compared to Yue Hai, a warrior. The difference was not just a little, it was extremely huge.

When Yue Yang looked at the old man Yue Hai, he had a feeling like he was facing against that Three-Headed Chimera in the Aries Temple. He was burning with anger, eager with anticipation to fight this strong Ranker with all of his power. However, under the condition of not being able to use all of his powers, he wasn't one hundred percent confident that he could defeat him.

If he didn't use Innate Invisible Sword Qi, Xiao Wen Li and the Golden Beast, and only use Hui Tai Lang and Barbarian Cow Shadow, he would definitely not be able to defeat the old man Yue Hai.

He was afraid that even with the Bloody Queen, it wouldn't be enough to face Yue Hai.

After all, Yue Hai was a strong Ranker who had trained for many decades, almost nearing one hundred years. His skills and abilities was simply too powerful.

Yue Yang slowly sighed in his heart. Although he was already in the Innate Realm, which ranked above the old man Yue Hai, his training time was simply too short. It had not even been half a year since he came to this world. If only he could train for a few more months... Of course, even if they really fight it out, Yue Yang didn't think that he would not be easily defeated by the old man Yue Hai.

This is because the old man Yue Hai was only strong, with regards to skills and techniques, the Innate Invisible Sword Qi was a hundred times stronger than the Yue Clan's Spear Technique.

“What nonsense are you guys doing? The whole family gathering in front of the house and fought till this extent, what troubles are you guys going to bring next?” The old man Yue Hai bellowed with a voice as strong as an entire army. He was extremely charismatic as his large figure overlooked the whole battlefield, scolding everyone bluntly, “I don't know what had happened here, and before I fully understand the situation, nobody talks. I don't have the patience to listen to all of you children's tantrum. I had always thought that the members of the Yue Clan are calm and could be reason with. Even if you don't want to be reasoned with, I had thought that you would not resort to violence. No matter if you guys wanted to argue or fight, it could all be discussed clearly during the New Year's Tournament. Right now, go back to your houses immediately, don't stay here and be a disgrace and become a joke to the public!”

“...” Yue Yang sweated when he heard this.

You can talk it out if you have an argument, and you can fight it out if you don't want to discuss your argument?

Damn, what kind of bandit's theory is this? Is this place really one of the Four Great Families, Yue Clan, Yue Clan's Castle, or a robber's hideout?

How could everyone be more uncivilized than the other?

Yue Yang had thought that he was already quite unreasonable. Who would have thought that this old man Yue hai was even a hundred times more unreasonable than him? Is this old fellow really a Marshall of the Empire's army?

He really couldn't wait for that Clan's New Year's Tournament where he could reason with his fists.

As the guy from another world thought about this, he smiled.

Talking with his fists, wasn't this exactly his forte?

Chapter 105 – The Tipping Point For A Breakthrough

Yue Shan and the others stood before Elder Yue Hai like a flock of obedient little sheep.

They all nodded their heads in agreement and went back.

Only then did the Fifth Elder, who was riding on his deer, finally rush over. He hurried towards Yue Yang with a smile, as if there was some deeper meaning behind it, but did not utter a single word.

When the beautiful woman in the carriage heard that Elder Yue Hai had arrived, she hurriedly carried the little girl, who was still sleeping soundly, out of the carriage and kowtowed to Elder Yue Hai, saying, “This unworthy daughter-in-law pays respect to her grandfather. San Er, Bing Er, come and kowtow as well.” Yue Bing glanced at Yue Yang and knelt down as well. Only Yue Yang remained standing in silence with an unwavering expression that looked at him as an equal. He had absolutely no intention of bowing down and kowtowing to him.

“What’s the matter San Er? Are you not even going to acknowledge me, your grandfather?” Elder Yue Hai’s voice was like the shockwave of a cavalry charge, with a distinctive, charismatic tone that stood out from others.

“I did not do anything wrong. There is therefore no need for me to beg for forgiveness.”

Yue Yang was not the pitiful guy. Not only that, he was also not used to kneeling and bowing his head so easily to someone else.

It was a good thing to respect elders, but Yue Yang felt that respect which came from the heart was far more valuable than the superficial respect displayed through the tradition of kowtowing.

He had not known Elder Yue Hai before this, so naturally, respecting him was out of the question. He would definitely not kneel towards Elder Yue Hai just because of his identity as Clan Leader. Of course, he would not foolishly act superior in front of Elder Yue Hai either. Rather, he tried his best to moderate his tone, acting furious as if he was a wronged junior who had been bullied by others, “A man can die standing his ground but he should not live kneeling to others. I did not do anything wrong, so I will definitely not admit that I’m guilty nor beg for forgiveness.”

“A man can die standing his ground but he should not live kneeling to others? These words are really well spoken.” Elder Yue Hai seemed to be a little surprised. “San Er, I never expected that you would ever say such things. It seems like I really misjudged you in the past.”

“.....” Yue Yang was speechless. If not for him travelling through dimensions and taking the place of the pitiful guy, the pitiful guy himself would probably have never had the guts to say these words.

“Ah Xian, get up first. No matter how this issue is related to you,

I will give you an explanation for it. In our Yue Family, it doesn't matter how the men fight or are killed. Relying on their fists and kicks to find out who is stronger, and letting the stronger command the weaker is a very normal thing. However, whoever dares to touch the women or the children are complete trash. If I ever found out about their identities, I will definitely execute them publicly, and will not pardon any of them. Ah Xian, you can rest easy and bring your children to live here. As long as I am alive, nobody will dare to make a move under my nose... Fifth Elder, lead Ah Xian and her family into the castle. If anyone has the intention of attacking Ah Xian or her daughters, you can kill them first and report to me afterwards."

As Elder Yue Hai finished speaking, he turned around and left in big strides.

His body was like a moving mountain. Each step of the metal, prosthetic leg that was attached to him created shockwaves that made the ground tremble.

Initially, Yue Yang thought that Elder Yue Hai had also wanted to fight with him and teach him a lesson. He did not expect that this old fellow would console Fourth Mother instead. Although it was really a little outside of his expectations, but this was good too as there was no need to worry about Fourth Mother and the little girl's lives. He could also show off his strength in front of the family at the New Year's tournament and take back Fourth Mother's dignity. He definitely had to trample those elite geniuses of the family underfoot.

It would be very exciting to see the expressions on their faces.

A family battle, eh?

He had already wanted to find a chance to showcase his talents since the beginning... Let alone himself, he also wanted to show off Yue Bing's capabilities to shock the entire family.

When they entered the castle, Yue Yang did not see Fourth Uncle at all.

The Fifth Elder (Yue Yang's grandfather's fifth brother) handled the accommodation arrangements of the beautiful woman before sighing a little, "Actually, this issue is quite complicated. It is not that the Fourth Master does not want to see you, but rather, the Fourth Master is currently not in the castle. He was attacked by multiple masked assassins halfway through his trip home after buying the [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill]. He was not severely injured, but he had been poisoned. He was afraid that you would be worried and asked us to keep it a secret from you."

"Ah?" The news came like a bolt from the clear sky to the beautiful woman.

"Assassination? Poisoned?" The more Yue Yang heard about this, the more he felt that this was a conspiracy. Wasn't this too big of a coincidence? How could he meet with assassins right after buying the [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill]?

"We aren't experts at detoxification and the Fourth Master was afflicted with a slow-acting poison that we were unable to cure, but

it happened shortly before the Ninth Young Master's grand celebration for his success in contracting a grimoire. The He Yang Feng family also came to congratulate him. When it comes to detoxification, they are considered experts; but they were also helpless in the face of the poison that Fourth Master was afflicted with. Finally, we asked for the assistance of the young lady from the Feng family with the Inherent Skill of [Detoxification]... The detoxification process required Miss Feng and Fourth Master to embrace each other without their clothes. Only then would she be able to use her Guardian Beast to remove the poison slowly. Miss Feng is an unmarried woman from a noble family; had the Fourth Master not come from a reputable family, she would definitely not have offered to abandon her innocence to save his life. Fourth Master had rejected the offer with all his might; he would rather die than accept this kind of detoxification method. However, the poison in his system started to intensify two months ago. He fainted and was unconscious for the whole time. After a discussion between us old folks, we could not bear to see the old guy being sent to the reaper and sent him to the young lady of the Feng Family instead..." As the elder spoke, Yue Yang felt as if he had heard the sky drop. This... this was far too coincidental, was it not?

A poison, that could not be cured by any medicine, that only the young lady of the Feng Family could cure!

Not only that, it had to be done in an abnormal manner of embracing each other naked?

How could this be called a saving of a life?

This was basically being legitimately forced upon... Yue Yang really wondered if he could have the same opportunity to be forced upon by a beautiful lady as an alluring cure for poison.

There was no need for him to even use his brain to think; even his toenails could figure out that this was a plot. At the moment, he did not know whether the young lady from the Feng Family was an accomplice, but Yue Ling, the husband of the beautiful woman, had definitely been set up to be killed by someone. He had been turned into a pawn, manipulated by others.

Perhaps this Fourth Uncle had also realised this. That was why he refused to be treated, regardless of whether he would live or die. On top of that, with the deep affection that the couple had for each other, knowing that he would have to be pushed down by the young lady of the Feng Family would have caused chaos in his family.

Thus, before he fell unconscious, he had continued to reject this kind of fate and would rather have died than yield to it.

“How’s my husband’s situation now?” The beautiful woman asked with tears streaming down her face.

“We were told that his condition has already improved greatly. However, he is still extremely weak and can only stay conscious for a short amount of time every day... There were no problems with the treatment given by the young lady of the Feng Family, but he still needs three to four months to be nursed back to health.” The Fifth Elder consoled her and said, “I have also gone to see the Fourth Master and confirmed that his condition has indeed

improved greatly.”

“Since he can be completely cured in three to four months’ time, why was his marriage planned so urgently?” Yue Yang could not understand anymore.

“Cough, this, this was because Miss Feng is already pregnant. If this wedding happened any later, I’m afraid that he would become the laughing stock of the world. So, we hurriedly planned an auspicious time for them to be wedded. Both the Fourth Master and Miss Feng could not come back to the castle for the time being. So, we will let virgin boys and girls hold onto a cock and a hen as a substitute for the bride and groom during the rituals to complete the wedding. Now, the most important thing is to give the Miss Feng a status. The foetus in her womb will not wait. Once it is delivered, it would be hard to explain to the public...” As the Fifth Elder spoke, Yue Yang started to get a little angry again. With Fourth Uncle being unconscious everyday, it was hard to say who this baby belonged to.

How could they be completely certain that the baby was Fourth Uncle’s?

Could it be that because they were embracing each other naked daily, he had to take the blame for this?

Yue Yang hoped that this world had something that could check DNA and prove that the foetus in Miss Feng’s womb was indeed Fourth Uncle’s flesh and blood. It would not be too late to decide on their wedding afterwards. Otherwise, if Fourth Uncle were to marry a wife that has an offer of buy one get one free, it could not

be said for certain whether the child was the product of an affair with another man.

The Fifth Elder looked at Yue Yang. Perhaps it was because he was able to see that Yue Yang did not believe it, but since it was inappropriate to speak of such things in front of the beautiful woman, he slightly waved his hands, signalling him not to bring up this topic for now.

After waiting for the beautiful woman to calm down, he called Yue Yang outside for a chat. “San Er, you’re a smart kid, but don’t get mixed into the matters regarding your Fourth Uncle. What’s done cannot be undone. Taking the initiative on behalf of Ah Xian is filial piety, but if you oppose the marriage of your Fourth Uncle, you would just be causing trouble... The poison that the Fourth Master contracted was the Bee Emperor’s poison. This type of poison causes the person to ejaculate wildly. Not only that, once they start, they cannot stop. It eventually causes the person to die from excessive ejaculation. Thankfully, the young lady of the Feng Family was willing to give her life to save him, otherwise your Fourth Uncle would have been long gone by now.”

Yue Yang broke out in cold sweat when he heard this. How could there be such a sinister poison in this world?

However, it was still a little strange.

This Miss Feng was not even [Lei Feng](#), how could she be so noble as to sacrifice herself in order to save Fourth Uncle?

The Fifth Elder seemed to be able to discern that Yue Yang was puzzled and lightly coughed, “It was said that your Fourth Uncle had saved Miss Feng before, when they were still studying in their academy. Although your Fourth Uncle had graduated much earlier, married and had children, Miss Feng still could not forget him. She refused to marry someone else even at the age of thirty. Perhaps, she was bitterly waiting for your Fourth Uncle. If not, where would there be a pure lady willing to sacrifice herself to save your Fourth Uncle.....”

“Fine, I won’t care about these messy issues.” Yue Yang had a headache listening to it all. Indeed, this Fourth Uncle’s love life was not lacking at all.

“You’re still a child, why do you need to care about the relationships between adults? Just stay here for these two days. When the new year comes, if you’re willing to, then join everyone for the reunion dinner. If not, you can just hide inside your room and eat your dinner. I reckon you won’t like to meet the First Branch and the Second Branch family members either. Actually, the more I look at you, the more I thought that you resemble your father... huuu, rest well.” The elder suddenly shook his head and sighed before leaving on his own volition. Yue Yang still felt like he was caught in a maze of doubts. For example, who faked the pitiful guy’s engagement cancellation letter? Who had poisoned Fourth Uncle? How did the pitiful guy’s father, Yue Qiu, die?

Could he still alive?

Who was the pitiful guy’s mother?

From the attitude that everyone faintly showed , the mother of the pitiful guy was a strong and extraordinary woman, perhaps equal to or better than Yue Qiu.

But, the thing that caused him to be curious was, why had nobody ever talked about her before?

It was impossible for Yue Yang to attend the farce of a wedding between two chickens.

It was even more impossible for him to attend a reunion dinner with Yue Shan and those other big, crafty dogs... Rather than wasting his time on that level of idle talk, he would rather count the strands of hairs growing on his legs instead.

Conversely, the beautiful woman would bring the little girl with her every day to pay respects to her elders. She would also frequently cook for the elders herself and bring back some delicious meals for Yue Yang and Yue Bing. Yue Bing meditated in her room everyday, preparing to join the family's New Year Tournament in her peak form to battle against the might of Yue Tian and Yue Yan. However, with regards to Yue Yang, aside from wrecking his brains thinking of a way to sneak into the most restricted Puppet Palace of the Yue Family, he would either be eating or sleeping every day. If he wasn't doing any of these things, then he would accompany the little girl to count the number of ants on the wall or play with sand... Not a single Yue Clan's member had even seen him cultivate. Nobody could make heads or tails out of where this fellow's battle skills had come from.

Of course, they would never have imagined that Yue Yang's

cultivation method did not require him to swing his weapon drenched in sweat like normal people.

He could cultivate within the space in his consciousness where the Heavenly Sword Goddess resided.

Not only that, cultivating in that space had far greater efficiency than cultivating outside in the real world. Since he had been provoked by the powerful strength that Elder Yue Hai had displayed, Yue Yang was extremely serious when he was training in his consciousness. Furthermore, he had faintly comprehended the [Massacring Heart] after his fight with the four elders. Hence, he had gained a lot of experience on the second level of the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi and was on the verge of breaking through to the third level.

Even though he was on the verge of breaking through, he still needed a tipping point to do so.

Yue Yang was troubled for a while. What kind of tipping point did he need? Seducing innocent women? Peeking at girls bathing? Stealing the treasures of the Yue Family's Puppet Palace? Or watching the sexual activities of that hypocrite, Yue Shan?

When night fell, Yue Yang felt that this would not do. He then started scheming: If he was unable to break through by tomorrow, he would put an aphrodisiac in the tea of that fellow, Yue Shan, and then put an old female pig inside his room. Afterwards, he would set a fire outside and lure thousands of guards here to put out the fire. When the guards arrived, he would then unveil the brutal spectacle of Yue Shan enjoying himself with the pig to the

guards.

With this imagination in his mind, Yue Yang's mood turned better and before he knew it, he fell asleep.

In his dreams, the Heavenly Sword Goddess, whom he had not seen in a long time, suddenly appeared.

This had made Yue Yang so moved that his heart turned into a mess. In the end, it was always this woman, whom he had decided to be his main wife in heart without seeking for her approval, who would appear at the time when he needed her the most.

What kind of tipping point for a breakthrough would this Heavenly Sword Goddess bring him this time?

Chapter 106 – Innate Realm Third Layer

According to Yue Yang's imagination, the best thing for a breakthrough at this juncture was obviously by being pushed down by this Heavenly Sword Goddess big sister.

Of course, the possibility of being pushed down by her was not high.

Yue Yang's thoughts were, rather than waiting for her to help him, he should just take the initiative himself and be the one to push her down. As for the difficulty level of pushing her down, it wasn't exactly too high. He reckoned that the difficulty level would probably be just a little lower than instantaneously killing the Demon King Ha Xin. How little is little exactly? It wasn't that much, really. Yue Yang's perception of little meant ninety nine thousand nine hundred and ninety nine times more than difficult; it's not even one hundred thousand times.

The Heavenly Sword Goddess had a temper of her own. Yue Yang had really wanted to rush over to her, hug her thighs and cry "Wifey I'm here!" while taking advantage of her.

However, she did not give him the chance to do anything; with just a point of her beautiful fingers, countless colourful rays of light suddenly burst forth as they gathered and melded together to form the shape of a person.

It was a guy.

If the Heavenly Sword Goddess had created another guy in this world from her condensed energy, Yue Yang would have probably been mad with jealousy. However, the guy that was created did not make him angry at all... this was because that guy looked exactly like himself.

The Heavenly Sword Goddess then disappeared, while the ‘Yue Yang’ that was created from the condensed energy suddenly flew towards Yue Yang. At the same time, he shot Innate Invisible Sword Qi at him.

“I hate myself the most right now,”

At this moment, Yue Yang was extremely confused, frantic beyond compare.

This was because the Heavenly Sword Goddess had created a clone of himself. A clone that had the exact same abilities as him, who could unleash [Innate Invisible Sword Qi], [Mysterious Three Styles], [Nature’s Heart], and [Massacring Heart]... In any case, whatever Yue Yang could do, this clone could also do. He was a complete carbon copy of himself. The only difference was that this other identity of his had no sentience; the only instincts it had been given was to completely defeat Yue Yang. Right now, Yue Yang finally understood the Heavenly Sword Goddess’ training purpose. She wanted him to break through the Innate Invisible Sword Qi’s third layer. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to defeat his copy, that had the exact same abilities as himself.

“Wifey, I know you meant well, but could you at least welcome me home first the next time you appear? If this is the way you treat

me every time I see you, won't my heart stop out of shock?" Yue Yang miserably tried to avoid his clone's attacks. However, under his clone's rain of attacks, he was almost left with no chance to counter and fight back.

Yue Yang quickly realised that with regards to the use of his skills, be it [Innate Invisible Sword Qi] or [Mysterious Three Styles], his clone had managed to utilise them at a high higher level of proficiency than he was able to.

It was only now Yue Yang finally realize how strong he was.

Only after being attacked by his clone, who had the same exact abilities as himself, did Yue Yang realize that his skills were simply too awesome.

However, both of them fighting spiritually simply had no meaning.

It was completely meaningless.

No matter how many times Yue Yang injured his clone or his clone injured him, the two would suffer the same exact injuries. The clone's power was also linked to Yue Yang's. Yue Yang would feel exhaustion if his clone used up his power... If he beat up his clone with all his might, Yue Yang would also feel his power consumed. In this space inside his consciousness, there was no real body, so the two identities fought with their spiritual body. Hence, there was no meaning to this fight at all. Heavenly Sword Goddess had only created a clone of Yue Yang to beat him up and force him

to break through to a new level.

Yue Yang would be able to level up, but his clone, which was just a condensed form of energy without sentience, would never be able to.

As long as Yue Yang broke through the third layer, he would be able to defeat his clone easily.

“Heavens, how am I going to solve this problem today?” Yue Yang was deeply regretful in his heart. He thought that if he ever became powerful in the future, he would definitely catch the Heavenly Sword Goddess and spank her little butt hard. Her method of training was simply too vicious. If the Heavenly Sword Goddess had created a beautiful copy of herself instead, Yue Yang would probably be in a much better mood than he was now.

As Yue Yang daydreamed in his mind, in a moment of carelessness, he was attacked by his clone, who only had the instinct of attacking him continuously.

His clone charged over as he punched, kicked, kneed, and headbutted Yue Yang in a combo attack.

Even though it was only Yue Yang's spiritual body in his dream, and he wouldn't be really injured in reality, when he saw his clone's head fly towards him for a headbutt, he couldn't help but to let out a scream as his clone's handsome face was only two cm away from his own face. That was because he had never seen his own face at such a short distance...

“San-er, San-er, what happened?”

When he heard the beautiful woman’s gentle voice, that sounded like flowing water, Yue Yang immediately withdrew from his dream and opened his eyes. He saw that the beautiful woman was sitting right beside his bed, looking at him.

The beautiful woman asked him in a tone full of concern, “San-er, what happened? Did you have a nightmare?”

Yue Yang immediately shook his head. He couldn’t possibly tell the beautiful woman that he was actually so scared of himself that he woke himself up? Ah, not right, he had woken up because of his own handsomeness.

The little girl mischievously reached out her orchid-like little hands, intending to pinch Yue Yang’s nose. Seeing this, the beautiful woman hurriedly pulled her hands away. However, she had wriggled out and forced her way under Yue Yang’s blanket, wrapping around his body like an octopus. She chirped with her innocent voice, “Elder brother Xiao San, I also had a dream just now. There was a really large plum tree that had a lot of ripe, delicious plums hung on its branches. Elder brother, help me pluck the plums on the tree...”

“Preserve the plums in your dreams. Wait until it ripens even more before plucking it. Remember to give it a lot of water,” When Yue Yang replied this, the beautiful woman couldn’t help but cover her mouth and laugh heartily.

However, with the little girl's mischief, Yue Yang thought of a method to deal with his clone.

No matter what, it was all a dream. He wouldn't really die anyway, what did he have to be afraid of?

He should just ignore that clone.

When Yue Yang, who had made up his mind, slept again and entered into his dream, he found that his clone that was made of condensed energy had disappeared. Seeing this, he laughed heartily.

So it turned out that his clone could disappear. If that was the case, he should just exit from this realm of dreams whenever the Heavenly Sword Goddess creates a clone of him again.

As long as he didn't fight his clone, she wouldn't be able to do anything.

"Hahaha, a shameless person is truly unmatched!" Yue Yang laughed very happily. However, three seconds later, his complacent laughter had turned into a gulping sound.

This was because in the consciousness of his mind, a snow white, untarnished arm had reached out. With a point of the arm's fingers, countless rays of colourful lights had coagulated into a person. However, this time, it wasn't Yue Yang's duplicate, it was a

beautiful woman that looked exactly like the Heavenly Sword Goddess. She wore a skintight warrior's armour that covered her whole body, wrapping her breasts tight. The woman had a young, fresh, and innocent look that awakened Yue Yang's wolfy heart as he gulped down his saliva. As he took a second look, he saw her petite, adorable, and exquisite body, accompanied with a slim, rounded waist that begged to be embraced. Her long, beautiful legs had also inspired thousands of imaginations in Yue Yang's mind.

“Little girl, Uncle Guai is coming for you,” Yue Yang immediately threw himself towards her, shamelessly using Wei Xiao Bao's ultimate move ‘Hand of the Dragon's Claw Catching Breasts.’

(Shiro: Uncle Guai – internet slang for those type of sleazy old men luring small kids with sweets. Wei Xiao Bao – Protagonist from [a well known chinese classic](#))

“Hong”

The adorable girl sent him flying with a kick.

Apparently, she was similar to Yue Yang's clone which previously had the exact same capabilities as Yue Yang. It was just that the Heavenly Sword Goddess had changed the appearance of the clone from Yue Yang's wolfy look, to a girl with the same features as herself.

Yue Yang had not wanted to fight in the beginning, but with a cute girl standing right in front of him, how could he be accountable for his actions if he did not take liberties with her?

As for the idea to get out from this realm of dreams?

He had already thrown it far away to cloud nines. With the beauty in front of him, everything else was irrelevant.

“Happily in pain... this is the life!” Yue Yang was beaten up so badly by the beauty that he almost fell flat on the ground, but he was still successful in groping her breasts. Because of the magical, wonderful feeling that he felt in his hands in that very instant, Yue Yang was so moved, that tears streamed down his cheeks.

If the Heavenly Sword Goddess was watching the whole scene secretly, she would probably be speechless by Yue Yang’s performance.

After three days, Yue Yang, who had been beaten black and blue by the beauty, finally broke through the Innate Invisible Sword Qi Third Layer. However, he still could not take revenge for the three days of beating and push down the beauty. This was because the beauty had levelled up with him, having the same exact capabilities that he had. She then continued to beat up Yue Yang, who had tried groping her breasts and butt, until he couldn’t determine which way was north... Other than breaking through to a new realm, Yue Yang, who endured the beauty’s countless beatings, had also learned how to use the refined techniques of Innate Sword Qi and Mysterious Three Styles.

The way that the beauty had used the Innate Invisible Sword Qi was extremely exquisite and accurate. The way she used the skill in

terms of angle and control had put Yue Yang to shame.

Through the beauty, Yue Yang had learned a lot. He had also learned a new skill that he had never seen before, [Marvellous Way of the Heart]. Due to his quick improvement, Yue Yang, who could only shoot three shots of Innate Sword Qi initially, could now shoot six shots after the training in his dreams.

Yue Yang thought, he could shoot one shot when he was at the First Layer, then gained two more shots when he rose to the Second Layer. Now, he gained additional three more shot in the Third Layer...

Of course, this was only his wild guess.

What truly was happening, Yue Yang still couldn't figure out right now.

Although his number of shots had only increased to six, Yue Yang was quite satisfied with it.

He had broken through a new layer, increased the number of shots of his Sword Qi, and had the company of a beautiful girl to train with to boot. Such a happy life, if he still felt dissatisfied with it, he would probably be punished by the heavens.

“Brother, why do you look so happy?” Seeing Yue Yang's face that always had a wolfish smile, Yue Bing had even thought that he was thinking about bullying his opponents at the New Year's

Tournament. Who would have thought that his thoughts were only focused on that beauty in his dreams. Playing the sleazy old man game with the beauty had made him forget about his duties.

“That’s of course. We have to train diligently and defeat all of our enemies so that we can take back the dignity that belonged to the Fourth Branch. We have to fight to get back our happiness!” Yue Yang waved both of his hands like the war madman Adolf Hitler, motivating Yue Bing. His motivational encouragement had boosted the little girl’s morale and fighting spirit to the brim. Yue Bing adored her brother and nodded determinedly, “Yeah, I won’t let elder brother down!”

With regards to Yue Bing, who was eager to learn, whatever new comprehension Yue Yang had on beasts, or whatever beasts’ strength and weaknesses, battle strategy and cultivation techniques that he heard from the Luo Hua City Mistress before, were all imparted to Yue Bing after Yue Yang adjusted it to meet her needs and capabilities.

Yue Bing had also worked very hard and gave it her all, thus improving tremendously.

She was even more used to controlling the Hundred Year Old Treant Defender now, almost reaching the level of controlling her own hands. If her battle power was incomparable to Shen Tu Hao, who owned countless strong beasts before, right now, she had far surpassed him. Yue Yang reckoned that amongst the younger people that he had met, other than the Three Great Killing Stars Yan Po Jun, Feng Qi Sha, and Xue Tan Lang and that Heavenly Sword Goddess with a cheat-like power, it’s now Yue Bing’s turn to

catch up.

Yue Yang had not seen Yue Tian and Yue Yan until now, so he couldn't exactly estimate their strength. However, he thought that they would probably not have an easy time fighting the current Yue Bing.

Bronze-ranked Level 5 Hundred Year Old Treant Defender, he believed that the entire Yue Clan's eyes would probably pop out their sockets when they saw it.

As for the New Year's Reunion Dinner, Yue Yang didn't join in.

The substitute Clan Master, Yue Shan, had hypocritically sent a servant to invite him over, but Yue Yang rejected the offer with the reason being he was not feeling all that well.

The servant saw that Yue Yang, the brat, was so healthy that he could probably beat up a tiger, but he actually said an excuse that not even a fool would believe. The servant couldn't help but feel embarrassed for Yue Yang, thinking that if he couldn't lie, then he shouldn't lie. Saying such an excuse was simply plain stupid.

However, Yue Shan seemed to take it for real. He sent another servant with a nourishing medicine for Yue Yang, painting a picture of a noble uncle who was really concerned with his nephew.

The second day of New Years was the Yue Clan's New Year's

Tournament.

Yue Yang had been waiting impatiently for it, rolling up his sleeves, eager to get into action as he prepared to bring Yue Bing to the battle, go up on the stage and bully others.

However, when the deer-riding Fifth Elder came and said something, Yue Yang was truly speechless... Turns out that this Clan's New Year's Tournament, was not only a simple tournament within the clans member. The other three clans from the Four Great Clans would also send a representative to observe the battles. They might not participate in the battle, but they would definitely report what they have seen. This was because there were not many people in the other three clans, so they wouldn't be able to set up a Clan's Tournament. Hence, they were all here to see the excitement in the Yue Clan. Never mind if only the representatives of the Four Great Clans came, even representatives from the royalties of the Da Xia Empire also came, not wanting to fall behind. This year, it was said that the Emperor himself had been so free that his back was aching from too much sitting, so he had prepared to come over and visit too.

This news alarmed Yue Yang, could it be that that old fellow, Jun Wu You, was really going to turn up? Did he know that he was the person who had just become an Innate Ranker?

(Shiro: Jun Wu You is the name of the emperor and also a pun. It means a Worry-free Monarch)

If not for Jun Wu You's habit of coming to the Yue Clan's Tournament every three to four years, Yue Yang would probably

have immediately withdrawn from the tournament.

“San-er, I hope you will work hard and help the Third and Fourth Branch to get back at the others. However, don’t become a madman, you can beat people up, but you cannot kill. Don’t cause an unfortunate event right at the new years, otherwise...I’ve said enough, you are a smart kid who would know what to do. Fifth Elder wouldn’t say anything further. Prepare yourself, when you come to the arena later, you can ask the servants if you need anything else. I’ll first take A Xian and Little Shuang-er out. My dear, let this Fifth Elder carry you...Aiya, don’t pull my beard, you are going to pull it to the roots!” The deer-riding Fifth Elder looked like he really love little kids, even when the little girl pull at his beard, he was all smiles and chuckles.

“Prepare?” Yue Yang had actually wanted to prepare a few aphrodisiacs and pour it down to Yue Tian and Yue Yan’s mouth, so that they would do something really shameful in front of the audience later on.

“Brother, I’m a little nervous.” Yue Bing was feeling a little nervous as she tangled her hands. In the end, she couldn’t help but throw herself into Yue Yang’s embrace, seeking her brother’s consolation.

“Ah...it’s okay, don’t be nervous. I am not that scary, I’m not Uncle Guai-no, I mean, they are not that scary,” When Yue Bing, the beautiful girl, throw herself to him, Yue Yang immediately threw his hands up in the air. He consoled his sister absent-mindedly as he chanted to himself flusteredly in his heart, “I’m not a sis-con, i’m not a sis-con, i’m not a sis-con”. However, the

more he chanted, the more flustered he became. Even his forehead was damp with bullets of sweat.

“Thank you, brother, I am feeling so much better now. Aih? Brother, why are you sweating so much?” Yue Bing was pure-hearted, she never thought that her hug would wield so much power.

“The weather is too hot,” As Yue Yang wiped his sweat secretly, the north wind blew from outside the window into the room. Snow piled up on the grounds outside.

Chapter 107 – You Dare? I Will Step On Your Head!

In the Yue Clan's castle, the Clan's New Year Tournament had officially begun.

It was now Yue Yang's turn to enter the stage. The Yue Clan had already completed its grand opening ceremony. The emperor Jun Wu You and the Clan Master, Elder Yue Hai had each given a brief speech, and the various representatives had also ceremonially paid their respects to each other. Towards Yue Yang's wild and impulsive character, not to mention strangers, even the Fifth Elder and the beautiful woman were worried that he might cause trouble during the opening ceremony. Thus, they had intentionally made him and Yue Bing stay in the lounge to await their turns.

Bored, Yue Yang laid down and slept, still trying to sexually harass that big beauty in his dreams.

When Yue Yang woke up, the first round of preliminaries was already over.

Yue Bing had gone up as well, but she did not summon her Hundred Year Treant Defender out for battle. She had instead followed Yue Yang's shameless tactics that he had taught her before. She rushed towards the opponent, who was in the midst of summoning his beast, delivering a flying-kick straight to his face. This surprise attack, aside from interrupting the summon, caused the opponent's mind to suffer backlash from the failed beast summon. Weaker warriors would instantly be knocked unconscious.

This move was useless against experts who could summon quickly. It would be extremely dangerous to attempt a surprise attack on such experts; but on beginners, this was a tried and tested move.

Therefore, Yue Bing had easily achieved victory...

The crowd did not scold her. Rather, they scolded Yue Yang for having been the shameless fellow who instructed her.

Because Yue Bing had never attempted this type of sneak attack before, the only reason why she would use one this year would definitely be due to the teachings of that 'abnormal trash' brother of hers.

Yue Yang, who was now being called 'abnormal trash', due to the crazy antics he pulled recently, caused the boy from the Clan's outer circle to instantly forfeit. Who would want to fight against that demon-like abnormality? That would not be comparing notes; that was courting death!

Even when he heard from the servants that Yue Yang was thoughtlessly sleeping, the Fifth Elder did not get people to wake him.

Yue Shan and the others also agreed to let Yue Yang directly advance to fight in the second round.

The draw in the second round was quite coincidental too. The Fifth Elder, who represented Yue Yang, drew the ninth son Yue Feng.

The little genius against the abnormal trash, what would the result be?

The crowd eagerly awaited this battle.

Although the Ninth Young Master Yue Feng was only 7 years old, his successful contracting of beasts was astounding. Within half a year, it was said that he had contracted with eight strong beasts, and he was one of the most important individuals of the Four Great Sects that was being cultivated by the Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect. Yue Feng was definitely a little genius in reality, but Yue Yang on the other hand... or to be precise the tragic guy who had been replaced by Yue Yang, was a real trash. If not for Yue Yang crossing dimensions and taking the tragic guy's place, even if the tragic guy were given another ten years to practise his skills, he would not be able to win against Yue Feng.

Yue Yang walked out. The Yue Clan Castle's main plaza was extremely big. It was probably larger than a soccer stadium, and its spectator seats were completely packed with the clansmen of the Yue Clan.

On the east side, there were people with attires different from those of the Yue Clan's clansmen. They looked like the people from the Feng, Xue, and Yan Clan.

At the north grandstand, aside from Elder Yue Hai, Yue Shan, Yue Ling, and the other rankers, the most eye-catching individual was a delicate, sharp-looking, elegant middle-aged man. He wore a set of snow-white warrior's clothing with a fine jade headband on his head. Although he wore a smile on his face, his demeanour showed a kind of angerless might. Yue Yang guessed that this guy was the emperor of the Da Xia Empire, Jun Wu You. Judging from his appearance, he looked like a noble swordsman around forty years old. In reality, Jun Wu You was already a hundred and eighty this year and was a famous ranker in the Da Xia Empire. His strength was measured to be a Level 7 Intermediate 'Overlord'.

The person sitting to the right of him was Elder Yue Hai.

Elder Yue Hai was only slightly older than Jun Wu You, but he had fought for many years and his body was far too worn out. Now, he looked incomparably old, with a head of white hair that displayed exactly how old he was.

Behind Jun Wu You stood a gigantic general who wore a golden armour that covered his entire body, including his face.

He was built like a bull and was as imposing as a tiger.

This man was the commander of the Yu Lin army; a lunatic referred to by the title of 'Ten-Thousand Withered Bones'.

Sitting to the right of Jun Wu You were the two representatives from the Feng and Xue Clans. The age of those two people did not differ much from Yue Shan. They were probably the two people

who represented the masters of their houses. Since Yue Yang was transported here, he could not recognise who they were. Moving further on, was Yue Shan and a ferocious guy who was donned in blazing red clothes. His appearance was similar to Yan Po Jun's, but he was far more mature and much more powerful.

Yue Yang guessed that this guy was probably Yan Po Jun's father.

The few rows in front were the disciples that were directly related to the three families. Yue Yang saw that the ice cube guy, Xue Tan Lang, was also present. At this point of time, he was coldly staring at Yue Yang.

However, Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha did not come. The one thing that made Yue Yang most relieved, was that the imperial swordswoman was not here either.

The person who made Yue Yang's head hurt the most was the imperial swordswoman. Thankfully, his Counterfeit skill had already risen in level... He did not know if his newly increased Counterfeit skill could deceive the imperial swordswoman. Yue Yang was not certain and hoped that he could now deceive her. If he could do so, he would be able to take liberties with her when the time came, and cause her to go crazy.

“Good, very good!.”

“Xiao Jiu is the best!”

Once Yue Feng appeared on stage, he shook the entire place with his shota appearance, especially those maternal love-filled women who were the craziest. Almost everyone was cheering for him. He politely bowed towards Yue Yang who was slowly walking up the stage. Although his words were respectful, there was inevitably some traces of arrogance hidden behind them. “Brother Xiao San, please exchange pointers with me. Master and Father both reminded me to thank Brother Xiao San for giving the [Spirit Pill] to me.”

Although he did not say it, he implied that it was better for him to eat the [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill], and that Yue Yang was a publicly recognised trash and any amount of pills would be a waste on him.

Yue Feng extended his hands and summoned his grimoire.

A cheer resounded from the audience. His summoning grimoire was actually a silver grimoire. This really amazed Yue Yang.

However, Yue Yang immediately smiled.

No matter how much of a genius Yue Feng was, he could not have used his own strength to raise the bronze grimoire into a silver grimoire. Yue Bing, who had attended school for four years, only had an advanced bronze grimoire. Furthermore, he had contracted with the grimoire not long ago, how could it be possible for him to possess a silver grimoire?

The only reasonable explanation was that the Southern

Mountains Floating Mist Sect found people to challenge Yue Feng every day, intentionally allowing Yue Feng to use his summoned beasts to defeat them. This allowed battle points to be accumulated quickly.

This type of method, that pursued instant benefit, did not have any effect on the individual's cultivation. However, the Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect and the Second Branch wanted to show off this genius Yue Feng to the world as quickly as possible. They wanted the world to proclaim his prowess, and be in the limelight during the Clan's New Year Tournament. It was inevitable that that method would be employed to help Yue Feng accumulate battle points and increase the grade of his grimoire... This was a norm amongst the various great families. Initially, the various great families would seek warriors who would voluntarily become failures. They would then be used to bolster the battle points of younger generation's members who showed promise. After attaining a certain level of strength, they would then be allowed to go out to experience the real world.

Having a silver grimoire from the start would provide extremely huge advantages during the initial period.

The only flaw was that the battle points that were pumped into it were not genuine. The benefits of the ancient laws that were granted with the increase in the grimoire's grade would often be inferior, or might not even be granted.

Of course, there was only one such individual like Yue Yang who completely received the benefits from the ancient laws when the grade of the grimoire was increased. When the grimoire

contractors increased the grade of their grimoires, there was a possibility that they would not get anything. Most people would get a blank page, or a seemingly useless beast. The benefit that most people desired most was for an increase in the grade of their beast.

As for the most prized reward in the hearts of contractors, it was the evolution of their beasts, for example turning from a normal beast into a Bronze one.

Yue Yang was probably the only person in the world who had received abilities for his Guardian Beast, which was a divine gift granted by the ancient laws. If anyone else was granted one, they would be so happy that they would cry for three days and three nights...

“Wow, look! Ninth Young Master’s summoning grimoire is already a silver one! A genius! He really is a genius that does not even appear in a hundred years!”

“Ninth Young Master, do your best!”

The audience started clapping resoundingly.

Aside from rooting for Yue Feng, there were also countless curses mixed in: “Kill that trash!”; “If that trash isn’t dead, the pent up hatred that I have cannot be released!” and other similar words were frequently shouted.

Yue Yang had recently cut down many Yue Clan guards and disciples from other branches. The people who were unrestrainedly cursing him were probably the relatives or the friends of those people.

Yue Yang did not even bring Hui Tai Lang up onto the stage.

The reason was that uncontracted beasts could not be brought up to the stage. Thankfully, this rule had been set a few hundred years ago, otherwise Yue Bing would have flipped again. The ancestors of the Yue Clan were worried that it was easy for people to lose control over uncontracted beasts. When family members fought each other, they might slip and accidentally kill their kin, therefore it was banned. As for this, Yue Yang only smiled and felt that it did not matter. Since he was going to be tyrannical, then he would do it himself. Why would he even need Hui Tai Lang?

Yue Yang kicked Hui Tai Lang, who wanted to go up the stage with him, back down, then drew his crescent blade. Yue Yang, who was full of confidence, yawned: “Little Nine, you know that Brother Xiao San is trash. I hope you’ll be lenient with me. It’s fine to bully me, but at least let me leave here alive, ok?”

Countless people looked towards him with hostility. They wished that their eyes could shoot lasers and instantly kill this shameless fellow.

Yue Feng repeatedly assured that he would not dare to, but was actually calm and collected on the inside.

Since he was wearing an armor, he did not have to be afraid of the crescent blade in Yue Yang's hands. Using his little hand to press onto the book, he took a long time as he concentrated fully on summoning. A Bronze-ranked Level 3 Golden Striped War Tiger Puppet Beast was summoned.

Although he may be a genius child, he had too short of a time to cultivate.

For Yue Feng to summon the Bronze-ranked Level 3 Golden Striped War Tiger was the limit of his limits...

Yue Feng seemed to be completely drained of his energy. He was sweating profusely and gasping for breath, clutching onto the floating silver grimoire floating. The summon that exceeded his limits caused him to be exhausted.

A thunderous applause boomed from the crowds.

Being seven years old and yet was able to summon a Bronze-ranked Level 3 Golden Striped War Tiger Puppet Beast, this was an extremely astonishing feat.

Not just for normal people, even Jun Wu You and the representatives from the various families clapped in admiration.

Yue Feng's father, the Second Branch's master, Yue Ling was extremely happy.

He only lacked a note stuck to his forehead, which would have indicated: “I’m the father of this genius”. The surrounding people also stood up and congratulated him, flattering him to no end.

As for the three representatives from the Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect, aside from the elder at Level 6 [Elder], who had his eyes closed from the start and maintained his calm appearance, the other two middle-aged men at his sides, who were Level 5 [Grandmaster]s, had smiles plastered onto their faces. They constantly shook hands with the people around them. While the praises piled onto them, these two acted humbly and said: “Xiao Jiu has really worked hard, but his cultivation time was far too short and thus can only contract with Bronze-ranked beasts right now. He still needs to put in more effort in the future. Our plan is to let him contract with Silver-ranked beasts next year; then a Gold-ranked beast in five years’ time. We, the Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect, will definitely spare nothing in grooming Xiao Jiu!”

“Wow, listen to this! There’s still Silver-ranked and Gold-ranked beasts waiting for Ninth Young Master to contract with!”

“As expected of the Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect of the Four Great Sects!”

“Beat that trash to death!”

“Go War Tiger! Bite that trash to death!”

“Without that Two-headed Demon Wolf, that trash is dead for

sure. Bite him, rip his guts out!”

Yue Bing was extremely depressed and furious at those words. She felt that the Clan was far too biased. They gave her brother five, Level 1 Puppet Mice, but they gave Xiao Jiu a Bronze-ranked Level 3 Golden Striped War Tiger... This was too much. She absolutely did not believe that it was a lousy beast that her father had drawn in the lottery. It was definitely the deliberate work of the eldest and the second Clan. The Clan actually possessed so many puppet beasts; even if they had just randomly given a Level 2 Iron Bull Puppet, it would not make others so frustrated, but, they had actually given not just one, but a set of five Level 1 Puppet Mice.

She had seen people being bullied before, but not to this extent. If her brother wasn't this capable, those despicable people would definitely be snickering behind their backs.

Towards the Bronze-ranked Level 3 Golden Striped War Tiger, Yue Yang faked an extremely terrified expression.

His crescent blade was raised high into the air.

As quick as lightning, a ray of light penetrated into the air... While the remnants of the ray of light still lingered in people's eyes, the Bronze-ranked Level 3 Golden Striped War Tiger suddenly rumbled and was sent flying ten metres away by Yue Yang. It fell heavily onto the stage with huge sparks flying out of its mouth; crackling sounds echoed. At first, it looked like it was still able to climb back up, but it began walking lopsidedly as if it was drunk.

“That Bronze-ranked Level 3 Golden Striped War Tiger is so amazing! It scared the wits out of me!” Yue Yang exaggeratedly shouted and kicked down the War Tiger Puppet that was walking unsteadily.

The entire body of the tiger fell onto the ground with a resounding noise.

It had fell headfirst. Within the skull, a compressed exploding sound resonated.

The red glow in its crystallized eyes gradually weakened and finally extinguished. Everyone was flabbergasted and could not believe this. A Bronze-ranked Level 3 Golden Striped Beast was finished off just like this?

Yue Yang walked slowly towards Yue Feng with his crescent blade.

Walking in front of the terrified Yue Feng, who had just lost his shield, he showed a harmless smile. “Xiao Jiu, for Brother Xiao San who is like trash, it’s fine to bully a little. If you bully me too much, I will cry, you know?”

As he said it, Yue Feng covered his mouth, and tears started flowing from his eyes.

The crowd looked at Yue Yang angrily. They wanted to jump

onto the stage and kill this repulsively abnormal trash.

Yue Feng's father Yue Ling clenched his fists tightly. The anger in his eyes wanted to burn Yue Yang to ash.

However, Yue Bing was especially moved. She could not forget that last year at this time, the children of the eldest and second Clan banded together to bully Brother. These memories were vividly etched inside her head. Didn't this Yue Feng fellow throw firecrackers at Brother's body? If he was not given a little lesson, he would not know how vast the world was, nor how to respect other people. So what if he found people to grant him his silver grimoire? True strength does not rely on external sources. Only by working hard and cultivating could one walk on the real path of climbing and reaching the status of a peak ranker.

“Uuu, this can't be possible! My beast is a Bronze-ranked Level 3 Golden Striped War Tiger! How could you defeat it without using a beast? Physical techniques are trash; techniques can't defeat my Golden Striped War Tiger... “ Yue Feng was acting like a spoiled brat who felt wronged, and started bawling while questioning Yue Yang.

“It's a little like the Earth Splitting Slash, but it's not. It was merely a technique. Brother Hai, Xiao San's techniques are not bad at all. He has some charm inherited from his father!” Jun Wu You was smiling as he saw this. As the emperor of Da Xia Empire, he was the only emperor who thought highly of techniques. Within the entire Soaring Dragon Continent, many people insulted him, saying that he was an idiot emperor. If not for him being a Level 7 [Overlord] with frightening strength, the various city masters

would have long since revolted against him.

“This fellow has endured silently, and not revealed his secret for many years. I misjudged him too.” Elder Yue Hai also nodded his head silently.

“...” The expert representatives from the Four Great Families saw Yue Yang’s techniques. Their faces were also a little gloomy.

They absolutely did not hope for a second Yue Qiu to appear.

The Third Young Master, who was the trashiest in the Soaring Dragon Continent, transformed completely today. It seemed like he had always been cultivating the techniques of his father, Yue Qiu, and he had a tinge of maturity in him now.

Xue Tan Lang furrowed his eyebrows as he saw this. He was not surprised that Yue Yang possessed such power. This was because when they went into the Demonic Abyss, this trash Third Young Master could even bring back his entire team of trash safely after fighting a Demon General... However, he felt that Yue Yang was not just a simple person who possessed only techniques. A ranker who only possessed techniques would definitely have a difficult time killing a Demon General.

Many Demon Generals could only be killed with beasts... For example the Death and Cloud Demon Generals had no material form. No matter how good a person’s technique was, it would be useless against them.

This trash Third Young Master definitely possessed beasts. He had just not showed them yet.

Xue Tan Lang was excited and his heart was full of anticipation.

How much of this fellow's strength was still concealed? He had to see clearly before fighting him to the death.

Yue Yang did not care how others looked at him. He came up to the stage to be a tyrant and score one for the tragic guy and the beautiful woman. He was acting as the bad guy, and thus was not polite towards Yue Feng at all. He smiled and said, "Xiao Jiu, your mom is calling you to go back and eat!"

He kicked Yue Feng, the genius in everyone's eyes, flying.

This exaggerated movement by Yue Yang thoroughly caused the two beast grandmasters from the Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect to be infuriated. They flew out, one holding onto Yue Feng who had been kicked into midair, the other jumping up on stage, rebuking Yue Yang, "Trash Xiao San, you really have guts. Yue Feng is our Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect's important grooming disciple, yet you dare to be so evil against him?"

This grandmaster did not allow any explanation. He instantly summoned his beast in midair and allowed it to merge into his body, turning into a wolfman with sharp claws.

The claws ripped the heavens and the earth, and covered the entire sky.

Finally, as if a celestial wolf had descended to earth, he pounced towards Yue Yang's head.

(Ignis: The Sirius star is known as the star of the “celestial wolf” in Chinese astronomy. The author probably meant it literally as a giant wolf pouncing on him)

“Second Slash, Heaven and Earth Collapse!” Yue Yang threw the crescent blade towards the wolfman grandmaster in a spiralling manner. He then drew the magic blade Hui Jin from his waist, gathering his Innate Qi. A deep, golden sun appeared in his hands and blew up in the chest of that wolfman grandmaster. The claws of the grandmaster were dangerously close to Yue Yang's head... However, he would never let it have a chance to get even a single inch closer.

The grandmaster let out a miserable howl, and started spurting fresh blood from his mouth while falling backwards.

After all, they were rankers who were Level 5 [Grandmasters]. When the wolfman grandmaster landed on the ground, he instantly rebounded and prepared to dodge Yue Yang's blade edge, awaiting the assistance of his companion.

However, his thinking was too ideal.

From the sky above, a foot heavily trampled on his spine, causing his entire body to be stomped back into the stone floor of the stage. Yue Yang rampantly stamped on the head of the wolfman grandmaster and looked down at him with the gaze of the reaper: “Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect? That scared me to death. You know all too well that I’m trash, and I have a particularly little amount of courage. If you scare me like this, won’t I get frightened to death? Yue Bing, look, a Level 5 [Grandmaster]! Oh dear, a Level 5 [Grandmaster]! He dared to launch a surprise attack under the eyes of the audience against this trash. Do you really want to beat people to death?”

Chapter 108 – Let Your Enemy Shudder In Front Of You!

“San-er, you should not kill.” Fifth Elder hurriedly shouted when he saw Yue Yang lifting his hand up with the magic blade Hui Jin gripped tightly.

“Sorry fifth elder. In my childhood, I was slapped by Second Uncle. From that day forth, my hearing has been quite bad. Did you say anything? I could not hear you.” Yue Yang stepped onto the werewolf grandmaster’s head, forcing it down inch by inch. In the end, his head was entirely stuck into the stone floor of the stage.

The other grandmaster saw this and shivered uncontrollably in fright.

He hurriedly carried Yue Feng away, afraid that he himself might meet the same fate.

Although that elder, who was a Level 6 [Elder], was Yue Feng’s main teacher, Yue Yang was surprised by his actions. He had watched his disciple being attacked, but his expression did not change at all. Instead he remained calm and stayed seated.

As for the werewolf grandmaster being humiliated and having his head stepped on by Yue Yang, he had also ignored it.

Yue Ling hurriedly stood up, his face a little nervous. However,

seeing that his son had only fainted and was not in any danger, he let out a sigh of relief in his heart.

He took a look at his father and then at the emperor Jun Wu You of the Da Xia Empire. It seemed that neither had the intention to stop Yue Yang at all. He hurriedly sat down and did not go to help the werewolf grandmaster.

The werewolf grandmaster had fallen into a deep trouble. He was all by himself and without help.

He dug his two claws deep into the ground against the slab. When the opportunity arose, he planned to use brute force to shake off Yue Yang's leg that was stepping on his head with a weight that seemed to be more than a thousand kilograms.

He had no expectations of defeating this abnormal trash anymore, he only hoped to get away from the humiliation of getting his head stepped on. As one of the Grandmaster's of the Four Great Sects, being stepped on his head by someone from the younger generation in front of Jun Wu You and the representatives of the Four Major Clans and stuck down into the ground where he couldn't even move if he wanted to, was really his lifetime's biggest embarrassment and humiliation. If it was possible, he would like to immediately kill this brat... But, he couldn't even struggle free from his grasp right now.

While his head was being stepped on, the werewolf grandmaster dug his claws into the stone, vigorously trying to straighten his back and support his body. Despite his bones emitting a series of cracking sounds, he was still incapable of struggling free.

Yue Yang's foot was weighing down on him like a huge mountain.

Normal warriors were aghast at this sight, thinking that this trash was indeed abnormal. It was no wonder that he could fight his way into the Yue Clan Castle with just a sword in hand.

As for warriors that were powerful enough, most of them were trying to figure out the "Second Slash: Heaven and Earth Collapse" that Yue Yang had displayed earlier. Although it was unlike Yue Qiu's sword techniques, its strength and intention was real. Could it be that this young fellow had modified and improved his father's techniques? Or had it mutated due to him not having achieved his father's maturity?

The crowd did not understand and only hoped to get the chance to see it again, clearly this time. That was the main reason why nobody stepped forward to stop Yue Yang's unbridled provocations.

Upon seeing the werewolf grandmaster struggling with all he had, Yue Yang coldly laughed and reduced the force of his leg by a little.

When he felt that the force on his head had lessened, the werewolf grandmaster felt a great delight.

Could it be that the brat's strength had waned?

It was time for his retaliation. However, once the werewolf grandmaster raised his head just a little, another huge burst of force fell. With a bang, his head was once again barbarically stomped into the ground by Yue Yang. It was only now that the werewolf grandmaster understood; this brat was actually intentionally teasing him in front of the masses and was causing him to suffer an even greater humiliation.

He was, after all, a Level 5 [Grandmaster]; it could not be that he had to plead for mercy under the stares of the masses?

At the thought of this, the werewolf grandmaster's pupils became wet with humiliation.

He could not do so; he was an instructing grandmaster of the Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect.

He could lose his own face, but could not tarnish the prestige of Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect of the four big sects.

Would he really be killed by this brat just like that? No, he still had his beast; why not stake everything against him? The werewolf grandmaster was not resigned to this and prepared to summon a beast in order to reverse the situation. Yue Shan's voice suddenly resonated, "Nephew San-er. You cannot be disrespectful towards our honored guests from the Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect. Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect is one of the four big sects. Their older generations possess many capable people and deserve our's, the younger generation's respect.

Moreover, Xiao Jiu is a disciple of the Southern Mountains Floating Mist Sect. If you injured his instructing grandmaster, I'm afraid that Xiao Jiu's learning would also be affected. Nephew San-er, listen to your First Uncle's advice and let the grandmaster go without delay."

"....." The werewolf grandmaster rained curses in his heart. You obviously knew that Yue Yang, who had been treated unfairly, had a huge resentment towards Yue Feng. Yet you still had to say it this way, isn't this just reminding him to kill me?

"Since Big Uncle has passed the order, your nephew shall accept the order and kill this swindler who will hamper Xiao Jiu's future." Yue Yang slashed his demonic blade against the back of the werewolf grandmaster, causing blood to splash out. The werewolf grandmaster was initially scared out of his wits. However, when he felt the pain, he realised that despite the heavy, superficial injury, he was not in mortal danger. He instantly understood that this brat was not easy to deal with; it seemed that the reason why he was not killed was actually due to Yue Yang wanting to borrow the opportunity to take revenge against his first uncle Yue Shan.

"No no no, San-er had misunderstood. My intentions are for you to release the grandmaster as soon as possible." Yue Shan advised Yue Yang with seemingly incomparable sincerity.

"Yes, First Uncle, do not worry. Your nephew will definitely heed your orders and humiliate this swindler, who is not in the least capable, yet has pretended to have the ability."

He repeatedly slashed and blood splattered.

However, none of the slashes were fatal.

The crowd was perspiring in madness. It seemed that this little lunatic has decided to meet his big uncle Yue Shan head-on.

It looked like this lunatic was prepared to wash his title of trash away in front of the entire Yue Clan. He also wanted to demand back everything that he had lost... Towards Yue Yang's actions, many of the other clans secretly rejoiced. Yue Clan had too many geniuses and was also flourishing in numbers. If not for them having internal strifes and terrible power struggles, the Yue Clan would probably be the strongest amongst the four big clans. The fiercer and more intense the conflict between Yue Clan's Third Young Master and the Yue Clan became, the better it was for the other clans. If this Yue Clan's Third Young Master also died early like his father Yue Qiu or was eliminated in the midst of the clan's power struggles, it would probably be the best outcome.

"San-er. It looks like you really misunderstood my intentions." Yue Shan acted like he was grieved beyond compare. With such a great acting skills, even the winner of the Oscars did not have the qualifications to carry his shoes.

"Please don't talk anymore. The more you plead for me, the more terribly I will be beaten by him." The werewolf grandmaster was extremely infuriated inside.

The werewolf grandmaster had so many grievances that he

couldn't count speak out. He felt that if Yue Shan was sincere in saving him, why didn't he just come to the stage and blow this brat away with a punch?

Of course, before either the emperor of Da Xia Empire Jun Wu You or the elder Yue Hai speak, he wouldn't dare to rebuke Yue Shan or the Yue Clan. Afterall, he had gone against the rules of the battle and went up to aid Yue Feng. That was why he ended up being painfully beaten by this abnormal trash.

Even normal warriors felt that the werewolf grandmaster deserved to be beaten up, much less Jun Wu You or elder Yue Hai.

Even if he had wanted to shield Yue Feng, he should have considered his own strength. Even Xiao Jiu's master and his father did not react, why would he, a beast instructing grandmaster, rush up?

It was fine if it was just rushing up to mediate. But he had even dared to attempt a sneak attack in the face of so many rankers?

This little lunatic had just recently fought his way into the Yue Clan Castle and nobody could stop his onslaught. If not for the head of the family, elder Yue Hai, stepping in personally and controlling the situation, a huge amount of blood might have been spilled. For a little lunatic like him brutally beating up an opponent that had gone against the rules, would he be willing to negotiate with anyone?

Only one sentence could describe this werewolf grandmaster:

He's seeking his own death.

“Stop it immediately. San er, listen to everybody. You can only hit your opponent during the competition and killing is not allowed here. You have already won. Quickly come down so that Yue Bing can go up for her turn.” Fifth Grandfather knew that Yue Yang was confronting Yue Shan and Yue Ling. But they were as crafty as foxes, so they would definitely not be fooled by this plot. If this carries on, there would be no way of salvaging the situation.

“Yes, yes. Nephew, you should not show disrespect in front of the Emperor and the Clan Master.” Yue Feng's father, Yue Ling also stood up, playing the ‘good-guy’ role.

“I can't hear anything. What are you all saying?” Yue Yang intensely stomped down onto the werewolf grandmaster's back, as if he was stepping on a shameless toad.

“A Xian, he listens to you so advise him. No matter what, you have to quickly get him down.” Fifth Grandfather turned towards the beautiful woman and pleaded.

“San-er, come down,” the beautiful woman initially would not bother about Yue Yang's matters, but she could not reject the elder's plea.

“Yes. Only my Fourth Mother speaks loudly enough. I could hear clearly as soon as she spoke.” Yue Yang relieved the force of his leg, carrying the werewolf grandmaster up. He tidied up the torn clothes of the werewolf grandmaster and said in a sincere tone,

”Grandmaster, please forgive a trash like me. You are a Level 5 ranker and also an instructing grandmaster of the Floating Mist Sect, while I am just a trash that anyone can bully easily. Aside from Fourth Mother who dotes on me, there is nobody else who cares for me. Please be magnanimous and let me off. Things such as the medical fees for you beating me up, slashing my back and stepping on my head, I will not dare to mention it at all. It all can only be blamed on the fact that i’m a piece of trash. You see, I am now drenched in blood and my clothes are in pieces. I’m in such a sorry state, so could you please spare my life and allow me to go back down and reunite with my family?”

“....” The werewolf grandmaster did not cry but he knew that the expression on his face was worse than a crying one.

If he could, he would rather smash his own head and die.

However, his life was now still in the hands of this lunatic and he could not do anything.

Even if he wanted to commit suicide, he was afraid that he had to wait for Yue Yang to finish speaking. The werewolf grandmaster only hoped that he could pass out but he could not do so no matter how he tried...

Yue Yang let go of the werewolf grandmaster and waved away his hands. “Thank you grandmaster for sparing my life. I knew from the start that you who is drenched in blood...ah no...such an impressive grandmaster like you, will definitely not pick on such a weakling like me. Thank you grandmaster, I will now send the grandmaster down the stage.”

With a kick, he sent the grandmaster flying over ten metres as he hummed, “I’ll send you away, thousand miles away”. He was by the side of the beautiful woman in a jiffy and appeared like an obedient child. He bowed courteously and said:” Fourth Mother, I have returned. It was fortunate that everybody had pleaded for me and that the grandmaster was benevolent enough to spare my life. It was only due to this that I escaped from danger. I realised my mistakes and I do not dare to not listen to you again.”

(Ignis: I’ll send you away, thousand miles away – is the chorus for [Qian Li Zhi Wai](#), a song by Jay Chou and Fei Yu Qing)

“You silly child,” the beautiful lady understood that Yue Yang was purposely trying to make her look important with his words. She was moved to tears at this instant.

“....” The crowd did not know what to say as they looked at the weird actions of this kid.

While it was crazy for him to be so confrontational in front of everybody, he acted logically the entire time. Be it in scheming or in his words, there was not a trace of him losing himself in aggression. But his actions were not logical either, since he had overestimated himself and made an enemy out of everyone. He was even bold enough to confront the Southern Mountain Hidden Mist Sect, one of the Four Great Sects.

While he went against his clan and was a rebel by being disobedient towards his elders, he was incomparably filial towards

his Fourth Mother.

It was to the point that everything he had done was to raise the importance of his Fourth Mother.

There were so many contradictions with regards to this little lunatic.

For this kid who had the imbalanced mixture of madness and logic, rebelliousness and piety, he was a weird person indeed.

“Brother Hai. Your clan’s Third Young Master is really interesting and pretty good. He is more interesting than his father who had that stubborn attitude. If only I had such a filial son, how good would that be.” Jun Wu You burst into laughter and patted elder Yue Hai’s shoulder.

“Isn’t Princess Qian Qian very filial?” Elder Yue Hai only laughed indifferently and looked at Yue Yang with an odd gaze. It could be that he was reminded of his late son Yue Qiu whom he felt the most pleased and proud of before. His expression was a little solemn. Jun Wu You’s expression suddenly changed and became as solemn as elder Yue Hai. “It is a pity that girl is not male. Such a pity.”

“Yes, it’s a pity” Although elder Yue Hai said that it was a pity, it was unclear if he meant it towards Princess Qian Qian or his son Yue Qiu who had already died fighting in battle.

Yue Tian, Yue Yan and the others looked at Yue Yang from afar. Although Yue Yang had been very showy with his techniques, they were still very confident that they would be able to defeat Yue Yang. There were some beasts that could be used against people who only fought with physical skills, and both of them had such beasts in their arsenal.

Furthermore, they were unlike Yue Yang who could only summon one beast. They had gone through many years of training.

Other than the Three Great Killing Stars, Yue Tian and Yue Yan did not feel that there would be anyone that could be their opponents.

This trash Third Young Master?

Although he was extremely skilled in physical skills, wouldn't he be tired in the end? With just the grimoire that he only contracted half a year ago, that contained zero beasts inside, how could he possibly be their opponent? Furthermore, after getting those things three days ago, this trash Third Young Master was doomed to be defeated by their hands. They let him be arrogant now, so that they would receive more honour when they defeat him later. The higher he rose up now, the harder he would fall later on.

With regards to Yue Tian and Yue Yan's hateful thoughts, Yue Yang only laugh brilliantly.

He believed that the reason why these two people were so calm

and collected was because they had a way to deal with him.

However, unfortunately, they didn't know that his skill was Innate-ranked, and that he did not have the need to use any beasts. Let alone Innate-ranked skills, Yue Yang was really looking forward to what kind of expressions would they have when he released the Barbarian Cow Shadow during their battle later on. If he summoned the Bloody Queen and slaughtered all of their beasts completely, leaving them with nothing at the end of the day, what kind of wonderful expressions would they have on their faces?

In front of the Yue Clan Castle, the reason why Yue Yang stopped fighting, stopped trying to do a death-match with Yue Shan, was because he was afraid that Yue Tian and Yue Yan would be so scared that they'd forfeit their match.

They have been arrogant for far too long...

Yue Yang decided to eliminate them amongst the ranks of the genius, talented younger generation, leaving them with nothing at all.

Thus, he had endured his anger until this moment, the Clan's New Year's Tournament.

He planned to violently bully them in front of the public during the tournament, and leave everyone dumbstruck and speechless while they watch them return to mediocrity, crying pitifully.

“Brother, it’s my turn now. I’ll definitely defeat them with everything you’ve taught me.” Yue Bing clenched her hands into fists. Helping her brother raise the prestige of their entire clan was her greatest wish. No matter who the opponent in front of her was, she would be merciless. She had to achieve the smoothest and most enjoyable victory to show her brother. It would be just like she had given him a gift for the New Year’s.

“I understand, my sister is really the best. Even if there were any dogs looking down on you, it wouldn’t change this fact. You should tell them what the word genius really means. Go, Bing-er, and let all of your enemies shudder in front of you!” With Yue Yang’s motivation, Yue Bing’s eyes glowed with a warm light, burning brightly like a sun.

“Yes, Brother. I won’t disappoint you.” Yue Bing’s fists clenched even tighter. She gave a loud shout, her lovable cry ringing through the air and soaring up towards the heavens.

Chapter 109 – The Craziest Battle!

It was Yue Bing's turn to fight. However it turned out that all the participants from the extended family, who had been organised as her opponents, had all withdrawn from the match. Therefore, her opponent right now was the Sixth Young Master, Yue Bao.

Yue Bao was Yue Shan's third son, born after Yue Tian and Yue Ting. However, he wasn't as well-known as his brother, Yue Tian, and he was also unlike his brother Yue Ting, who entered the palace to work at a young age, becoming the princess' personal guard. Yue Bao had always stayed within the Yue Clan and was also the one who had bullied the pitiful guy the most and the worst. Unlike Yue Tian and Yue Yan, who plotted in secret or bullied by ridiculing, Yue Bao was often the brainless brawn who was responsible for beating Yue Yang up. Of course, Yue Bao wasn't exactly an idiot. On the contrary, he was very cunning. It was just that he had felt secure because he had his family's backing and never thought that the pitiful guy would have such a large turnaround in his life.

If he were to go up against the current Yue Yang, Yue Bao would definitely not dare to fight him.

However, against Yue Bing, he was fully confident that he would win.

He had the assurance that he had Yue Bing's Treant in the palm of his hands. Plant-type beasts? Those were the weakest type of beasts and were the most easily bullied.

Yue Yang observed that this Yue Bao didn't really look like Yue Shan, who was his father. Although his looks were not too bad, he had a sharp, crooked nose, thin lips, and narrow eyes. He looked a bit like a villain, an appearance that did not endear him to people's affection. In reality, this brat had a really narrow and petty mind, and was actually vengeful, fickle, and treacherous. Amongst the Young Masters in the Yue Clan, he was the most hateful one.

"Seventh Sister, Sixth Brother is slow-witted and can't compare to a genius like you. I hope that you will have mercy on me and not let me lose too badly." Yue Bao hypocritically, but modestly saluted.

"I have already promised Third Brother that I will fight to the best of my ability no matter who my opponent is. I will never have mercy on you," Yue Bing coldly humphed. She definitely would not fall for her opponent's hypocritical act. Her will and resolution remained strong.

"You really think you can defeat me?" When Yue Bao heard her words, he started laughing out loud.

Abruptly, his face darkened as his smile disappeared, "Don't be too arrogant! Do you think with just your stupid plant-type Treant, you would be able to fight on equal grounds with me? What a joke!"

Yue Bing completely ignored him as she closed her eyes and began to meditate.

She wanted to reach an optimal state and defeat this extremely annoying Sixth Brother. As long as she used what her brother had taught her earlier, she would definitely shock everyone in the whole clan to the point where their eyeballs would almost pop out. She wanted to show her brother the results of his tutelage and her diligent training, and at the same time, give her mother the ultimate surprise.

Amongst the clansmen, no one looked favourably upon Yue Bing. She was indeed a genius, but plant-type beasts were simply too weak.

As long as Yue Bao managed to summon his Iron Puppet, it should be able to defeat her Treant easily.

And if Yue Bao summoned another beast with a fire attribute, then Yue Bing's Treant would definitely lose... Yue Bao's Guardian Beast, Fire Fox, had already reached bronze-rank level 3, and was well known in the clan as a pyromaniac. Since Yue Bao could control his beast freely, Yue Bing's Treant's chances of winning were close to zero. Let alone others, even the Fifth Elder, who sided with the Fourth Branch, was not optimistic about Yue Bing's chances at victory.

“This is to prove it to the audience!” Seeing Yue Bing closing her eyes in meditation, Yue Bao summoned a silver grimoire. Pointing at Yue Bing, a slim, red figure with a large fiery tail charged right at her, launching a surprise attack to break Yue Bing's meditation. If that happened, her mental concentration would receive a heavy blow and she would probably lose consciousness.

Previously in Yue Bing's first match, she had used a surprise attack and immediately knocked a guy from the extended family unconscious.

Right now, Yue Bao was obviously copying her tactics and used it against her instead.

But Yue Bing, with her eyes still closed and seemingly lost in meditation, extended her beautiful hands lightly in front of her.

An advanced bronze-ranked grimoire was immediately summoned, and a Halo Shield erected just in time, launching the red figure into the air. Seeing that his surprise attack had failed, Yue Bao ordered his Fire Fox, that had been thrown into the air, to shoot a ball of fire. He understood Yue Bing's battle tactics very well. In the next moment, she would definitely summon her Treant, and this ball of fire would be there just in time to attack the Treant's head that was full of leaves and branches...

The next step would be very simple. He would only need to order his Fire Fox to parade around the arena and wait for the Treant to be burnt to death.

If he saw that the Treant wasn't burnt enough, he could make his Fire Fox spit another fireball.

Thinking about this, a treacherous smile appeared on Yue Bao's face.

“Boom!”

A deafening, explosive sound suddenly resounded in the arena. Everyone in the audience were shocked. What had actually happened?

A gigantic figure suddenly rose into the the sky above.

Its two arms that were spread wide apart almost covered the entire sky.

The Fire Fox still wagged its tail complacently, spitting fireballs down below. Little did it realize that there was a huge palm swinging down towards its forehead. Like a squished pellet, the Fire Fox crashed into the slab heavily with a loud boom, embedding deep into the the hard, stone surface. A huge, green, mountain-like figure then appeared. Just in time, its two legs stepped on the Fire Fox's head, which had just peeked out, hence burying it even deeper into the stone slab.

It was only then that the audience finally saw it.

This was a giant Treant that was more than 6 meters tall. Both of its hands were filled with branches and leaves. Its tree-palms were as large as a King's parasol.

The black-coloured tree trunk looked as solid and hard as steel, decorated with powerful looking muscles. It looked extremely powerful and shocking. Every single joint was as sharp as a thorn,

and the green eyes on its huge face were burning with an extremely angry expression.

“Ah, what’s this thing?” Most of the audience couldn’t recognise Yue Bing’s beast. It looked a little like a Treant, but wasn’t it too big?

“It’s a Hundred Year Old Treant Defender...” There were also some Rankers who recognised the beast, and when they recognised it, they were shocked beyond compare.

“Bronze-ranked level 5,” Even the true Rankers who were seated amongst the audience, such as Jun Wu You and Elder Hai, twitched their expressions a little. Yue Shan, Yue Ling, and the three representatives from the three other Great Clans were so shocked, that they immediately stood up, staring intently at this Bronze-ranked level 5 Hundred Year Old Treant Defender. Their expressions were filled with disbelief. They all knew that levelling up plant-type beasts was extremely difficult. Plant-type beasts were beasts that were the slowest to grow and the weakest in the beginning. Their slow growth rate was the biggest weakness for plant-type beasts. At the same level, almost no beast-type or bird-type beasts would suffer great losses when fighting a plant-type beast.

Previously, Yue Bing who had managed to train her Treant to Bronze-ranked level 3 was already perceived as a genius by others.

Although it was hard for plant-type beasts to grow, the power that they had after levelling would definitely be greater than beast-type and bird-type beasts that were of the same level.

It was already amazing for Yue Bing to raise her Treant to Bronze-ranked level 3. Now that she had raised it to Bronze-ranked level 5, it was practically an inconceivable improvement. Furthermore, she even evolved her Treant into a Hundred Year Old Treant Defender with a special evolution, which was a prerequisite for evolving it into a Thousand Year Old Treant General and Ten Thousand Year Old Treant Emperor. Her future was immeasurable.

This girl, how could she have done this?

“It’s impossible, impossible. Her Treant was only a Bronze-ranked level 3 Treant just one month ago. How could it have levelled up twice in just a month, and even undergone a special evolution, turning into a Hundred Year Old Treant Defender? That’s impossible!” Yue Yan stood up and cried out emotionally. He couldn’t believe the facts that had been laid before him.

“...” Yue Tian didn’t speak up, but his complexion had become really bad.

Yue Bing had always battled alone. She had had neither her family’s support, nor a friend’s help. She even fell victim to traps and bullying a lot of times, hence it was already a miracle that her Treant could reach Bronze-ranked level 3.

How could her Treant have evolved into a Hundred Year Old Treant Defender in such a short period of time?

Could this be because of the abnormal trash's guidance?

Yue Tian looked towards Yue Yang and observed him closely. Yue Yang pretended not to notice him and dug his ears with his little finger. He even whistled leisurely, as if showing an appearance of "Could you please not be such an idiot?". Yue Tian's humphed loudly through his nose as he turned away from Yue Yang, returning his gaze to Yue Bing's Hundred Year Old Treant Defender in the arena. Yue Tian started to plan out different methods to figure out how to face Yue Bing in his heart.

"Sister is simply too awesome. This is really great!" The little girl was the master of Fearlessness. Seeing the gigantic Hundred Year Old Treant Defender, she didn't feel an ounce of fear, she was cheering and clapping her hands instead.

"Bing-er, this child... Why didn't she, why didn't she tell me about this?" The beautiful woman was extremely moved in her heart.

Not only her son had improved a lot, even her daughter had also worked hard to improve.

The two siblings were always looked down upon by the members of the clan and were backstabbed so many times. Today, they could finally pay back all the enmity that they had towards all of the clan's people.

Be resolved! Although her two children weren't born with a silver spoon in their mouths, they were extremely sensible. They

even improved so much that they reached such a point all for today. Seeing such a huge improvement in both of her children, Fourth Mother thought that even if she died, she could die peacefully. Tears flowed down the beautiful woman's face without her realizing it, but those tears were definitely not because she was sad. It was because she couldn't stop the joy in her heart, and ended up crying tears of joy...

“This is nothing. Even if it's a big Treant, it's still useless.” Yue Bao's face was distorted badly as he ordered his Fire Fox to use its [Earth Drilling] ability.

Even in stone, the Fire Fox could still smoothly escape from under the Treant's feet.

It moved along the arena's ground and escaped.

Rumble...

The Hundred Year Old Treant Defender raised its gigantic arms and pounded the arena with its fist, smashing the arena's stone slabs and making the Fire Fox confused and disoriented.

It shot out a sharp thorny branch which dug into the ground, splitting the stone slabs apart. When the thorny branch came out again, it had penetrated the Fire Fox's body, holding its suspended body in the air. If the Fire Fox wasn't Yue Bao's Guardian Beast, it would definitely have died.

Yue Bing controlled the Hundred Year Old Treant Defender in her mind to grab the Fire Fox's tails and raise it up high.

Then, she ordered it to smash it to the ground violently.

The Fire Fox didn't even have the time to cry out as it turned into golden rays of light and returned to Yue Bao's grimoire...

"Don't think that you can defeat me just like this. Dream on." Yue Bao immediately summoned an extremely heavyweight, four-meter high Battle Mammoth. Although it wasn't a bronze-ranked beast, it was still level 5. He planned to use this humongous beast as a meat shield to fight against the Hundred Year Old Treant Defender, then attack it with his secret weapon... That Saw-toothed Wheel Puppet, that was made especially to counter Treants, was the nemesis of all Treants. No matter how strong a Treant was, under its rotating wheels, it would definitely be defeated.

Seeing the Battle Mammoth and the Saw-toothed Wheel Puppet rushing towards her, Yue Bing coldly humphed, "This move is now useless against me!"

She raised her hands and immediately, a bunch of thistles and thorns burst from the ground.

Although the thistles and thorns couldn't bind the Battle Mammoth's humongous body, it successfully locked one of the mammoths' legs down.

The charging mammoth immediately stumbled.

Although the thistles and thorns had been torn off from the impact, the mammoth's humongous body had lost its balance and it fell down to the ground with a loud boom.

On the ground, no one knew when or how they got there, but an area of 1 meter had already been filled with sharp thorns. When the mammoth fell down, every single thorn pierced into the mammoth's body. The Battle Mammoth cried out painfully as it struggled to get up, its body covered with the Treant's thorns.

Seeing that the mammoth had suffered a grave injury, Yue Bao immediately tried to unsummon it, thinking of recalling it back into the grimoire.

Who would have thought that the Battle Mammoth would let out a cry before it suddenly fell to the ground.

"This is impossible. It couldn't have died just like that. My Battle Mammoth is a beast with the strongest vitality, how could it die with just a fall? This is definitely impossible." Yue Bao almost went crazy. Fire Fox was his Guardian Beast, so it wouldn't really die, but the Battle Mammoth could. Since he had failed to recall it, this would mean the Battle Mammoth had truly died, he didn't even have the chance to bring it to the Beast Medical Hall anymore.

"It's poison." Seeing this, Yue Tian felt a cold breath blowing in his heart.

“You are saying that Yue Bing could bring out her [Intense Poison] Inherent Skill through the Treant’s thorns?” Yue Yan clenched his fists tightly, trying to clamp down on the fear in his heart with all his might.

“It’s not like that. It’s the thistles and thorns. When the thistles and thorns wounded its body, [Intense Poison] had already entered the Battle Mammoth’s body. Otherwise, the Battle Mammoth’s skin wouldn’t be pricked so easily by the thorns, and it wouldn’t die,” Yue Ling patted his son’s Yue Yan’s shoulders a little and warned lightly, “Yan-er, when you fight against Yue Bing, you must keep her Treant at a distance. Use long range fire attacks, that would be the best method.”

“Spitting High Temperature Flame Shot!” The method that Yue Bao was currently using was indeed that method.

The Saw-toothed Wheel spat out a flaming dragon while its other arms started rotating at a frightening speed. The saws on its wheels had turned into a frightening tree-cutting machine.

When a Treant caught fire, it would immediately be in panic. Yue Bing would lose her control over it, so the next plan of attack was to slice the Treant right down the middle with the rotating saw wheel.

Amongst all puppet-type beasts, Saw-toothed Wheel Puppets were specially made to counter Treants. It was so effective, that it was extremely disadvantageous for Treants to ever meet one. The only weakness it had was that it had to replenish its energy and change its gears once it had unleashed its attack. However, Yue Bao

didn't care about much anymore, he just wanted revenge. He wanted to use the Saw-toothed Wheel Puppet to kill this Treant, then kill Yue Bing. Otherwise, he would probably explode with hatred and anger.

Yue Yang who was standing below the arena, sent a hand gesture to Yue Bing to finish the battle.

Seeing that, Yue Bing grasped his intention and nodded. She ordered the Hundred Year Old Treant Defender to leap up high..."Boom"! It trampled the Saw-toothed Wheel Puppet with the entire force of its body, trampling it to pieces. Parts of the Saw-toothed Wheel Puppet flew about, scattering like fireworks.

Countless roots spread out from the Hundred Year Old Treant Defender's body, tightly twining around the Saw-toothed Wheel Puppet's body.

The Saw-toothed Wheel Puppet couldn't even budge an inch as its internal parts produced a series of "Ka ka ka" sounds.

The Hundred Year Old Treant Defender then raised both of its humongous hands and grabbed the Saw-toothed Wheel Puppet's humongous metal head. It twisted its head ruthlessly, pinching its whole head off. In just a moment, sparks of fire spurted out from the Saw-toothed Wheel Puppet's neck as buzzing of electricity resounded.

"Peng." The Hundred Year Old Treant Defender dropped the metal head onto the ground, then raised its tree legs and stomped

on it heavily.

The Saw-toothed Wheel Puppet was immediately destroyed, thoroughly finished.

As every single one of Yue Bao's summoned beasts had died, his Halo Shield disappeared. He looked at the Hundred Year Old Treant Defender and was extremely terrified. Looking at it raising its tall arms, he immediately shrieked loudly as his pants became wet. His eyes turned white and he immediately fainted from fright. Yue Bing did not order the Hundred Year Old Treant Defender to kill Yue Bao. Instead, she ordered it to stretch out one of its arms, that was even thicker than a normal tree's trunk, and swung it, swatting Yue Bao out of the arena as if he was a fly.

"Brother Hai, this young lady of your family is also pretty good! Brambles, tree's thorns, poison, and coiling roots. Not many elites have all of these skills. In the future, I reckon that whoever fights against her will probably die of depression. Haha, I like this young lady. How about I adopt her as my daughter? No, I cannot mix up the seniority in the family. How about I adopt her as my granddaughter?" Da Xia empire's emperor, Jun Wu You, laughed as he spoke to the Clan Master Yue Hai. It was a common knowledge in the empire that the emperor was one that did not behave like his position indicated he should. However, Jun Wu You's position was sturdy and unbreakable, he had been the emperor incumbent for over a hundred years. Even until now, there was still no one who could shake his position.

"Bing-er's fate reading is not that good, this has really put her at a disadvantage." Elder Yue Hai was also overjoyed. He would never

have thought that other than Yue Yang, Yue Bing would also give him such a big surprise.

“Elder Hai, every genius of your family is stronger than the one before. We, the three clans can’t even compare to you. It’s really envious...” The three representatives from the other clans immediately congratulated Elder Yue Hai one by one.

“It’s my son’s bad luck. Aih, they could have been a perfect couple,” The Feng Clan’s representative, Feng Clan Master Feng Xiao Yun said as he looked at Yue Bing. Remembering his son, who died instantly at the hands of a Golden King Beast during his training, he couldn’t help but to let out a long sigh. It turned out that other than Feng Qi Sha, the Feng Clan Master also had hopes on his son. Who would have thought that his son would meet with such a disaster...

“Maybe there was a mistake in the fate reading. How about asking the Grandmaster of the kingdom to read it again?” A few clans members asked.

Where else could they find such a good daughter-in-law like Yue Bing?

If it was really a mistake in the fate readings, if the other clans could connect to the Yue Clan through marriage and take this little girl, Yue Bing, as their daughter-in-law or granddaughter-in law, their Clan would definitely rise a lot in power. In just a moment, an expression of greed flashed across countless Clans’ representatives’ eyes.

Elder Yue Hai saw all this, but remained quiet.

Although Yue Bing won, she didn't come down from the arena immediately. Instead, she turned around and challenged Yue Yan, "Seventh Sister's next opponent is Fourth Brother. Since I am already here, if Fourth Brother is willing, we can fight our battle now. If Fourth Brother agrees, I would like to team up with Third Brother and we, the Fourth Branch, would like to challenge both of you, the First Branch and Second Branch. I invite First Brother, Fourth Brother and Fifth Brother to fight us altogether,"

"No, we are all ignorant fools. We still need instructions from our elders. First Uncle and Second Uncle, please fight us altogether too."

When Yue Yang spoke this sentence, everyone present all thought that he had already gone completely mad.

Fighting against Yue Tian, Yue Yan, and Yue Ting was still fine, he was even overestimating his abilities and challenged First Uncle and Second Uncle to fight?

It must be known that the First Uncle Yue Shan and Second Uncle Yue Ling were both well-known Rankers in this world. Yue Shan was a level 6 intermediate [Elder], while Yue Ling was a level 6 beginner [Junior Elder]. This brat had actually wanted to fight against the two of them alone? Could it be that he already had the strength of a level 7 [Overlord]? But how could he defeat two [Elders] with just physical skills alone? He was really indulging in

his fantasy!

Everyone in the audience felt that if this brat was not insane, then they must have been the one's that had already gone mad.

When Xue Tan Lang heard this, his eyes opened wide with shock.

He could guess that Yue Yang would challenge Yue Tian and Yue Yan, but he never thought that Yue Yang would actually be so daring to challenge even his First Uncle, Yue Shan, and Second Uncle, Yue Ling.

Could it be that this brat's balls were made of steel? He had seen mad fellows, but they had never seen such a mad fellow... Xue Tan Lang felt a bubble of impulse bursting in his heart. He really wanted to charge over and fight with Yue Yang too. He wanted to see whether this madman's physical skills, or his element-type beasts, were stronger.

Jun Wu You and Elder Hai were extremely shocked. They looked at each other for quite a while, before a smile appeared in the corner of their lips.

Similar, this brat was really too similar to his father, Yue Qiu!

Yue Qiu's temperament was also like this. He wasn't afraid of anything. But Yue Qiu wasn't as cunning nor as glib as this brat.

Like father like son, indeed...

Seeing his useless son become so amazing, become an unyielding ranker in the world, Qiu-er's spirit in heaven would probably also be smiling with happiness, right?

When Elder Yue Hai thought of that, his eyes, that had never shown any expression or concern seeing hundreds of thousands people dying in battle, started to get a little wet. When he looked at Yue Yang, a little more warmth filled his eyes.

Right now, everyone's gazes were on Yue Shan and Yue Ling.

Facing this kind of challenge that their insane nephew had issued, as his uncle, what kind of reaction would they give?

Would they reject it?

Or would they agree to it?

Every single person in the audience waited with bated breath, waiting for the two people's answers.

Chapter 110 – Cry, Vomit Blood, Be Jealous!

At first, Uncle Yue Shan acted like a kindhearted and modest nobleman. He pasted a smile on his face, looking refined and courteous as he bowed towards Jun Wu You and his father. He then cupped his hands to show his respect to the three Clans' representatives and finally nodded towards Yue Yang, "San-er, I understand your thirst for knowledge, but not everything that you wish for can be fulfilled. You must guard against pride and impatience during your training, and by no means should you act with undue haste. You should first train your basics, and understand it fully to set up a strong foundation. This is the way to climb the path to become a true, powerful warrior. Seeing you so full of heroic ambitions, I am also very happy for you. It is as if I'm seeing Third Brother appear before me again. Your Second Uncle and I will definitely do our utmost to support you and we will also certainly help you to become as powerful as Third Brother. Although it won't be now, in another time, no matter where or when, if you have any difficulties, you can simply find your Second Uncle or me. We will give everything we have to help you. Just say all that you want and speak without reserve."

"Clap clap clap..." Hearing these sincere words, the audience couldn't help but applaud Yue Shan, the uncle who cared about his nephew so much.

"....." Yue Bing fell into silence.

Other than those outsiders, who did not know what was happening in the Yue Clan internally, who wouldn't know that his heart was as poisonous as a snake's venom?

Seeing him enacting such a hypocritical act so calmly made her really want to vomit. He had really raised his hypocritical act to a whole new realm and heights!

Indeed, Yue Shan had actually wanted to agree to Yue Yang's challenge. He simply wanted to kill Yue Yang, that brat, immediately. Yue Shan definitely did not wish for a second Yue Qiu to appear, especially when he saw that this brat was completely different from his father. He was arrogant as hell, and was also unusually cunning. He was even more troublesome than the upright and outspoken, bold and heroic Yue Qiu.

If he didn't challenge him purposely like this, he would have sought for an opportunity to kill him secretly.

Now it was impossible to do so.

Everyone, including Da Xia Emperor Jun Wu You and his father, had already noted down and understood his words and actions. Even if he killed Yue Yang, it would be useless to try to cover it up. They would be able to guess that he was the one who killed Yue Yang. Most importantly, this brat's improvement was extremely fast, he advanced by leaps and bounds from the moment he contracted a grimoire. He was like a completely different person from the spineless, useless coward that he was a year ago. If he didn't kill Yue Yang now, perhaps in just a short period of time in the future, he wouldn't be able to kill him easily, even if he wanted to.

How could he kill Yue Yang now, in front of thousands of people, under the audiences' onlooking eyes of the whole audience?

Not even mentioning Jun Wu You who loved talents like his own life, even his own father, who had always been suspicious that he was the one who killed Third Brother, would probably never let him off... All these years, Yue Hai had always been investigating the matter, seeking evidence. If he really killed this useless trash, then the consequences would really be inconceivable. He even thought that his Second Brother, who had always drooled over their family's treasures and his position, would benefit in the end.

“First Brother is right. Nephew San-er, we all know that you have improved by leaps and bounds and are anxious to show it to the Clan. However, after all, your training period had been too short. If by any chance we accidentally harmed you and caused you serious injury, what would happen? Our Third and Fourth Brother are relying on you to inherit their names. How would we be able to fight seriously against you? On the arena, we should compare our skills and improve together. This is the law that our ancestors have set for us, and this is also the foundation for our clan to improve and become top-class warriors. If San-er wants to improve, why don't you fight against Tian-er, Yan-er, and Ting-er to test your skills? This way you could offer a good show for us in this New Year's Tournament.” Second Uncle Yue Ling also did not dare to fight Yue Yang, talking non-stop instead, showing that he was also an uncle who cherished and loved his nephew, Yue Yang.

“Clap clap clap...” When the audience heard it, they thought that these two uncles were indeed the role-model uncles. They deserved a standing ovation and cheers.

“What the two of you said are truly right,” Even the three other clan’s representatives expressed their praises.

In reality, they already knew that the Yue Clan’s internal strife was extremely bad. However, they pretended to know nothing.

However, Yue Clan was not the only one who had internal strifes. In the other clans, unless there was only one inheritor, sons would definitely fight over each other even if there were two only two of them. It’s just that each clan had covered it up and would never speak about it. They were unlike the Yue Clan who would have a Tournament amongst the younger generations every year. Their conflicts could be seen very clearly; everyone could tell with just one look.

If they were really compared with each other, the other clans’ undercurrent internal strifes between brothers fighting for power, destroying each other, would probably be ten times more intense than the Yue Clan.

A wise man once said, it was not that the Soaring Dragon Continent did not have talents, it was just that these talents all died due to internal strifes....

These words might not be known to common folks, but amongst the clans, it was known to everyone.

The most talented one would receive the most jealousy and hatred.

In reality, Yue Yang had already known that his First Uncle Yue Shan and Second Uncle Yue Ling, these two cunning old foxes, wouldn't agree to his challenge. He only wanted to provoke them purposely, and announce the internal strife between the Fourth Branch against the First and Second Branch out to the public. In passing, he would also be able to paint the good-hearted faces of those two black.

Even if there were many applauding hands, those people would probably gossip despicably about Yue Shan's and Yue Ling's hypocritical acts when they got back home.

Yue Tian and Yue Yan were in hesitation. Facing against his challenge, should they accept it or not?

Just facing up against Yue Bing, who had a bronze-ranked level 5 Hundred Year Old Treant Defender, was already troublesome enough. If they also had to fight against a madman who was an expert in physical skills... Yue Tian and Yue Yan didn't think that the other party could work together perfectly and fight against their enemy. They felt that it was very likely that the other party might even hit a person who was down and harm themselves. Hence, with regards to Yue Bing's open challenge, the two only stayed quiet. Only Yue Ting, who had a large, muscular physique, thick eyebrows, and big eyes, a face full of honesty and straightforwardness jumped up to the arena and bowed towards Yue Yang and Yue Bing, "Third Brother, Seventh Sister, I only have one beast, but it has three different kinds of abilities. They are [Giant Bear's Palm], [Rock Bear's Body] and [Violent Bear's Wrath]. They are all extremely powerful, so please be careful. I'm afraid that I will accidentally injure you."

With these simple-minded words from Yue Ting, Yue Yang suddenly realized something in his heart.

He had always felt that something wasn't right.

That Elder Yue Hai was already very old, but why hasn't he prepared the next Clan Master yet?

Although Yue Tian and Yue Yan were talented, the two of them had bad conducts on the outside, so they weren't exactly a good Clan Master material. However, Yue Ting wasn't that talented, and the pitiful guy was trash. Yue Bing and Yue Shuang were both girls, and the Little Nine, Yue Feng, was still too young. Could it be that the Yue Clan really had no plans to prepare for the next Clan Master?

The Yue Clan was not the same as other noble families.

They were well-known for their machine puppets, spear technique, and art of wars in this world. This had continued without stopping for thousands of years. No matter how much of a storm they had gone through, no one could shake the Yue Clan's position. Everyone thought that the Yue Clan had the most advantage in producing a talented younger generation, and that they understood how to teach and nurture the next Clan Master well. It was said that every single Clan Master would have a gold-ranked beast called "Mother Earth Bear" that would be passed down each generation. This would ensure the capabilities of the Clan Master. It would stabilize the clan, and also deter enemies everywhere from attacking... Previously, although Yue Qiu had become famous throughout the world, Yue Hai still had not chosen

him to be the next Clan Master. Everyone had thought it was extremely weird, even Yue Yang couldn't figure out why.

Afterwards, in one conversation, the beautiful woman had mentioned it accidentally.

Yue Clan had never required a genius to be the Clan Master. They required the Clan Master to be kindhearted and simple, a Clan Master who could tolerate his brothers and extended families.

The person eligible for the Yue Clan Master selection, could be strong, but he must also be kindhearted and tolerant. He shouldn't kill all of his brothers and sisters the moment he became the Clan Master, leaving only himself as the inheritor for the next generation... The Yue Clan Master must at least have the support of 12 elders. He did not need to be extremely strong, but he must be able to lead the whole clan forward. It was fine as long as he had the ability to maintain the Yue Clan's glory, legacy, and traditions.

Yue Yang had always pondered. Who would the next Yue Clan Master be?

Only after Yue Ting came up to the stage, and after Yue Yang used his [Divine Vision] to check, was Yue Yang 90% sure that the next Clan Master that Elder Yue Hai had chosen and was nurturing was this Fifth Brother, Yue Ting.

He had only contracted one beast, and that beast was a Great Bear. This clearly showed that this was in preparation to contract the gold-ranked Mother Earth Bear that was only passed down to

Clan Masters in the future. Furthermore, Yue Ting was already sent to the palace at an early age and became the princess' bodyguard. This way, he could build a good relation with the Royal family as he trained his abilities. He would also be far from the Clan's internal strife, and he could stay and grow stronger in a safe environment. Yue Yang had a great revelation. So, it turned out that Yue Tian and Yue Yan were just pawns that Elder Yue Hai had used to catch the public's attention. This old cunning fox, he had already chosen Yue Ting as the next Clan Master from the start... Previously, when he went out and did not manage the Clan for a few months, Yue Yang reckoned that it was in order to train Yue Ting in secret.

“Strengthening-type, bronze-ranked level 5 Violent Bear?” Yue Bing was extremely shocked when she heard the name of her Fifth Brother's beast.

Her Hundred Year Old Treant Defender was only bronze-ranked level 3 originally. She had trained diligently in order to raise it to bronze-ranked level 4 and it rising to bronze-ranked level 5 was due to her brother giving her the Tree of Life's Lustrous Branch.

She would never have thought that her Fifth Brother Yue Ting could also train his beast to bronze-rank level 5.

A golden light flashed as the figure of a crimson coloured great bear was summoned by Yue Ting. It fused with his body, and after a loud howl, Yue Ting's figure slowly changed. He grew larger and stronger as his growing muscles tore off the leather armour he was wearing on his body, revealing a shocking amount of muscles underneath. Bear's fur immediately grew on his torso, and his

hands had also turned into bear's paws. His eyes had slowly turned red.

Yue Ting, who had almost completely turned into a bear, raised his large palms and roared loudly. A golden glow that appeared like a halo suddenly appeared from his body.

In the end, the golden halo condensed at the palms of both his hands.

The golden coloured bear's paws seemed to be storing an extremely huge amount of strength. When Yue Ting stomped his foot, the whole arena shook. Even amongst the audience, the weakest warriors felt a little faint under Yue Ting's heavy, imposing atmosphere. They almost fell unconscious, as they involuntarily became pale with fright.

“Third Brother, my skin is extremely thick after my bear transformation. It won't be cut easily. You can spare no efforts in attacking me, don't worry about my body.”

When Yue Ting finished speaking, he raised his large paws.

Step by step he walked, shaking the whole arena and making it rumble.

Yue Bing was so frightened that colour left her face. She looked at her Third Brother, Yue Yang, hurriedly and hoped that he had a way to deal with Yue Ting.

“Seventh Sister, a strong warrior would not only have power alone. That wouldn’t be enough. He must also have speed, a god-like speed.” Saying this, Yue Yang’s figure had immediately disappeared. When he appeared again, it turned out that he had already moved behind Yue Ting. His two fists fell down like a hammer towards the back of Yue Ting’s head. Yue Ting reached out and countered madly, uncaring about anything else. Instead, Yue Yang cleverly moved down, avoiding Yue Ting’s counterattack, and at the same time swung both of his legs as fast as pinwheels, kicking them towards Yue Ting’s large physique, pushing him back. When Yue Ting’s bear paws came down to attack his legs, Yue Yang was already flying in the air, his two legs kicking towards the back of Yue Ting’s head. With a magnificent, flying, roundhouse kick, he sent Yue Ting out of the arena like a cannonball shooting out from a cannon. Yue Ting fell on the ground with a loud boom, his large physique almost entirely buried into the ground. He looked like he was in an extremely sorry state.

“Third Brother is so awesome. It was the first time for me to be beaten up without being able to retaliate at all...However, I’m not injured at all. Let’s go at it again,”

Under the dumbstruck gazes of the audience, Yue Ting climbed up and entered into the arena again with a flying jump.

According to rules, he should have lost.

But it seemed like he couldn’t accept his loss, and wanted to come at Yue Yang again.

Everyone remained silent. How could every single Yue Clan member be stronger than the one before...? Let alone Yue Tian and Yue Yan, it was already inconceivable for the Yue Clan to have Yue Bing with her extremely powerful plant-type beast. Now, another Yue Clan member, Yue Ting, who was unafraid of beatings, had also appeared. In addition, there was also the abnormal trash, this Third Young Master... This family, none of them was normal. They were all monsters with frightening capabilities.

“You just can’t accept your loss, right?” Yue Yang did not use his sword. If he accidentally killed Yue Ting, perhaps Elder Yue Hai, who had his efforts wasted and was left with no successors, would be so depressed that he would kill himself. If that really happened, the Yue Clan would be completely finished. Fourth Mother and Yue Bing would also not dream of living a good life in the future, as they would be filled with guilt.

However, teaching this stupid bear a lesson was still not a problem.

Yue Yang moved with a speed as fast as lightning and used his fists to beat Yue Ting up until he couldn’t recognise which way was north. In the end, he used a violent kick to send Yue Ting flying out of the arena again.

“Third brother, I feel a little pain, but I’m still not injured. Let’s go at it again,” Yue Ting, this fellow, seemed to be a living creature in the same category as Hui Tai Lang, a cockroach that wouldn’t die no matter how much it was beaten. In reality, Yue Ting’s power was extremely frightening, but he just couldn’t land a hit on

Yue Yang. Otherwise, Yue Yang's small body would probably not be able to withstand Yue Ting's bear paws. Yue Yang had totally suppressed the limitlessly powerful Yue Ting with his speed and skills. Yue Yang had utterly beaten up his Fifth Brother, even more brilliantly than when he had beaten up the beauty inside his dreams. It was almost to the point where the fight blew to his tune.

"I want to fight too," Xue Tan Lang, who had a cold demeanour but owned a passionate heart, and who was also a fellow addicted to battles, couldn't control himself and finally shouted emotionally, "Although I am a guest, but I want to fight for my sister's justice. So, Third Young Master, receive my attack!"

He summoned a tornado-like figure that covered the whole arena with coldness. The audience couldn't help but to shiver in the cold.

As they saw Xue Tan Lang focusing all of his concentration to grow his tornado ten times bigger and condensing it even more, the audience immediately scattered in all directions... This was no joke, if they got caught up in that frightening tornado, they would definitely die without even a trace of their bones left. The whole arena was filled with a coldness that penetrated right to the bone as countless amounts of frost began to form. Even Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade that was filled with demonic Qi had slowly frozen over.

Seeing this, Yue Tian and Yue Yan immediately flew down and landed on the arena. Summoning his grimoire, Yue Tian hypocritically said, "Brother Tan Lang, this is our brother's fight. It's a fight within our Clan, so why do you need to interfere?"

“Yes, yes. Brother Tan Lang, please stop. Please get down from the arena and return to your seat, so that we can observe the battle.”

Although the both of them spoke those words, their actions spoke otherwise. They had both summoned a Flaming Lion and a Golden Condor respectively, prepared to pincer attack Yue Yang.

With regards to killing Yue Yang, they didn't hope too much. Furthermore, under the onlooking eyes of the audience, it would be difficult to explain themselves if they really did such a thing. However, they were determined to defeat the unbridled Yue Yang. They wanted Yue Yang to learn that no matter how much he had improved, he was still far behind the two of them, who had been geniuses for a long time. With Yue Ting as their meat shield and Xue Tan Lang with his frightening killing power, they felt that the opportunity for them to defeat Yue Yang had finally arrived.

“Seventh Sister, what do you think of a brother who fight against four people alone?” Yue Yang suddenly asked.

“Brother is the strongest, forever the strongest, obviously. I will also help brother,” Yue Bing clenched her small fist tightly, her expression incomparably resolute, expressing no fear at all while fighting against one of the Three Great Killing Stars, Xue Tan Lang. She was definitely confident in her brother's capabilities.

“Good girl, but you should just stand there and cheer for your brother. Wait until I've won, then you can shout to those self-interested people that you have the strongest brother in the world. With your brother here, no one would be able to bully you. Curse

all those who looked down upon your brother!” Yue Yang reached out his hands, summoned out his silver grimoire and called forth the Barbarian Cow Shadow. He also added a [Phantom Shadow] that increases her abilities by a hundred times.

Barbarian Cow Shadow howled loudly as she sent the charging Flaming Lion flying with a punch.

Fire emitted from her nose as her eyes flashed with a red, furious look.

The secret weapon that Yue Yang had been saving finally appeared... Even the Golden Condor in the air, that was trying to escape, cried miserably and immediately fell headfirst to the ground, dying instantly.

“Eh?” Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai both stood up. They never thought that Yue Yang, this mad brat who focused on his physical skills, could actually have such a strong beast. Bronze-ranked level 5 Guardian Beast? Didn’t he just contract a grimoire not long ago? How could he level it up to this level? Without anyone helping him, he had already turned the grimoire in his hands to silver-ranked. This, what had this mad brat been doing all this while?

How could he level up so quickly?

How many battles had he gone through exactly, to be able to level up to this level?

It had not even been half a year, and he already managed to have a silver-ranked grimoire. He had even raised his Guardian Beast's level to bronze-ranked level 5... This was simply unbelievable!

“This is impossible. How could you have a bronze-ranked level 5 beast? You had only just contracted a grimoire,” Yue Yan, who hated the pitiful guy the most, almost went mad with fury.

“Ah, I made a mistake. Excuse me, I had only contracted a grimoire not too long ago, so I wasn't that familiar with summoning. I have accidentally summoned the wrong beast... I clearly wanted to summon a gold-ranked Bloody Queen, why did I summon this low-levelled bronze-ranked Barbarian Cow Shadow... Such a failure, seems like I am really a naturally-born trash. I can't even summon the right beast...” When Yue Yang said this, Yue Yan was so angry that he almost vomited blood.

“Are you dreaming? You would never be able to have a gold-ranked beast!” Yue Yan really wanted to swallow Yue Yang whole, eat his flesh and drink his blood.

“I was seen through! You are indeed a genius, you have a brilliant pair of eyes. I don't have a gold-ranked beast indeed, but I do have a Golden King Beast.” When Yue Yang summoned the Bloody Queen, everyone present in the whole place immediately petrified into stone.

There was at least a third of the audience who immediately vomited blood and fainted to the ground. Yue Yan was one of them.

But it was not due to fright, it was due to anger.

In their whole life, they had never seen someone so abnormal. Yue Yang had not even contracted a grimoire for half a year, and he already had a bronze-ranked level 5 Guardian Beast and a gold-ranked level 3 Bloody Queen. Furthermore, this Bloody Queen was a Golden King Beast. This was a beast that not a ranker under the rank of [Elder] could ever dream to have. They never thought that this trash could control such a powerful beast in less than half a year!

Another third of the people had started crying. Yue Tian was one of them.

This trash, how could he bully others so much?

It was more than enough that he summoned a bronze-ranked level 5 Barbarian Cow Shadow to kill his Golden Condor instantly. Couldn't he be more low-keyed or hide his abilities a little? Must he make everyone so jealous of him? Couldn't he be more magnanimous and refrain from making everyone feel so inferior, so helpless?

This brat was simply too powerful and too much of a bully. He ought to receive divine punishment!

He ought to be struck by lightning...

There was also another third of the people who couldn't believe their own eyes, and Yue Ting was one of them. They were all rubbing their eyes. They felt like they should just bang their heads into the ground and die. No matter what, they wouldn't believe this reality.

And a small minority such as Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai, Yue Shan, Yue Ling, Feng Shao Yun, Feng Kuang, Xue Tan Lang, Fifth Elder, and the beautiful woman, these few people, maintained their stupefied, petrified expressions. They really did not know what to say. The Golden King Beast, Bloody Queen, was an intelligent beast, but it had actually contracted an [Apprentice] that had just contracted a grimoire less than half a year ago. If they told this story to other people, would they even believe it?

Not even a fool would believe that.

However, the truth was laid down right in front of their eyes, against all of their expectations...

Is this an illusion or reality? If it's real, then where had this brat gotten such a strong beast?

On the other side, Yue Yang was calm and unperturbed. Wasn't it just a Barbarian Cow Shadow and Bloody Queen? Compared to Xiao Wen Li, who had a diamond grimoire and the mysterious Golden Beast, compared to the beast that he had inside the Divine Grimoire, they were only the tip of the iceberg of his true strength. Let alone Xiao Wen Li, even the future Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen would also be many times stronger than this Bloody Queen. How could they be dumbstruck with just seeing these? How

could they vomit blood and faint at only this level? How could they cry endlessly with just this?

Alright alright, he'll just let them use all of their efforts to cry, vomit blood, and be jealous!

Chapter 111 – Bloody Queen's Presence

When the Bloody Queen was summoned, perhaps it was because she was still angry at Yue Yang for not caring about her previous objections, she forcefully tried to return back to the silver grimoire. Unlike the Barbaric Cow Shadow, who showed great prowess and charisma, she even used her golden wings to wrap around her body, unwilling to let her face be shown to people. It seemed to set itself in contrast against Yue Yang's boasting. With her appearance on the stage, all the other small beasts on the stage were scared to the point where they laid down on the ground, not daring to move. If not for seeing the golden waves of light emanating from her perfect wings, which was extending outwards forming a [King's Halo], a symbol unique to Golden King Beasts, they would not have known that she was a Golden King Beast.

Of course, rankers with sharp senses would not even need to look at the Bloody Queen in order to sense how strong this Bloody Queen was the instant she was summoned.

Gold-ranked Level 3. For rankers like Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai, it might not be that high; but she was, after all, a Golden King Beast. There would be no limits in the future once she grew.

Most importantly, this Bloody Queen was a humanoid beast. She was a beast that possessed intelligence...

What did this mean?

This meant that there was a possibility of increasing her rank

even further. Perhaps she could turn into a Platinum-ranked beast, or even the legendary Diamond rank.

If the person who had summoned her was a well-known and well-established sect elder or [Overlord], then Yue Shan and Yue Ling would not have been so jealous. However, the person who summoned the Bloody Queen was merely a person who, half a year ago, did not even have a grimoire. It was the trash who had never even succeeded in contracting with a beast.

Yue Shan and Yue Ling were jealous to the point where they felt like their blood pressure was causing them to bleed from all seven orifices.

Yue Yang had even summoned it right in front of Jun Wu You and their father. Now they could not try to kill him anymore.

With a fellow like Jun Wu You, who loved talented people as if they were his own life and blood, he would most definitely take a fancy to this abnormal trash. If they wanted to kill him in front of Jun Wu You, then their days of prosperity would be over. The year when Yue Qiu died in battle, Jun Wu You was thunderously furious. Aside from killing the dozens of generals who could not arrive in time to support Yue Qiu, he led people into the Demon Abyss, killing hundreds of Demon Generals to accompany Yue Qiu's journey in the afterlife... However, Jun Wu You was unable to find Yue Qiu's corpse even after all this time. The entire situation became a mystery and it also gave a tiny strand of hope to Jun Wu You that Yue Qiu was still alive. If not for this situation, Jun Wu You would probably have killed even more people.

Although Jun Wu You was normally a magnanimous emperor, who treated his subjects and people so well that he was often called the Smiling Emperor by the others, this did not mean that he would not kill people.

In truth, both Yue Shan and Yue Ling knew that among the emperors of the three great powers, or perhaps even amongst all the emperors in Soaring Dragon Continent, Ju Wu You was the emperor who had killed the most people during his reign as a monarch.

“Don’t be angry. Just use your Queen’s Presence and help me tyrannise them all. I’ll buy you candy apples later once you’re done.” Yue Yang retrieved the silver grimoire in his hands. Once his shield disappeared, he walked over to the Bloody Queen’s side, stroking her wings lightly while coaxing her. The crowd was sweating intensely, speechless. There would be no way that this Bloody Queen liked candy apples.

“.....^(!~@#\$\$” The bloody queen stretched out a hand from beneath her wings. Then, she said a string of Demon Abyss language that nobody could understand, as if requesting something from Yue Yang.

“Ah, she can speak too.”

“I’m going to faint.”

What did it mean for beasts to speak? Even a fool would know that the beast possessed a high level of intelligence.

It's not that there weren't gold-ranked beasts in the world. However, gold-ranked beasts who had a high enough level of intelligence to speak were extremely few in numbers.

Yue Shan and Yue Ling had the urge to commit suicide. They really did not want to live; this was far too much for them to handle. How could all the luck in the world gather itself to this trash? Heaven was really unfair! Even if they combine the luck of all the geniuses in the world, they would be nowhere near as lucky as this brat was, now that all the luck had gathered onto this trash. What was the point of turning a trash into a powerful entity? Wouldn't it be better to turn a genius into an even greater genius.

It was not fair!

It was not fair... The heavens treated this piece of trash far too well!

"You want Hui Jin? Don't kid around, that is my equipment. Didn't you steal the Dragon Slaying Dagger already? Even if you use it, you'd still fight the same way... Forget it. I'll lend you the crescent blade for you to use. Remember, I'm only lending it to you." Yue Yang stuffed the crescent blade into the slender hand of the Bloody Queen. He thought that he had settled the problem. He did not expect the Bloody Queen's other hand to extend out as well.

"!@#\$%^&)&^()#_#^#" She spoke extremely quickly again. Nobody could understand what her words meant.

“You still want a reward to fight? Hey hey hey, don’t you have any awareness that you’re a beast now? Look at Hui Tai Lang, it never brought up the matter of being rewarded by me at all.” Yue Yang warned the Bloody Queen not to be pampered. She should learn from Hui Tai Lang, who worked hard like a labourer.

“Wahng Wahng!” Hui Tai Lang was happy when he heard it and wagged his tail excitedly.

However, the Bloody Queen stubbornly extended her hands and refused to withdraw them.

Yue Yang had no choice but to stuff the wyvern’s magic core into her other palm. He felt that this girl was extorting him in front of the crowd. He must not lose anymore than this, no matter what she said next. However, although this girl didn’t have any money, her figure wasn’t too bad. This would not do; she should compensate with her body instead... But she was a beast. If a human and a beast had sex, wouldn’t that be a little evil? He was a good and innocent boy after all... Although Yue Yang thought he was a good boy, somewhere down below had already turned shamefully hard.

“Ayayaya!”

When the bloody queen received the wyvern magic core, she suddenly spread her wings animatedly. With a beat of the wings, she flew high up into the sky and screamed with extreme excitement.

Although this was not the banshee scream, it was the shout of a Golden King Beast, which caused the weak little beasts to be scared witless.

On the arena, amongst the beasts that Yue Tian and Yue Yan had summoned, aside from puppet-type beasts, the other beasts were all shaking from head to toe. They almost wanted to abandon their masters and flee. If not for Yue Tian and Yue Yan controlling them as much as they could, these beasts would have already fled off stage.

It was not surprising after all. Although they were powerful existences as Bronze-ranked compared to normal beasts, in the face of a Golden King Beast, they were nothing.

The Bloody Queen did not care about how others reacted to her. She was beaming with delight and looped around the sky excitedly. From her mouth came waves of delightful screams, as if it was a great accomplishment to get the crescent blades and the wyvern magic core from Yue Yang's hands.

“I’m going to faint. So this girl was a gold digger after all.” Yue Yang felt that if this girl needed a wyvern magic core every time she was summoned, it would spell the end for him.

Seems like he could not let this go on for too long. He had to train her properly when he got back.

She should be an obedient slave who would only open her mouth to say ‘yes master’ and not talk about her desires at all.

“This abnormal guy, even his beast is abnormal.” Xue Tan Lang was absolutely speechless. Birds of a feather really flocked together.

“Boom!”

When everyone was completely focused on the Bloody Queen, an ear-splitting sound rang out. Everyone was startled, and looked towards the source of the sound. They saw that the Barbaric Cow Shadow was raising her extremely huge demon blade and was cutting down the many steel puppet beasts that Yue Tian had summoned, into half. On the other side, Yue Yan’s Hydra Puppet came over to assist the fight, but it was stopped by the Barbaric Cow Shadow, who had extended her arm and clenched tightly onto the head of the Hydra Puppet... Sparks flew and electricity crackled. Under the stupefied gazes of the crowd, the Barbaric Cow Shadow barbarically pulled off one of the long heads of that Hydra Puppet, not caring about the attacks that came from the other eight heads. After that, she used her hands to force a hole within the puppet little by little, then proceeded to rip the metallic body of the Hydra Puppet in half. Finally, she took out the huge magic core within the precious machine.

Yue Yan almost cried himself to death. That was the magic core of a Hydra, his most precious magic core! It had taken him incredible amounts of blood and sweat to finally acquire that core.

He did not expect that before the Hydra Puppet could even use its secret weapon, its magic core had already been taken away by the opposition.

Hui Tai Lang was extremely fast.

As if it were lightning, it had already stolen the Hydra's magic core from the Barbaric Cow Shadow.

However fast it was though, it could not be faster than Yue Yang.

Yue Yang kicked it flying and took the Hydra core into his arms. On the other side, the Bloody Queen had already come down at some point of time. She was appreciating the magic cores dug out from the many puppet-type beasts' heads. However, her little butt was also sent flying by Yue Yang, and she was thrown out of the arena.

“Who dares to steal from me?” Yue Yang went mad. If him as the master did not say it was ok for others to have something, then nobody could take it on their own accord.

“...” The crowd was sweating like mad, stupefied at the scene before them.

Other people would have treated their Bronze-ranked beasts like their own, most cherished baby. They took their utmost care for them and would not even bear to scold them even once.

This fellow, on the other hand, even dared to use his foot to kick a Golden King Beast.

What made people split their sides laughing, on the other hand, was Hui Tai Lang's actions. When it crawled back up from the ground, it did not betray its master like people thought it would. Instead, it had run back to Yue Yang's feet, acting adorably as it wagged its tail. Yue Yang kicked it flying down the stage again. "Give me a break from this. I've never even seen this Hydra core before, there's none for you."

The Bloody Queen, on the other hand, was very angry at Yue Yang for kicking her. However, even though she had a temper, she did not dare to attack Yue Yang, and could only scream madly.

The sound of her scream reverberated through the arena.

Everyone felt like their heads were hit by a hammer, and the low-ranked beasts instantly fell unconscious.

Normal warriors had their visions turned black and began to see stars twirling around their heads as they nearly fell over onto the ground.

Yue Tian and Yue Yan felt danger. They wanted to run, but it was too late. The Bloody Queen took the crescent blades and pounced viciously at the two of them. The two people were preparing to muster their courage and order their beasts to meet the foe. They did not expect that the Bloody Queen would scream another time. Their minds were completely shaken, and their heads went completely blank... If not for them being protected by the grimoire's shield, their heads would probably had exploded from the terrifying scream.

With their shields protecting them, they did not suffer much of an impact.

However, their beasts, such as the Flame Lion, the Thunder Leopard, and the Flame Guard had miserable fates.

The three beasts, who would ordinarily have showed off their might, were twitching in unimaginable pain. Their ears were bleeding as they were crying out pitifully. Their four limbs were trembling, and their power was greatly diminished.

As if a tiger had been let loose on a flock of sheep, the Bloody Queen rushed forward, brandishing the crescent blade and slashed it towards the Thunder Leopard that was closest to her.

Blood flew out wildly...

Within half a minute, the three Bronze-rank beasts had been completely slaughtered by her in the most bloody fashion. None of them had a complete corpse. The beasts' heads were severed, their bodies ripped into pieces. Due to the Bloody Queen forcefully digging the magic cores out of their bodies, blood and white brain matter was splattered everywhere.

Everyone's teeth were chattering while they looked aghastly at the Bloody Queen, whose body was completely covered with fresh blood and brain matter. Watching her taking the three magic cores, which were still stained with fresh blood, and seeing her bloodied face showing a contented expression, they could not help

but shudder... As expected of the Bloody Queen that was only spoken of in legends. These kinds of killing techniques were truly bloody enough, befitting her name. It was too terrifying.

“It’s all over.” Yue Tian saw that all of his strongest beasts had died and their magic cores had been dug out by the Bloody Queen. The feeling of despair from turning into trash from a genius ranker caused his eyes to roll and faint straight away.

“How could this happen, no... no... “ Yue Yan listlessly knelt on the floor, painfully looking at the remains of his most beloved Flame Lion. He could not even speak properly while crying.

“Ah Man (Barbarian Cow Shadow), send Eldest Brother and Fourth Brother respectfully down the stage.” With a wave of Yue Yang’s hands, the Barbaric Cow Shadow pounced towards the unconscious Yue Tian and Yue Yan, who was kneeling and crying viciously. Now that they were no longer protected by a shield, would there ever be a better time to beat them up violently?

Chapter 112 – A New Breakthrough In Battle

Yue Ling was very protective of his son. He had already given advance orders for people to wait to rescue his son.

Upon seeing Yue Yan's shield disappear, they were to go up immediately and rescue him.

The Barbaric Cow Shadow did not care about anyone who came up. She bombarded them regardless with her gigantic fists, indiscriminately hitting everything around her like the rain. The Clan Guard, who went up first to try and rescue Yue Yan, could not dodge as he was blocked by the others behind. As a result, he was sent flying by a punch, crying out pitifully as he was thrown more than ten metres backwards. Another Clan Guard was crafty and made use of a flying beast. He leapt in quickly and took Yue Yan. However, before he could even feel pleased with himself, he was surprised by the Bloody Queen that arrived at lightning speed to intercept him in midair.

The Crescent Blade in the Bloody Queen's hands whirled like the wind...

Wherever the Crescent Blade passed, without caring if it was the flying Battle Eagle or the Clan Guard, or whether the Clan Guard was carrying Yue Yan or not, they would receive bloody injuries, their blood splattering into the air.

In the end, Yue Ling had to come forward personally and use his iron arm to forcefully block the Crescent Blade, thereby rescuing

his son.

He coldly snorted and a strange black light flashed in his right hand.

Danger!

The Bloody Queen immediately flapped her wings and flew back. She was incomparably agile, flying into the air to distance herself from the sinister Yue Ling.

Yue Ling discovered that his son was covered with injuries and was beyond furious. He glared at Yue Yang, but that brat only assumed an “I don’t know anything” look of innocence, causing him to almost explode in anger.

Under the attention of the masses, Yue Ling could not openly attack Yue Yang. He could only swallow his hatred and proceeded to carry the seriously injured Yue Yan off the stage, returning to where the rest of the clansmen were.

As for the big uncle Yue Shan, who wanted to maintain his position and refused to act to save his son, a smile remained on his face. It was as though whether his son lived or died had nothing to do with him.

As soon as another Clan Guard carried off the unconscious Yue Tian, the Barbaric Cow Shadow chased after them, hitting out with her fist. The Clan Guard was heavily injured and had almost

fractured his spine. The fainted Yue Tian, upon receiving such a huge impact from the attack, spewed blood and probably sustained heavy trauma. It was fortunate that the Clan Guard, who possessed a strengthening-type beast, had sacrificed himself to protect him. If not, Yue Tian's life would have definitely ended then and there. The injured Clan Guard miserably fell off the stage, while his partner hurriedly fled for his life, leaving his Iron-Tailed Crocodile behind as an obstruction.

The Iron-Tailed Crocodile lifted its long tail, preparing itself to strike at the Barbaric Cow Shadow with all its might. It wanted to meet force with force to prevent her pursuit.

Unknowingly, Yue Yang's position had risen by a large degree that very day.

The Barbaric Cow Shadow's nose blazed, and the red light in its eyes emerged again. The Iron-Tailed Crocodile, which was famed for its iron tail and bite, was instantly killed, just like the other beasts.

“Boom! Boom!”

A huge battle also erupted on the other side between Yue Ting and Yue Bing.

Yue Ting had initially wanted to go over to help save his older brother, but Yue Bing watched him continuously. She also wanted to help her own brother, even if it was just a little. Thus, as soon as Yue Ting moved, she controlled her Hundred Year Old Treant

Defender to attack him.

The two siblings had met their adversaries and were evenly matched in power.

Yue Ting, who possessed the strengthening-type Violent Bear, had thick skin and thick flesh, which made him unafraid of getting hit. The Hundred Year Old Treant Defender was likewise a valiant beast that could sweep across battlefields, and wasn't the least afraid of head-on battles. Moreover, it had its coiling roots and brambles for support. Yue Bing saw that she could not subdue her fifth brother Yue Ting and summoned another Hundred Year Old Treant Defender to join the fight, turning the slightly disadvantaged situation around.

The audience watched as the two Hundred Year Old Treant Defender used their brambles and coiling roots to bind the bear-transformed Yue Ting. They then waved their four tree limbs and viciously pounded.

Although the bear-transformed Yue Ting felt pain, he was not injured. He also waved his bear paws and madly counterattacked.

In the end, this battle had turned into a wild wrestle of strength.

While the fifth brother Yue Ting fought using his own body, seventh sister Yue Bing on the contrary fought by controlling the Hundred Year Old Treant Defenders. Both sides were confronting each other unyieldingly, with the intention of thoroughly defeating each other.

The strength of both siblings, Yue Ting and Yue Bing, had little difference and was difficult to discern in such a short period. At the moment, Yue Bing had a slight upperhand. However, wanting to quickly defeat the bear-transformed Yue Ting, who possessed boundless strength, was probably difficult.

“We’re coming too.”

Xue Tan Lang had stored up his power for a long time and summoned a Level 4 Silver-ranked Storm Giant.

The Storm Giant’s upper half was like a living being, while its lower half was a tornado which was turning at an unusually fast speed. The stone surface of the stage was cut apart by the Storm Giant’s tornado lower half. Deep indentation marks as if it was slashed by sharp blades appeared on the stone surface.

Xue Tan Lang was the one Yue Yang did not want to fight the most. Unless Yue Yang used his full strength, it would be difficult to kill him off.

Furthermore, this brat was most definitely the future clan leader of the Xue Clan. If he was killed, the whole Xue Clan would probably come after his life. Fighting him had absolutely no benefits and was simply asking for trouble.

Yue Yang was prepared to use some shameless methods. When the Storm Giant arrived in front of him, he would just jump off the stage and directly concede. Anyway, the people he wanted to

oppress was not Xue Tan Lang, but Yue Tian and Yue Yan. Since their beasts were already destroyed and they had been beaten to the point of having heavy injuries and were vomiting blood, there was nothing else that could be done at this point. They could be spared for now so that he could slowly oppress them in the future. There would be plenty of opportunities ahead, and Yue Tian and Yue Yan would definitely vomit blood and die... As for Xue Tan Lang, who cares about him? Yue Yang was too lazy to fight against this battle hungry guy. Why should he fight it out with him when he could save the energy to slowly train the Bloody Queen?

Just when Yue Yang was about to concede, a golden light shot towards the stage.

There was a loud sound and the whole place shook.

Yue Yang composed himself and looked, but he could not refrain from feeling faint.

The person that arrived was the royal swordswoman, decked in armor. She drew the large golden sword from her back, and heroically shouted at Yue Yang: “ I just heard that you, the little liar, had some good skills. I made an oversight last time. Come let’s have a battle”

“....” When Yue Yang heard it, he rolled his eyes. He thought to himself that this royal sister should explore bedding techniques with him if she had nothing better to do. Why would she ask for a fight?

The royal swordswoman had a lovable yet explosive voice.

The large sword flickered, and a golden light flashed like an exploding sun.

Xue Tan Lang's Storm Giant had previously frozen over the entire stage. However, the flames from the royal swordswoman's sword instantly thawed half the arena.

Around the royal swordswoman, snow melted and began to emit steam.

The large sword was like a burning sun, shooting rays that made people unable to open their eyes. On the other side, Xue Tan Lang's Storm Giant did not show any signs of weakening, continuing to spin around in wind and snow. Together with the blazing large sword of the royal swordswoman, the entire stage was half cold and half hot, which was a sight to marvel. Only the small area around with Yue Yang in the centre was somewhat different.

"Little liar, what are you waiting for? I will go all out for real once I start and won't hold back against you." Upon saying this, she did not care if Yue Yang agreed or not and directly pressed forward.

"I didn't even provoke you two, but both of you just want to make me angry." Yue Yang became furious and agitated, while his killing intentions began to arise madly.

The Hui Jin magic blade in his hand was raised. Under the prompting of his innate qi, the energies of the demon dragon's crystal and the molten core condensed as a deep golden flame. They ignited on the magic blade, extending outwards by more than a metre.

Flaming remnants swept across the stage, splitting the stone slabs like tofu being cut up by a knife.

Black smoke arose.

At the edges of the blade marks were traces of burning and corrosion.

Normal warriors would not be able to see it, but rankers like Jun Wu You and elder Yue Hai could discern it clearly.

The two people were excited. The kid's magic blade was also a treasure and furthermore, its strength could instantly be increased by several times under his control. It looks like this kid had an extremely effective control of "Qi" and was not simply a "trash who bullied his family" that only possessed a Gold King Beast. He was actually a hidden physical technique practitioner genius that had been secretly cultivating for more than ten years. Without more than ten years of consistent cultivation, it would be impossible to adeptly control "Qi" like this. Could it be that this kid had a ranker behind him that had been secretly instructing him from young?

Maybe his father Yue Qiu had really not died?

The two exchanged a glance and had the same suspicion in their hearts.

Not only Jun Wu You and elder Yue Hai had this thought. Even Yue Shan, Yue Ling, Feng Xiao Yun, and Feng Kuang, as well as the others, held similar suspicions.

Without a ranker instructing and supporting him, this trashy guy would definitely not be able to succeed on his own. Furthermore, the technique used to control the energy was definitely not something that a trash that recently contracted with a grimoire could possess... This could only mean that this kid had always been secretly cultivating. He had already been a ranker for a long time, but pretended to be a foolish and pathetic person that anyone could bully. Even when the whole world was mocking him, he had continued to conceal his abilities.

As Yue Shan and Yue Ling thought about how their nephew had the patience and tolerance, as well as possessing such wisdom, they could not help but shiver.

Could it be that he knew of the truth behind certain things?

So this kid had always been storing this strength in secret, waiting for an opportunity to take revenge?

“To prevent any accidental injuries, everyone please leave the practice grounds and proceed to a safe place.” Elder Yue Hai saw the true situation, but he did not prevent it. He only shouted at the

clansmen and ordered them to keep away. In fact, even before he ordered, the clansmen and the other family representatives had already started to scamper away in fright. They did not dare to stay near that terrifying and murderous area for a moment more.

“Not bad, it’s been long since I last saw such an exciting battle.” Jun Wu You remained leisurely and contented in his seat.

Aside from Jun Wu You, elder Yue Hai, Yue Shan, Yue Ling, Feng Xiao Yun, Feng Kuang, Yan Po Jun’s father Yan Qian Zhong, Ku Ming Elder of the Southern Mountain Floating Mist sect who was in charge of training Yue Feng, the Xue Clan’s representative Xue Wen Dao, and other rankers of the [Elder] rank and above, none could stay seated and remain safe.

Even Level 5 [Grandmaster] levelled rankers all stood up and took guard, to prevent being accidentally hurt by the three people, who could erupt into a huge battle at anytime.

To the west, Xue Tan Lang had frozen the west side of the stage into a frozen hell.

To the east, the royal swordswoman had turned her side into flames. With the royal swordsman large sword blazing like an intense sun, everything it passed was ignited into flames. The two siblings Yue Ting and Yue Bing saw that it was not a good situation and coincidentally stopped to leave the area, so as not to affect Yue Yang. In the centre of the stage, under the intense pressure from both sides, Yue Yang suddenly had a sudden comprehension and closed his eyes. He cut at the surroundings with the Hui Jin magic blade, initially at a fast pace, but gradually rotating slower and

more circularly.

Every time he rotated, his actions became more and more perfect.

The initial feeling he gave at first was that his rotations were conscious and deliberate actions.

However, Jun Wu You and elder Yue Hai gradually discovered that this kid had improved in battle. He seemed to comprehend something and improved. His deliberate actions became more gentle and slow, finally becoming too wonderful for words, giving off a feeling that was like melding with the heavens.

The rotations were in agreement with heaven and earth.

It was like the wind in the air or the clouds in the sky, naturally beautiful and formless while being without motive or intention. It was so natural, as if his movements were made by the heavens.

Yue Yang felt that he could comprehend the true essence soon, but it still lacked a little. The feeling was like seeing a naked young beautiful girl running ahead of him, and he was a hair's breadth away from catching her, but she was dodging agilely away from being pushed down... Yue Yang felt that he had to fight in a proper battle in order to truly comprehend; he needed to grow in battle. He thus decided to have a big battle with the royal swordswoman and Xue Tan Lang. Anyway, this battle could not be avoided, so why not let it make it a battle where he could use to train himself.

The guy who came from a different world suppressed his impatience, controlling the magic blade with even more patience. With his innate qi, he created a ball of flame and a ball of black gas, allowing them to beautifully revolve and mix with each other. They formed two incomparably beautiful semicircles and intertwined, appearing like a flaming fish and a devilish fish swimming together. All the flames or cold air in the surrounding air was swallowed by this “Twin Fish Circle”.

The thing that also surprised Yue Yang greatly was indeed the profoundness of his recent comprehension...

The Storm Giant and the royal swordswoman performed a pincer attack. The sudden attack from both sides caused the Twin Fish Circle, which was slow moving and beautiful beyond words balancing the attacks from two sides, to suddenly shoot out in all direction without any warning.

The royal swordswoman somersaulted more than ten times before landing easily on the stage.

She had a startled expression on her face. This was the first time in her life that she had been sent flying before even coming into contact with the opponent’s weapon.

The Storm Giant was in an even more disorderly state. Its strength was completely diverted and it lost its balance, falling onto the stage with a loud boom. It lifted up mud, bricks, countless tables and chairs with its tornado, then clumsily fell more than ten meters away before barely collecting itself.

Xue Tan Lang felt fearful.

He thought that it would make sense if this ingenious rebounding strength knocked away normal warriors.

But his Storm Giant was made of elemental energy and was not even corporeal, so how could it be rebounded? And how could the rebound strength be so intense?

“What a good kid. Who knows if this skill was his own comprehension or imparted by an expert, but these two Yin and Yang fishes are really a wonder.” Jun Wu You slapped the table in praise.

“This is truly a miraculous technique that can neutralize the energy of any strong enemies. Wonderful.” The Ku Ming Elder that had not opened his eyes nor said a word throughout the whole battle, suddenly revealed an odd light in his eyes and nodded in praise. He was Yue Feng’s instructor from the Southern Mountain Floating Mist Sect and was an [Elder] ranked individual.

“I am also currently unable to unravel this.” The Imperial Guard Commander Feng Kuang, who had the title of “Thousand Withering Bones”, also spoke for the first time. He also felt that he could not understand the battle’s situation as it was too complex.

“This is definitely not Yue Qiu’s sword technique...” Yan Clan’s substitute clan head Yan Qian Zhong, Xue Wen Dao, and Feng Xiao Yun exchanged glances, with hints of jealousy in their eyes. The

geniuses in the Yue Clan were far too many. With these techniques that nobody recognized, no matter if they were secretly imparted by Yue Qiu, or comprehended on his own by this little lunatic, this kid was already a universally shocking genius. It looked like after Yue Qiu, another combat genius had appeared. Without having to wait for too many years, a second Yue Qiu would appear in the Yue Clan.

Yue Yang was not inferior in any way to Yue Qiu back then.

The trash Third Young Master, that the world had ridiculed, was actually a true genius that had even surpassed his father.

“Interesting. It looks like I have to use my beasts as well.” The royal swordswoman raised her large sword, shouting with a high intention to battle.

“Qian Qian, don’t fool around.” Jun Wu You spurted tea when he heard her.

“Princess Qian Qian, Please do not summon your beasts here. The three of you go out and stop fighting here. If not, then the entire Yue Clan’s home will be torn down by you three.” As soon as elder Yue Hai heard that the royal swordswoman wanted to summon her beasts, he hurriedly stood up and shouted to stop them. He wanted the three of them to fight outside of the Yue Clan Castle, and not at the grounds within the castle.

“Eh?” Yue Yang felt curious. What kind of beast could this royal swordswoman possibly have, that was so fierce to even make Jun

Wu You and elder Yue Hai to be so worried?

Chapter 113 – Counterfeit Skill Vs Six Records Skill

“Okay, let’s head out to fight. It’s too small here; we couldn’t fight to our fullest potential.” The swordswoman cancelled her summon, picked up her large sword, and was about to invite Yue Yang out for another three hundred bouts of fight... Unfortunately when Yue Yang saw the expression on Yue Shan’s face, he immediately had a change of mind.

Once he left, he couldn’t ensure that these two fellows would not secretly harm Fourth Mother.

If Fourth Mother did not leave, he too would absolutely not leave.

Moreover, if by any chance, the battle against the swordswoman and Xue Tan Lang ended up with the three of them becoming seriously injured, he couldn’t be sure that he would not be taken advantage of by First Uncle Yue Shan and Second Uncle Yue Ling. Yue Yang decided that it was more important to preserve his life than fighting and killing.

Although Yue Yang was indeed curious about the royal swordswoman’s beast, he changed his mind and immediately held back. He recalled the Barbaric Cow Shadow and the Bloody Queen, and greased his heels.

He stealthily jumped off the stage and swiftly ran off.

Xue Tan Lang and the royal swordswoman were people that he found difficult to deal with, thus it was better not to engage them.

As for the new battle skill that he comprehended, he would have to go back and refine it. At most he would only use it in his dreams and have the beautiful goddess to help him revise the skill, which should not be a problem. Only an idiot would reveal his full strength. Since they were more or less done with the fight, it would only be proper to know when to stop. Furthermore, he could not be too far from Fourth Mother, as he could not afford to be careless and put the little girl and Fourth Mother in danger.

Even if their lives were not in danger, if they were poisoned by some incurable poison like Fourth Uncle Yue Ling , then what could he do?

At this point in time, he could not leave their sides no matter what. As for the new battle skills, he could find an opportunity to practice it later.

“Stop running, little brat!” Both the royal swordswoman and Xue Tan Lang were confused. Why did Yue Yang flee when the battle had just started? If they could not fight here, they could go and fight outside instead.

“Fourth Mother, I’ve paid respect to the ancestors already, let’s head home.” Both Xue Tan Lang and the royal swordswoman were in hot pursuit. However Yue Yang shamelessly leaned over and carried the little girl. The two, who were prepared to attack, could

no longer do so as they were afraid of hurting the little girl accidentally.

“I’m looking forward to the day where you and I can battle without restraint... I still have ten times, twenty times, even thirty times stronger blizzard-type summons. The next time we meet, we have to decide who is the victor.” The ice cube guy Xue Tan Lang was not satisfied; he felt that he was the most outstanding male of all the gifted ones. Although he did not deny that the shameless Yue Yang was also outstanding, in his heart he still hoped to prove that he was a little more outstanding.

“When summer arrives, I’ll request you to organize an ice-cube summer party.” As Yue Yang spoke, Xue Tan Lang immediately turned around and left.

“Hehe” Yue Bing covered her mouth as she giggled.

“Hey, you are not allowed to leave things unfinished. Let us fight again.” The royal swordswoman extremely detested this type of rascal. She wished she could use her large sword and smash the brat’s head to pieces.

He actually ran away as soon as the fight begun. Did he not have any of the pride or dignity of a man?

Yue Yang felt extremely disdained. One could have honor, but it could not be eaten. When a male was trying to chase after a beauty, he would use a stronger sense of honor, but in a normal fight, why should one have such an unyielding sense of honor?

Carrying the little girl, Yue Yang deliberately shook his head and sighed: "I've lost, I'm just a piece of trash. If it was just somebody bullying me on any day, I'll just let it be, but you are a princess. Shouldn't you be taking off your clothes and having a bath by the lake? Instead, you choose to come out and bully a piece of trash. Please have mercy and give us a way out. We have been bullied till it is almost impossible to continue living on. Fourth Mother, let's go."

The beautiful woman shook her head gently and said: "Let's stay here for another two days. I wish to meet Miss Feng and ask about your uncle's situation"

She took the little girl from Yue Yang and gently stroked the top of Yue Yang's head. "Unknowingly, my son has grown so tall. San-er is so capable. Fourth Mother is happy. I'll talk to you more later. Now, you should accompany Princess Qian Qian. As the head of our branch, you should not neglect such an important guest like Princess Qian Qian."

Yue Yang displayed an appearance of a filial son and nodded his head earnestly: "Of course, Fourth Mother walk slowly. I'll take care of Princess Qian Qian properly... .. I'll make sure she drowns in happiness (sexual pleasure)."

(Ignis: Yue Yang played on words where happiness (幸福快乐) sounds the same as Sexual Pleasure (性福快乐))

Naturally, he did not dare to say the second part of that phrase.

The royal swordswoman raised her brows and wondered if her Six Records skill had deteriorated a little. Why couldn't she hear the few of the words that Yue Yang said?

Was it due to confusion, or was it because she was used to the nonsense of Yue Yang?

Strange...

She didn't know that in this world, there was a certain shameless guy with a cheat skill called Counterfeit. If her Six Records skill wasn't so strong, she reckoned that she would be thoroughly deceived. Faced with the Level 2 Counterfeit, for her to feel confused on hearing the words of Yue Yang was indeed normal.

If she continued to listen without having any suspicions, then it would be disastrous. She would have long been deceived endlessly by him if it happened.

"Your words are incorrect, it seems like you wish to take advantage of me. Are you thinking about something bad?" The royal swordswoman had good perception and Yue Yang muttered that it was a close call. Fortunately the Counterfeit skill had ranked up, so she could now only make sense of a few lies and wasn't as sure as she was in the past.

Ha Ha, the time to dupe her had arrived.

Wasn't she just a Princess?

If she was disciplined, Yue Yang believed that there was a good chance for her to become an obedient female slave...

Yue Yang felt tickled, but faked a dignified appearance: "Come on, my thoughtfulness for the Princess is unquestionable, and my admiration for you is as endless and unceasing as a flowing river... I am preparing to slaughter a chicken and burn yellow paper to become heterosexual sworn brothers with the Princess. Thus, how could I be disrespectful to the Princess? If I were ever disrespectful, then let lightning strike that White Stone City tavern's boss."

"How is this related to White Stone City tavern's boss?" The Swordswoman became increasingly confused as she heard Yue Yang's words, why was her Six Records failing?

"Nonsense, it is very related." Yue Yang said mysteriously: "I won't tell this to just anybody, but since it is you, then it is fine, because you are my sworn brother. No wait. You are my Princess. Don't you know about the tavern's boss at the east of White Stone City? He is a ruthless merchant that lacks conscience, and is more ruthless compared to those merchants producing cotton goods in sweatshops. People, who are tavern bosses, often put a little water in wine, but he goes even further. He puts a little wine into a bottle of water and sell it just like that [San Lu](#) Group putting milk powder into a bottle filled with melamine. If lightning doesn't strike on him, is there even justice in this world?"

"What kind of beast is this melamine? What San Lu to what milk?" The swordswoman became increasingly confused and could

not comprehend a single thing.

“You don’t know what is San Lu? It is a mythical beast that possesses the ability to turn things into stone. Haven’t you heard of this phrase: “Drink San Lu and it will petrify a generation”?” Yue Yang appeared startled when he asked, with a facial expression of someone who was dumbfounded by an idiot. The look on Yue Yang’s face exceptionally demanded a beating.

“I’ve never heard of it.” The swordswomen wished she could give a fierce beating to the overly exaggerated face of Yue Yang’s.

“Friend, I know that you pay no attention to outside matters. You’re preoccupied with being a girl, but you can’t be unaware of even San Lu. Let me tell you, San Lu is just like a mistress, both of them have ‘milk’.” Yue Yang said resolutely.

“I feel that you are trying to deceive me, you are deliberately trying to trick me.” The swordswoman felt that she had listened to so much nonsense that she felt dizzy. She could feel that something wasn’t right, yet couldn’t tell what was wrong.

“How would I dare to deceive you, you are the Princess. I’m just a commoner who is just a piece of trash. How could I have the guts to deceive you, the Princess? Naturally, I wouldn’t dare to do so. Moreover, I’m just an honest, noble gentleman. Throughout my entire life, I’ve treated others with sincerity, spoken with honesty, did genuine acts, and cultivated to become a good person. So how could I have lied? I’ll tell you this responsibly; I’ve never told a lie before in my entire life.” As Yue Yang said this sentence, even he could not believe what he had just said.

“Why don’t you say that you are a saint that would faint at the sight of blood?” The swordswoman shrieked angrily.

“The sight of blood, which makes me feel sick, is my only weakness in life. I’m naturally timid. No. I was born kind-hearted.” Yue Yang, who was covered from head to toe by others’ fresh blood, was now smiling brilliantly as if he was enjoying the gentle spring breeze.

“I’m dizzy. You are the most shameless person I’ve ever met in my entire life.” The royal swordswoman’s head was hurting.

“Once you discover that you have misunderstood me this whole time, you will definitely feel guilty. However, it’s not an issue, I’ll forgive you. In addition, having tolerance is also one of my merits. Furthermore, it is my biggest merit in life.” A few days ago, he was slaughtering his way into the Yue Clan Castle to seek revenge. Today, he had just knocked Yue Tian, Yue Yan, and even the seven year old Yue Feng off the stage to avenge himself. Yet, this was the way he evaluated himself.

“Forget it, let’s not talk about you now. I reckon that if the world’s most shameless person met you, he would probably feel inferior and commit suicide, but I still couldn’t make any sense of what you were previously saying...” The swordswoman felt a bit confused, and decided not to talk to this brat any longer. It would just make her become infuriated and, at the same time, kill her from a headache.

“Let’s explore it together, then you can understand everything thoroughly, where do you plan on getting started?” Yue Yang spoke sincerely.

(Ignis: another word play. The word for exploring in mandarin also means doing it)

“You!” The royal swordswoman understood what he implied and was furious. She grabbed onto Yue Yang’s collar and scolded: “You dare to take liberties and molest me?”

“Injustice! I think even a blind person can see who is actually taking liberties and molesting who.” Yue Yang, whose collar had been grabbed, shouted with grievance, and looked like he wanted to jump into a river to commit suicide. Once he saw the royal swordswoman glaring at him, he revealed a smile: “I indeed want to molest you, but I’m just saying it casually and did not even do it. Princess, you do not have any evidence, yet you forcefully labelled me as a molestor. This civilian feels indignant. Why don’t you wait until I have molested you. Once it becomes a reality, then it wouldn’t be too late for the Princess to be angry. Don’t you feel what I’ve said is a little reasonable?”

“Your head!” The Swordswoman was angry, but in the end had laughed instead. This brat could be honest at times and occasionally, he also spoke some truths.

“Thank you, Princess for your mercy. This civilian shall take his leave.” Yue Yang hastily tried to slip away.

“Wait, previously you said that I should strip and take a bath by the lakeside. How do you explain that? If you are unable to do so, then I would have to charge you for slander.” The royal swordswoman’s had a good memory. She could still clearly recall the nonsense that Yue Yang had previously spouted.

“Do you really have such a hobby?” Yue Yang blinked his large eyes and asked curiously.

“I don’t have such a perverted hobby.” The swordswoman was about to pass out. Who would be so bored as to run to the lakeside for a bath?

“But it is clearly written in novels that princesses would compete and try to outdo each other by running to lakesides to take baths. Then those who picked up the princess’ clothes could earn their affection. I was initially planning to go and prepare an ambush at the lakeside, to see if there were any princesses going there for a bath...” Yue Yang spoke with a tone of disappointment, and had hint of hopelessness.

“Idiot, those stories are fictional. Moreover, I haven’t read any novels that have such senseless stuff written in it.” The royal swordswoman punched at Yue Yang’s chest heavily.

“I would rather wish that it was true...” Yue Yang seemed as if he was going to cry.

“You are already incorrigible.” The royal swordswoman was speechless.

Just then, Jun Wu You sent a few people to ask Yue Yang to come over and meet him.

Who would have known that Yue Yang rejected the offer with an excuse that could make everybody sweat in nervousness.

Yue Yang touched his chest and acted like he was about to collapse from injury, telling the imperial guard: "I'm honored that the Emperor summoned a useless piece of trash like me over to have a talk, but just few days ago, I've suddenly caught the chills and I have yet to recover. Furthermore, I've overestimated my capabilities and participated in this competition, which resulted in me being seriously injured. Look at me, I'm covered in blood. It appears that I do not have much time left to live. I've to go back immediately and write my will, and pay my last association fee to the organization. Wrong, it is the club fee... oh I forgot that I am not in any club. I'm just a member of the [young pioneers](#). Oh heavens, I have too many regrets. This won't do, I am going to commit suicide. Nobody should try to stop me."

Before he finished his sentence, Yue Yang had already swiftly disappeared.

The royal swordswoman was dumbstruck at the sight of this, only mumbling after a period of time: "Is some part of this little brat's brain damaged? Why is he so disorderly?"

"Ha ha ha ha" After Jun Wu You listened to the guard's report, he started to laugh merrily.

“This little brat is really rude. It seems that we have to quickly catch him and punish him properly. If he is not punished heavily, I reckon that it would be impossible to change his mischievous nature.” Elder Yue Hai also laughed.

“Young people nowadays are really daring. Back when I was young, whenever my old man called me for some admonishing, there were times that I really didn’t want to go. I wanted to tell my old man that I had enough of his daily lecturing... However, I could not bring myself to say it. Brother Hai, so what do you intend on doing? Let him be wild for two years or discipline him a little? Why not find him something to do, lest he thinks that we old folks are muddle-headed or are turning blind. Otherwise, we can always send him to that place for experience. I believe that this little brat will definitely not disappoint us.” Jun Wu You chuckled.

Although what Jun Wu You said seemed casual, it was like a bolt of lightning from a clear sky. It made Feng Xiao Yun, Xu Wen Dao, Yan Qian Zhong, Yue Shan, Yue Ling, and the others who were seated become perturbed.

They were all shocked and stood up immediately.

“What? Your Highness. To send a child to that place to train, isn’t it too early?” Yan Qian Zhong stood up hurriedly, carrying a look of anxiety.

“Absolutely, that place is far too dangerous” Xu Wen Dao nodded in agreement.

“Your Highness, why don’t we let him train in the third level of Tong Tian Tower for a while to let him accumulate experience first? That place is simply too unpredictable.” Feng Xiao Yun had some doubts too.

“...” Yue Shan and Yue Ling exchanged glances, but did not speak. In any case, both Yue Tian and Yue Yan were now crippled, thus they had no chance to go.

“Sending him to that place is indeed slightly early, but we are only temporarily going to the outskirts of that place. They would probably be unable to enter the inner circle within two whole years, so it should be fine. You should not underestimate the kids nowadays. Po Jun, Qi Sha, Tan Lang, and also that little lunatic from before; all of them are outstanding talents whom I think highly of. After they have attained that realm and meet the requirements, I will recommend them to that Old Geezer above. There’s no need for all of you to be worried. I’m certain that their achievements will certainly surpass yours. They belong to Da Xia Empire and are also the four major clan’s future prospects. Let them go; the sky is vast for the birds to fly and the sea is wide for the fish to swim. It couldn’t be that all of you wish to shelter them and cause them to become incapable of overcoming any hardships in life? The strong are produced from grindstones; the greater the hardship, the stronger they will become.” Jun Wu You comforted them in speech and pledged, “Please be assured that the imperial household of the Da Xia Empire will not be stingy. Any map, notes, treasures, etc. will be taken out for them to use. Do you think that I do not wish for them to become talented? Or that I’m not worried about their safety? As long as you people are willing to send them, I can provide everything that is needed.”

“Since Your Highness has granted us such a favor, your subjects are absolutely gratified.” Yan Qian Zhong, Xue Wen Dao, and Feng Xiao Yun bowed and thanked Jun Wu You for his favor.

“I’ll give you three months to prepare... Yue Tian and Yue Yan will also go. Even if their beasts have died, they can still contract with other beasts. Furthermore, they still have their guardian beasts; the guardian beasts are actually the most important, so let’s just forget about the other beasts. Furthermore, their strength can be improved. As for the huge losses this time, the imperial household shall bestow upon both of them a bronze ranked beast to increase their strengths. But from today onwards, you people have to ensure unity and prevent another tragedy of having the geniuses die.” Jun Wu You gave a small benefit to Yue Shan and Yue Ling and at the same time, warned them not to harbour any ill intentions towards Yue Yang. They should absolutely not repeat Yue Qiu’s tragedy, if not, he would start killing people.

“We thank you, the Emperor, for your favor.” Yue Shan and Yue Ling naturally agreed respectfully on the surface, but nobody knew what they were thinking about in their hearts.

At the wave of Jun Wu You’s hand, the crowd swiftly took their leave and retired.

After he had dismissed everybody, Jun Wu You conversed with elder Yue Hai again.

“Brother Hai, I’m okay with it. Seems like he was certain that he

does not wish to see me. You, as his grandfather, should go and talk to that little lunatic. I feel that he seems to be proficient in battle skills, yet his knowledge of beasts seems to be superficial. How about letting him attend three months of school to beef up his basic knowledge? What do you think?" Jun Wu You's perceptiveness was incomparably sharp. He could read people extremely accurately. Most of the words he spoke were targeted towards the fact that he understood that Yue Yang had never experienced proper grooming as he was of no importance to his clan. This little lunatic had always hidden at home and had neither received a good basic training, nor proper education. By relying simply on his reckless strength would not be a good thing for his growth.

"I'm thinking of giving Qiu-er's stuff to him, hopefully it would benefit him. Aish, this child certainly has some endurance, but he is nonetheless young and cannot restrain himself for long. Having it accumulated, and becoming famous too early; this is not very good. If he were given a couple of years to step into the realm of a Level 6 [Elder], or possibly even a Level 7 [Overlord], it will not be too late for him to become famous... Now he has become famous too early, I'm afraid that he would provoke the envy and jealousy of people." Elder Yue Hai sighed lightly.

"It's no use to ponder over it now. This kid is smarter than his father and also extremely cunning. He is someone that is capable of accomplishing great things. Oh right. If you want me to hand over that stuff to him, it must certainly come with conditions. You have to let him handle a task for me. That thing was something that I had painstakingly managed to retrieve from the Old Geezer back then. It can't be handed over to that kid for free." Jun Wu You immediately raised his tone and laughed as he saw the swordswoman walk over: "Qian Qian, how was it? What did that

kid talk to you about? ”

“That little brat deceived me, but I could not catch him. My Six Records skill has lost its effectiveness against him.” The royal swordswoman replied gloomily.

“Ah, it couldn’t be possible right? ” Ju Wu You and elder Yue Hai could not believe what they had just heard.

Chapter 114 – Well Coordination, Instant Killing A Powerful Enemy!

Yue Clan's Castle.

In the middle of the night, Yue Yan sat blankly in his room for a long time. Even until now, he still could not accept reality.

The most detestable trash that he had ever met in his entire life had really experienced a reversal of fortune. He could still endure it if that trash only mastered his father Yue Qiu's, martial art skills, but Yue Yang also possessed a Golden King Beast to boot... It was almost impossible to pursue and make up for the gap. No matter how much effort he put in, it would be hopeless. What kind of cruel reality allowed that trash to have a Golden King beast. Why could it not be him? If he could also possess a gold-ranked fighting beast, how good would that be?

Why was heaven so fond of that trash?

Why not him?

Why couldn't someone like him, who was so outstanding and hardworking, have a Golden King Beast? Why did heaven let this kind of trash have such a treasure?

Every time Yue Yan recalled the tournament during the day, of how he had been shamed so much by this trash and suffered such a crushing defeat, how he had to have his father rescue him in order

to come out alive. He felt extreme hatred in his heart. As long as he was still alive, he vowed that he would kill that trash someday.

However, that trash had already possessed a Golden King Beast that increased his strength tremendously. How could he kill him?

“Fourth Young Master. Are you sleeping? Can I have a chat with you?” Suddenly, an old, wizened voice sounded out from the outside of the window.

“Who is it?” Yue Yan was alarmed.

He felt a terribly sinister, demonic aura had entered into his room from the window; it was as if a Devil King had descended. Out of fright, Yue Yan tried to hurriedly summon his strongest beast, but just as he was raising his hand, he suddenly realized that both of his strongest beasts, the Flame Lion and Flame Guard, had already been killed by that trash’s Bloody Queen. His forehead immediately started to drip with sweat. Fortunately he still had his Guardian Beast the Flame Wolf, otherwise he would have been engulfed by this demonic aura.

The Bronze Level 3 Flame Wolf came out, but it clamped its tail in fear. It wailed in a low voice, seemingly terrified by this terrible demonic aura. If it weren’t for the fact that it was a Guardian Beast, who would never betray its master, then this Flame Wolf would probably already be running away, abandoning its master like normal beasts.

Yue Yan was drenched with cold sweat. How could there be such

a frightful enemy hidden in this Yue Clan's Castle?

He was just about to speak, when all of a sudden, a burst of dark light flickered.

That voice that was filled with demonic aura sounded out: "Yue Clan's Fourth Master, you are a clever child. I think you should already know that shouting for help is not a wise move. I could kill you easily before any reinforcements arrive. Certainly, if you could stop being hostile and have a talk with me, I believe that we will have a lot of opportunity to work together. Moreover, this collaboration could be very pleasing to you."

"No, you are a demon follower. I am one of the Yue Clan's younger generation. I will absolutely not be bewitched by a demon. Don't even dream about it." Yue Yan's jaw was trembling unceasingly.

"It seems that you have been deceived by the education system. Whoever told you that demons must be mankind's enemy? At the higher level of Tong Tian Tower, at the Outer Realm, there are numerous powerful human Rankers who joined forces with powerful Demon Rankers to repel their enemies ... I believe that you heard of the place called the Heaven Realm? Do you know what kind of place is that? That's the place where both Demons and Humans coexist together. Of course, there are even more different types of species living there, and there are even stronger and more formidable enemies. Currently, you are as weak as an ant. Do you wish to pursue the highest realm of power possible? Do you wish to pursue a much greater power? Look at you, so weak and pathetic, so dejected after only losing three of your useless,

bronze-ranked beasts. Even I feel sad for you as you are now. You could never come to know how strong the Outer Realm is. Over there, even if you possess a gold-ranked beast, you would still only be trash. If you still desire to be a weak ant, then I shall leave. However, If you have even a little desire to forge ahead and become stronger, then we can have a chat... “ The demonic figure spoke softly outside the window as he gently tempted Yue Yan.

“Can you give me a gold-ranked beast?” Yue Yan clenched his fists tightly.

He knew that if he accepted the demon’s enticement, he would be thoroughly done for.

However, he was unresigned. He could lose to any person, but he absolutely could not be defeated by that trash. Right now, rather than continuing as an inferior, weak ant that was not even worth mentioning, he would rather own a strong beast and turn into a powerful Ranker that could sweep away everything on his path.

As long as he had a gold-ranked beast, he could become as strong as that piece of trash. Defeating that garbage then would not just be a dream, but a reality. This was an opportunity, an extremely good opportunity... However, if he really received the demon’s present, there would really be no turning back for him. He would lose his position in the Yue Clan, and might even become a Demon Follower that everyone in the world would hunt down to kill.

Do I really have to do this?

As Yue Yan pondered about it, he couldn't help but feel a chill run down his spine.

Now, Yue Yan was standing on the cliff's edge, where the only option was to either fall into the dark abyss and become a Demon's follower, or choose to continue living as a loser. Should he continue to be a weak ant, or should he chose to become depraved?

"Child, you are too impatient. Based on your current strength, you wouldn't be able to form a contract with it, even if I did give you a gold-ranked beast. Of course, I can give you a silver-ranked beast. After you form a contract with it, you could slowly cultivate it. When the time is ripe, we can use a secret art to convert it into a gold-ranked beast or higher. Regarding this matter, you don't have to worry, as nothing is impossible for us." The Demon Shadow outside the window chuckled lightly.

"If you give me a silver-ranked beast instead of a gold-ranked beast, then how can I defeat that piece of trash? I must defeat that piece of trash, I must definitely kill him." Yue Yan gnashed his teeth tightly the moment he thought of Yue Yang, hatred filling him all the way to his bones.

"Impatient people won't be able to achieve great things in life. Of course, I understand the hatred in your heart. This being the case, how about I send an envoy to teach that trash a lesson for you? I will send an envoy to cripple him and make him unable to progress for a few years. As for you, you would take this opportunity to improve greatly, then you could kill him very easily. I guarantee that once you have become stronger, defeating him will be as effortless as squishing a bug," The Demon Shadow near the

window continued to entice Yue Yan again.

“Since you are a Demon Follower, I could not trust you. You must be trying to deceive me.” Yue Yan’s mind was in a state of conflict. He wouldn’t believe that he would have a glorious future without a gold-ranked beast egg. If the Demon Follower was deceiving him by any chance, then what would he, who had no way of undoing what he had done, do?

“Fourth Young Master, I’ve mentioned it earlier. You are indeed smart, but you will never be able to comprehend just how formidable our capabilities are. Nothing is impossible for us. Just listen for the news tomorrow. That piece of trash will acquire serious injuries, and this is us holding our strength back to let you enjoy the taste of victory. Smart lad, I am not anxious for your reply. Once you have made up your mind, I will come to look for you again. Or perhaps, you can go to the Black River Valley on the third level of Tong Tian Tower to look for me. Young one, when good fortune arrives at your doorstep, as you stand at the intersection of your destiny, I hope you will not miss this opportunity and make the foolish choice of walking down the wrong path in life.” As a breeze blew through the window, that demonic shadow had already faded away.

“What now, what now?” Yue Yan muttered to himself as beads of sweats trickled down his face.

What Yue Yan did not know, was that half an hour earlier, that exact same Demon Shadow had appeared in front of Yue Tian’s window, and given him the exact same speech.

Five minutes later, that Demon Shadow appeared in front of Yue Yang's window.

However, before he could even speak, Yue Yang's voice resounded from inside, "I am still awake, what do you wish to talk about? If you wish to use a silver-ranked beast to entice me like Yue Yan, then I am sorry to tell you that I have no interest in silver-ranked beasts at all. What do you wish to talk to me about? You, a Demon Follower, who has yet to cross over to the Heaven Realm, yet still dare to casually dupe people to become Demon Followers, who is your master? Is it Demon King Baruth, Demon King Ha Xin, or Lich King Grun?"

"You... .." This was the first time someone was able to see through the Demon Shadow's concealment. The demonic shadow asked bewilderedly: "How could you know? Were you following me just now?"

"Excuse me, but I had initially wanted to go over to that brat, Yue Yan's place and beat him up again, as well as reminding him that it is time to pee. I didn't expect to hear you delivering your speech. Your flattering speech almost made me want to applaud you for it. I reckoned that you may come and look for me for a chat, therefore I specifically rushed back and waited for you. Why? Don't you have something to talk to me about?" Yue Yang spoke magnanimously as he openly opened the door and stood there, making a gesture to invite the Demon Shadow in.

"It seems that I have underestimated you, Third Young Master. We will meet again in the future." The Demon Shadow spoke as he held a black transportation orb.

“The same move that you used would not work on a Saint Seiya... I mean, the same escaping move that you used would not work on me, ” Yue Yang laughed brilliantly.

The Demon Shadow, who had just wanted to use the black transportation orb to escape, suddenly found himself not able to move.

An unshakable binding strength had chained his whole body to the ground.

A small, exquisite pair of Dual Icicle Blades came from his rear and easily slashed the arms of the Demon Shadow that was holding the black transportation orb. At the same time, the sliced arm and shoulder of the Demon Shadow began to freeze over.

There was an assailant behind him, a very strong one at that. Could this person be the person that master had ever said before...? This, could this be the expert that was teaching this trash Third Young Master in secret?

It was true as expected.

There was indeed an expert supporting that piece of trash from the shadows.

As the Demon Shadow’s hand reach out to summon his grimoire, there was a sudden “whoosh” sound, and a golden arrow etched

deeply into his right shoulder. Immediately, his right shoulder began to turn to stone. The Demon Shadow was so shocked, that his soul almost left his body. Stone Element Medusa. There was no need to guess, this was the work of Stone Element Medusa's petrifying ability. Thankfully, he did not turn around, otherwise he would have turned into a stone.

“Hiss”

Blood sprayed out as a golden trident penetrated right through the chest of the Demon Shadow. At the tip of the trident, there appeared to be a demon heart that looked like a black core emitting dark energies.

The Demon Shadow started to sway, so agonized that he almost collapsed onto the ground.

“I will be back to take my revenge!” The Demon Shadow hatefully stepped onto the dark teleportation orb that laid on the ground.

He knew that he was a goner. Even if he could make it out, he reckoned that with his current injuries, his body would not be able to survive for long.

Nevertheless, as long as there was still a breath left in him, he would pass on the important message to his master that the garbage Third Young Master has the protection of several powerful people.

Yue Yang dashed forward faster than lightning ,and joined his fingers as he pierced through the Demon Shadow's right chest: "I know that certain demon races have 2 demon hearts, thus this trick is no longer effective against me. Die!"

In a flash, the Innate Sword Qi stabbed into the remaining heart of the Demon Shadow.

The Demon Shadow's body began to rumble and exploded with a boom. A Silver grimoire appeared, and fell to the ground, emitting an endless stream of demonic energy.

Just as the Demon Shadow's corpse began to fade away in the teleportation pillar that arose from the teleportation orb, the hidden Xiao Wen Li swiftly severed the Demon Shadow's neck with her Dual Icicle Blades. Her attack was even faster than the teleportation light.

Neither the Stone Element Medusa nor the Storm Mermaid, who was holding a golden trident, were able to react and attack a second time.

But since this was the first coordinated surprise attack, it could be considered a success.

If they were really fighting against that Demon Shadow, it would be very difficult to defeat a strong enemy that owned a grimoire. Even if the Demon Shadow was heavily injured, he could still escape using the transportation orb.

Employing his strategies, Yue Yang was able to execute his well coordinated plan to surround and kill the Demon Shadow.

In the end, the Demon Shadow was killed in seconds.

This was the power obtained through the usage of one's intellect and strength.

No matter if it was at the Yue Clan Village, at the Yue Clan's Castle entrance, or even the Yue Clan's Tournament, Yue Yang had yet to fully display his abilities.

However, once there was nobody around, Yue Yang did not show any restraint and killed the Demon Shadow in seconds... At the same time, he deliberately created an image that he was protected by an expert.

This also gave the Demon Shadow's master a warning.

Other than the Silver Grimoire and the demon heart at the tip of the Storm Mermaid's golden trident, the rest of the Demon Shadow's body was teleported away, even his severed arm that was slashed by Xiao Wen Li's blade.

"Everybody did a good job, especially Xiao Wen Li, your strength is the best!" Yue Yang praised. Xiao Wen Li was beaming with joy and went on to grab Yue Yang leg with her six arms and started acting coquettishly. Yue Yang immediately went over to pick up the Silver Grimoire. This thing still has some research value,

maybe he would suddenly be lucky again someday and contract a Third Grimoire. That would have been awesome.

As for the Stone Element Medusa and the Storm Mermaid, they were recalled into Xiao Wen Li's diamond grimoire.

Xiao Wen Li was disgusted by the sight of the impaled demon heart as if she had seen something dirty. On the contrary, Hui Tai Lang was drooling at the sight of the demon heart, but before Yue Yang gave him the permission to eat, he would not dare to eat it.

"You did not do anything today and yet you still want to eat this?" Yue Yang reprimanded Hui Tai Lang angrily at first, but in the end, seeing Hui Tai Lang's pathetic look, whose drool had almost turned into waterfall, Yue Yang finally gave Hui Tai Lang the permission to devour the demon heart. Forget it, it was just a broken demon heart that was of no use to the greedy dimension-traveller. The seldom act of generosity made Hui Tai Lang so overjoyed as he gobbled up the demon heart and wagged his tail happily.

Seeing that Hui Tai Lang's demonic aura started increasing unceasingly after he had consumed the demon heart, Yue Yang reckoned that it would not be long till Hui Tai Lang broke through to a new level.

If Hui Tai Lang could turn into a silver-ranked beast, then he wouldn't mind giving it a few more demon hearts or some Innate Qi

Anyway, could it be that this guy's final evolution was a three-headed dog, like the Gatekeeper of Hell, Cerberus?

With regards to Hui Tai Lang's future evolution, Yue Yang had only had a passing thought. He did not give it much thought as no matter how much it would improve, it was bound to be his weakest Beast.

Ten kilometres away, in a small forest.

A man dressed in white stood under the shadow of a tree with his hands on his back, silently waiting.

A black transportation spell flashed on the ground, and with a flash, a portal with a diameter of about 10 metres opened.

"Have you accomplished your mission?" The white-robed man asked unenthusiastically. However, there was no reply from the Demon Shadow as he appeared from the portal. Then, his head fell off from his neck and rolled towards the white-robed man's feet.

Although the Demon Shadow had already died, his eyes had yet to close and were bloodshot.

A second later, the refined white-robed man turned around in astonishment, revealing a face that no one could have thought of. He was actually Yue Family's substitute head, Yue Shan. The white-robed Yue Shan's expression was extremely complicated as he carefully observed the corpse of the Demon Shadow for a long

time.

Yue Shan carefully examined the severed head of the Demon Shadow, his pierced chest, his petrified arm and frozen shoulder.

Finally, he came to a conclusion. Xiao San did indeed have an expert behind him. It was this expert that stealthily attacked and killed the Demon Shadow in seconds. Furthermore, this expert was not only proficient in battle skills, but also had extremely strong beasts in his arsenal. He should at least have a Stone Element Medusa... As for the freezing ability, it seemed to be caused by a treasure weapon owned by the expert. The first heart seemed to be crushed, while the second heart was taken away forcibly. The expert must have realized that the Demon Shadow had a second heart after he crushed the first heart. Hence, the expert then swiftly dug out the second heart... Even so, the expert was still able to sliced the head of the Demon Spectre as he was about to escape. The last, but the most important point was that, the expert must have initially wanted to capture the Demon Shadow alive, but once the Demon Shadow activated the transportation orb, the expert decided to kill him.

The transportation orb only required a second to be activated, but during that one second, the expert had made numerous fatal wounds to the Demon Shadow.

That expert was too formidable.

A Demon Shadow, who possessed a grimoire, was instantly killed, unable to summon his grimoire. What level was this expert at? Level 7 – [OverLord] or Level 8 – [Emperor]?

Yue Shan looked towards the sky and sighed silently, “It seems that I’ll have to continue to endure patiently...”

At Yue Clan’s Castle, Yue Yang who had instantly killed the Demon Shadow with Xiao Wen Li, opened the Silver Grimoire and began to study it.

Previously, he could successfully form a contract with the Silver Grimoire when he obtained a Secondary Grimoire.

But could he form a contract with this Silver Grimoire too?

If he was unable to form a contract with the Silver Grimoire now, then should he hold onto it and see if he was able to do so when he reached a higher realm? What kind of secrets would another person’s grimoire have? As Yue Yang pondered over this issue, his heart was filled with a strange feeling that if he obtained more Grimoire’s, it would bring him more benefits in the future.

Now, what use would he have for this Silver Grimoire?

Chapter 115 – Water Avoiding Pearl?

Yue Yang reached his hand out and placed it on the silver grimoire lightly. There was a delicate reaction in his heart.

It was as if an extremely delicate thing had buried itself deeply within the silver grimoire. It seemed to be an unknown energy that was faintly discernable, yet extremely capricious. It gave Yue Yang an unfathomable feeling of an illusion. It was like a bare-naked beauty was standing right in front of him, but she just had to be behind a glass wall. No matter how much he stretched out his hand wanting to grab her, he was unable to... The only thing that Yue Yang could be sure of was that this silver grimoire must be hiding some kind of secret from him. He just could not dig it out right now.

As long as he could analyze it completely, he believed that he would have a much deeper knowledge regarding summoning grimoires.

He would be much smoother and at ease when using summoning grimoires as well.

Xiao Wen Li batted her large, cute eyes. Looking at Yue Yang's stupidity, being unable to analyze it after sensing it for half a day, she seemed to want to help Yue Yang a little. It was too bad that she could not speak and could only use her little hands to lightly pull at Yue Yang's arm.

“What's the matter?” Yue Yang was curious. Could it be that this

little loli had a better idea?

“...” Xiao Wen Li pointed with her delicate finger and summoned her diamond grimoire.

“How did you do it?” Yue Yang had wanted to learn this move for a long time. He knew how to summon his grimoire without a single word already. Two months ago, he had imitated the little loli’s summoning and learnt how to summon silently. However, he took as much time as he would to summon it while saying it out. Not only that, it required even more concentration to perform a silent summon. Yue Yang did not have the ability to summon instantly at a snap of his finger. If he had already silently chant it earlier, and moved his hands more confidently, he could of course act as if it was an instant summon, but to instantly summon without former preparation, this was a technique that he had not grasped yet.

Moreover, after seeing so many human rankers, aside from Luo Hua City’s Mistress, Yue Yang had not met anyone else who possessed this ability.

Instantly summoning a summoning grimoire was different from quick summoning.

No matter how fast quick summoning was, it still took time to silently chant... However, this type of instant summoning definitely didn’t need any chanting or time.

The thing that made Yue Yang feel shameful most was that with

a light touch of her finger, Xiao Wen Li could summon her diamond grimoire. With another touch, she could keep it. She could also summon anything at will. This was unlike Yue Bing, who had to rest for at least half a day to summon her grimoire a second time. If she was not fighting, she also would need at least an hour to recover. She was definitely unable to repeatedly summon it like how Xiao Wen Li could.

Yue Bing was a genius with abundant spiritual qi in her body, and yet it took her one hour to be able to summon her grimoire again.

If it was another warrior, they would most likely have to rest a full day before being able to summon their grimoire again.

Of course, it wasn't like Xiao Wen Li did not have limits either. Yue Yang had seen someone even more mystical than Xiao Wen Li, and that was Empress Fei Wen Li. She did not even need to summon her grimoire to take things out from it. More miraculously, she could change the summoning grimoire, which could not be changed or damaged easily, into a crystal coffin.

Yue Yang reckoned that it was impossible for him to possess this type of power at the moment.

However, Yue Yang still wished to learn this technique of instant summoning... After carefully looking at Xiao Wen Li, he stretched his hand onto her head to feel the movements of her brainwaves, then finally sensing the way she moved her spiritual qi within her body.

The dimensional traveller guy found out that at the moment Xiao Wen Li summoned the grimoire, her body's spiritual qi automatically resonated with the summoning grimoire.

It was as natural as someone eating or walking. It was completely natural, and did not require a single ounce of energy to summon.

If the normal method of summoning a grimoire were compared to her method, it would be equivalent to someone crawling on the ground stupidly. If this were to be given as an analogy, Xiao Wen Li would be running, while the normal contractors' summoning would be a turtle walking. It was on a completely different level. After sensing it for a long time, Yue Yang felt that he had a fair understanding and excitedly started to imitate it.

With his whole body and soul resonating with the contract in his summoned grimoire, he extended his hands, moving his spiritual qi with his finger while his whole body resonated with the summoning grimoire...

Boom!

An explosion rang out in his head, and he nearly fainted.

His mind shook. The backlash of failing to summon the grimoire caused Yue Yang's head to be buzzing afterwards. He did not know that it would feel this bad to fail a summon.

No wonder normal warriors, who were cut off while summoning

their beasts, would feel so much pain until they fainted on the ground. So it was this unpleasant. Yue Yang felt that this sensation was like taking a wrong step when walking up a flight of stairs... If it were someone else, they would definitely be scared off by the intense pain after failing once. They would not ask for trouble and get hit by the mental backlash after failing to summon again.

However, although Yue Yang usually liked to tell lies, he had some extremely slight merits. That would be that he was extremely stubborn to the point where he would not admit defeat.

Boom, boom, boom, boom...

Yue Yang clenched his teeth and persevered on as he practised. His heart was fierce and was determined to grasp this technique.

He found that learning this technique of instant summoning was akin to learning how to walk or ride a bicycle when he was young. He would always fall over, but each time he fell over, he would gain a little experience and improve little by little...

As his mind became more coordinated, the resonating effect between his body and the summoning grimoire gradually became greater.

The waves of mental backlash became lighter and lighter. Finally, Yue Yang did not feel his head hurting anymore. Instead, he felt a kind of fluctuating comfort that comes and goes, as if his mind was sobering up. His whole body entered into a mental state that was too wonderful to describe with words. The experience he

had received after failing countless times had accumulated into a brand new realisation. So the realm of 'man and grimoire as one', that he could not perceive originally, was right in front of his eyes all along...

Finally, after failing who knows how many times, Yue Yang reached his hands out again. This time was different from the previous times when his summoning failed. He now brimmed with confidence, and with a slight touch...

That silver grimoire was finally perfectly summoned in an instant.

It succeeded!

It really succeeded! However, Yue Yang was so amazed that he couldn't think of anything for a moment. He still could not believe his eyes for a long time.

"Wa wa wa, I succeeded!" Yue Yang was so excited that he jumped and hopped around. He felt extremely delighted. Yue Yang thought that he was a genius, and was too awesome. It was such a difficult technique, yet he had finally managed to grasp it.

"..." Xiao Wen Li stealthily yawned in an extremely cute manner.

Perhaps she felt that Yue Yang was an idiot who had to take such a long time just to practise such a simple thing.

Luckily, she still could not speak.

Thus, the blow was not dealt to Yue Yang, letting him feel a little delighted for three minutes.

Yue Yang fiercely kissed her on the face and threw her up into the air. He then caught her and swung her around, saying, “Little cutie, teach me again! How did you put the twin icicle blades into your diamond grimoire? There must be a technique for it, right? Come, tell me how to do it! How do I store things inside the grimoire?”

Xiao Wen Li batted her bright eyes, as if preparing to ‘tell’ Yue Yang the technique, but her eyes suddenly turned and she transformed into a rainbow light, floating into his body.

Instantly, Yue Yang also heard the sound of footsteps coming over from outside the house.

“Is it Fifth Grandfather?” Yue Yang opened the door to look and found the deer-riding elder dashing towards him, happily handing over a package to him.

“These are some of the things that your father left behind. After Brother Hai’s proposal, and the discussion between the Three Great Elders and the Nine Elders, we decided to give you a part of your father’s possessions to you for safekeeping. These are your father’s battle techniques. It might be a bit useful for you. As these techniques require the contracting of special beasts, Brother Hai and I both feel that you might not be suited to cultivate them as

they are. You may want to use them as a slight reference to receive some inspiration; perhaps that would be better for you. As for the other item, this is the blade that your father left behind. It's already broken. Take a look at it; maybe you can find some clues. And lastly, this is a key... “ Amongst the things that the Fifth Elder gave him, Yue Yang did not find any key.

“Where's the key?” Yue Yang was curious. Could this key be transparent?

“Little fellow, do you know the greatest difference between the Clan Head of the Yue Family and of the other clans in the world? It's how fair they have to be. No matter how much they favor a single son or grandson, he must treat everyone fairly and ensure that everyone also maintains fairness. Before the competition, it was not that he did not want to help you. Rather, the more he helped you, the more people would resent you in jealousy. It would be even harder for you to preserve your life. It's the same now. You've risen suddenly and want revenge, to return the debt to Yue Tian and Yue Yan and the rest. He will not stop that either... As long as you don't kill them, you can enjoy the privileges of the strong. You can taunt them and hit them all you want, just like they did to you back then. The Soaring Dragon Continent is a world that respects power over anything. It's the same within the Yue Family. If you're weak, then you should go about your life in a low-profile manner and spend your life in White Stone City. That would be the smartest decision; Conversely, if you have power, then you can rampage as you please like how you are doing now. Little fellow, don't be resentful of reality. This world is full of competition; if you can't even outdo your own people, how would you be able to compete against the people outside? You must be a strong person, stronger than anyone else, in order to earn recognition in the family and the world's respect.” After the Fifth

Elder spoke, he paused for a while, and said, “The key that Brother Hai gave you was a single sentence.”

“A single sentence?” Yue Yang thought, could it be the password to open the Puppet Palace?

“Brother Hai said, that when you feel that you possess the strength of a Level 6 [Elder], you may look for him. He will give you the location of the real Puppet Palace. Stored within it is the true secret of the Yue Family; When you have the strength of a Level 7 [Overlord], he will give the map of the godly ruins that the Yue Clan’s ancestors once explored... Only then will he tell you about another powerful existence in the world of rankers that common people don’t know about... San Er, this is just the start of the road of cultivation. Don’t think that Level 6 [Elder]s and Level 7 [Overlord]s are the peak of existence. On the contrary, for a true ranker, Level 7 [Overlord] is merely the beginning...” After Fifth Elder finished his speech, Yue Yang fell silent.

The stronger existence that the Fifth Elder spoke about was definitely the [Innate] realm.

How was the [Innate] realm divided then? What was its relation between it and the normal ranks that warriors of the world used?

What made Yue Yang more curious was, the true location of the Puppet Palace that Fifth Elder spoke about, was it not at the base of the Yue Family’s castle? The whole of the Soaring Dragon Continent knew that there was a Puppet Palace below the Yue Family’s castle. The reason why the entire Yue Family prospered was due to this mysterious Puppet Palace that continuously

produced countless puppet-type beasts...

Could it be that the true Puppet Palace was not there?

“Don’t be too hasty, San Er. There’s no need to worry for Fourth Lady’s safety either. I daresay that as long as you are alive, they will not be harmed in any way. The stronger you are, the better their life will be. This is a reality. You can’t change the opinion of every single person. The only thing you can change is yourself. You can become stronger, and make everyone have no choice but to revere you.” The Fifth Elder patted Yue Yang’s shoulder, climbed up onto his deer and went off while laughing heartily.

As Yue Yang wanted to start pondering over what the Fifth Elder had said, he suddenly saw the royal swordswoman carrying her large sword on her back, flying towards him noisily.

He immediately closed the door.

This royal swordswoman was obviously not here to warm the bed or serve him. It was better to have nothing to do with her.

“Oi, I’m not here to pick a fight with you. I’m finding you to form a party. At Eagle’s Cry Valley in Gui Jian Chou*, a royal scouting party mysteriously disappeared. The advisor’s Revelation gift traced it and found out that there was a gigantic energy reaction from there. Let’s go take a look together. If we find out what’s happening and get treasures from there, we can distribute them according to our needs.” Yue Yang was stunned when he heard

what the royal swordswoman said. Could it be that the Soaring Dragon Continent had adopted communism?

(*Sephilia: The name of the mountain range is a pun on worrying about seeing ghosts)

Distribution according to need, such a good deal?

Seeing that Yue Yang's heart was moved, the royal swordswoman struck while the iron was hot, persuading Yue Yang, "If we aren't able to get treasures, I can also request from the state treasury to reward you with an Water Avoiding Pearl. This way you can summon beasts underwater."

Water Avoiding Pearl?

Yue Yang immediately bounced up from his bed when he heard it. "No problem, I was born to scout Eagle's Cry Valley!"

"..." The royal swordswoman began to suspect that she had found the wrong person.

Chapter 116 – The Evil Wolf's Hand

Gui Jian Chou was a mountain range with continuous ups and downs, covered in a thick fog that would not dissipate throughout the year. Here, sunlight was considered a luxury.

Not to mention normal people, even the wildest bandits in the Da Xia Empire would not come to this kind of damned place. As the place was so deserted and not many people came here, the mountains in Gui Jian Chou contained various rare, precious medicines and minerals, as well as many rare beasts that could not be found in many other regions. Of the rare beasts that existed in this place, they were mostly plant-type beasts and insect-type beasts. It was said that there was even an extremely terrifying insect-type beast 'Reaper Mantis' that liked to prey on wyverns for food.

Of course, this was only a legend.

In this millennium, not a single soul had ever seen any sign of the 'Reaper Mantis' existence. This terrifying insect-type beast had probably been extinct for a thousand years already.

The Royal Swordswoman highly suspected that the royal scouting party had met a strong beast like the Reaper Mantis, and was wiped out by a surprise attack done by such an extremely strong beast...

"Be careful. Although there normally won't be wild beasts above Level 3 roaming about, because they're all plant-type and insect-

type beasts, they usually appear in groups. Not only that, they bring about lots of negative effects such as weakness, dizziness, poison, hypnosis, parasites and others. It's better to be safe than sorry. You, little liar, need to be more careful. Don't let some Parasitic Bee or Parasitic Spider latch onto you and make you grow a body full of parasitic insects." The royal swordswoman felt extremely baffled. This brat had always liked to chatter and crack jokes before this. Why did he suddenly become mute after teleporting to Gui Jian Chou?

"There are no signs of people ever walking past here at all. Are you absolutely sure that there really was a royal scouting party that got lost here?" Yue Yang was slightly doubtful in his heart.

Surrounding both sides of the Eagle's Cry Valley in Gui Jian Chou were mysterious peaks that shot straight up to the sky.

They were perfectly straight as if they were sliced and chopped with blades and hatchets.

The Iron Clawed Cliff Eagles lived on top of the valley had wingspans of over five metres. At the bottom of the valley was a terrifying bug-infested valley that was surrounded by a thick, dense fog that never cleared. Various types of bugs could be found everywhere, and even the plants in the valley were all strange as well. They were all brightly-coloured and eye-catching. There were red, yellow, purple, black, some with multiple colours, and some were even luminous.

The only thing that this place did not have was normal green plants.

Yue Yang was carefully looking around along the road, but he did not find any traces of humans anywhere.

The royal swordswoman also felt that it was odd. However, towards the doubt that Yue Yang showed, she used a noble gaze to glare at him, saying, “Did you think that I would lie about everything like you? If nobody went missing, why would I come here?”

“Something’s not right.” Yue Yang found that on top of a strange blood-red plant’s ugly branches, was a perching crow with blood-red eyes .

“What’s the matter?” The royal swordswoman did not understand. Was it not just a crow?

“Wait, let me open the beast encyclopedia to check...” Yue Yang took out an illustrated beast encyclopedia from his bag that was as thick as the New Chinese Language Dictionary on earth. As he was preparing to check the species of this crow, the royal swordswoman felt like fainting. She facepalmed and said, “Don’t bother, it’s such a basic thing. I’m telling you that this is a flesh-eating crow. The species of this crow is the Red-eyed Iron-winged Crow. Its body is twice as large as a normal crow, with a flight speed of 300km/h. It’s proficient in flying for short bursts and is extremely smart. It can open any capped bottles to drink water, and differentiate between 36 different colours and 50 different numbers. Its ability to resist poison is a 100-150 times that of a human, as it mostly feeds on rotting meat . Its body carries a venom that has various diseases, and peck wounds caused by it will

cause humans to be poisoned with a slow acting poison... Its grade is Level 2 bird-type flying beast, and they prefers to live in small groups. There are 3 subspecies and 2 variants. They live everywhere in the Soaring Dragon Continent, and are most common within our area, Da Xia Empire. Third Young Master, do you still want to know anything else?”

“Your memory isn’t bad at all!” As Yue Yang flipped the encyclopedia, he found out that the royal swordswoman was absolutely correct.

“Do you think that there is a problem with this crow?” The royal swordswoman fainted as she heard this. These were the basics of basics! Everyone who had attended school would know. However, she did not overly criticise Yue Yang. The reason was that this fellow had never attended school to begin with.

“It is a flesh-eating life form. Why is it following us? I noticed it when it was ten kilometres away. It has been following us secretly ever since.” Yue Yang expressed his doubts.

“Does it think that we will die?” The royal swordswoman was smart and got his point instantly.

“I have a suspicion that it saw the royal scouting party before. Not only that, it has already eaten their meat. It should feel that we will end up more or less like the royal scouting party’s members sooner or later, turning into corpses. That’s why it has been constantly following us so that it can devour flesh when we are down...” Yue Yang explained his own theory.

“How can you be so sure with just by a single crow?” The royal swordswoman really had a little admiration for this little liar.

She felt that although Yue Yang had completely no basic knowledge, his mental capabilities was definitely top-notch.

It really seemed like finding him as a partner for this was the right decision.

Of course, Yue Yang would not tell this girl that even though he had his suspicions, the most important thing was what his [Divine Vision] had analysed. Under the analysis of the [Divine Vision], there was something that was definitely wrong int this crow. It was not merely a simple, ordinary Red-Eyed Iron-Winged Crow. On the body of this Red-Eyed Crow, a kind of evil qi was present. It was different from demonic qi and was extremely peculiar.

Initially, Yue Yang had thought that it was the corpses' qi due to corpses rotting in its intestine after feeding on them for a long time.

However, analysing it more closely with [Divine Vision], he found out that this was not the case.

His [Divine Vision] could faintly see that this crow was a bird being controlled by a person that was far away from here.

Although it was not a contracted beast, but it was being

controlled by a person. It was a surveillance tool just like the drone planes on earth that were equipped with radars.

“I think the crow is being controlled by someone. Hopefully my gut feeling is wrong.” Yue Yang felt that in time to come, he would face an inevitable huge battle. Controlling an uncontracted crow was not something an ordinary warrior could do.

“If you’re right, then what kind of people would be hiding in Gui Jian Chou?” Hearing Yue Yang’s answer, the royal swordswoman was greatly shocked. She was able to discern that he was speaking the truth. To be more accurate, this fellow’s actions were completely different from before. He was currently not lying at all, and was extremely serious. Could it be that there was a hidden power somewhere expanding secretly in this place?

“I believe that there will be an answer to this question in a short time.” Yue Yang took out a piece of hard rations and bit down on it, pretending to eat. That crow immediately soared up high into the sky.

Clearly, it seemed to know that in the hands of a warrior, even a piece of dry rations could also be a fatal weapon.

However, as Yue Yang ate and drank, it quietly came down from the sky and landed on a tree branch farther away.

It followed the two of them from a distance away.

The royal swordswoman's eyes displayed a light of comprehension.

Actually, Yue Yang's previous movements was a test... If this crow was not controlled by someone, then it would not have flown up just now. Normal crows would pick up human's food strewn on the ground. It would not be so smart as to feel danger and fly up just by seeing rations being taken out. Since it had flown up, then, aside from being able to prove that someone was controlling it from behind, it had also proved his second point. If this crow's master could hear the conversation between Yue Yang and the sister, then it would not have ordered the crow to come down again. This was because the words that Yue Yang had just said clearly showed that he was suspicious of the crow.

Now that the crow had settled back onto the branch, it proved that the person controlling the crow could probably only see the movements of Yue Yang and the royal swordswoman, but not hear what they were saying. He did not know that Yue Yang was about to kill off the crow either. The person had thought that he was hungry and was preparing to eat some rations to fill his stomach.

The royal swordswoman batted her eyelids that were layered with a red blush-on, and asked Yue Yang, "What do we do now?"

Yue Yang handed over the water to her, and showed her a brilliant smile, saying, "I think that if we embraced each other and do some intimate actions like touching, grabbing, kneading and so on, perhaps we can lure this crow over to kill it. Although if we do that, I will suffer more losses, so I oppose this idea." The royal swordswoman almost fainted on the ground from this. How would

he be the one who would suffer more losses from them embracing each other?

“If you dare to touch me once, I will chop off your hands.” The royal swordswoman angrily raised her little fist at him.

“Then what about touching you twice?” With a tiger-like pounce from Yue Yang, he pinned the royal swordswoman down onto the ground completely.

Not waiting for the royal swordswoman to resist, he quickly took off the armour on her body. As he kissed her lightly like raindrops falling, he also took off his own clothes at the same time. That crow suddenly flew closer carefully and finally landed on a branch that was a few metres away from Yue Yang. It stared at the wild Yue Yang without turning its eyes away, as if it was extremely curious towards his wicked actions of pushing the royal swordswoman down.

Although the royal swordswoman was resisting with all her might, Yue Yang was much faster with his wolfy paws and had already taken her large breastplate out, throwing it to one side.

In front of her chest, a large portion of her unblemished, snow white skin was exposed, showcasing a soft, tender and beautiful flesh.

The tube top that covered her chest area almost seemed to be unable to wrap around those great mounds of flesh... Yue Yang excitedly gave a wolfy howl, and reached out with his wicked wolfy

paws, aiming straight towards those two mounds...

“Caught you!” Yue Yang’s figure suddenly disappeared.

When he appeared again, he was already on the branch.

With both hands, he caught that red-eyed crow that was losing its head out of fear. Yue Yang wore a grin on his face, but his eyes were as cold as the devil.

He looked straight into the crow’s eyes and said, “Curious? Don’t rush, little friend. When I find you later, I’ll perform the show slowly in front of you.”

After saying this, Yue Yang wrung the crow with force and snapped the head of that Red-eyed Crow.

However, before he could even brag about his plan succeeding, the royal swordswoman had already jumped up in rage and downed him with a punch.

The royal swordswoman’s eyes were full of anger. She was blushing a little as well, and a few tears had formed in her eyes. “You bastard, it was fine to put up a show, but you really touched me! Since when did I permit you to touch me? You must be doing this fake act for real, abusing your privileges! You want to seize the opportunity and take advantage of me!”

“Did I touch you just now?” Yue Yang’s face was full of

innocence. He had a face full of disbelief while looking at his hands.

“Are you a dead man? Don’t you have any feeling whether you had touched it or not?” The royal swordswoman was absolutely angry. This fellow had touched it, yet he didn’t want to admit it? He was still even trying to act dumb!

The royal swordswoman was so angry that her whole body shook with anger. Watching this, however, Yue Yang realized that those mounds of hers that could not be covered by the little piece of cloth she was wearing seemed to be swaying a little. No, it was a movement that was of a greater realm, transcending “swaying boobs”. It seemed to be the legendary “vibrating boobs”, that could even cause the coldest of souls to tremble. He gulped lots of saliva down, unable resist the ravenous desires that was filling his heart. He reached a wicked hand out, saying, “I didn’t feel it clearly just now, did I touch it like this?”

The royal swordswoman foolishly stared blankly in astonishment as she saw her breasts being groped by Yue Yang’s wolfy paws again. It was only after a long while before she suddenly let loose a scream that was even more terrifying than a banshee’s scream.

Without even bothering to wear her breastplate again, she immediately took up her greatsword and lifted it high up while slashing at Yue Yang who was running for his life.

“That’s my instinct as a guy! If any other guy saw it, they would do this too...” While he was busily running away, Yue Yang tried to defend himself. The royal swordswoman almost burst her heart

with rage after hearing this. “I’ll slice you to death, you big pervert! That is my instinct too!”

Chapter 117 – The Reaper Mantis

“Pa pa pa...”

In the sky, a group of Red-eyed Crows flapped their wings and swept across the air.

After a while, they flew back again, and circled a few rounds in the sky. Some of them landed on branches to search for something, but was eventually unable to find Yue Yang and the royal swordswoman who were hiding within the dense forest and bushes. In the end, flapping their wings noisily, they flew towards another direction.

Ever since Yue Yang killed the first red-eyed crow, in the span of a day and a night, the pack of Red-eyed Crows had flown over Yue Yang's head at least twenty times.

It was obvious that the Ranker hiding in Gui Jian Chou Eagle's Cry Valley was extremely talented at controlling crows.

In order to find out where Yue Yang and the royal swordswoman were, this hidden Ranker had controlled at least two hundred crows to search for them. They were dispatched in alternate shifts, searching everywhere, going over Yue Yang's head time and time again. However, they were fooled by Yue Yang's camouflage, and were unable to achieve anything in the end. The royal swordswoman, just like Yue Yang, had also abandoned her full-body armour and wore leaves-covered clothes, the kind that were usually used by forest scouts. Whenever there were a pack of crows

flying over, they would only need to duck into a cluster of plants, or crouch down and stop moving. This way, the pack of Red-eyed Crows in the sky would be unable to detect their presence.

Although the royal swordswoman's rage towards Yue Yang's groping hands did not disappear, she admired how crafty this fellow was.

Using tree branches and leaves to make clothes as a camouflage was really a great idea.

Not only crows, even humans would be unable to find them.

In a mountain gorge that was filled with a fast-flowing stream, countless Iron-clawed Cliff Eagles let loose chaotic cries, flying in all directions (Shiro: this is Eagle's Cry Valley). A green wyvern with a protruding head appeared, carrying a black-robed man on its back as it spiralled down to the ground. Yue Yang and the royal swordswoman hurriedly hid themselves within the cracks in the gorge, watching the movements of that black-robed man quietly. They only saw him taking out a black skull before he started muttering some chants... A dense, black fog was emitted from the skull, and eventually it condensed into black balls. The black-robed man then threw these black fog balls onto the ground. The black fog dispersed, and with a crackling sound, oddly-shaped skeletons were summoned one after another.

A few of those skeletons still had some items that they possessed when they were living, for example a tattered pair of gloves, a silver chain drenched full of black blood, a rusted longsword...

The face of the royal swordswoman immediately sunk at the sight of this.

Yue Yang could not understand what was going on, but she did. She understood the situation perfectly. She had found her target.

These skeletons were the people they had been looking for, the royal scouting party. However, all of them had died and they had even been turned into skeletons by the black-robed man through the terrifying Dead Soul Summoning Technique. It turned out that the person who destroyed the entire royal scouting party and controlled the crows was this necromancer.

However, necromancers only exist in the demonic abyss. How did one appear in the Soaring Dragon Continent?

How long had this black-robed necromancer hid himself in the Eagle's Cry Valley in Gui Jian Chou for? What was his purpose?

“My undead servants, move out. Find where those two living people are hiding...” While chanting, the black-robed man's hands, that were as thin as if they were only skeletons, summoned balls of green light and projected them into the few dozen skeletons.

These skeletons changed form under the green fluorescent light, changing in colour and increasing in size, becoming gigantic. Within ten seconds, they had turned from Level 1 Shrivelled Skeletons into Level 2 Bony Skeletons.

Among those skeletons, there was one who had absorbed multiple balls of green light. It was strengthened and evolved even further to become a Level 3 Iron-boned Skeleton.

This Iron-boned Skeleton Commander even grew bone blades that were made of iron on both of its arms.

The royal swordswoman knew that this was the controlling technique of the necromancer. As long as there were living things nearby, these skeletons would be able to sense them. Their branches and leaves camouflage would lose effect. Thankfully, the sensing range of the skeletons were limited to around 20-30 metres. Not only that, a stream separated the two of them from the necromancer. If not, they would have been found by these skeletons immediately.

The royal swordswoman tapped on Yue Yang's back, and lightly drew a circle, signalling him to prepare a surprise attack.

With the distance, it was slightly difficult to perform a sneak attack, and the success rate was not high. But, they still had to give it a shot. Otherwise, if this black-robed man riding a Poison Wyvern rose up to the sky, they would have no way of catching him again. The royal swordswoman estimated that this black-robed necromancer probably had the strength of a Level 6 [Elder]. There would be a high chance to kill him off if their surprise attack succeeded. The only problem was that this guy was also extremely cautious. The place where the wyvern landed was a stone that jutted out. As long as the wyvern jumped, he would easily be able to escape into the sky.

Aside from the Bloody Queen, she and the big pervert could only watch with folded arms with regard to an aerial battle.

With just a single Gold-ranked Level 3 Bloody Queen, it was quite hard to kill off this Bronze-rank Level 6 Poison Wyvern, not to mention that there was a necromancer with the strength of a Level 6 [Elder] riding on top of it.

“Shh.” Yue Yang caught hold of the royal swordswoman’s hand. When she was about to struggle free, he signalled her to keep quiet and not move at all, no matter what happened.

“...” The royal swordswoman glared at him, but eventually listened to what he said, not daring to take any sudden actions.

She wanted to take her hand back, but Yue Yang acted as if he didn’t know about it. He did not let go of her hand after he had caught it, taking the chance to take advantage of her. The royal swordswoman could not help but want to kick him into the stream. However, the black-robed man was still present. If he was kicked into the stream, they would lose their chance to mount a surprise attack. She could only drop this idea. She had originally wanted to punch him, but a moment later, she had completely forgotten about this. She grabbed Yue Yang’s back nervously. Her great mounds unconsciously squeezed on him, trying to press his body down to go lower and lower to the ground.

This was because, looking in the same direction as Yue Yang was, the royal swordswoman had seen that on top of the steep cliff rock,

a terrifying life form was standing absolutely still, having appeared out of nowhere.

It did not move at all, and its breathing was completely hidden. It was stuck on the cliff wall as if it was a rock.

Its target was the black-robed man below it and the Poison Wyvern he was riding on. However, even the alert black-robed man and the Poison Wyvern was completely unable to sense the presence of this terrifying life form... When the Poison Wyvern flapped its giant wings and started to ascend slowly with the black-robed man, that terrifying life form suddenly moved as if it was lightning. Moving its two huge arms that were like sickles as if they were black lightning, it severed the space and took the giant Poison Wyvern captive with its arms. The Bronze-rank Level 6 Poison Wyvern could not even struggle. It could only whine repeatedly.

That terrifying life form immediately opened its mouth full of razor-sharp teeth and ate the head of the Poison Wyvern alive. It did not kill its prey beforehand but rather ate them alive.

The screeches of the Poison Wyvern resounded throughout the entire valley...

At this time, the entire valley was deathly still. All the creatures were so scared that they did not even know where to hide.

When the terrifying life form was eating the Poison Wyvern alive, the black-robed man was struggling. His body was also

clamped down by the giant arms of this creature, so tightly that he could not struggle free at all. Seeing that the little worm had actually dared to struggle, the terrifying life-form instantly bent its head forward to bite the black-robed man's head off... The black-robed man's actions were extremely quick, and instantly took out a teleportation ball, smashing it with his blackened bony hand.

The teleportation pillar shone within a second.

However, the instant before he disappeared during his teleportation, the terrifying life form angrily raised one of its sickle arms, and cut them down towards the black-robed man...

Pa!

The lower half of the black-robed man who was still teleporting was immediately severed in the teleportation space. The teleportation pillar was also shattered, and half of his body fell onto the ground with a thump.

If not for escaping fast enough, this black robed man with the strength of a Level 6 [Elder] would have been instantly killed.

Yue Yang and the royal swordswoman watched the whole scene until their scalps exploded. This terrifying life form was actually the legendary Gold-rank Level 7 Reaper Mantis that was said to have been extinct. Not only that, it was actually a Gold King Beast.

The guy who from another dimension was sweating madly and

cried out in his heart: My God!

Who had said that Reaper Mantises were extinct? There was one right in front of his eyes! Its body was a few times larger than a wyvern, and even larger than a fighter plane. Could this kind of terrifying life form really existed in the Soaring Dragon Continent? Thankfully, it did not fly out of Gui Jian Chou. Otherwise, everyone would have been eaten by it already.

That Bronze-rank Level 6 Poison Wyvern did not even have the time to struggle, and was eaten in a mouthful... Meeting its nemesis, this Poison Wyvern had really bad luck.

After the Reaper Mantis ate the head of the Poison Wyvern, it suddenly lost interest on the giant carcass of the wyvern and threw it away.

With a flap of its wings, it instantly flew up into the sky, disappearing into thin air.

If not for the wyvern's carcass falling onto the ground loudly in front of their eyes, Yue Yang and the royal swordswoman would both have doubted that the Reaper Mantis had even appeared before.

“Looks like it really likes eating the magic cores of wyverns...” Yue Yang cried ‘that was close’ in his heart. Thankfully, before he left, he had given his wyvern magic cores to Yue Bing for safekeeping. Otherwise, the ones who would be ambushed by the Reaper Mantis would probably not just be the Poison Wyvern

alone.

“It’s a female mantis. I don’t know if it has laid eggs, but if we find those eggs, then we can find the larvae of the Reaper Mantis.” The royal swordswoman held a little desire. The Reaper Mantis’ larvae were Gold-rank beasts, and their potential for growth was limitless. When Yue Yang heard it, he jumped in fright, and quickly waved his hands, saying, “If you want to court death then go ahead! Don’t drag me along, I haven’t enjoyed my happy life yet!” (Sephilia: same sexual pun, happy life = sexual life)

“You coward!” The royal swordswoman was angry. She had only said it in passing. Did he really think that there would be any Reaper Mantises larvae waiting for them?

“I feel that the most sensible course of action right now is to kill off that black-robed man.” Yue Yang was used to bullying the weak. He would rather be afraid of the tough and bully the weak.

“But he already escaped. How do we find him? Who knows where he’s hiding.” The royal swordswoman now felt that it was a little dangerous to move in Eagle’s Cry Valley. After all, a Gold-rank Level 7 Reaper Mantis was hidden somewhere, and could attack them from behind at any time. This kind of feeling made people’s hairs stand on end.

“Look...” Yue Yang pointed at the skeletons, who were dragging the severed lower half of the black-robed man and the giant wyvern carcass.

“Is that fellow rushing back here? Fine, we’ll go with what you said this time, let’s wait.” The royal swordswoman felt that the necromancer was absolutely unlucky. First, he had let the Reaper Mantis ambush him, killing off his Bronze-rank Level 6 Poison Wyvern. Now, he would be ambushed again by her and this big pervert. With this double attack, it would be hard for the fellow to survive even if he wanted to.

Although the royal swordswoman was still extremely angry at Yue Yang, she had no choice but to stay close to him.

The two people were physically touching each other, their bodies leaning on each other in an intimate fashion. For the ambush to succeed, the two people quietly hid themselves within the cracks of the rocks. As for the ravenous expression that showed how Yue Yang was enjoying himself inside, the royal swordswoman was angry out of her mind. Eventually, being afraid that she could not resist the temptation to bash him in the face and affect the ambush, she could only act as if she did not see it.

Just like this, the two people quietly awaited the return of the heavily-injured black-robed man to the stream, unmoving.

After around half an hour, a grey-robed male stood on top of a giant Iron-winged Crow King’s back, accompanying the black-robed man who only had the upper-half of his body, back to the sky above the stream.

That black-robed man cursed in rage, saying, “I’m really too unlucky. I took so much effort to get this body! I didn’t expect that, within half a month, it would be sliced into half by a Reaper

Mantis. I probably won't be able to recover the body to its initial state without at least a year's time. Didn't Master Suo Ge say that there were no more Reaper Mantises in Gui Jian Chou? I really met a ghost then. If not for me running fast, my head would probably be bitten off like my wyvern. Lu Dun, help me out a little, connect my body together."

The grey-robed man snickered, "Your luck is really bad. I've been staying in Gui Jian Chou for almost ten years and I've never seen a Reaper Mantis. It's probably the fault of your wyvern. Who asked you to like wyverns so much and contract with one to make it your mount? Eh, how come there's still the presence of a Golden King Beast around?"

"What Golden King Beast?" The black-robed man still had some lingering fears. Listening to this, he was scared to the point that his entire body was trembling.

"Don't be afraid, that's my Bloody Queen, I guarantee that she doesn't like eating human heads, especially DEAD people's heads." Yue Yang's silhouette appeared behind the black-robed man. His smile was as brilliant as the sun.

Of course, in the eyes of the black-robed man, it was more like a devil's grin...

Chapter 118 – The Mantis Stalks The Cicada, Unaware Of The Oriole Behind

Seeing the royal swordswoman dashing towards him with her large sword, the grey-robed man laughed strangely at the black-robed man: “I’ll deal with this little girl. My beast is coincidentally the nemesis of strengthening-type warriors.”

He grasped a strange looking purplish-black magic ball and flew towards the royal swordswoman.

When the royal swordswoman’s large sword was about to slash down, countless purplish-black rays of light erupted from the ball, forming a large circle. It actually caused him and the royal swordswoman to disappear at the same time. Yue Yang was startled. They were not in the Demon Abyss but in the Soaring Dragon Continent. How could such a Battlefield of Certain Death exist in here too? It looks like the Dimensional Research in the Demon Abyss was much more advanced than the Soaring Dragon Continent. It was no wonder that the teleportation orbs in the Demon Abyss had such a short activation time. When the black-robed man saw this, he cursed loudly: “That damned Lu Dun! He would go crazy as soon as he sees a woman. He is obviously useless, but he still liked to collect female corpses; what a perverted and abnormal hobby. You think that without your help I wouldn’t be able to handle a brat that is still wet behind the ears?”

“May I ask how you are going to deal with me?” Yue Yang curiously asked.

He could not understand it. How could a necromancer that had

lost half of his body and was rotting all over, defeat him, who possessed a Gold-ranked Level 3 Bloody Queen?

The black-robed man ignored Yue Yang and summoned his grimoire out quickly instead. Upon seeing his Advanced Silver Grimoire, Yue Yang felt his heartbeat quickened. It looked like he would soon possess another silver grimoire himself. If he could form a contract with all the grimoires he found, and filled them all with beasts that his Spirit Guardian Beasts possessed, he would definitely be able to be triumphant everywhere...As Yue Yang continued to daydream in his mind, he suddenly saw the black-robed necromancer placed his black, bony hand onto his grimoire. In the next moment, black light pervaded the whole space as a Headless Horseman, who had a rotting body and a foul stench, was summoned.

Yue Yang observed with his [Divine Vision] and discovered that this Headless Horseman was actually a Bronze-ranked Level 5 Undead-type beast.

The Headless Horseman did not immediately attack Yue Yang. Instead, he rode his similarly rotting skeletal horse straight towards the group of Level 2 Bony Skeletons.

Raising his large black sword, the Headless Horseman slashed downwards with a heavy force, hacking apart and destroying all of those Bony Skeletons. Extending both of his hands, the Headless Horseman then gathered all the dark green energy orbs that emerged from the Bony Skeletons, before stuffing them into his dilapidated body.

Afterwards, he removed the skull of the Iron-boned Skeleton and fixed it onto his own neck.

The skull shone with a dark green blaze, which disappeared after a while.

Energy began igniting within the eye sockets of the skeletal head.

In an instant, it merged with the Headless Horseman's body and transformed into a Death Knight. The Death Knight had a dark green body and was much stronger in power and capabilities.

The large black sword from before now burned with the green fluorescent light of the corpses, steaming into the air.

The Death Knight's rank soared from its original Bronze-Ranked Level 5 to Bronze-Ranked Level 6. Yue Yang clapped loudly as he watched and praised: "Not bad. This method may be a bit weird but it is extremely effective. It looks like the Demon Abyss' research on summoning techniques are indeed more advanced. The human race is lagging behind by a little."

"You dare to be so arrogant when death is right in front of you?" The black-robed man summoned another gigantic black centipede, which was more than ten metres in length.

This was neither a skeletal beast, nor an Undead-type beast like the Headless Horseman. It was a living-type beast.

It was the Spirit Guardian Beast of the black-robed man.

Likewise, this large Giant Pincer Centipede was a Bronze-ranked Level 6 beast.

With these two Bronze-ranked Level 6 beasts working together against the Gold-ranked Level 3 Bloody Queen, it appeared the strength of either one of them were not inferior in any way. There was a slight disdain in the Bloody Queen's expression, but she did not move to attack.

She flew at a low height, primarily hovering behind Yue Yang.

With the Dragon Slaying Dagger strapped to her waist and Yue Yang's Crescent Blade in her right hand, she was waiting for an opportunity to strike.

She had the overwhelming aura of a Gold King Beast, but against higher leveled beast, the suppressing effect was not that obvious. Furthermore, the Death Knight was an undead, causing the suppressing effect to be reduced even further, making it almost insignificant. As for the Giant Pincer Centipede, it was a Spirit Guardian Beast. Under the command of the black-robed man, it was filled with battle intent and incessantly crawled around the stone ground. Its sharp limbs were like countless knives that flashed with cold glints. Its pair of enormous iron pincers that were even bigger than its head only needs to touch a stone slightly to crush them into powder.

The Bloody Queen did not have much of a suppressing effect on

them. However, she was still a Gold King Beast. Even if she was three levels lower, the Death Knight and the Centipede did not dare to attack her rashly.

The black-robed man appeared arrogant, but was actually inwardly vigilant.

He had almost lost his life when he was previously ambushed by the Reaper Mantis.

Now that he was again ambushed by this human brat. He would be an idiot if he still did not increase his vigilance.

“Do you have a Lich Ring?” Yue Yang did not command the Bloody Queen to immediately engage in the battle. Instead, he couldn’t stop looking at the hands of the black-robed man.

Among all the treasures in the world, the Lich Ring was the one that Yue Yang was most concerned about.

The reason was simple. The Lich Ring was the same as Storage Rings and had a dimensional storage capability. The only difference was that the storage ring can store anything, including living things, while the Lich Ring could only store articles or corpses that was dead. Storage Rings were sacred treasures that even the Da Xia Empire’s Emperor, Jun Wu You did not possess, much less Yue Yang. However, Yue Yang still hoped for a Lich Ring.

Yue Yang was not only a beauty-con; he was also a treasure-con. He adored articles with dimensional storage capabilities, such as the Universal Pouch and the Xu Mi Mustard Seed.

(Ignis: The Qian Kun Bag appears in various Xianxia novels and stories, and has dimensional storage. Shiro – It is also mentioned in chapter 1. The Xu Mi Mustard Seed comes from a saying which the buddha contained the entire Mount Sumeru (Xu Mi) inside a mustard seed without it changing in size)

It was a pity that although he managed to snatch the old Daoist priest's Universal Pouch it disappeared after he was transported to this world.

If it was assumed that the flying sword became the Heavenly Sword Goddess, then what about the Universal Pouch?

Yue Yang reckoned that it was temporarily safekept by his first wife, the Heavenly Sword Goddess. Or perhaps, that magical dream world that he always go to was actually inside the Universal Pouch.

Yue Yang could not ask the Heavenly Sword Goddess about the whereabouts of the Universal Pouch now. However, he still desired to have Storage Articles.

Storage Rings were essential equipment for family travels, murder and arson, killing monsters and treasure hunting.

How could he do without one?

If he really could not possess one, at the very least he must have a Lich Ring.

Lich Rings were actually the most inferior and the trashiest storage rings. Although the storage space of Lich Rings were not very big and could only hold inanimate objects, there were no such treasure present in the Soaring Dragon Continent. The main reason was because the special-type beasts that had the ability to produce special articles were simply too rare in the Soaring Dragon Continent. Human intelligence was even less capable of producing Storage Rings. For example, the Yue Clan was already quite amazing to be able to produce puppet beasts, thus making it one of the Four Big Clans. However, in the entire Yue Clan, aside from the ghost genius Yue Gong from several hundred years back, no one could figure out the principles behind storage rings... Although the ghost genius Yue Gong had left behind his research insights, nobody could make sense of them.

In comparison to producing puppet beasts, producing sacred level objects like Storage Rings had a difficulty that was worlds apart; it could not even be compared.

Even producing Teleportation Scrolls were extremely difficult for humans, much less producing Dimensional Storage Articles.

The difficulty of the technique was like scaling the sky, and could not be reached by the people of this world.

Thus, there were no storage rings in the Soaring Dragon

Continent. Even the trashiest and the most useless Lich Rings were not sold anywhere.

Lich Rings had always been a special treasure that only exist in the Demon Abyss. If humans wanted to possess them, they must first kill a Lich and seize the Lich Ring on the Lich's hands.

Liches, who only contract with Undead-type beasts, needed to store a lot of materials, such as huge dragon skeletons, human skeletons, corpses, demon crystals etc. They required Lich Rings to solve this crucial necessity. Thus, a Lich would generally have a Lich Ring.

“No.” The black-robed man laughed coldly. This brat definitely thinks that Lich Ring are random goods that could be found in roadside stalls. How could they be so easily obtained?

“Then you can die now.” Yue Yang faintly smiled.

He was still smiling in one second, but in the next, he became a horrifying reaper.

Yue Yang's image disappeared and a series of distorted images appeared in midair, as he went straight for the centipede with gigantic pincers. In the air, the Bloody Queen also flapped her wings, shooting out in preparation to form a pincer attack on the Giant Pincer Centipede with Yue Yang.

The black-robed necromancer coldly laughed in his heart. He had

been waiting for this.

He ordered the Giant Pincer Centipede to leap highly into the air to welcome the attack. The exoskeleton of the Giant Pincer Centipede was extremely sturdy, hence it was not afraid of knives or axes. Even if it did not resist and just stayed still for this brat to attack, it wouldn't be injured at all. Most importantly, his Giant Pincer Centipede was a Spirit Guardian Beast. Even if it was killed, it could be summoned again; it was not afraid of being hit at all.

“Poof!”

A section of a blade suddenly penetrated through the chest of the Death Knight, who was riding forwards to provide reinforcements.

Both he and the skeletal horse crazily shook together. Numerous black and green colored fluorescent light surged out from the wound.

The black-robed man was surprised. He steadied himself and examined, discovering that it was only an illusion that was rushing towards the Giant Pincer Centipede. The real figure of the brat had appeared behind the Death Knight, smiling like a demon. He had impaled the crescent shaped blade through the demon's heart of the Death Knight. The Death Knight, who was produced from the corpse of a demon general, did not fear physical attacks at all. It's only weakness was his demon's heart, which was intentionally situated in the right side of the chest... Aside from himself, nobody knew this secret. How did this brat know about it?

The Hui Jin Magic Blade in Yue Yang's hand was like a hungry tiger pouncing at food, absorbing the energy from the Death Knight's devil heart madly.

No matter if it was the molten core or the demon dragon's crystal, both were drawing energy from the devil heart and trying to restore themselves.

Besides the miniscule corpse qi that it didn't need, the Hui Jin Magic Blade welcomed all other forms of energy.

The Death Knight was struggling for its life, but its struggles were futile.

“Bang!”

It's skull split in an explosion, causing the energy in its body to greatly decrease. The Bronze-ranked Level 6 Death Knight reverted back into the Bronze-ranked Level 5 Headless Horseman. Following which, as it kept on losing its energy, it slowly turned to Bronze-ranked Level 4, Bronze-ranked Level 3, Normal Level 4, Normal Level 3...

When the Hui Jin Magic Blade had absorbed all of its energy, the initially awe-inspiring Death Knight became a pile of rotting meat and bones, collapsing into a scattered mess.

Even the skeletal horse was shattered into dust, becoming a pile of rotten bones and meat like its master...

The black robed necromancer was dumbstruck. Even in his dreams he did not imagine that this smiling murderer of a human brat could actually possess such a horrifying demonic weapon. This demonic weapon was definitely one that possess life. It should be the treasure that he had yearned for even in his dreams. If he could use it to make a Bone Formation Casket, he would probably be able to evolve into an Immortal Lich.

As the black-robed man jealously and greedily gazed at the Hui Jin Magic Blade, it flashed a wave of black smoke and purple flame, steaming continuously.

It slowly began to transform on its own, evolving into a form with greater perfection.

The molten core and the demon dragon's crystal on the two sides began to merge, and vein-like patterns appeared throughout the entire body and edge of the blade.

Turned out that the Hui Jin Magic Blade, which was initially Silver-ranked, had successfully evolved into a Gold-ranked demonic weapon after absorbing the energy from the Death Knight's demon heart.

Yue Yang lifted it up, channeling his innate qi into it. Upon urging the energy in the blade, the purple flame with black smoke surged wildly, as if it wanted to burn the heavens. The energy flames also took the shape of a blazing armor on Yue Yang's arm. Besides increasing his defence, it also greatly increased and added

to the strength of his arm.

“That’s impossible!” The black-robed necromancer was practically going mad with jealousy.

How could this brat be this lucky?

Not only did he possess a Gold-ranked Level 3 Bloody Queen, he also possessed such a demonic weapon that was able to absorb energy and evolve on its own...

Kill him. Kill him. He must kill the brat himself. He must seize the demonic weapon and refine it into an Bone Formation Casket, that would turn him into an Immortal Lich. Greed filled the black-robed necromancer’s entire heart. Suddenly, he heard a miserable screech. When he turned his head to watch, he discovered that there was a dagger impaled into the head of his Giant Pincer Centipede and it was flipping in pain. In an instant, it transformed into a black ray of light, returning into his Silver grimoire.

If it wasn’t a guardian beast, it would have definitely died.

The dagger that was impaled into it was the Dragon Slaying Dagger. It can even inflict serious damage on gigantic dragons with just one hit.

Where did this Dragon Slaying Dagger come from?

Before the black-robed necromancer could take the time to

comprehend, he felt a huge surge of pain from his back. His whole body was then sent flying outwards, falling heavily onto the ground.

In the air, a leg descended, covering the whole sky...

Yue Yang stepped on the black-robed necromancer but did not immediately kill him. Instead, he looked into the distance and laughed: "I guess you must be the Master Suo Ge? I think you have watched quite a bit, aren't you going to come down to save your underling? Although your concealing ability is not bad, please take note of the flow of the air. Next time don't stand in the direction of the wind. Otherwise, it will be easy for people to catch a whiff of the corpse stench on you. I say, next time, if you manage to survive today, why don't you learn from this lesson?"

"You sure are good at talking. But if you think I am like the Lu Ben whom you are stepping on, then you have made a huge mistake."

There was an aged and haughty voice that resounded through the open space.

There were a few hissing sounds.

It was as though a protective screen had been removed from the sky. In front of Yue Yang's eyes, there was a Silver-ranked Level 7 Zombie Dragon. Its wings were tattered and its body was corroded. Coupled with the deeply diluted and lifeless eyes, it was evident that it was once a gigantic dragon.

The gigantic dragon might have been dead, but its residual aura still existed.

Although it had become a zombie, its level was still a high Silver-ranked Level 7.

Riding atop the Zombie Dragon was an elderly man with a wrinkled face. He wore a long purple-black robe and wielded a skeletal bone staff that flickered with a red light.

He arrogantly looked down at Yue Yang in a haughty manner: “Although you may have defeated Lu Ben, in my eyes, you are just a little worm. I am a lich that has cultivated for 500 years. With a wave of my hand, I can pinch you, little brat, to death like a tick. What does defeating Lu Ben even count for? He is only my undead servant, a human shaped tool that can breathe. You think you can use him to threaten me?”

“I’ve never thought of using it to threaten you. I only thought of keeping it and slowly interrogate it to obtain the information I require.” Yue Yang coldly slashed down at the black-robed necromancer Lu Ben’s skeletal skull with his demonic blade. He then kicked away Lu Ben’s skull away by more than 10 metres.

“You’re overestimating yourself. You want to oppose me? You will immediately understand what is called a mantis trying to stop a chariot.” Lich Suo Ge arrogantly snorted.

“Nope. It should be ‘mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the

oriole behind’.”

Yue Yang laughed as a shadow was pouncing downwards from the sky, in a manner that was faster than lightning, with both arms like the scythes of a reaper.

It was actually the Reaper Mantis who had all along been hiding itself.

It’s original target might have been Yue Yang. However, it’s focus had now shifted to the Zombie Dragon and the afterimage of Yue Yang disappeared from the ground. When Lich Suo Ge used his perception and managed to locate him, he discovered that the brat had already appeared directly underneath. He was approaching like the Reaper Mantis, and in his hands, he wielded the steaming flaming purple demonic blade. It’s killing intent was not any lesser than the scythes of the Reaper Mantis.

Chapter 119 – Burn All, Kill All, Loot All

Lich Suo Ge was unlike the black-robed Lu Ben. He had absolutely no reaction towards the Reaper Mantis' surprise attack.

He did not panic but instead closed his eyes in an extremely calm manner. Extending his hands, he unhurriedly summoned a gold grimoire.

A Halo Shield formed, blocking his head from the fatal strike.

However, the Zombie Dragon underneath him was not as lucky. Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade had already viciously slashed at the dragon's abdomen, which was not protected by the shield. The dragon's skin, which had become brittle after a prolonged period of rotting and corrosion, was cut open.

In the air, the Reaper Mantis' scythe arms slashed with frightful might, causing the protective cover to concave a little.

In the end, the defense of the Gold-ranked Halo Shield was stronger, and the Reaper Mantis could only back down without any achievement.

In the instant when its arm scythe was rebounded by the shield, the Reaper Mantis attacked for a second time. It swept its arm horizontally, causing the colossal sized body of the Zombie Dragon to forcefully fly. The body of the Zombie Dragon flew in a curve and smashed into a distant wall of the mountain. It then fell headlong and smashed heavily onto the ground, causing a

deafening rumble.

The Reaper Mantis was extremely swift. It had already spread its wings in pursuit.

It tightly gripped the Zombie Dragon's tail in its arm scythes, and then swung and pounded it repeatedly against the ground.

The Zombie Dragon hadn't had any reactions up until now since it had been resurrected as a zombie. Its movements and response time had become relatively sluggish and was no longer as active as they were when it was still a gigantic dragon. When the Zombie Dragon's instinct to struggle finally arose, the Reaper Mantis' huge mouth had already opened. It viciously bit down, with the Zombie Dragon's forehead as its target.

“What a nice gold-ranked worm. It actually dares to prey on my mount. It is simply overestimating itself.” Lich Suo Ge coldly laughed, summoning an orb of ice from his grimoire.

The orb of ice seemed to be a living thing as it flew on its own. It shot like a meteor and hit the back of the Reaper Mantis.

Upon contact, it immediately caused the Reaper Mantis' body to rapidly freeze into ice.

In the instant before the Reaper Mantis devoured the Zombie Dragon's head, the white-colour of freezing ice had already spread across its body. The Reaper Mantis had been frozen into an ice

sculpture.

The Zombie Dragon immediately counterattacked. It bit onto the Reaper Mantis, who was stuck inside the ice sculpture, and ruthlessly threw it into the ground.

It then swept its huge tail.

Boom!

The Reaper Mantis was knocked into the air, slamming against the mountain wall. Crushed rocks and ice fragments scattered across the sky.

The Reaper Mantis, which had freed itself from the ice, hooked both of its arm scythes and flew towards the Zombie Dragon. It then spread its wings and did its best to shake off the remaining ice fragments on its body.

Yue Yang felt surprised. The Reaper Mantis was a Gold-ranked Level 7 Gold King Beast. How could it be weak to ice? He then suddenly realized that it must be the babies in its belly. The eggs were relatively frail and could be incapable of withstanding the temperature change due to the ice. It should be due to this that this female Reaper Mantis had wildly hunted the Venomous Wyvern and the Zombie Dragon to devour their dragon crystals. The crystals were supposed to be the nutrients for the incubation of its babies.

Lich Suo Ge summoned a Blood Wing Demon Guard, which had a body of raging flames and carried an axe. This Bronze-ranked Level 7 monster from the abyss was called to attack Yue Yang.

The Bloody Queen held the Crescent Blade in her right hand, and the golden Dragon Slaying Dagger in her left.

She quickly swept behind the axe-wielding Blood Winged Demon Guard, and initially wanted to attack its wings. However, the Demon Guard's reaction was fast and it flapped its wings, flipping in midair. It wildly chopped with the large flaming axe in its hands, forcing the Bloody Queen to retreat.

Yue Yang ignored the Demon Guard and was more concerned with the battle on the ground.

He discovered that the Icy Orb could actually merged with the Zombie Dragon, evolving it into a Silver-Ranked Level 8 Undead-category Giant Frost Dragon. It was not good. Yue Yang immediately gave a long whistle and rushed towards the evolving Giant Frost Dragon. Its evolution must be stopped by all means. If it wasn't stopped, the situation would become dire.

Undead-category beasts from the Abyss had an ability that no other category had. It was the ability to recombine dead spirits and evolve through merging.

This was indeed a summoning technique that was an exceptional cause of worry.

It was no wonder that the Master of Luo Hua City Mistress had previously said that in the abyss, the most dreadful were not the demons but the undead. It was a summoning technique that disregarded race and bodily limits. As long as their master could find some secret merging method, they could temporarily be merged into one body and evolve into a higher grade undead beast. This could really make people go crazy... Earlier the Headless Horseman and the Iron Bone Skeleton had recombined into a Death Knight... Now, it was an even more powerful dead spirit combination, the Zombie Dragon and the Ice Orb, which recombined into a Giant Frost Dragon.

The Reaper Mantis pounced forward and tightened its arm scythes around the evolving Giant Frost Dragon. It prepared to use its frightful strength to tear its opponent's entire body apart.

However, under the control of Lich Suo Ge, the Giant Frost Dragon immediately attacked the current weakness of the Reaper Mantis; its bulging belly.

This attack might not be useful under normal circumstances. However, the Reaper Mantis, which was about to become a mother, evidently was not in its normal condition. Furthermore, it was extremely afraid that the babies in its belly might be injured. It thus gave up on its attack and leapt backwards.

A second Ice Orb noiselessly ambushed from the sky.

Yue Yang reacted quickly, stopping the attack with a wave of his Hui Jin Magic Blade. His Hui Jin Magic Blade slashed past the Icy Orb but had no effect on it. The Ice Orb was completely unscathed

and immediately recovered itself. It continued to shoot downwards, hitting the back of the Reaper Mantis like a meteor.

It sealed the Reaper Mantis' entire body in ice again.

The Giant Frost Dragon did not bite to attack like before. Under the control of Lich Suo Ge, it repeatedly breathed freezing air towards the ice sculpture of the Reaper Mantis, reinforcing the freezing effect.

The Reaper Mantis brandished both its arms wildly, melting the ice on its body very rapidly and splashed the melted water around.

However, there was a huge mound of ice in its bulging belly. It protruded like a small hill and was continuously enlarging.

“[Descend of the Night].”

Lich Suo Ge summoned a black shadow and pointed his fingers on the head of the shadow. The shadow exploded into pieces and disappeared, becoming a black fog that shrouded the entire valley.

The entire valley became as dark as the night, and one would not be able to see the fingers on an extended hand.

“If this Lich was already so powerful, wouldn't the Lich King be even more overpowered?” Yue Yang was sweating profusely. It turned out that this lich was already a ranker that possessed the power of a human Level 7 [Overlord]. Yue Yang felt that this Lich

Suo Ge was even more of a headache than elder Yue Hai. However, it was fortunate that Lich Suo Ge had summon-type beasts, and was not like elder Yue Hai who had strengthening-type beasts. Otherwise, there was no need to fight at all.

Even a lich was already this powerful; as for how strong was Lich King Grun was, Yue Yang could not even imagine it.

Of course, his summoned beasts were also strong. However, most of them were far from being on par with rankers who had strengthening-type beasts. Yue Yang still had his [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi and a small fighting chance. He did not necessarily have no business in this huge battle...

If there wasn't a Gold-ranked Level 7 Reaper Mantis, Yue Yang felt that he might be beaten miserably by this Lich Suo Ge now.

However, he did not care about himself at this moment.

The more the opponent underestimated him, the better his chances were.

Indeed, in the eyes of Lich Suo Ge, as long as the Gold-ranked Level 7 Reaper Mantis was killed, this small little human guy could be easily and instantly killed.

The Reaper Mantis discovered that the enemy was aiming its attacks towards its belly. The eggs inside were making popping noises, like they were so cold that they were chattering. It

immediately went crazy. As a mother, it exploded with anger and used all of its strength to crawl rapidly, dragging the ice block that was almost as heavy as a small hill. Before the Giant Frost Dragon that was breathing freezing air could even fly up, an arm scythe grabbed onto its body and dragged it downwards.

The other arm scythe hooked and reined in the neck of the Giant Frost Dragon. It pulled at its neck until it emitted cracking sounds and seemed to be breaking apart.

Lowering its head, the Reaper Mantis madly bit into the neck of the Giant Frost Dragon.

Lich Suo Ge was blowing his top. It was really unfortunate that even the Silver-ranked Level 8 Giant Frost Dragon could not match up to a Gold King Beast like the Reaper Mantis. The power of its arm scythes, coupled with the Reaper Mantis' innate killing abilities made even the Giant Frost Dragon unable to break free. It could only struggle for its life. Meanwhile, the axe-wielding Blood Winged Demon Guard was in the air, all along chasing after the Bloody Queen which was kiting it.

Lich Suo Ge had no choice now but to get it to come back.

He commanded the Blood Winged Demon Guard to join and help the Giant Frost Dragon to fight against the Reaper Mantis and kill it. Or at the very least, stop its attack on the Giant Frost Dragon.

However, Yue Yang would not let things go according to Suo Ge's wishes.

He had been storing his spiritual qi while waiting for an opportunity to strike. He had already been waiting for too long...

A giant shadow that increased his strength by a hundred times flashed on Yue Yang's body. In the next second, Yue Yang was already soaring up into the sky, knocking against that axe-wielding Blood Winged Demon Guard's fiery chest. Yue Yang put both of his fingers together as if they were swords, and pierced through the space between the axe-wielding Blood Winged Demon Guard's eyebrows.

This fellow's weakness was in the space between the eyebrows. It was not in his chest.

Lich Suo Ge didn't care at all at first and only prepared to control his axe-wielding Blood Winged Demon Guard to use its Fire Shield Explosion skill to blast the brat away.

Unexpectedly, to his astonishment, he found that he had lost all control and authority over his beast. The axe-wielding Blood Winged Demon Guard stayed still in the air like a log, not even moving a single inch. Yue Yang's fingers had pierced deep into the space between the axe-wielding Blood Winged Demon Guard's eyes, his innate invisible sword Qi bursting from the back of the axe-wielding Blood Winged Demon Guard's head. A large amount of blood and brain matter had spurted out.

After mounting this sneak attack, Yue Yang held the heavily injured, nearly dead axe-wielding Blood Winged Demon Guard's

body tight, and ruthlessly tore off one of his wings. Yue Yang then threw its body up into the air and left it for the Bloody Queen to deliver the finishing blow.

As fast as lightning, Yue Yang turned around and landed back down on the ground.

Moving with a speed so fast that even Lich Suo Ge's naked eyes couldn't see him, Yue Yang flew towards the head of that Giant Frost Dragon.

The second Innate Invisible Sword Qi shot out.

After Yue Yang created a hole on the rock-hard dragon's skull, Yue Yang's extremely impatient little Golden Beast hurriedly entered into the small hole. Yue Yang let it handle the magical demon core inside the skull. He couldn't be concerned about the loss of his dragon crystal right now, as Yue Yang must quickly kill off the second orb of ice. Otherwise, he would never be able to attack that Lich who was hiding beneath his Gold Grimoire's shield.

The orb of ice that had been rampaging on the Reaper Mantis' stomach suddenly leapt out, turning towards Yue Yang.

In just an instant, his whole body was frozen over, and he turned into a human ice sculpture.

“[Lightning Strike]” Lich Suo Ge didn't dare to belittle this young

human brat anymore. He realized that this brat was actually one of those legendary Innate rankers, but he was still very young, hence it was a suspicion that he himself could hardly believe.

Lich Suo Ge summoned a hammer-wielding Gold Armoured Puppet, and ordered it to violently pound Yue Yang who had already turned into an ice sculpture.

A thundering rumbling ensued.

The Yue Yang ice sculpture was suddenly knocked flying away.

Yue Yang's body was sent flying a few dozen meters away, finally crashing into a large Crimson Tree.

The large Crimson Tree fell down with a loud thud, splashing thick muds all over and high up into the air, hiding Yue Yang's body from view.

“What a close call,” Lich Suo Ge secretly wiped his cold sweat away. Fortunately his Demon Crystal Ice Spirit Orb was strong enough and was able to freeze that brat. Otherwise, he would probably have been in danger. This brat's fingers could actually kill a bronze-ranked level 7 Blood Wing Demon Guard instantly. If this story was told, nobody would even believe it. But he had indeed experienced that frightening reality. Fortunately he had killed the brat with one blow of a hammer. Otherwise, if they continued to fight, even he couldn't say for sure what the result of the battle would be.

“Pei”

Suddenly, the large tree exploded with a booming sound as a figure stepped out from within. Spitting a mouthful of blood, the figure said, “Did you think that brute force alone would be enough to kill me off? Fool!”

Lich Suo Ge discovered that this brat did not actually die, his clothes were simply torn. The top half of his body was bare, as his shirt had turned to dust. His pants were also damaged to the point they looked worse than what a beggar would wear. However, other than spitting a mouthful of blood, he didn’t seem to suffer any other injuries.

Yue Yang had indeed received a hit.

However, in his dreams, he had been beaten by the beautiful girl so much that he had developed an optimal dodging technique.

The beautiful girl not only had a frightening amount of power, her skills were also way above Yue Yang. Furthermore, Yue Yang only cared about training his Breast-groping Hands Technique, hence he always ended up being beaten black and blue. Now that he had suffered through the Gold Armoured Puppet’s hammer, he realized that its power was only a little more than the beautiful girl’s hits, but its skills were the clumsiest of skills. It wasn’t like the Spiral Qi Technique or the Reversal Power; its technique could hardly injure him at all. It was extremely easy to think of ways to counter its attacks. He would be able to deal with it as long as he kept moving around in the sky, emitted his Innate Qi and disperse the impact of the puppets powerful blows.

(Shiro: no idea what Spiral Qi Technique or Reversal Power is... I think one of them is a taichi technique while the other is an aikido technique)

“This is impossible,” Lich Suo Ge completely couldn’t believe his own eyes.

“There is nothing strange here, other than me dispersing most of the impact from the blow and channeling the remaining impact into my beast’s body. If I were still injured even after all that, then I would have been made of tofu.” Yue Yang smiled brightly.

Behind him, the Barbarian Cow Shadow walked out.

There was a little bit of crack on the Barbarian Cow Shadow’s chest armour. This was the result of Yue Yang channeling a small part of the impact from the blow to her. She didn’t know any defensive skills, and her body was even thrown and smashed against the large tree. Yue Yang had safely landed back down on the ground, but since the splashed mud from the impact flew all over the place, it had hidden his body from view.

“What about my Demon Crystal Ice Spirit Orb?” Lich Suo Ge thought that even if this brat did not die from the blow, he should still be an ice sculpture.

“Thank you for your generosity. I have received your present.” Yue Yang happily raised his right hand.

In his hands, he held a frozen-looking demon crystal core.

This was something that he took himself from within the Ice Orb. He had used his Innate Qi to disperse the Demon Spirit inside the crystal, turning that powerful Ice Orb into a harmless, high quality demon core crystal. Yue Yang would definitely not suffer that blow in vain. On the other hand, that Demon Crystal Ice Spirit Orb had thrown itself into Yue Yang's hands and lost its demon crystal to him, instantly losing its life in vain...

Other than killing his enemies instantly, Yue Yang had also reaped a high quality demon crystal core.

This, was Yue Yang's idea of an ideal battle.

Lich Suo Ge cried out 'Not good' in his heart. The moment he had summoned [Descend of the Night], every single undead-type beast would have their abilities increased by a different amount, but teleportation orbs would become useless. This is because this darkness that shrouded the entire place, was considered to be within a special-type beast summon's body. Now, he had miscalculated this move and all of his beasts had suffered grave injuries, yet this brat had not lost anything. He almost seemed as strong as those experienced Rankers who were nearing the Innate Realm. If he made a careless mistake it would be very easy for him to be burned to death. He must think of a good way out, otherwise the situation would be very dangerous.

Right now, Lich Suo Ge did not think that Yue Yang was a little human worm that he could kill instantly and at any time anymore. Right now, he felt that he himself had met with an extremely

tough opponent.

Yue Yang was still a little hesitant. Would this Lich Suo Ge think of escaping?

Should he quickly attack the Giant Frost Dragon and take away its dragon crystal core, or should he attack the Gold Armoured Puppet and take its demon crystal core instead?

If this Lich wanted to escape, then he definitely wouldn't be able to do anything about it. He had to quickly choose a target. Just as Yue Yang was still hesitating, Xiao Wen Li suddenly came out on her own.

With regards to her appearance, Yue Yang was immediately capering madly with joy.

What does this mean?

This meant that if the Lich wanted to escape, she could help him kill that joke of a strong Lich Suo Ge.

“Just how many beasts do you actually possess?” Lich Suo Ge wanted to faint. Not only did this brat own a Gold-ranked level 3 Bloody Queen and a bronze-ranked level 5 Barbarian Cow, he also had a weird looking little Golden Puppet Beast. Now he had summoned another six-armed little lamia loli. This brat's grimoire was only a Beginner Silver Grimoire, and his rank was still an Advanced [Apprentice], so how could he summon so many beasts

at the same time?

“When you are nearing your death, I may consider telling you,” Yue Yang waved his hands and shouted like a scoundrel, “GO! Everyone attack! If there’s a treasure, grab that treasure. If there’s crystal core, grab that crystal core. I will only say only this sentence: Burn all, kill all, loot all! We have to uphold the Three Alls Policy!”

(Shiro: Three alls – burn all, kill all, loot all – Japanese policy in China during WWII.)

Chapter 120 – Let's Use Your Severed Head As A Soccer Ball!

Shiro: Explanation about the Demon Abyss. There are a lot of creatures in the Demon Abyss. Those that have been mentioned in the story were the Demons and Undeads. Demons control normal mob monsters like worms, spiders etc while Undeads control the, well, undeads. These are their hierarchies.

Normal monsters > Demon Guard > Demon General > Demon Commander (Demon Commander Ma Li Ang) > Demon King (e.g. Demon King Ha Xin) > Greater Demon King (e.g. Greater Demon King Baruth)

Normal undeads (e.g. skeletons) > Necromancer (e.g. Necromancer Lu Dun) > Lich (e.g. Lich Suo Ge) > Greater Lich > Lich King (e.g. Lich King Grun)

“It seems that I am left with no other option but to use my Guardian Beast now. I did not wish for that to happen.” Lich Suo Ge sighed.

His tone was filled with regret and unwillingness, as if he was helplessly looking at somebody stealing his spoils of war.

Lich Suo Ge summoned a gigantic beast that was almost as big as a mountain. Its body was covered with disgusting scars. At the top of the Beast, there appeared to be a face similar to that of a human, but its looks were extremely sinister and ugly. It was so ugly that others would vomit at its sight. At the crown of its head, there seemed to be feelers like that of a snails moving about non-stop. As

it materialized, it spat out green fluid and several skeletal remains, its blood-red tongue started to coil back to its disgusting lips. Then, it spoke. “Suo Ge, you idiot, how dare you let me eat such disgusting things. Let me tell you this, these people that I ate all tasted gross, their meat was rotten. I (oresama) only want beautiful women, do you understand? I only desire beautiful women. Do you know what a beautiful woman is? When you eat them, there is a sweet and fragrant taste, their bones are crispy and their grease just melt in your mouth. That is what a beautiful woman is.”

Yue Yang frowned as he heard this.

A Guardian Beast that had the ability to speak and had its own conscious?

It was completely different from Xiao Wen Li and Bloody Queen, with the impression that Yue Yang had of it, it seemed to have a status equal or even higher than that of Suo Ge.

This strange beast was not even that high, he was only a Level 6 Bronze Ranked Beast, why was he so arrogant?

There was certainly something fishy going on.

“In front of you there are 2 Gold Ranked Beasts, 1 Innate Ranked human, 1 Serpent Demon girl and 1 Barbaric Cow girl, they are all food for you. Are you still not satisfied? If you are still not satisfied, you can return back to the Grimoire. I will just summon another beast to deal with them. Lich Suo Ge’s expression changed slightly, but his tone still carried the dignity of a master.

“Drop your act, Suo Ge. If you weren’t in a crisis, then you wouldn’t have summoned me” The Strange Beast ridiculed him ruthlessly, mocking and jeering unceasingly.

“Wait, if both of you want to strip, or want to have yaoi sex or even want to have anal, I don’t mind watching both of you doing it, but I am very busy right now, alright... Ah Man, I will let you take care of the Gold Armoured Puppet. As for that outrageously ugly beast over there, you should just die early so that you may reincarnate sooner.” Yue Yang felt that he did not need to listen to their bullshit, who knew, maybe they were just trying to stall for time.

“What? You dare to insult me and call me a freak?” The Strange Beast was extremely angry when he heard him.

“Why do you bother arguing with someone who is going end up in your stomach sooner or later? Why do you have to make life difficult for yourself and get angry with a piece of trash?” Lich Suo Ge replied as he tried to provoke the Strange Beast even further.

“I hate it when people call me ugly the most. I am handsome. Those who insult me must all die. Suo Ge, say, do you think that I, Spittoon, am handsome? My body shape is perfect and my name, Spittoon, is the most likeable name under the sky. Furthermore, every part of my body is the most outstanding one in the world. Yet, you being a lowly human trash who is as insignificant as a bug actually dared to insult me. I will never forgive you. I am going to eat you and turn you into my excrement” The Strange beast was steaming with anger as he stomped on the ground and shouted

furiously.

“... ..” Yue Yang was shocked when he heard that the strange beast was actually called Spittoon. Damn, that name truly seemed to be a perfect match for it.

“Yes, Spittoon, it took me ten painstaking years to think of a suitable name for you, and after racking my brain, I finally came up with Spittoon” said the Lich Suo Ge as he nodded his head earnestly. “As for whether you are handsome, I believe even a blind guy would be able to tell “.

“... ..” Yue Yang admitted defeat, he truly admitted his defeat.

“Well-said, Suo Ge. Nobody except you can truly understand and appreciate me. Now, let me eat this infuriating fool before I talk to you about my food issues, I only want to eat beauties. Do you understand? If a handsome guy like me do not have any beauties to eat, then how can I be considered handsome? The Strange beast blurted out unmannerly.

“You fat filth of a scum, you are worthless even if you are dead.” Yue Yang listened helplessly, he did not believe that a beast like this existed.

Yue Yang started to feel pity for Suo Ge. Other's Guardian Beast would be obedient to their master's orders, but Suo Ge had to wait upon his Guardian Beast instead.

Yue Yang felt that if Suo Ge had the opportunity to change his Guardian Beast, then he reckoned that Suo Ge would be willing to change him even for a useless Long-Ear Rabbit.

In this world, there should be no other beast that was more of a scum than that Spittoon.

Once the Strange Beast heard this, he exploded with anger and leapt up high in the air, flattening the top of the hill he stood on from the impact of his jump.

Yue Yang casually dodged, disappearing from his original position and appeared on the crown of the Strange Beast's head. With a slash of Hui Jin sword, the sword hacked at the Strange Beast's head, making a large cut on the Strange Beast's skull. Then, Yue Yang did an agile somersault and repeatedly kicked the Strange Beast, sending the lump of flesh flying away.

“It is useless, this Master Spittoon is an unparalleled beast. All forms of attacks are useless against me!” The Strange Beast shouted arrogantly as he leapt up from the hole made from the impact of Yue Yang's kick.

The cut which Yue Yang had created on its skull was rapidly closing and started to heal at an amazing rate.

It was just like he hadn't been injured at all.

Lich Suo Ge nodded his head and sneered: “ It does not matter if

it is a sword, a dagger, a spear or even the sharp claws and teeths of the Beast and the four elements: Fire, Wind, Water and Earth, none are able to put a scratch on Spittoon's body. He is an unrivalled glutton, and it does not matter what Beast is standing in front of him, they would all face the same ending, and that is to be eaten“ .

Yue Yang frowned as he heard that.

He knew that there would never be an unrivalled beast in this world. There was bound to be weakness for any kind of beast.

The ugly Glutton Spittoon was no exception.

“Food trash, die for me and watch this Master Spittoon devour you!” The Strange Beast violently threw himself forward. Yue Yang did not wait for it to get closer. He lifted up a huge boulder and threw it towards the Strange Beast, burying it under the boulder.

Rumble...

The Strange Beast was crushed entirely below. But then, it transformed its body into a slender shape and slipped out from the boulder. With a slight tremble, it then began to turn back into its disgusting form.

Xiao Wen Li put her Dual Icicle Blade together and shoot out a cold ice blast, freezing the Strange Beast entirely.

Yue Yang then kicked it, sending the frozen Strange Beast flying and shattering it into countless ice blocks.

But then, after the fragments of ice started to melt, the Strange Beast's fragmented body started to gather around again. Within the blink of the eye, it had regained its original form.

Yue Yang waved his Magic Blade that was covered with a purple flame and leapt into the air, slicing the half-developed body of the Strange Beast and roasting it with the purple demonic flames. The Strange Beast was not even concerned, his wounds did not have an ounce of blood. His minced pieces of meat just began to multiply and coagulate instead. With the naked eye, one could see that the Strange Beast had already regained his normal appearance of a ball of flesh. There was not a single scratch on it.

“Ha Ha Ha Ha, as I said before, every attack is useless against Spittoon.” Lich Suo Ge laughed heartily.

“Is that so? “ Yue Yang exposed a smile.

His Level 2 [Divine Vision] had already seen through its weakness after observing it for a long period.

This beast, Spittoon, was not exactly invincible... his weakness was within his body, and that weakness was a Soul Seal that is moving unpredictably.

If the Soul Seal was destroyed, Yue Yang believed that his body would immediately collapse. Although it was a Guardian Beast which could never truly die, if the Soul Seal was destroyed, it should require 2 days for it to recover. Now, if he forced Spittoon back into Lich Suo Ge's Grimoire and destroyed that Gold Armoured Puppet, what abilities would that Lich Suo Ge still have? If he was not forced, he certainly would not summon such a beast like Spittoon... Yue Yang gave Xiao Wen Li and Bloody Queen a signal to kill.

Facing the glutton that could regenerate endlessly, Yue Yang decided that he would use his Sword Qi that could eliminate anything to destroy it.

Now that he had successfully reached the Third level of Sword Qi, he was able to use his Sword Qi six times.

Currently, he could still use it three more times.

As the Strange Beast charged viciously, Yue Yang sliced the Strange Beast with a stroke of his Hui Jin Magic Blade.

"It's useless!" Lich Suo Ge sneered.

"I am going to eat you!" The Strange Beast, Spittoon, expanded both sides of its sliced body, intending to envelope Yue Yang and digest him. Xiao Wen Li sliced the Strange Beast with her Dual Icicle Blades, causing him to freeze into a sculpture of ice. Taking advantage of this opportunity, Yue Yang used his left forefinger to release his sword qi and pierced into the Strange Beast's Soul Seal

accurately.

Bang.

An extremely soft rumbling could be heard.

It was as if something was shattering into small pieces. One could see that Spittoon was gradually losing his frozen status while he was wailing in pain. The meat lumps that covered his whole body started to drop off, secreting waves of disgusting green fluid as if that ugly meatball was melting.

“Ahhhh...” Lich Suo Ge was petrified as he watched this scene unfold right before his eyes. How did he managed to kill his glutton Guardian Beast with just one strike? How is it possible?

The glutton’s Soul Seal should not be susceptible to any attack, so how did this happen?

Could it be that this youth was indeed a genius?

Lich Suo Ge broke out in cold sweats as he thought about it.

On the other side, the Bloody Queen had taken advantage of the battle between the Barbaric Cow Shadow and the Gold Armoured Puppet and mounted a sneak attack.

The sharp Dragon Slaying Dagger moved as fast as lightning and

pierced right through the Gold Armoured Puppet's Chest and it's demon core. Sparks of electricity splashed all around, as the Gold Armoured Puppet's mechanical components dropped off one by one. At times, huge chunks of its gold armour metal components dropped off and in the end, with a loud exploding sound, it exploded into thousands of pieces. Meanwhile, the Bloody Queen had already flapped her wings and went over to Yue Yang's side, and helped him to fight Lich Suo Ge together.

Contrary to hers and Yue Yang's expectation, the Grimoire's shield was still active, even though all of Suo Ge's Beast's were dead.

What was going on?

“Ha ha ha, the dark mist that was created was due to my summoned beast, although it does not have a physical body, the Grimoire acknowledges that it's one the summoned beasts that was still alive. We are in its stomach, and as long as it exists, then my Grimoire will never disappear. At least before the time limit is up, it will not disappear. Do you wish to kill me? Young one, no can do. Young Innate Ranker, you are still too inexperienced. Did you see the teleportation orb that I am holding? Once the dark mist fade away, I will leave and you will not be able to touch a single strand of hair on my body. You can only watch helplessly as I depart... Are you not an Innate Ranker? Come and kill me if you can,” Lich Suo Ge laughed heartily. Maybe he felt that it was not enough to just tease him like this. He exaggeratedly put the transportation orb back into his Lich Ring and took out a chair which he leisurely sat on. He then took a glass of grape wine in his hand and drank it slowly.

Of course, he was actually extremely nervous in his heart.

Although his Guardian Beast Spittoon would never truly die, if its Soul Seal was damaged, it most likely wouldn't recover within a month.

The Gold Armoured Puppet's magic core was already damaged and it had been thoroughly destroyed. As for his two Lich's Ice Orbs, one was destroyed by this brat and the other Ice Orb had combined with his Zombie Dragon, to form a Giant Frost Dragon which was then killed by the Reaper Mantis who had sliced off its neck. Furthermore, its dragon crystal core was then eaten by a small Golden Beast.

Luckily, this little brat did not know that when the dark mist disappear, the power to initiate an attack was still in the brat's hands. Otherwise, if that brat stood on guard and prepared to ambush himself, that would be dangerous.

This battle was already his defeat.

This defeat was acceptable. His opponent was not only an Innate Ranker, he also possessed many strong beasts and concealed his scheming nature the whole time. Suo Ge had made an error in his earlier judgement and actually concentrated his attack on the Level 7 Gold Ranked Reaper Mantis instead. That brat had waited for his (Suo Ge's) own beasts to be weakened greatly before coming out and reaping all the benefits.

To suffer a defeat from such an opponent was truly acceptable.

In this world, other than him and a few other Liches, who would be able to safely escape from the hands of an Innate Ranker?

Lich Suo Ge felt quite comforted as he thought about it in this manner.

When he reported this young human Innate Ranker, the Lich King would surely reward him greatly. At that time, his strength surely increase. This defeat did not actually bring him any true losses... if he could safely return, then he would surely be able to make a comeback.

He suddenly saw Yue Yang doing a strange action and started to raise his guard. What was this brat trying to do?

Could it be that he wanted to penetrate through the shield and attack him?

Impossible, that was impossible.

Before Suo Ge could even process his thoughts, a person's figure suddenly flashed right in front of him.

There was a seemingly unstoppable Sword Qi suddenly appearing before Suo Ge's eyes, which unexpectedly penetrated right through the shield, furiously charging towards Suo Ge. Suo Ge was stupefied, he couldn't even react in time before the sword qi that was approaching him as fast as lightning stopped just as it was

about to cut his forehead. He was so shocked that his soul almost left his body.

The length of the Sword Qi had not extended far enough... it was just barely short of claiming Suo Ge's life. As a result, Suo Ge was able to escape from the clutches of death.

He had raised his glass for a drink, but when the Sword Qi had stabbed through the Shield, the trembling Suo Ge had dropped his glass and become drenched in grape wine.

Close one.

The kid had almost killed me with one strike.

Suo Ge was so shocked that he started trembling uncontrollably. He stood up immediately and staggered backwards, knocking into his chair, flipping it over.

He had to leave immediately or else he would put himself in danger, but the dark mist in the distance had yet to reach its time limit and he did not have a way to recall it. Furthermore, once the dark mist disappeared, the Grimoire's Shield would also disappear. In front of this Innate Ranker, that one second delay before he could teleport would be extremely fatal... Lich Suo Ge reached out and held onto his Golden Grimoire, preparing to summon his last beast to maintain his Shield 3 seconds before the dark mist disappeared. Then he could activate the teleportation orb.

He hoped that his last beast could buy him a few seconds and let him escape safely.

During that instant where Suo Ge made his decision, a sudden ray of light was summoned out from Xiao Wen Li's hand. It looked incomparably pure as it formed a ten metre tall, dazzling Serpent warrior's image. The dark mist instantly disappeared like steam... it did not even take a second for all the dark mist to be entirely purified by the bright Serpent warrior.

With a 'Pa' sound like an egg shell breaking, Suo Ge's Grimoire shield started to shatter and disappear.

He could not summon his last beast fast enough.

"I am finished," Lich Suo Ge watched helplessly as his shield shattered and anxiously pulled out his teleportation orb from his ring but as he started to pinch and use it, he suddenly felt that his whole body was bound and unable to move.

Yue Yang slowly walked up and broke Suo Ge's fingers as he pried out the teleportation orb from Lich Suo Ge's hands and threw it away. Exposing an evil smile, he said, "How unfortunate, I have to tell you some bad news. My Xiao Wen Li's Binding Chains Inherent Skill has already levelled up. You do not have to be so tense if you cannot move, but if you wish to move, I can offer you my assistance. For example, I would be very willing to sever your head to use it as a soccer ball, Mister Suo Ge. For this type of work, I can work for free."

Chapter 121 – Great Spoils Of War

After defeating Lich Suo Ge, Yue Yang did not let his guard down, as there was still a Level 7 Gold Ranked Reaper Mantis.

Even though the Reaper Mantis was currently extremely weak.

However, it was still a Level 7 Gold Ranked Beast. If it was not for the fact that it was an expecting mother, the Giant Frost Dragon, that was formed from combining a Zombie Dragon and the Ice Orb, would not be capable of being its opponent. Then, it would not have ended up in such a dire situation. Yue Yang looked at it vigilantly, and the Reaper Mantis did the same. It was as if it could sense the danger coming from Yue Yang... From the start, it hadn't planned to initiate an attack towards Yue Yang, as it was incapable of gauging his strength. It felt that this weird, young human was not the kind of prey that it would prey on for food.

After removing the frozen status, the Reaper Mantis did not leave immediately, but fell onto the ground in pain and started producing a white, foam-like substance.

In the white foam, there were a lot of golden eggs, but most of the golden eggs were already broken.

The female Reaper Mantis tried to search again and again, as if it was wishing it could find an egg that had yet to break. At this moment, its gaze had turned into a motherly gaze, as if it was feeling the pain and despair of its children's premature deaths.

It used its arm carefully and delicately, searching within the white foam again and again, as if it was hoping to find a safe and unbroken egg.

But, all of the golden egg had been cracked.

There was not a single one that was in good condition.

The mother Reaper Mantis was not willing to give up and started searching again within the white foam.

Its frantic look really stirred up Yue Yang emotions. Initially, he had considered using this opportunity to kill the Reaper Mantis and obtain its Demonic Core, but as he saw the desperate and sorrowful emotions within its eyes, he could not bear to do so. Actually, Yue Yang was not one of those types of guys whose hearts were as soft as tofu. Even if there were corpses all over the ground, he believed he would not care that much. However, as Yue Yang looked at the Mother Reaper Mantis, who had gone through the tradition of eating the Male Reaper Beast after sex as a source of food, he did not expect that it would have this kind of despaired and sorrowful look, trying to find any eggs that were not frozen to death desperately. Yue Yang was deeply touched by this scene.

There were some people, although human, who may not even be comparable to this Mother Reaper Mantis.

The Reaper Mantis finally gave up all hopes, and it cried out several ear-piercing noises that almost could not be heard by the human ear. Its body trembled sorrowfully before it flew up into

the air and circled around the pile of white foam three times. Then, it gave out an even more ear-piercing cry, and with a flap of its gold wings, it disappeared without a trace.

“ What a pity... “ Yue Yang saw that there were at least one or two dozens golden eggs that were about the size of ping pong balls.

These were the Gold Ranked Reaper Mantis’ eggs.

Now as they had been frozen by the Ice Orb, every single one of them had shattered.

After the Reaper Mantis had flown away. Yue Yang didn’t wanted to waste any more time to sigh and instead went to put the Lich Ring on immediately. After carefully interacting with it, he now had to remove the remaining awareness of Suo Ge and contract with it using his Innate Qi before he could use this treasured ring.

Yue Yang estimated that even if he was an Innate Ranker, it would take at least 10 days to completely clear away Suo Ge’s remaining awareness.

But he wanted to use it now.

How could he do so?

He saw that the Golden Beast carrying the Giant Frost Dragon’s magic core within its growling stomach had just came back, and immediately ran over with the Lich Ring, “Help me for a bit. Think

of a way to remove Suo Ge's lingering awareness and his contract with it. I warn you. If you dare to eat it, I will flatten you and sell you as a piece of scrap metal."

Chomp. The Golden Beast acted like he did not hear Yue Yang's words. It opened its mouth and immediately swallowed the whole ring.

"You are forcing me to do it. See if I do not beat you to death!" Yue Yang was extremely furious and was prepared to use his first level of Innate Qi to instantly kill this gluttonous beast.

"Pa Pa Pa" The Gold Beast opened its mouth and spat out the Lich Ring and continued spitting out several mouthfuls of saliva, as if it had just eaten something disgusting.

"Ha Ha, I spoke wrongly just now. I actually I meant to praise you for being such a good kid. Not bad, your achievements are only second to Xiao Wen Li, as she is more obedient, thus Xiao Wen Li's achievements are first class, no they are the best." Yue Yang's look was beaming with joy as he looked at the ring, which didn't contain any trace of Suo Ge's awareness. Its contract had disappeared. He started to use childish words to praise the Gold Beast and reached out to pat its head.

If the Gold Beast could speak, it would undoubtedly have told Yue Yang: "I despise you, I have never heard of an owner like you".

It was a pity that it could not speak and express its disdain.

In the end, it could only obediently turn back into a wrist guard on Yue Yang 's arm, with its belly sticking out. Having a master like Yue Yang could only be regarded as bad luck.

Yue Yang immediately put on the Lich Ring. Using his mind to feel it, he found that there were several dozen cubic metres of space within it, full of different kinds of bodies and bones. Yue Yang, who was extremely disgusted by them, immediately began to toss them all out. The stuff he threw out piled up like a small hill.

After hesitating for a while, he threw the chopped Giant Frost Dragon's horns, teeth, and claws into the ring.

The dragon's skin was too rotten, otherwise, Yue Yang would have taken a piece of that as well.

The headless poison wyvern also went into the ring. He could use the fresh wyvern's skin to make up for the lack of the Giant Frost Dragon skin. With the Lich Ring, it became extremely convenient for Yue Yang. Every single thing that he had taken a fancy to all went inside the Lich Ring. For example, the Headless Horseman's large black sword, the Gold Armoured Puppet's golden hammer, and the Blood Winged Demon Guard's corpse and his axe, had all been stuffed into the ring.

If he could not use it himself, he could just sell it to Fatty Hai Da Fu. Extorting some money from him should not be an issue. All these were Bronze-Ranked Demonic weapons, they were not just weapons that could be found in the roadstalls.

Afterwards, he also put Suo Ge's and Lu Ben's skulls into the ring.

In theory, these two should already be dead, but since their bodies had already become undeads, as long as Yue Yang went to school and learned the secret method on how to decipher undead memories, then all of the secrets held within the two skulls would be presented one by one in front of Yue Yang.

Yue Yang had to consider whether or not he should keep the mass of white foam that had started to coagulate.

If he gave this stuff to Hui Tai Lang to eat, maybe it could turn out to be a tonic.

But, once he thought of the sad Reaper Mantis, Yue Yang could not bear to do so... better let it be. Furthermore, he had fought alongside the Reaper Mantis. Feeding the corpses of its children to his dog seemed to be an unjustified act. However, Xiao Wen Li suddenly scurried over, and picked up a shattered Golden Egg, passing it over to Yue Yang while blinking her eyes rapidly, as if she wished to say something.

“Are you saying that they can still be saved?” Yue Yang's heart started to quicken, and he almost went mad with joy immediately, as he asked anxiously.

“En En” Xiao Wen Li nodded her head in a cute manner.

“You truly are a good kid!” Yue Yang looked at it and was pleasantly surprised, picking up Xiao Wen Li, and firmly kissed her pink, little cheeks.

This egg may have been damaged, but it was not that severe. He still had Innate Qi, so maybe it could still be saved.

Yue Yang immediately spared no efforts as he poured his Innate Qi into the fractured egg, but he could see that it was not very effective, as it did not have any reaction.

It seemed like with his current strength right now, it still wasn't enough to save this fractured egg. Although Innate Qi could aid the healing of living creatures to a large extent, its effect was not enough to restore the fractured egg. Furthermore, Yue Yang hardly had any Innate Qi left in his body after the fight. Most importantly, Yue Yang was more adept at using his Innate Qi for attacking than for healing, so he didn't really know how to do so.

If it was the beautiful lady in his dreams, maybe she could save this egg.

Xiao Wen Li looked at Yue Yang, who was sweating profusely, working tirelessly for such a long time, yet yielded no results.

She raised her Dual Iced Blade, and gently cut Yue Yang's forefinger, letting his finger ooze out several drops of blood... Suddenly a miraculous sign appeared. Once the Reaper Mantis' egg came into contact with Yue Yang's blood, it was as if it turned into a living being and started to absorb it. Then, after about 3 seconds,

the egg, which had been dyed pink due to absorbing the blood, began to give out a golden light. The fractured cracks instantly disappeared and finally became a completely intact egg.

Yue Yang was stupefied, he did not know that his blood could be used in such an amazing manner.

The Bloody Queen looked exceptionally curious and seemed to be unable to avert her gaze from Yue Yang's injured finger. She grabbed it instantly and started to forcefully suck on it.

“You Vampiric woman... “ Yue Yang felt like she was sucking him dry, his fresh blood and Sword Qi was quickly getting sucked out from the cut. Then, he sent her flying with a kick and pried his hand free. He then saw the Bloody Queen fly up into the air start to emit a golden glow, as if her strength had increased greatly. She flew around excitedly, as if she had obtained a unique treasured object.

Although she did not level up, Yue Yang could see that after the Bloody Queen had sucked his blood, her strength had increased by leaps and bounds and that she had almost become a Level 4 Gold Ranked beast.

But to let her raise her levels by using his blood, Yue Yang was still not that grand and selfless.

He then quickly use his Innate Qi to heal the small cut, and placed the gold-coloured egg within the white foam, which had started to coagulate, and wrapped it together.

He hoped that when it came out of its incubation, it would become a cute little gold Reaper Mantis. Yue Yang was feeling pretty accomplished, as he had successfully saved a life. Although it was not human, it was still a baby.

Yue Yang tidied everything up, now his combat state of mind had completely ended. The Silver Grimoire flashed a pillar of light about ten meters tall... but this time it was not the promotion of the Silver Grimoire, it was instead due to Yue Yang finally leveling up from an Advanced [Apprentice] to a Beginner [Bravemen] This promotion was significant as Yue Yang could summon only a single beast a day, but now that he was promoted, he could summon 2 beasts, more importantly, as Yue Yang had been promoted, his Divine Vision had also leveled up. Currently, his Divine Vision was at the third rank... Yue Yang was extremely happy. His goal of using his Divine Vision as X-ray vision to see through the clothes of girls was getting closer.

(*EDnote: Rango, For anyone confused, Cow and Bloody Queen are Guardian Beast so they are counted as just one beast)

After recalling the Bloody Queen, who was flying about, Xiao Wen Li also obediently went to rest. Yue Yang flipped over the surrounding corpses and after seeing that there wasn't anything useful in particular, he felt a little disappointed. Finally, he unwillingly stuffed the Gold Armoured Puppet's mechanical core that was already extremely damaged into the ring.

If there ever was a miser who would sweep through this battlefield, he would not be able to find anything useful.

Yue Yang still continued to sigh, because he was regretful about the Giant Frost Dragon's skin, which was rotten, and its skeletal remains that couldn't fit into the Lich's ring... it was all good stuff. If he could not bring them away, it would be a waste.

Another 5 minutes had passed, before a flash of purple light suddenly shone from an empty space.

The swordswoman suddenly appeared above the pile of corpses as she carried the brown-robed man's head within a bundle of cloth. She was extremely surprised when she saw the scene in front of her and asked, "What happened?"

"It is hard to explain in a few words." Yue Yang looked at the girl, whose clothes were neat, and not even a strand of her hair was out of place, and asked: "Your Highness, you did not allow this perverted guy to take any liberties with you, didn't you?"

"Are you talking about him? After I entered the battle space, I did not wait for him to summon his beast and swiftly killed him with a swing of my blade... but that guy who was extremely weak that it was pitiful had already entered the arena, and the space had a time restriction which only allows you to return after an hour has passed. I should be able to choose to use the teleportation orb to leave, but I chose to wait instead, and look at your battle... you seem to have experienced a fierce battle? There was even a Giant Frost Dragon. Not bad, you little pervert, you are quite amazing. Where is the Dragon Crystal?" The swordswoman asked curiously.

"What? You are still asking about the Dragon Crystal? It was the Reaper Mantis that killed the Frost Dragon. Are you asking me for

the Dragon Crystal? I did not take it.” The words Yue Yang spoke were all true.

Indeed, it was the Reaper Mantis that killed the Frost Dragon, and he also did not take the Dragon Crystal.

The one that took the Dragon Crystal was the Gold Beast.

As the swordswoman listened to him, she felt that this little brat was not lying to her. She could not help but say something comforting, “Do not be too upset. If you do not have the Dragon Crystal, then forget about it. Next time you will have another opportunity, I will steal a Dragon Crystal from the state treasury for you as a form of compensation, but you have to keep it a secret for me. You are indeed pretty capable, this pile of zombies and skeletons were all killed by you? Not bad, I did not think that the black-robed Necromancer could summon so many Undead-type beasts. I did not think you would even be capable... since it is like this, then the matter from before, I will just forget about it.”

“I told you already, touching your breasts was only a natural reflex and not my intention...” Yue Yang sighed in relief as she seemed to no longer carry a grudge.

“What? I only just forgave you for suddenly grabbing my hand and not realizing it...That matter of touching my breast, I will never forgive you. You absolutely had the intention to do it. Let’s not talk about it, or else I will not be able to suppress my anger and won’t resist the temptation to behead you.” The Swordswoman really wanted to beat Yue Yang up when she remembered his wolf-like paws and the evil smile on that little brat’s face.

“If you really hate me, you might as well just push me down... I promise that I will not resist...” Yue Yang muttered softly.

“What did you say?” The Swordswoman’s ears were sensitive enough to pick up the words that Yue Yang had just muttered clearly, but she acted as if she could not hear it.

“I said that your looks are more loveable than a flower, and you are smart as you are beautiful, and your figure is even more amazing, tall and slender, with the right amount of flesh in the appropriate regions, and that you are as beautiful as an amethyst, and that you have an extremely sweet temperament, bringing smiles to everyone every time you speak.” Yue Yang’s ability was that he could speak continuously without taking a break and make whoever listening to him roll their eyes.

“It is really hard to imagine. I heard from Yue Bing that you are a shut-in, who had little interactions with your family and acted like a mute person for the past ten years. How did you suddenly change so much?” The swordswoman wanted to criticize him severely, but as she recalled, this brat had indeed been fun to speak with and was always smiling as bright as a sun, as if he could not contained his smile. “What are you planning to do next? Are you going to train at Tong Tian Tower? Why don’t we form a team and complete the World Tree’s missions?”

“Forgive me, my pretty Highness, I am still illiterate as I have never gone to school before. I wish to study in school for 2 years. If not, even if I wanted to write a love letter to you, I could not do so, as I am still unable to hold a pen.” Yue Yang really did have the

intention to enter school to patch up his basic knowledge.

Presently, it was not that he did not have any strength, but rather because he lacked the proper foundation.

Yue Yang could kill a Lich now, but towards the herbs beside his path or even the surrounding beasts, he could not recognise them.

His lack of basic knowledge was hindering his progress, for example, if he knew earlier that the Ice Orb could merge with the Zombie Dragon and possibly become the Giant Frost Dragon, then he would have made his move earlier and killed the Zombie Dragon with the Reaper Mantis, using his full strength. At least he would cut off its neck, this way even if it evolved from the Zombie Dragon, it would be a headless Giant Frost Dragon.

Furthermore, Yue Yang had a lot of ideas in his head, but due to the lack of basic knowledge, he could not go one step further to research or improve them.

For example, he knew that there was a more effective pill than the Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill, but with all the medicinal names, ingredients, and prescriptions, Yue Yang didn't have a clue. Even if he did know, he had no way of refining it.

Spending a few months in school to cram some basic knowledge into his head, Yue Yang believed that this would allow his strength to improve greatly.

As for the school, he did not really mind the beautiful girls there.

If the school did have a beauty idol, then the prerequisites would be that she must be a pure virgin... If she was used by others, then Yue Yang would not be interested. Even if there was no beauty idol, it should not really matter, as he could bring a beauty with him. For example he could find the lady, Yi Nan, and bring her along to study. Two people sitting under the moonlight and as he rested his head on her thighs while listening to her teach him basic knowledge, and at the same time he could reach out and “touch, touch”.

That kind of “blissful” lifestyle, that was the ideal ‘blissful’ lifestyle for every pervert.

Chapter 122 – Beautiful School Principal Oneesan?

Back at the Yue Clan's Castle. The Royal Swordswoman had left to find Jun Wu You to report the incident of the Necromancers' death in Eagle's Cry Valley at Gui Jian Chou.

At first, Yue Yang thought that his reward would immediately be given to him. He never thought that Jun Wu You would become extremely furious instead.

Jun Wu You thought that not only did these two reckless brats not return to report back when they saw the Necromancers, they had even decided to thoroughly investigate the matter. They have committed one sin after another. Although Yue Yang and the Royal Swordswoman had brought victory home, he thought that they were simply lucky. Had they met a Lich or a Great Lich instead, their small lives would have been in extreme danger. The Emperor had then passed an order to ground her daughter, who had recklessly taken matters into her own hands, for three months. Luckily, Yue Yang was considered to have been forced to collaborate with the Royal Swordswoman and was a victim of his daughter's recklessness. He did not receive a very heavy punishment.

The guard that Jun Wu You had sent said that as for the Water Avoiding Droplet that Yue Yang wanted, it was not that Jun Wu You couldn't give it to him, but rather it was just that he must first pass the Ranker's Battle Sense Test.

They didn't have a high requirement for him; it would be fine as

long as he passed.

However, this sort of test that wasn't like any tests in normal school really made life very difficult for Yue Yang... Let alone himself, even Yue Bing, who had studied for four years in Shang Jing Academy wouldn't be able to help Yue Yang.

Thinking of cheating? Sorry, no can do.

There were some things that looked easy on the surface. For example, one of the questions was: How were the [Purple Gold Twisting Conch] and [Purple Gold Twisting Screw] related to each other?

One was a crustacean-type beast. The other was a part of a metal puppet beast. Who the heck would know how these two things were related to each other?

Yue Bing also did not understand. In the end, Yue Yang took the chance to ask the Fifth Elder when he visited him. In the end, Fifth Elder had nodded his head solemnly and said that those two were indeed related to each other. Furthermore, they were very closely interrelated. However, when Yue Yang asked him how they were they related, this old fellow had pretended to be secretive instead. No matter how Yue Yang had secretly persuaded the little mischievous Yue Shuang to pull at his beard, he wouldn't say how they were related, no matter what.

Another example was a simple medicinal question. If a warrior had been bitten by a Star-dotted Sandsnake beast, what was the

best kind of medicine to apply immediately? Was it the Sitting Thornyback Lizard's saliva, or the Silver Haired Tree's tree sap?

After rummaging through the beast and medicine encyclopedia to check, Yue Yang was blown away with shock.

This was because not only the Sand Snake's venom, the other two 'medicine', the Sitting Thornyback Lizard's saliva and the Silver Haired Tree's tree sap were all highly poisonous liquids. Ordinary people would die in one breath if they were to apply any of the three on their injury. Could it be that these things could fight poison with poison? Yue Yang was sweating greatly when he saw this. What a crazy question! Even Yue Bing, a model student in her Academy, did not know the answer. How did this question even come about?

There were some questions that Yue Bing seemed to be able to do, but also unable to. For example, discussing about a beast's level, demon crystal core quality, puppet's heart, and Demon Abyss languages...

Yue Yang realised that if he had to take the test with his own power, he could only get a big zero.

With Yue Bing's help, he could only get 10 points.

"This Jun Wu You fellow must have been so free that his butt was starting to ache. I hate this kind of people the most. He didn't hand out a treasure straightforwardly even if he had one, but instead bombarded me with this nonsense test." Yue Yang was

extremely furious. No matter what, he was still the little king of tests in the other world. His cheating methods could be considered to be at the grand wizard's level. Who would have known that he would fail a paper so badly this time.

The thing that drove Yue Yang mad was that reportedly, the Royal Swordswoman had scored 65 points when she did this test paper. As for Jun Wu You, this perverted emperor's other daughter whom he had at 112 years old, the Royal Swordswoman's six-years old sister, the little loli who had played together with Yue Shuang during the new years, scored 80 points on the test.

This was so embarrassing.

He could let it go if he couldn't score higher than the Royal Swordswoman. She had the education of someone who was considered to be the future Empress of the Da Xia Empire after all. But he couldn't even compare to a six-year old kid...

Yue Yang had received a huge blow and decided to go to an Academy for an intensive supplementary lesson.

Didn't the clan bully him for not having basic schooling?

If it wasn't him, but the pitiful guy, who only read books at home everyday, he might have scored a passing mark. He had only been transported here not that long ago, so how would he know any of these things? If he had gone to school for a year, wouldn't this stuff be as easy as fiddling your fingers?

Yue Bing, who had gone overboard in studying only knowledge that was related to plant-type beast, also felt ashamed of herself. She did not know anything else other than plant-type beasts.

“Brother, I also want to go to school with you. However, it might be quite troublesome for me to transfer to your school from the Shang Jing Academy.” Yue Bing had wanted to leave Shang Jing Academy, which had the best reputation, and transfer to the worst school of the worst, the Ivy Academy. Actually, it didn’t matter to her which school she went to. She only wanted to follow her brother. The Ivy Academy was actually one of the traditional schools, that couldn’t be compared to Shang Jin Academy with regards to the courses for plant-type and insect-type beasts. However, its beast-type and bird-type courses were not worse off than Shang Jing Academy. Of course, all of these were not important to Yue Bing, who was only compatible with plant-type beasts.

“It seems that I have to send Yi Nan a letter,”

Yue Yang had decided to send a letter to Yi Nan for the happiness of his future sex life. He ordered his servant to go to the Assassin’s Guild in the Warrior’s Gathering to send the letter.

This was his letter: Brother Yi Nan, as the saying goes, it would be a waste of your youth if you don’t treasure time and fight for success and achievements. That’s why, we have to treasure our time and get more girls while we are still young, so that we may enter into a happy adult life earlier. I heard that there are a lot of beautiful girls in the academies. They are also very open and passionate. Sometimes, they couldn’t even wait to get it on and

would push down handsome boys anywhere, the garden, lawn, forest, hills, or even pavilions. In order to save these girls, who are desperate for love, in order to free them from the painful burning passion that ravages their bodies, I have made a very grand, selfless decision. I have decided to go to school and teach them how to love properly. I will fulfill all of their curiosity of the opposite gender and help them to understand more about greater things. This is all for the sake of building a strong foundation for my happy sex life in the future... Of course, it's difficult to struggle alone. I might even be easily suffocated by their ample bosoms. It's at this kind of important situations that I need your help, Brother Yi Nan. I have always thought that with such a loyal friend like you motivating me from behind, my battle strength would increase ten times, even hundred time greater than usual. Come, Brother Yi Nan, let us swim in the sea of breasts together...

He didn't know what kind of expression that girl, Yi Nan, would have when she read this letter.

However, Yue Yang could guarantee that Yi Nan would very quickly rush to the Academy after reading the letter.

At the same time, Yue Yang also wrote a few letters to Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, and the others. However, he did not write about beauties. His letters only contained a few words: Enrolling in Ivy Academy.

The clan members heaved a huge sigh of relief when they heard about Yue Yang, this troublemaker, deciding to go to school. They had sponsored him with a hundred gold. Of course, in Yue Yang's heart, he still thought that he would suffer losses. This was because the Yue Clan had obtained that Giant Frost Dragon's

skeleton... Fifth Elder said that this giant dragon's skeleton could be made into a Giant Dragon Puppet. The whole process would take around three years. He reckoned that they would be able to make a bronze-ranked level 7 Giant Dragon Puppet.

When he heard that the dragon's skeleton still had this kind of usefulness, Yue Yang felt that he had suffered an even greater loss.

He didn't even think that the giant dragon's skeleton was something that he didn't even want previously and was brought back by someone on the Yue Clan's orders...

In order to praise Yue Yang for killing the Giant Frost Dragon, Elder Yue Hai had even praised Fourth Mother's son-nurturing skills intentionally during their Clan's Feast. He even proposed for the matter of Fourth Mother exceptional nurturing techniques to be written under the Clan's Major Events Records, so that their later generations could remember Fourth Mother's contributions to the Yue Clan and use her as role model of a virtuous wife.

Writing a daughter-in-law's name on the Clan's Major Events Records needed to be discussed by the three elders, but Elder Yue Hai had proposed it during their Clan's Feast instead. This matter had shocked the whole clan.

Increasing position through son's achievements. (Shiro: some chinese idiom. I tried)

Because of Yue Yang's power, Fourth Mother's position in the Yue Clan had suddenly shot up to the top. No person would dare

ridicule her now.

Those relatives and servants who had bullied her previously, in particular, had all visited her and begged for her forgiveness.

Fortunately Fourth Mother was a benevolent person. She didn't argue with them, otherwise a lot of people would definitely need to receive a plank beating... Right now, the whole Yue Clan understood Fourth Mother's position. Furthermore her position would not decline for a long period of time, instead, her position would become more and more important in the future. This was because of Yue Yang, that madman, who did not even bat an eyelid when killing a person, had only suddenly rise in power. In the future, it was unknown how powerful he would get.

A lot of people thought that even using the most conservative estimation, this madman would at least be the second Yue Qiu. Following his father's footsteps, he would become the Clan's second [Overlord].

Yue Yang did not attend the Clan's Feast, but elder Yue Hai had already arranged for his seat to be very close to his side.

He was only below the First Master Yue Shan and the Second Master Yue Ling.

Hence, it can be said that Elder Yue Hai's affirmation of Yue Yang was made extremely clear.

Elder Yue Hai did not see Yue Yang, so he did not mention Yue Yang during the Clan's Feast at all. However, he had praised Fourth Mother many times, even rewarding her an ancestor's diary. On the surface, he had said that the diary was to reward her for her virtues, but even a fool would know that this was his way of giving Yue Yang the Puppet Handbook.

This was a book, which was written in collaboration between Ghost Genius Yue Gong and the Yue Clan's Five Great Puppet Masters, Tai, Hua, Heng, Heng and Song, titled the Puppet Handbook. It was the Yue Clan's greatest treasure. The number of people who owned this Handbook in the Yue Clan could be counted on less than ten fingers. First Young Master Yue Tian and Fourth Young Master Yue Yan had longed for it for a long time, but elder Yue Hai and the other elders had never given it to them. Who would have thought that today, the one received this treasure was Yue Yang, the person who had made an enemy out of the entire clan? This was the proof that strength was the most important thing in this world. It was also true according to the Yue Clan's ways that they have upheld generation by generations. Whoever was the most outstanding would receive the most benefits and backing from the entire Clan.

It was said that the substitute Clan Head, Yue Shan, was not angry at all and had even applauded enthusiastically, personally handing the Puppet Handbook to Fourth Mother. Furthermore, he had also apologized for all the previous misunderstandings they had.

When Yue Bing told him about this after she returned, Yue Yang was absolutely horrified.

This Yue Shan was practically a huge hypocrite. Luckily, he was not [Linghu Chong](#), otherwise, it would be really tragic...

(Shiro: Linghu Chong is the main character of Jin Yong's novel, The Smiling, Proud Wanderer)

Ten days later.

Yue Yang and Yue Bing bid their farewell to Fourth Mother, and began their journey towards Shang Jing in the Da Xia Empire's capital.

Yue Bing had gone to prepare the procedure for her withdrawal from the Shang Jing Academy, while Yue Yang went towards the Ivy Academy directly opposite Shang Jin Academy to report his attendance. Compared to the tall, heroic looking front gate of the Shang Jing Academy, the Ivy Academy, that was only separated from the Shang Jing Academy by a big road in between them, was simply trash that couldn't even be trashier. Other than the nice looking greenery, it simply had nothing at all.

"Anyone here?" Yue Yang was worried that if he had shouted even louder, the dilapidated roof and walls would collapse. Hence, he only called out with a soft voice.

"It's okay, this door has been this way for hundreds of years already, it won't collapse. Don't worry too much and come in." There was an elderly man with a goatee beard poking his head out from inside, waving at Yue Yang. Yue Yang started sweating in speechlessness. He could let it go if it was only Shang Jing Academy's tall and heroic looking Front Gate, but they even had a

hot and sexy, beautiful upperclasswoman waiting to welcome new students, and appointed handsome male students as student leaders. There were also majestic-looking silver-armoured guards standing outside... This Ivy Academy was like a hellhole. If he wanted to shoot a horror movie, he didn't even need to start releasing white smoke, he could just start shooting immediately. Under such circumstances, they had even sent a devious-looking elderly man with a goatee beard to welcome new students. Wasn't this the same as forcing all of the incoming students to Shang Jing Academy instead?

In such an Academy, could he really find a beautiful girl?

Yue Yang started sweating profusely.

He couldn't stop thinking about conquering a few beauties. According to what Fatty Hai had said, the chances of him conquering the beautiful girls from Shang Jing Academy would definitely be better.

Looking at this Goatee Elder, who looked like a greedy rural landlord, Yue Yang asked without reservation, "Where is the Beautiful Tutor* from your Academy? Why did they send you to welcome new students? Don't you know that your looks would simply drive new students away?"

*(Shiro: Fatty Hai mentioned there was a beautiful tutor in his Ivy Academy before)

That Goatee Elder waved his hands, "This student over here, I am already the best looking tutor in the whole of this academy.

Just put up with it.”

“I’m going back home.” Upon hearing that the Beautiful Tutor was not there, and that the most handsome person in the school was this old geezer, he thought that he would definitely suffer if he enrolled in this school.

“Don’t be like this, the Beautiful Tutor will still be here to teach. However, this student over here, I believe you also understand that a beauty’s air is especially big. The better looking they are, the bigger their airs are. If the Beautiful Tutor had really stood here to welcome new students, then that would mean that she wasn’t a real, true beauty... Good things would always be hard to catch. If you only see the waves on the surface, then how would you discover the pearls deposited on the ocean beds?” The Goatee Elder hurriedly stopped Yue Yang from leaving, and mysteriously took out a colourfully illustrated book from his robe. “There’s no other way. I’ll let you, this new student, see the catalogue of our school’s beauties. There are Four Great Beauties in our academy, every single one is a devastating beauty. There are also Four Great School Flowers, and every single one of them is fresh, tender, and sweet. Lastly, we also have two Beautiful Tutors... do you want to see it?”

“Yes!” Yue Yang had zero resistance to beauties.

“Pay up first. Our beauty catalogue is not open for public eyes.” The Goatee Elder’s words had almost shot Yue Yang down to the ground.

But it was also good this way, at least he wouldn’t need to fight with the Shang Jing Academy wolves, who had come to plunder on

the limited beauty resources over there.

Yue Yang endured the pain in his heart and forked out five gold, preparing to pay for his enrollment fee and take this colourful beauty catalogue.

Who would have known that this Goatee Elder instead shook his head and hands and said, “This student over here, your school fees isn’t just 5 gold... It is 50 gold. It’s best if you can pay another 50 gold as a deposit, otherwise I wouldn’t dare to let you enroll.”

Hearing this, Yue Yang was hugely surprised.

Soon after, he grabbed the Goatee Elder’s clothes and furiously bellowed, “You old geezer, dared to raise the price right in front of my face? Everyone only needed to pay 5 gold, why would I need to pay 50 gold?”

The Goatee Elder was raised into the air in Yue Yang’s grasp, but his expression was instead a sweet, smiling one, “We, the Ivy Academy, teaches students based on their abilities. That little miss that walked with you just now had plenty of spiritual qi, and her future would definitely be bright. She is also a beauty, and could help attract new students into our Academy. We wouldn’t mind accepting her enrollment for free, but as for yourself... You are obviously a little pervert, if you enrolled, you would definitely steal some of our beauty reserves. You are the exact opposite of the previous student. Furthermore, you have a bad temper. If you are going to fight a few times with others in a month, how could we not accept more money from a blockhead like you? That 50 gold extra deposit fees are simply precaution, just in case you cause the

academy losses...”

“Did you think I’m an evil tyrant, who would go around raping women? I... my family is actually really poor, it was even difficult for us to make a livelihood. The eighteen generations of mine who are migrant workers, had always wanted to seek knowledge, yet they had all been farmers. After my parent’s death, I relied on my uncle and aunt who painstakingly raised me up. I only eat to satisfy my hunger. Five gold is actually my savings after enduring starvation for ten years. By living frugally, little by little, I’ve finally accumulated this much.” Yue Yang had almost said that he was the little match girl in that Hans Anderson book.

“I understand. I also sympathize with your family’s circumstances. However, you are the first student in the school’s history who dared to grab his School Principal’s collars. It’s not that high to ask for 50 gold from you.” The Goatee Elder smiled sweetly as he explained.

“You are the School Principal?” Yue Yang hurriedly put the Goatee Elder down when he heard him.

“Vice.” The Goatee Elder admitted.

“Then who’s the real one?” Before he came to this world, Yue Yang had read a lot of stories from that different world. Often, in the schools in those stories, the Vice Principal was a bad guy, while the Principal was the good guy. Oftentimes, the School Principal would ignore administrative matters and drink until he was drunk instead. However, although he acted like a fool, he was actually a strong expert, who would probably accept the main character as

his disciple. Most importantly, no matter how ugly this Principal was, he would definitely have a single and beautiful granddaughter.

In conclusion, even after he was transported to another world, he would have to stay away from the Vice Principal of the school.

But if he became familiar with this Vice Principal, it would be easier for him to get girls.

“The real Principal was that Beautiful Tutor who had a huge rack that I mentioned just now. She is one of our two Beautiful tutors, and also one of our Ten Great Beauties.” The Goatee Elder purposely flipped the Beauty Illustration Book to a page very quickly right in front of Yue Yang. The Beauty Illustration over there illustrated a half-naked girl (oneesan) with an extremely hot body and ample bosoms just coming out from her bath. Yue Yang could only gulp his saliva down down abruptly when he saw this. Could this oneesan be the School Principal?

Chapter 123 – An Extremely Abnormal Test

After paying money, the first thing that Yue Yang wanted wasn't a receipt. Instead, he snatched the illustration book of beautiful women immediately.

“Don't read it here, the beautiful girls in this school are extremely wary of wolves. This student over here, you should try to appear to be a good boy.” The Goatee Elder warned Yue Yang, and then asked, “Right, this student, what's your name? Titan? This name... Forget it, names are completely unimportant. Student Titan, what class do you plan on attending? Here at our Ivy Academy, our special courses are “Letting Sheep to Pasture”, a free-and-easy curriculum, and “Closed Door”, an individual's diligent self-study. We even have another unofficial, but unopposed by the school regulations, the “Dating Technique” course for matchmaking between girls and guys...”

“Wait a minute. What does “Letting Sheep to Pasture”, a free-and-easy curriculum mean?” Yue Yang wasn't swayed that easily. He noticed something was wrong the moment he heard those words.

“It is unlimited freedom. Teachers won't care about their students at all, and students would be able to learn on their own.” The Goatee Elder shamelessly explained. These words made Yue Yang extremely furious. Wasn't this that legendary thing called cheating others? Even after receiving the Academy fees, they didn't care about their students at all. Could this school even still be called an Academy?

“Won’t the teachers teach classes?” Yue Yang resisted his sudden impulse of beating him up and decided to first clarify the situation.

“They will, they will still need to teach classes. They have to teach at least two classes in a year. The first class is the introduction class, where teachers and students get introduced to each other. The second class is the commemoration class, where after a year has passed, it’s time for teachers and students to part. Everyone will give a present and a speech to remember each other by.” Before the Goatee Elder even finished speaking, Yue Yang had already fallen to the ground. My God, does this even count as classes?

“Then what about the “Closed Door”, an individual’s diligent self-study?” Yue Yang asked about the second teaching method.

“As the name implies, this means that students have to study diligently on their own. Our academy is extremely generous, we have opened the library for free for students to do their own research.” The Goatee Elder implied that it was a favor worthy of the heavens above for his Academy to open a library for their students to research for materials.

“Then what about the third “Dating Technique” for matchmaking between girls and guys? Does it mean that you can date in the Academy?” Yue Yang thought that this was quite a good idea.

“Hush! This matter is not openly encouraged by our Academy, but we do not oppose it. If you can find a girlfriend, then our canteen can bestow you a Couple’s Meal and a Couple’s seat, so

that you guys can feed each other... Ah, I mean, our Academy will provide a more comfortable learning environment so that our students can learn in a happier environment. Of course, the Couple's Meal would cost additional fees, but it's not that expensive. The price is only about ten times more than a normal meal, but it is of high quality and is very rich in nutrients. Under normal circumstances, our canteen wouldn't present sands free as a gift..." The Goatee Elder was the most shameless fellow that Yue Yang had seen since he was transported to this world.

Yue Yang felt that he, himself, was already shameless enough.

But compared to this elder, he felt that he was still a little bit inferior.

Under the management of this shameless Vice Principal, no wonder this Ivy Academy that had a history of over 3000 years had fallen to this state.

In the end, as he completely could not endure it anymore, Yue Yang said something that even he couldn't believe had said, "Students come here to study. Why do they want to be that comfortable? If you are not going to manage anything, and even encourage all of your students to date each other every day, would they even have the will to study? If it is as what you have said, this place is practically a student's heaven!"

"Indeed, it is heaven, but it is a weak student's heaven." The Goatee Elder laughed out loud. "Titan, you must not have heard of my Academy's rumours, right?"

“What kind of rumours?” Yue Yang was curious. Could it be that this dilapidated Academy still have a good evaluation?

“We, the Ivy Academy, had a reputation as the Weak Students’ Heaven and Outstanding Students’ Hell!” The Goatee Elder guffawed, “And we are located just nice at the opposite of Shang Jin Academy.”

“No wonder you could not get any students...” Yue Yang finally understood.

Which parent wouldn’t think that their children were outstanding? Which parent would bear to send their children to hell?

Even if their children were not outstanding, they would also not send them to this Ivy Academy to get girls to marry their son to. If they wanted girls, they can find them at home, why would they send their children to this Academy? The purpose of sending them to an Academy was to hope that their children would become dragons with a bright future.

No matter how good the circumstances in the Ivy Academy were, they wouldn’t send their children here. Maybe students might enjoy this kind of living style, but parents would definitely not agree to it.

Sending their children here would just be a waste of their money.

“Our Academy’s objective is to make weak students weaker and outstanding students even more outstanding. When an outstanding student comes to our Academy, we would do our utmost to torment him, making his life a living hell... As for weak students, what big things can he do in the future? Might as well make them know their place, and let them enjoy a few years of happy Academy life.” With the Goatee Elder’s next few words, Yue Yang could only stare dumbstruck again.

This, when he said all those words, somehow it made a little bit of sense.

For a weak student with no future, rather than spending lots of efforts to nurture them and be resentful when they could not meet expectations, why not let them lead a happy academy life instead?

A lot of weak students don’t actually want to study at all, they only want to spend a few years of debauchery... Of course, parents wouldn’t support their children doing that. Perhaps, this was the reason that Ivy Academy had declined.

They had a good education concept and teaching attitude, but they were not welcomed by the public.

The Goatee Elder looked at Yue Yang’s astonished expression and revealed a smile as cunning as a fox, “Titan, do you want to have a little test?”

When he said that, Yue Yang immediately remembered the main

character on a story from the other world.

In one story from the other world, the main character would usually go to school. Getting girls was his primary objective, but he also wanted loyal and devoted brothers. It was a classic plot. The main character was queueing in an extremely long queue to test his strength and enter an academy. When it was finally his turn, as he touched a Crystal Ball to measure his strength, his life had immediately changed thoroughly...In normal situations, the crystal ball would emit a bright rainbow-coloured light and then burst with a light that showed the person's magic power. However, that was in a normal situation. As for the main character, how could he be the main character if he was not awesome enough? What happened next was the a surprised cry from the Magic Master that was in charge of the test: "His magic actually had all six, Wind, Fire, Water, Earth, Light and Darkness attributes? He is a genius that come once in thousands of years! Even if my magic was ten times more than my current state, I would still not be able to burst the crystal ball. I never thought that this brat's magic power would be able to burst it. This was so frightening!"

On the side, there were also some people that the main character met on the road, that would become his loyal brothers. They would always call him "Boss!" excitedly.

Everyone present was watching the main character as he laughed, his tiger-like physique shaking with mirth... What happened next was simple, girls throwing themselves to him was definitely a must in the plot. There was also a whole lot of people who called him Master. Wait, no, they called him Boss. That was also a must.

There was one time when the School Vice Principal, who would usually peek at girls bathing, rushed to the main character's side the moment he heard a news. When he saw the egg that the main character was cooking, he was extremely surprised and shouted: "This, this, could this be the legendary Phoenix Egg? Where did you find this from?" Of course, the main character would innocently scratch his head, and said something that would everyone present to fall to the ground, "I bought this from a random sale on the street for breakfast..."

This brat must have come from the Heaven Realm. Everyone would think that this brat must have been one of the Gods' illegitimate sons. Everyone had this suspicion on the main character.

Afterwards, there would obviously be more people kneeling down to shout out "Master!" Ah, no, they shouted out "Boss!".

"Alright now Student Titan, if you want to daydream about girls, do it at night. I know of a good place to peek at girls changing clothes, but there will be additional charges, 1 gold for one peek." The Goatee Elder suddenly broke Yue Yang's daydream. This old geezer must have been the most perverted, most shameless teacher that Yue Yang had ever met. However, he was also someone who understood a student's needs the best.

"Where's the crystal ball?" Yue Yang looked throughout the things in the room, but he didn't find the crystal ball that would usually be used on an entrance test.

He could let it go if there were no thousands of people watching,

no girls throwing themselves into his embrace, and no loyal brothers kneeling and calling him master, but how could there not even be a crystal ball?

The Goatee Elder shook both his head and hands, “I say, Student Titan, I think you are quite a bit mistaken. In Shang Jing Academy, they had indeed used crystal balls to test you, but here in Ivy Academy, our tests are a little bit more complicated, but it’s more thorough. Hence, we chose not to use that method.”

Yue Yang was confused. If they were not going to use crystal to test, then what would they use?

The Goatee Elder took out small, exquisite-looking scrolls from his robes. They were divided into seven different colours of red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo and purple. Every single one was different with the other.

“How are you going to measure my capabilities with these?” Yue Yang guessed that if he touched the right attribute of the scrolls, it would probably shine as an indication.

“Every single scroll is a small scaled Dimension Scroll that I created myself. Every single colour showed different level of difficulties. Red is level 1, the lowest, while purple is level 7, the hardest. When you open the scroll, you would be teleported into a space. There would be monsters inside the scroll waiting for you. Different difficulties would have different monsters. For example, if you chose this Red level 1 scroll, there will be 10 level 2 Storm Wolves inside. If you open the scroll, you would immediately be teleported in front of ten starved Storm Wolves. If you can kill

every single one of them and finish the battle within 10 minutes, furthermore, with no injuries on your body, you would escape the ‘weak student’ evaluation.” The Goatee Elder smiled with kindness and love, but why did Yue Yang see a devil’s smile instead?

“Aren’t you just seeking wealth and killing others?” Yue Yang sweated madly. He had never seen such a dangerous test before.

“You can also not take the test, but you will be evaluated as a weak student immediately. Then you would not have the chance to participate on our Academy’s “Hell’s Trip” Class. Of course, you can always find a girl and feed each other everyday on the Academy’s park.” The Goatee Elder smiled from ear to ear, looking as if he was not offended at all.

“How many people had passed this test before in the whole school?” Yue Yang couldn’t believe that there would be people who would be willing to take such an abnormal test.

“In our Ivy Academy, there are a total of 368 students, including teachers that are still on probation. Including you, there are 369 students in total. The frequency rate of our students taking the test is 10%, and there are 37 people willing to take the test. The success rate of those taking the test was close to 30%, 11 people had passed. Amongst them, four of them could be categorised as Outstanding Students. Student Titan, do you really not want to try the test? We give scholarships to outstanding students, you know. Furthermore, the beautiful School Principal will personally teach you herself. You don’t know, but when she goes to class, she likes to wear sexy clothes that have holes, like mesh nets. She looks so hot that she could practically set fire to our hearts! On the other

hand, weak students wouldn't get such a treatment." This was the first time that Yue Yang was a little bit persuaded by the Goatee Elder's speech. Weren't those simply Storm Wolves? He wouldn't even need to summon his beasts, he should be able to kill them just by using the Hui Jin Magic Blade.

"Alright. I'll try it, for the sake of the scholarship." Yue Yang would definitely not say that it was because he wanted to see the beautiful School Principal's sexy mesh-net clothes.

He would definitely not try to seek trouble. He pushed away the purple scroll that the Goatee Elder had handed over to him, and picked up a red scroll instead.

As he opened it, a pillar of golden light shone.

Yue Yang was immediately teleported. When he could finally be aware of his surroundings, he found himself in a dimension similar to the Battlefield of Certain Death. The dimensional space was not considered large, it looked to be around the size of two soccer fields.

In the middle of the space, there was a small hill. Seems like that was the Storm Wolves' lair.

Weren't they simply level 2 Storm Wolves?

Other than having quicker movement speed and agility, they were really nothing much. If he had not ordered Hui Tai Lang to

protect Yue Bing as she withdraw from her school, seemed like Hui Tai Lang alone would be enough to deal with these 10 Storm Wolves. Yue Yang was filled with confidence as he took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade and ran straight towards the small hill. However, he suddenly saw that there were two Magma Wyverns lying and rolling around on the concave space at the top of the small hill that was filled with lava. It looked like a Lava Crater. Yue Yang was immediately driven mad as he shouted out loud, “Damn that wretched old fox! Just wait until I come out, I will chop you up to 18 pieces!”

How could these be level 2 Storm Wolves? These are bronze-ranked level 6 Magma Wyverns, and there were even two of them.

Yue Yang’s first reaction was to take a teleportation scroll out. However, the teleportation scroll was useless in this place. That old cunning fox had not only known how to create teleportation scrolls, he also knew Dimension Interference Techniques. Students who were teleported to this place could only fight and would not be able to run...

Chapter 124 – Beating An Old Cunning Fox Violently

Yue Yang began to sweat profusely after seeing the two Magma Wyverns.

If it wasn't him but another student taking this test instead, such as Fatty Hai, he would probably be instantly killed. How could the others win a fight against two bronze-ranked level 6 Magma Wyverns?

And this was the easiest Level 1 Red Scroll. If he had opened the Level 7 Purple Scroll instead, wouldn't the beast waiting for him be the legendary Gold-Ranked Level 3 Three Headed Dragon? The more Yue Yang thought about it, the angrier he became. This cunning old fox had obviously done this intentionally. There had obviously been the Crystal Ball as a testing method, yet he just had to set up such an abnormal test. How many students had died in his hands?

No wonder no student had ever come to this Ivy Academy. Who would come here to die?

However, since he had already been teleported here and encountered these Magma Wyverns, Yue Yang would still kill them off. Fighting the 2 bronze-ranked level 6 beasts wouldn't be too difficult for him, furthermore, Magma Wyverns' magic cores were known to be good quality magic cores with fire attribute. If he could use it as the core for a puppet with fire attribute, it would become a very good core.

The Flame Lord's Molten Core in his Hui Jin Magic Blade might also need these kind of material to level up. If his Hui Jin Magic Blade could level up and become a platinum-ranked weapon, that would be really awesome.

There was also the gold-ranked little Praying Mantis. When it emerged after finishing its incubation period, it might need a dragon's magic core to advance...

“Do you think you are cool?”

When Yue Yang saw the Magma Wyvern charging towards him, he didn't retreat, but charged forward towards it instead, his Magic Blade cutting through the air as he slashed it down.

He wasn't like Fatty Hai, that kind of bum who only ate and waited to die. Let alone bronze-ranked level 6, he had even defeated much stronger monsters before. Don't think that you can bully others however you wish to just with a bronze-ranked level 6 beast; you have to see what kind of person it was first. If it was someone else, he would probably be helpless in the face of the Magma Wyverns, whose bodies were engulfed in a fiery flame. But Yue Yang, who had already fought against the Flame Lord, knew these flame beasts' weaknesses.

Although flame beasts were extremely powerful, they were extremely afraid of water.

If he had a Whale beast that could spurt water, even if they were

normal-ranked, as long as there wasn't much of a difference between their levels, the Magma Wyvern would probably not be able to defeat it at all.

The second weakness was the dragon core in its head.

Magma Wyvern's body surface was protected by high temperature flames, but it didn't try to strengthen its head and protect it. Especially the magic core in its forehead; due to absorbing fire for a long time, it had accumulated excessive energy, causing its forehead to protrude, forming a huge bulge on its head.

This was like giving its enemies an indication on where to attack.

Yue Yang's figure leapt high up into the air, his Magic Blade aiming straight towards that extremely obvious bulge.

At first, he thought that this move would definitely cause a grave injury. Who would have known that the Magma Wyvern would actually defend itself. It lowered its body and spread its wings, then covered its head with its wings.

Yue Yang's Magic Blade cut through the two Wings like iron cutting through mud. The Magma Wyvern lost its support in the sky and its whole body fell heavily onto the ground, splashing the whole place with lava.

Yue Yang made a turn in the air and dodged the other Magma Wyvern's charging attack agilely. He prepared to give the heavily

injured Magma Wyvern that had fallen onto the ground another heavy slash.

Who would have known that the Magma Wyvern, whose two wings were injured and had already fallen to the ground, would suddenly strangely raise its wings and flap them in the air. It then charged towards Yue Yang who was also charging towards it in mid-air. Yue Yang dodged it, but it continued to stubbornly follow him, trying to chomp at Yue Yang repeatedly. Yue Yang, who had fallen to the ground kept dodging it left and right, was flustered for a second.

How did it turn out like this?

Didn't he undoubtedly injured both of its wings just now? How could it recover to its original state in just a moment, and not suffer even a single injury?

If it wasn't for the fact that he was being chased, Yue Yang would really have liked to search through his Beast Encyclopedia and check up on the skills and stats of this Magma Wyvern. How could it be immune to physical weapon attacks?

“Did you think you are cool? Look at My (oresama) unique skill!” Seeing that the giant, ugly dragon's head that burned as hot as the sun charged towards him with its mouth open wide, Yue Yang agilely leapt. His body flipped in the air as he dodged the sharp fangs. He joined both of his forefingers like a sword and pointed from afar. Invisible Sword Qi immediately shot out, hitting the Flying Dragon straight on that bulging part of its forehead.

Hong!

The Magma Wyvern received a huge blow from the Innate invisible Sword Qi's attack.

It cried out miserably as it rolled on the ground, leaving a tiny stream of blood-like lava flowing from its forehead. Yue Yang felt really self-satisfied in his heart. Wasn't he simply awesome? No matter how powerful that wyvern was, how could it be more powerful than his Innate Invisible Sword Qi? However, the next development by the Magma Wyvern left him in a daze again.

That injured Magma Wyvern staggered along as it threw itself into the Lava Pond.

The dragon, who was originally half dead, seemed to roll around on the Lava Pond. Its injuries seemed to improve by a whole lot with every roll it made. Before a minute had even passed, it crawled out again, its whole body having recovered to its former glory. Shaking off the lava on its body, it flapped its wings again and flew into the air.

"It still had this method?" When Yue Yang used his Level 3 [Divine Vision], he could see that the Magma Wyvern's injury wasn't actually fully healed. It only looked like it had recovered on the outside, but it was probably scared to death by his attack. For a warrior who did not have an Innate Sword Qi, the Lava Pond at the concave top of the hill meant that these two Magma Wyverns would never be defeated. This advantageous topography was

indeed the nightmare of all warriors' battles. Yue Yang subconsciously wiped off his sweat, "Luckily the one I'm facing is not two gold-ranked level 7 Giant Magma Dragons. It's only two bronze-ranked level 6 Magma Wyverns... Alright, it's time to end this game."

He summoned out the Bloody Queen and ordered her to charge towards the sky in order to pressure the two Magma Wyverns, that were spiralling in the air and refusing to land, with her Golden King Beast's presence.

Although the two Magma Wyverns spiralling in the sky was higher levelled than the level 3 Bloody Queen, the Bloody Queen was still a Golden King Beast. The moment she flew towards them, the two Magma Wyverns immediately flew lower, not daring to face up against her.

The wyvern on the left who suffered a grave injury from Yue Yang's Sword Qi was moving a little slower.

The sharp Bloody Queen had noticed this and immediately chased after it.

The gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger in her hands was the nemesis of all dragon-type and undead dragon-type beasts.

Let alone dragon-type, even if a Golden King Beast had received an attack from this dagger, including the Bloody Queen herself whose heart had been pierced by the dagger, would also be unable to endure it.

The Magma Wyvern on the left was easily overtaken by the Bloody Queen whose speed was three times faster than itself. It looked unresigned as it turned its head and tried to chomp at the Bloody Queen. The Bloody Queen flew magnificently and avoided the bite just in time. The Dragon Slaying Dagger in her hands suddenly plunged deep into the Magma Wyvern's bulging forehead, where its magic core resided. Immediately, the Magma Wyvern wailed miserably as it crashed onto the ground with a loud boom, rolling in pain and creating waves of lava.

Seeing its mate suffering a huge injury, the other Magma Wyvern hurriedly flew over to help.

The Bloody Queen screeched loudly, causing the other Magma Wyvern, who was flying over, wanting to help its mate, to suffer an attack that felt like it had been struck by lightning. It received a shock and was disoriented, causing it to immediately fall to the ground.

Why would Yue Yang hold back against either of them? On the ground, he first took out the giant hammer that the Gold-armoured Puppet had used from his Lich Ring. Swinging it around, he pounded it ruthlessly on the Magma Wyvern's head. When the other dragon had finally fallen, he took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade and jumped up high the moment when the Magma Wyvern heavily crashed down into the ground. He jumped with the speed of lightning as he put his hands together before plunging it down heavily towards the Magma Wyvern's head.

A minute later, the Magma Wyvern had finally died, this time for

certain. The battle had finished.

On the other side, the Bloody Queen who had secretly absorbed the Magma Wyvern's magic core's power suddenly shone with a raging fire-like light all over her body.

Her golden wings were spread wide, the feathers slowly ignited on fire one by one, turning into a pair of wings that was unceasingly engulfed in raging flames.

However, her blood red hair did not ignite, instead, it turned even more brightly coloured, beautiful beyond comparison. The Bloody Queen who was on the verge of levelling up had finally levelled up after endlessly absorbing dragon magic cores from all the battles. She had levelled up from a gold-ranked Level 3 to a gold-ranked level 4.

She flapped her golden, fiery wings. Her movement speed had become much faster than before.

Yue Yang almost couldn't see her figure clearly.

After the Bloody Queen and Yue Yang's Phantom Shadow merged previously, although she had dropped to gold-ranked level 3, when she levelled up again, her battle power had become so much more powerful. Furthermore, her movement speed had also become faster. Although she was just a gold-ranked level 4 right now, her strength was already on par with her previous gold-ranked level 5's strength.

She was so happy that she flew around in the sky, cheering and shouting excitedly non-stop.

Yue Yang had actually wanted to catch her and spank her butt for eating a dragon's core without asking for her master's permission. This problem must not be allowed to continue.

However, seeing her overjoyed look, he felt a little bad if he spoiled her fun.

Forget it, she was his girl anyway. She ate it in order to serve him better... When Yue Yang saw the Bloody Queen's enticing, snow-white body, his wolfy heart was moved. If Yi Nan didn't come quickly to resolve his 'happy sex life' problem, he wouldn't be able to endure it anymore. Must he really have that kind of human-beast intercourse? Thinking about it, although this Bloody Queen was a Golden King Beast, she was obviously a beauty. She didn't look like a beast, she was just a beauty with an extra pair of wings. Why couldn't he do her?

Yue Yang opened his Silver Grimoire and saw that she had indeed risen to gold-rank level 4. She even had a new [Flame Whip] ability.

The weirdest thing was that Yue Yang found that he, himself, could also use this [Flame Whip] when the Bloody Queen was summoned. It happened to be the exact opposite of Xiao Wen Li's [Binding Chains]. However, compared to the [Binding Chains] Inherent skill, the [Flame Whip]'s power wouldn't even be worth mentioning. [Flame Whip] might have some use when used against normal warriors or beasts, but when facing a strong warrior or

beast, it would only be equivalent to scratching an itchy spot on their bodies.

[Binding Chains] was different. When he fought against that Demon King Ha Xin in White Stone City, or when he fought against Lich Suo Ge a few days ago, he had benefited greatly from the [Binding Chains] skill.

More importantly, Xiao Wen Li's [Binding Chains] Inherent Skill could still level up further. If not for such a powerful skill, Lich Suo Ge wouldn't be defeated so miserably under Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li's combo attack.

Suddenly, on Yue Yang's body, a pillar of light appeared.

It was small at first, but it quickly became wider.

When Yue Yang moved his body, the pillar of light also followed him. Seems like this was the old cunning fox's teleportation magic that would activate after ten minutes were up.

Yue Yang hurriedly stuffed the Magma Wyvern's dragon's core that he had dug out into his Lich Ring. He also forced the two Magma Wyvern's bodies into it, and recalled the Bloody Queen back to his grimoire. Not even a second later, the teleportation pillar ascended straight to the sky, looking like an extremely bright pillar of white light.

After only about ten seconds, Yue Yang had already been

teleported back to right in front the old cunning fox again.

Without waiting for the old cunning fox to speak, Yue Yang had immediately threw him a punch, sending his old, fragile and thin body flying, “You can add to your records that I’m the first student who enrolled here to beat up this Vice Principal black and blue!”

Yue Yang charged over towards the old cunning fox who was preparing to crawl up and kicked and punched him, beating him up violently. He even raised a big chunk of stone, thinking of smashing this old geezer into a pulp. He didn’t expect that when he raised his head, there were at least 50-60 people staring at him with their mouths and eyes opened wide, dumbstruck. Many of them had even dropped their weapons, their mouths gaping open so wide you could stuff a hippopotamus inside.

Amongst the people, Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others suddenly jumped up. Fatty Hai quickly gave Yue Yang a bear hug excitedly, while Ye Kong stealthily pried the big chunk of stone from Yue Yang’s hands away and threw it far away.

“Why did you guys come here?” Yue Yang was confused. Weren’t these people celebrating the Lunar New Year? How did they come even earlier than him?

“There’s not much fun at home. It’s more meaningful to stay in the Academy. I have waited for you for two days... Ah, Vice Principal, please don’t be angry. My little brother is still not very sensible. As his boss, I will scold him properly later. I guarantee he wouldn’t be so quick to use violence in the future. Let’s run away quickly now, this old fellow seems like he’s going to explode soon.”

Seeing that the old cunning fox's nose had even been displaced by Yue Yang's punches and that he was seething and fuming with anger to the point of steam was emitting from his ears, Fatty Hai was so frightened that he abandoned Yue Yang disloyally and immediately started running away.

“When Yue Bing arrives, we can go to the Wild Horse Plains to have a ride. This Academy is quite fun and is also very flexible and free. But at the same time, you can also learn a lot of things.” As they ran, Ye Kong introduced the Ivy Academy to Yue Yang.

“Really? Can you even learn anything from this hellhole of an Academy?” Yue Yang was confused. Ye Kong would probably not lie to him.

“Titan, you son of a bitch, you dared to beat me? If I don't pay it back to you a hundred times greater, I wouldn't be satisfied!” The old cunning fox couldn't catch up to Yue Yang, so he could only shout angrily towards his back in anger. Seeing that Yue Yang had ignored him, he turned around and warned all the onlooking teachers and students, “Everyone is prohibited to talk about this matter to anyone. You must thoroughly erase this from your memories. If I ever hear anyone talking about how I am the first Vice Principal in our school's three thousand years' history to be beaten up by a student who had just enrolled, I will execute an unimaginable bodily punishment to the whole school. I will make everyone go through the school's Hell Trial!”

“...” When the crowd heard this, they were speechless. This fellow was so tyrannical, seemed like he would need to be beaten up again sooner or later.

Chapter 125 – The Panda Girl, Niu Niu

The Ivy Academy's domain was very large. It was at least ten times bigger than what Yue Yang had imagined.

Aside from the different kinds of buildings, there was even a luxuriously small green hill and a natural lake. Ye Kong said that under the lake, there was even a legendary Mythical Beast, Ten Thousand Year Old Turtle, who was regarded as the Empire's guardian by the Da Xia Empire. Of course, this Empire's Guardian Beast did not know how to fight at all, it was different from the usual beasts. It was only long-lived and was regarded by many as a symbol of luck, hence its title as the Empire's Guardian Beast.

In addition to the long corridor and pavilion above the lake's surface, there were two boats floating side by side.

It was originally used to provide students with a place to practice summoning water-type beasts. However, right now, the place was tyrannically snatched by the girls as a place to practice their singing and dancing.

On the green shores of the lake, there were a few pavilions. Interesting and appealing antique buildings could be seen everywhere. Together with the surrounding lush green sceneries, the scene was extremely graceful and beautiful, warming the hearts of those who saw it.

There were many villas halfway above the mountain, like stars scattered in the sky. Right in the middle, there was a gigantic

building.

“Girls live in villas while we live in the high-rise dorm. The gigantic building in the middle is the shared canteen and bathroom. Both girls and guys will bathe in one big pond, separated by a divider in the middle. Girls can go over the other side to bathe with wolves, but wolves couldn’t go over to the girl’s side as they like, unless they defeat the Four Demoness Guardians. We have paid more to rent a large apartment room. Its conditions are extremely good. Come, this way.” Ye Kong continued to introduce the Academy’s different kinds of circumstances along the way to Yue Yang.

“I think if we lived too high up, it would be difficult to go up and down, however, we would be able to survey the movements in the girl’s villas from an elevated position. So it wouldn’t be that bad.” Fatty Hai explained.

“Is this the student’s dorm?” Yue Yang was blown away when he walked inside. Aren’t the circumstances in this school too good to be true?

If Ye Kong didn’t say, Yue Yang wouldn’t have imagined that this place that had a splendorous and magnificent interior decoration befitting of a palace was the student dorm. Yue Yang had never gone to the palace before, but he felt that Ivy Academy’s dorms were fit for even prince or princesses to live in.

The Ivy Academy’s students not only lived in such a comfortable place, there was also such a nice dating environment. Would they even have the motivation to study? Yue Yang didn’t dare to think

about this question... He totally lost to the Ivy Academy. There were only a little over three hundred students, yet they had built a school compound as large as this. Didn't they think that this was too extravagant and wasteful? Fatty Hai said that although Ivy Academy was trash, the school compound was just a little smaller than Shang Jing Academy.

Shang Jing Academy on the opposite side had over ten thousand students, but it did not feel crowded at all.

Ivy Academy only had 300 people, it was simply empty as if there wasn't any people at all.

Yue Yang couldn't imagine. In Shang Jing, where land prices were extremely expensive, how could they allow such an empty academy to exist?

Fortunately there wasn't any real estate company in the Soaring Dragon Continent. Otherwise, Yue Yang reckoned that Ivy Academy would already be selflessly torn down and moved to another place.

When Yue Yang went into the student dormitory, the Vice Principal, that old cunning fox, appeared in front of a simple and unadorned little skeleton behind them. As he couldn't teach Yue Yang a lesson, he was gripping his clothes tightly in one bunch, and worked hard to force a smile on his face that had been beaten violently by Yue Yang. Only after fixing his smile, did he push the door open and enter. He walked up the stairs and arrived at a room on the third floor. Lightly knocking on the wooden door, he said in a soft and gentle tone, "My darling daughter, can dad come in?"

“During working hours, please call me Principal.” a graceful, sweet-sounding voice carrying a tinge of coldness resounded from within.

“Isn’t it the same? You are the Principal, and you are also my daughter...” The old cunning fox seemed to be used to his darling daughter’s cold, thousand-miles-distant tone and entered the room giggling all the while.

“Why are you here? Why did you get beaten up so much?” The beautiful white-robed lady who was working hard inside was just like a white orchid, clean and prideful, her long, black hair hung down like a waterfall and covered her shoulders, setting a strong contrast with her snow-white, pale hands. It turned out that the all-smiling old cunning fox turned into a whole new person in front of her. In that moment, he was the most loving parent in the whole world. The white-robed lady who had been working all this while finally stopped as she raised her head, revealing her sparkling eyes that was hidden from beneath her lovely bangs. She looked at the old cunning fox, and her small face, that looked fragile and capable of causing a downfall of a kingdom, revealed a tinge of surprise as she asked, “What’s wrong?”

“Nothing’s wrong. I was just beaten up by an interesting new student... No, I mean, I just didn’t know he would beat me, and carelessly got hit. Otherwise, I would have beaten him up black and blue,” the old cunning fox chuckled slowly, “This new student is really interesting. He is extremely strong, but his basic foundation knowledge is trashy as hell. He didn’t even know that the stronger the abilities of the person taking it, the harder the difficulty of the Challenge Scroll. Seeing him being such a fool, I

had fooled him terribly... Hahaha, whenever I remember his foolish expression, I really want to laugh out loud. But he is really strong. The two Magma Wyverns that I have painstakingly raised was killed by him in just ten minutes. It's a pity that I am not that proficient in Dimensional Techniques and wasn't able to watch his battle. Otherwise, I could have seen how this brat had found a way to kill my Magma Wyverns."

"He used physical techniques to kill it." The white-robed lady replied and then went back to immerse herself in her work again, continuing to write something.

"How do you know?" The old cunning fox was surprised.

"That new student that had beaten you up violently the moment he enrolled is definitely the Third Young Master of the Yue Clan. I heard of him from Qian Qian before. For the sake of getting back his Fourth Mother's dignity, that brat had used brute force to charge through the Yue Clan Village and killed through the Yue Clan Castle. If it wasn't for Marshall Yue Hai appearing just in time to stop him, he would probably killed the Yue Clan until their blood flowed like a river. Since you have been researching on Dimensional Scrolls all the time, of course you wouldn't know about him." The white-robed lady talked as if she was extremely familiar with Yue Yang.

"No wonder, I thought that brat looked a little familiar. Turns out he was Yue Qiu's son." the old cunning fox had a revelation.

"He is extremely strong. Previously at the Eagle's Cry Valley, he accompanied Qian Qian and defeated a Necromancer alone... Qian

Qian guessed that that brat definitely had not studied at all when he was all cooped up in his house; he was actually practicing his martial art skills. That's why his common sense was so bad and beyond salvation. If there was a person in this world that couldn't differentiate between Three-leaved Butterfly and Lucky Three-leaved Clover, it is definitely him. Don't busy yourself throwing him into the Demon Abyss to train, you should first cram basic knowledge into his brain. If you have no further problems, Vice Principal, you can go now." The white-robed lady was also cold towards her father. She treated him distantly as she told him to leave.

"Do you think that little pervert would listen to this old bone teaching him? I was already beaten up on the first day, if I have to personally teach him in the future, I would probably be beaten to death sooner or later." the old cunning fox shook his head as he laughed loudly.

"I am still thinking about this Seal right now, so I have no time for this. Go and look for Sister Ye." the white-robed lady returned to the text on the paper in front of her, ignoring the old cunning fox.

"If you ask that girl to teach a student, then the world would be thrown into chaos..." The old cunning fox sighed.

Ye Kong and the Li Brothers were busy buying a few things for Yue Yang while Fatty Hai was asking a cook, who was said to come from the Imperial Kitchen to make extra dishes for celebration. The purpose of this celebration was not only to welcome Yue Yang, it was also to welcome Yue Bing, who was transferring school.

Otherwise, he wouldn't be so polite and extravagant.

Yue Yang didn't have anything to do while waiting. Seeing that Ye Kong and the others wouldn't return very quickly, he decided to go for a walk and breathe the fresh air.

This Academy was indeed not bad, the only weakness was that there were too few people.

There were no human sounds, only the sounds of the birds and insects. It was nice that it was peaceful and quiet, but the place simply lacked a vitality that only humans could have.

“Forget it, anyway, I came here to become a good student and to study,” Yue Yang also thought that it was good like this. With peace and quiet, he could study peacefully and cram all the basic knowledge he needed to know quickly then go to the Tong Tian Tower to practice.

Just as he was preparing to become a good student, suddenly, he found an intoxicating, mature big sis wearing skin-tight, red-hot clothes walking over to him. Her mature and sexy body swayed as she walked. Her footsteps were a little like a cat on anaesthetic, looking like she was about to fall at anytime. Yue Yang was dumbstruck, could it be that this big sis was the Ivy Academy's Principal?

Such a drunken cat, Yue Yang guessed that she wouldn't know who did it if he carried her back to the dorm and did her over a hundred times.

If not for having level 3 [Divine Vision] and seeing that there was an extremely powerful beast asleep inside this Drunken Cat Big Sis, quietly protecting her, Yue Yang would have really gone through with his perverted impulse.

“Ah, there’s a handsome boy.” That Drunken Cat Big Sis accidentally saw Yue Yang.

Not waiting for Yue Yang to react, she moved her body even faster than lightning. Her figure blurred and in just a blink of an eye, she had already appeared in front of Yue Yang, shocking him, who was extremely confident in his own agility. Yue Yang stared dumbstruck, he couldn’t believe the reality that had happened right before his eyes. The Drunken Cat Big Sis was covered with a overpowering foul stench of alcohol. As she moved her lovable, rosy face closer to Yue Yang, her big, drunken, round eyes watched Yue Yang intently, “You looked handsome, but you are too young, you are still a kid... Hey, kid, have you kissed yet? Do you want this big sister to teach you?”

Yue Yang immediately nodded when he heard her.

Drunken Cat Onessan revealed a smile, “Good boy, although you are a little young, you are still handsome, so I can’t let you off. Close your eyes, let this sister teach you some kissing skills.”

She was really going to kiss him?

Yue Yang had decided to spend his life waiting upon a cougar... no, he meant waiting upon a cat. He would let this Drunken Cat Big Sis push him down.

Just as the Drunken Cat Big Sis was about to kiss him, a golden light suddenly shone from within her body. A black and white coloured beast suddenly jumped out and sent Yue Yang, who was about to be pushed down, flying away with a punch. Just as the beast left her body, the Drunken Cat Big Sis could not endure her drunken state anymore and fell to the ground.

“My God, a level 5 gold-ranked Panda Girl” When Yue Yang turned around as he fell to the ground, he saw the beast and felt like his head was going to explode.

This humanoid beast that had punched Yue yang was the powerful beast that was sleeping inside the Drunken Cat Big Sis. Her humanoid figure was a little plump, and the beautiful girl had an extremely godly aura around her. Her head was decorated with small braids, and there were 2 loveable dimples on her round face. She had a big pair of eyes, a small nose and a mouth full of little, white teeth. Her chubby fists were arranged in a martial art pose, as she assumed a stance of ‘I’ll-beat-you-up-again-if-you-keep-looking’ towards Yue Yang.

She wore a set of black and white coloured, oddly shaped clothes on her body.

On her forehead, there was a calligraphy of the letter “King”. She was obviously a Panda Girl, but she acted as if she was a tiger. Yue Yang almost couldn’t contain his laughter when he looked at her.

“Be more serious. You are not allowed to laugh, otherwise I’ll be really angry. And I will beat you up if I’m angry.” This Panda Girl could even talk.

“Come here, I’ll give you some sweets,” Yue Yang tried to use this move, it was his undefeatable move.

“It’s so sweet!” This Panda Girl was even easier to handle than that small mischievous girl Yue Shuang. She had no resistance against candies. However, when she saw the smile on Yue Yang’s face, she immediately took out the sweet inside her mouth and reluctantly returned it to Yue Yang, “Don’t even think of bribing me, Niu Niu would never be tempted by her enemies,” Saying this, the adorable Panda Girl looked like she was on the verge of tears. It seemed like she was really afraid that Yue Yang would take the candy back. She looked at him with her tearful eyes.

Yue Yang had never before seen such a contradicting expression in his life. It was obvious that she wanted to eat the candy, but she had insisted on returning it to him. Tears had bubbled up in her eyes, looking as if they were about to fall down.

It was the first time in his life that Yue Yang felt guilty.

It was not right to bully small kids... Yue Yang revealed a bright smile. Since he wouldn’t bully small kids, he’d better bully that big sis instead. He reached his hand out towards the Panda Girl and patted her head a few times, then he spoke with a wolf-pretending-to-be-grandmother’s soft and gentle tone, “Good Niu Niu, big

brother is not a bad person. Big brother is good friends with that big sister over there. Big sister has gotten drunk, and brother was just about to carry her back and push her down-ah, I mean, carry her back to sober her up.”

“Really?” When the Panda Girl Niu Niu heard it, she happily stuffed the candy back into her mouth, eating it elatedly. However, not two seconds later, she started to doubt again, “Is big brother really mom’s friend? Why doesn’t Niu Niu recognise you at all? That’s not right. You are a bad guy. I’ll return this candy to you.”

She took out the half-eaten candy from her mouth with her small hands again, and insisted on returning it to Yue Yang.

Her adorable face looked like she was on the verge of crying again.

Chapter 126 – Death Class

When Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers came back, they were shocked speechless as they found a beautiful sleeping onnesan on Yue Yang's bed.

In front of a bed, there was even a little panda girl, shaking her little feet while eating her sweets happily.

“What's going on?” Ye Kong stared blankly at this scene. Had Yue Yang won over this onnesan already? This speed was practically a miracle!

“I picked her up from the roadside.” Yue Yang explained in an indifferent tone.

“Brother, which road did you pick her up from?” Hearing Fatty Hai's tone, he seemed to also want to pick one up too.

“Just downstairs.” Yue Yang spoke a rare sentence of truth.

“I don't want to live on this planet anymore, I want to commit suicide...” Fatty Hai's tears streamed down his face. He banged his head hard on the wall. He felt that he had wasted his two years in school. Over those two years, he had never managed to pick up a stray loli on the roadside. However, this fellow actually had such an amazing luck. Within a single day of coming here, he had picked up two beautiful girls, one onnesan and one loli.

Comparing himself to others would only make him angry.

Fatty Hai felt that if he stayed longer with this guy, even if he did not die from anger, he would die from tears.

Moreover, it was the kind of death where one would die of dehydration by crying too much... This fellow's luck was so great that it made other people feel inferior. Could it be that he was the bastard child of Lady Luck? How could all of the world's luck converge to him? Fatty Hai really wanted to arrange three big bowls of vinegar in front of him and then drink them all down in one gulp. Perhaps if he did that then his heart wouldn't be so sour right now, and he would feel a little better.

The little panda girl sucked her finger cutely, and batted her eyelids while looking at Fatty Hai. Suddenly, she said a remarkable sentence. "Big brother, this fatty is an idiot."

"Ah, she can talk?" Ye Kong was going to faint, could this be another beast that could talk?

"I'm not an idiot. Let me tell you, I'm exceptionally smart. I could easily count to hundred when I was 8, and I could write my own name when I was 9. After I was 10, I never peed in my bed again. How is it? Am I not amazing? Little girl, my name is Hai Da Fu, but everyone calls me Master Hai. I'm your big brother's boss after all, you know! Come, come, I'll give you candy to eat too!" Coincidentally, Hai Da Fu also had a packet of malt candy. This was what he had bought specially to win Yue Bing over.

The little panda girl, Niu Niu, looked at the [amber](#)-like malt candy and was slightly fascinated.

But in the end, she shook her head. “Mom says that I can’t eat things that was given by idiots, otherwise I will be infected with their idiocy. I don’t want to become an idiot!”

Fatty Hai fell onto the ground with a thud.

This blow was far too great.

If not for the Li Brothers stopping him, he would have jumped to his death. Ye Kong was laughing until his tears were flowing. He continuously praised the girl, giving her a big thumbs up. “Right, you are definitely right, idiocy is contagious!”

The little panda girl instantly revealed an extremely scared expression. Seems like she was really scared that Fatty Hai’s idiocy would infect her.

Yue Yang hurriedly soothed her who was about to cry. “This Big Brother Ye Kong is just teasing you. Don’t worry, idiocy isn’t contagious. Niu Niu, don’t be afraid, have some candy.”

Towards the malt candy that Yue Yang gave, the little girl took it impatiently, and happily put it inside her mouth. After eating it for a while, she tilted her head again, and asked doubtfully, “Is idiocy really not contagious?”

Fatty Hai cried. “Wahh...Even if it’s contagious, I’m not an idiot... I don’t want to live anymore!”

From the door, the old cunning fox had brought Yue Bing in. He smiled, “Students, what are you discussing about? It’s so lively in here! Ah, Niu Niu, why are you here?” The little panda girl instantly jumped from the bed, assuming an attacking pose, baring her small white teeth and warning him, “Ero-uncle, stay away from my mother! Perverted uncles like you who like to peek at other people changing clothes are the kind of people I hate the most!”

Everyone looked at the old cunning fox as if they were seeing the most perverted madman in the world.

The old cunning fox was extremely embarrassed. Thankfully, he had an equally thick skin. Otherwise, he would probably be hugging Fatty Hai as they bawled together.

“Aha, that was actually a misunderstanding. How could an upright person like me do that kind of despicable and shameless acts? Virtuous people like me will even be cautious with what they say normally. Not to mention peeking, even when we are talking about doing our daily chores, we are all extremely careful with our actions so that we could act as role models for the students!” Before the old cunning fox’s words had even finished, Yue Yang had already taken out a coloured ero book from the old cunning fox’s robes.

“Virtuous Vice Principal, would it be convenient for you to explain what’s going on with this?” Yue Yang honestly asked.

“This is what I confiscated from a student!” The old cunning fox’s reaction was fast, and his skin was extremely thick. His face did not change when he was lying.

“Then what about this girl’s bra?” Yue Yang took out a pink female bra from the old cunning fox’s sleeve again.

“A strong wind blew it to the ground. I was just about to give it back to the person who lost it!” The old cunning fox’s reaction was extremely natural. His face had the look of an upright person, as if it was an extremely heavy sin for someone to have doubted his character.

“Vice Principal truly is the role model for us students! Amazing!” Yue Yang gave the old cunning fox a thumbs up. The old cunning fox immediately shook his head and waved his hands, saying, “That’s only in name. As a role model, I have always disagreed with the societal corruption. It is so painful for me to watch the younger generation become even more corrupted with time. It is really a pity that my abilities are limited and I can’t do much more to change this fact. I can only act as a role model and hope that I can influence more people. Today, aside from showing Yue Bing around, I would also like to inform you, student Titan, that due to your exceptional performance, you have been successfully chosen as one of the members of the “Hell’s Trip”, a deathly class. I hope that you will enjoy the process of your education!”

“Doesn’t this count as an abuse of power and publicly declaring your revenge on me?” Yue Yang smiled brilliantly and questioned him.

“Actually, it was my heartfelt desire to want to help you cultivate. If you’re trash like Fatty Hai, I wouldn’t care whether you lived or died.” The old cunning fox smiled wholeheartedly as before.

“I’m trash?” Fatty Hai was angry.

“No, my bad. You’re not trash.” As the old cunning fox said this, Fatty Hai’s expression turned a bit better. He did not expect that the old cunning fox’s next sentence would cause him to faint over from anger. This was because he had said, “You’re not trash. How could you be trash? Even trash is a hundred times stronger than you. You’re basically the remnants of the worst trash. If I were your instructor, I would have long thrown you into the Demon Abyss and fed you to the Demon Insects already.”

“You damned old sex maniac, it was you who told us to enjoy our lives in comfort and do nothing!” Fatty Hai was as angry as a mad dog. He had almost wanted to bite the old cunning fox to death.

“I’m telling you to go and die, why aren’t you doing so yet?” The old cunning fox was indifferent to him and shrugged. “If you want to prove that you aren’t trash, then attend the hell class along with student Titan and participate in this year’s Hell’s Trip. How about it? Do you have the guts to do this, trash of trash? Forget it, I don’t want to speak with a coward. Please stay away from me.”

“You damned old sex maniac. Isn’t it just a hell class? Where would there be anything I wouldn’t dare to participate in?” Fatty

Hai was about to go crazy with anger already.

“I hope you won’t become a Demon Worm shit and continue to exist in this world...” After the old cunning fox had finished speaking, he put up a kind smile and rushed towards Yue Bing, saying, “Student Yue Bing, from tomorrow onwards, you may attend the lessons conducted by Grandma Wu Teng. She is a reputable plant-type Grandmaster. I have specially invited this old folk to tutor such a special student like you, you have to do your best!”

“But... Yes, I will do my best!” Yue Bing had actually hoped to train alongside Yue Yang instead.

“They’re trash, it’s not a pity for a hundred of them to die. You’re a genius, so you can’t die before you grow to your utmost potential. You must definitely work hard and become a strong Ranker. Don’t disappoint everyone’s expectations of you!” The old cunning fox’s words made Ye Kong and the others sweat profusely. How could the treatment of the different sexes be so different?

The whole Soaring Dragon Continent was a patriarchal society. However, this Ivy Academy was the exact opposite and valued women over men.

They really did not know whether they should laugh or cry attending this kind of school.

Although Yue Yang furrowed his eyebrows, he felt that this old cunning fox was actually not valuing women over men, but rather

teaching in line with the student's ability. For example, he had found the best tutor for the obedient Yue Bing. As long as she was taught with great care, she would succeed; As for Fatty Hai who constantly craved for enjoyment as well as Ye Kong and the others with extremely high male ego, he had decided to employ extreme methods against them instead. The harsher the old cunning fox's words, the more he could agitate Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others' manly self-esteem.

This Ivy Academy was actually not as trashy as what normal people thought it was.

As for this old cunning fox who seemed lecherous on the surface, using his Level 3 [Divine Vision], Yue Yang found out that he still could not analyse the old cunning fox's true strength.

There were only two people out of all the male rankers that Yue Yang had ever met where he could not analyse them with [Divine Vision]. The first was the Assassin's Guild hempen-clothed elder, and the other was the old cunning fox in front of him... Aside from those two, it would be the Da Xia Empire's emperor Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and rankers like them who most people knew about. Yue Yang could still see a part of those people's strength, unlike the hempen-clothed elder and the old cunning fox where he could not even analyse their strength at all.

"Niu Niu, Grandfather is going off now. When your mom wakes up, tell her to go find Big Sister Principal." The old cunning fox straightened his sleeves. A white light flashed from his body and he disappeared from his position.

“...” Ye Kong and the others may not have been aware of anything, but Yue Yang was shocked in his heart.

The teleportation speed was too fast!

It was even faster than the teleportation balls of the demon abyss.

This old man who looked like a lecher on the surface had actually managed to grasp such a powerful teleportation technique?

Ivy Academy shouldn't have been able to fight neck and neck with Shang Jing Academy for three thousand years. It seemed like getting into the Hell's Trip of the hell class was some kind of random luck? Perhaps this class would be very interesting. As Yue Yang thought about this, his lips suddenly curled into a grin.

Afterwards, the sister who woke up from her drunken stupor was a completely different person.

When she woke up, she used her terrifying brute strength and extreme power to beat everyone she saw up. Yue Yang just happened to not be present there. He was learning some basic knowledge from the beast encyclopedia with Yue Bing. When he had come back, he found that all the guys in the building had been hit until they were lying on the ground. There were students who were groaning from their injuries everywhere. Fatty Hai was even beat up until he became a pighead whose eyes could not be seen.

Ye Kong, who was hit until he was hanging from a clothes rack in the corridor, gave Yue Yang a piece of paper.

This was not the drunken cat sister's paper, but rather something that the little panda girl Niu Niu gave him. There was a cute panda paw stamp on it.

She could not write, but she did not forget to leave behind a little paw stamp for Yue Yang, this elder brother... As Yue Yang looked at it, he wanted to laugh and cry at the same time. Was his charm only effective towards little lolis?

Before Yue Yang had the time to fix the damage done to his room, suddenly a voice charged with killing intent rang from downstairs. "All the students from the hell class gather right here right now! You must be at the Blackstone Square within five minutes. All the latecomers will be subject to ten military lashings for every minute they are late! Any person who tries to disobey this order will be dealt with like deserter's from a battlefield!"

"It's really this strict?" Yue Yang was curious. Wasn't this Ivy Academy a place which let students enjoy their life?

He suddenly remembered the old cunning fox's words. The Ivy Academy's aim was to make outstanding students more outstanding, and the worst students worse... This was hell for excellent students and heaven for trash students.

Since when did he become an excellent student?

When Fatty Hai who was originally sprawled on the ground half-dead heard the order to assemble, he suddenly jumped back up and pulled Yue Yang along. “Quick, let’s go, quick! This isn’t a joke, that fellow is a bloodthirsty homicidal maniac! It’s been said that he once killed ten students who were late with his own hands!”

“Is he that terrifying? Why are you joining us if you obviously knew that it was this tough?” Ye Kong fainted in his heart when hearing this.

“Don’t speak rubbish, if we die, we die together. We’re brothers after all!” Fatty Hai shamelessly answered.

Chapter 127 – Enlightenment, A Person's Turning Point

When Yue Yang, Ye Kong and company reached the Blackstone Square, they saw a man with an extraordinarily tall figure clad in black armour waiting.

This person had fierce-looking facial features, with many terrible scars traversing across his face, making his entire person look as if he was a demon. At first, Ye Kong did not believe that a teacher would really kill a student, but upon seeing this black armoured man's ferocious demeanour, he could not help but be somewhat suspicious. Maybe this guy would really kill somebody who had defied orders. The black armoured guy had a pair of eagle eyes, which were so acute it as if they were able to penetrate through the hearts of humans. Let alone ordinary warriors, even when Yue Yang looked eye to eye with him once, he felt a shiver in his heart. He had such a frightening aura of death and expression in his eyes. Yue Yang had seen this gaze on two people before. One was the Elder Yue Hai who had fought the battlefield killing countless people and was notorious even in the Demon Abyss; the other was the one who had the title of 'Thousand Withering Bones', Feng Kuang.

(Shiro: Imperial Guard Commander Feng Kuang appeared at chapter 112)

If he had never killed and beheaded tens of thousands of people, it was probably impossible to accumulate this much murderous aura. It seems that this eagle-eyed man in front of him was also a military officer who caused much blood to spill on the yellow sands of the battlefield, narrowly managing to escape death himself.

That sort of murderous intent was entirely different from that accumulated by an ordinary warrior who merely hunted beasts.

If this black armoured guy's murderous aura was a sharp blade for killing people, then the ordinary warrior's murderous spirit was at most a fruit knife, it was practically impossible to compare the two on the same footing.

The students in the Death Class had rapidly gathered. They were different from Yue Yang and company who had just joined, these people had almost immediately lined up in two columns neatly upon arrival. Amongst the students, there was a very small number was guys, there were only six of them. Most of them were girls and there were about twenty plus of them in total. What surprised Yue Yang was that there was also five small children.

There were both male and female kids, and the oldest amongst them looked not more than ten years old.

But they were all exceptionally solemn and serious, their little heads raised up, their backs straight like ramrods, and their little legs stretched taut, all with the appearance of qualified warriors.

“The five of you allocate yourselves into a small group and stand at the back.” The black armoured eagle eyed guy with a potent murderous aura used his slightly hoarse and extremely magnetic voice to shout at Yue Yang. After waiting for Yue Yang and company to arrange themselves properly, he used his eagle eyes to sweep across his surrounding. Then he coldly spoke. “Our soldiers

ran into an ambush at the Dragon's Intestines Path. Even though they had achieved victory after a bloody battle, there were three hundred people in total who were poisoned. They were bitten by a special type of Demon Worm, and there is a shortage of a type of main medicine at the clinic, hence they are unable to give proper medical treatment. Now, we must proceed into the Demon Abyss to collect and gather a type of especially efficacious medicinal herb to treat the soldiers who were poisoned... In ten seconds, those who want to withdraw, can get lost to enjoy your fine lives. Those brave warriors who are not afraid of death, follow me."

"....." In Fatty Hai's heart, he actually wanted to withdraw. A large group of students gathering medicinal herbs in the Demon Abyss – wasn't that equivalent to seeking death? But seeing that Yue Yang did not say anything and even the few kids in front of him had determined looks on their faces, he found it too embarrassing to say that he did not want to go.

"....." Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers were on the other hand, extremely excited.

Previously when they fought back the Demon Army in the Demon Abyss, they were unable to contribute any effort towards the fights. It was all solely done by Yue Yang. He, alone, killed the Demon General, and saved everybody.

This made them feel very ashamed of themselves.

They might not have the qualifications and strength needed to fight against the Demon Army in the Demon Abyss, but to gather medicinal herbs to save people, there should not be a problem.

As for Yue Yang, there was more surprises. The Academy often brought their students out to gain experience. This was quite normal. However, ordinary academies including Shang Jing Academy only went to the various districts within Soaring Dragon Continent, for example places like Wild Horse Plains, Snow Bear Icefield, Wind Wolf Canyon, White Shark Gulf or Goshawk Cliff, to gain practical experience. At the most, they would only visit the First and Second Levels of Tong Tian Tower for practical experience. Even the Third Level was only for the students' final graduating test.

He did not think that this Ivy Academy would go straight to the Demon Abyss on the first day ...

What kind of place was the Demon Abyss? Not talking about other people, even Yue Yang understood that it was definitely a place where death run rampant.

Even if they did not meet the Demon Army, they could still meet all sorts of formidable demons and monsters that were also extremely dangerous.

Just for a few hundreds soldiers' lives, Ivy Academy was going to send these thirty plus most outstanding cream of the crop students to the Demon Abyss to gather medicinal herbs? Amongst the elites, there was even Emperor Jun Wu You's daughter, the small girl in front who was also one of the youngest in age, Little Princess Bei Bei, who had played with clay together with Yue Shuang during the New Year's Celebration.

It was hard to imagine that at only six or seven years of age, she was already sent to the Demon Abyss to train. No wonder she could score eighty marks for her tests, what kind of education was this?

It was practically an education system fitting for its name, hell class...

Sweating, Yue Yang thought, this guy Jun Wu You was really demanding. He really had the makings of being an emperor.

A middle-aged doctor who was responsible for the teleportation circle and explaining medicine related knowledge came forward. In his hands, he separately held two bottles.

“The medicinal herb that we want to collect is ‘Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid’, it is an extremely poisonous herb. Before boiling, if anybody takes even a drop of it, or infected his wound by even a smidgen of it, he will spurt blood by the seven apertures of his head and die within one minute. At the same time, it is very similar to ‘Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass’. The former’s leaves has spikes at their corners, whereas the latter has hairs growing at the corners of their leaves, but there are only a few of these, and it is practically impossible to tell the difference with the naked eye, one must rely on touching or using beasts’ special response abilities. The bottle on the left is ‘Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid’, while the bottle on the right is ‘Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass’, all of you can let your beasts smell them for a bit. After boiling, the toxicity of ‘Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid’ is greatly reduced, and is able to cure wounded persons; but the toxicity of ‘Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass’ increases greatly after cooking, and would cause immediate death if taken. Also, there is another kind of plant

which grows close to them, called ‘Silver Fragment Leaf Smelly Flower’, normally the plant which grows taller than it is ‘Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid’, the plant which grows shorter than it is ‘Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass’, but one must take note that the young sapling of ‘Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass’ will be a lot shorter than ‘Silver Fragment Leaf Smelly Flower’.” The words of this middle aged doctor made Yue Yang sweat profusely, these three plants grew close to one another?

If they gathered one or two herbs wrongly, and let the poisoned soldiers take them as medicine, would it not completely wipe out the entire army?

Not even thinking about the lives of the soldiers, the Academy letting kids six or seven years old into the Demon Abyss to gather medicinal herbs, this was also not a good idea ...

If, in the process of proceeding into the Demon Abyss, there was an accident and Little Princess Bei Bei or some other kid did not manage to return, how would the Academy be able to answer to Jun Wu You? Also, in the group, there were new students who, like him, had absolutely never heard of what ‘Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid’ or ‘Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass’ was before, the probability of gathering the wrong herb could be estimated to be over ninety percent... With this, this trip to the Demon Abyss had really unimaginable consequences.

The situation however was one where Yue Yang could not think much longer. The gigantic teleportation circle had momentarily opened and it could be maintained for only one minute.

If they were not able to complete their mission and return within two hours, then all the poisoned soldiers would die.

“Everybody get one delivery scroll each. If you meet a demon which you cannot defeat, you are allowed to use the delivery scroll to return to the Academy. Go.” The eagle-eyed guy did not say much. With a wave of his hand, he led the team out.

All the students of the Hell Class had allowed their beasts to smell the liquids in the two bottles.

Other than letting Hui Tai Lang smell it, Yue Yang himself also sniffed at it. Realising that it was odourless, he scolded the middle aged doctor in his heart, calling him a quack and swindler.

These two liquids of Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid and Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass had completely no difference from each other, because they were both odourless liquids... The colours were also the same, and were both slightly black with a tinge of light purple. How could they asked somebody like him, who cannot differentiate between *salvia miltiorrhiza* and *codonopsis root*, or between *licorice root* and *atractylodes macrocephala*, or even between *wolfberry* and *magnolia vine*, to find the difference between Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid and Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass, which appeared to look exactly the same on the surface?

This level of difficulty was even higher than scaling the skies.

The Demon Abyss, as always, had a blood-red sky.

However, the place they were teleported to was not the ancient battlefield, but a gloomy and frightening damp valley.

Countless Demon Insects were crawling about. As they were afraid of the human students' numerous beasts, they temporarily did not dare to attack, but faced with fresh and tasty human meat, they were also unwilling to retreat.

"The clinic said that we can find 'Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid' in the depths of this bug-infested valley. For those who have Beast Mounts, ride them, if you don't, then follow us and run behind. Our time is tight. Students who find the Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid, only need to gather about ten of them, and return immediately. Every one of the medicinal herb is able to save one soldier's life. Time is life, do it as fast as possible." The eagle-eyed guy took out his crystal and summoned a Level Five Bronze-Ranked Mail-Plated Beast. Mounting it, he took the lead and sped towards the depths of the bug-infested valley.

"Gosh... There's not even a demonstration, how do we pick?" Yue Yang, Ye Kong and company hurried to catch up with him.

But the more Yue Yang travelled, the more he was puzzled.

Because he found that along the way, apart from continuously killing Demon Insects, the eagle-eyed guy also gathered the herbs at the same time, and wherever he went, he practically left not even a blade of grass and not a single plant behind. All herbs and plants had been picked and placed into his bag. If it was only a

student assignment, why would this guy need so many herbs? Also, he picked not only one or two types, but all of them, which was really strange.

As he walked, Ye Kong lowered his voice and spoke to Yue Yang. “There’s something fishy. I am guessing that the number of poisoned people is not only three hundred”

His words made Yue Yang’s heart jolt slightly when he heard them and he suddenly realized something.

If an army encountered an ambush and were poisoned, then the number of people who were poisoned would definitely not only be just three hundred. Because the Human Union Army was weaker than the demons, for the purposes of marching an army, they must have formed a tens or thousands men strong legion, so that in dispatching together they would be safe. If it was only three hundred people, it was not even enough to let the Demon Insects nibble at. According to the words of the eagle-eyed guy, the human army even in a situation where they encountered an ambush still achieved victory. If so, the human union army must have been superior in terms of military strength... In such a situation, how could the number who participated have only been three hundred? How could the number who were poisoned have only been three hundred?

“So you meant that we are only one squadron who are coming to the Demon Abyss to pick the medicinal herbs earlier? There are still other squadrons who are carrying out the same mission at the same time, but just not here?” After Yue Yang said this, he immediately mentally associated with another frightening matter.

If the poison was deliberately administered by the demons, then would the Demon Army and Generals set up an ambush of hidden troops at the place where the Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid grew?

If there were ambushes by the Demon Commander and Demon General in this bug-infested valley, with the eagle-eyed man bringing everybody into the valley and falling head first into this trap, wasn't it akin to courting death?

Once Yue Yang thought of this, he immediately wielded the Hui Jin Magic Blade in his hands and took measure of his surroundings with a guarded expression on his face.

In picking the medicinal herb, he could not help much.

However, he must at least protect everybody in safely gathering the Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid and returning.

Now Yue Yang had finally realised the importance of basic knowledge. If he could differentiate between Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid and Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass at one look, then there was no need to let so many people take the risk into this foray, he could complete the mission just by himself.

Unfortunately, he was a guy from a different world, so he had to learn everything from the beginning ...

Yue Yang was suddenly enlightened in his heart: today's lesson,

this journey to the Demon Abyss, was going to be a turning point in his life. After he returned, quickly master his primary major in physical skills then concentrate on medicinal studies. If he was able to better his knowledge of medicine, then the mysterious knowledge in his mind would be able to unleash its formidable power. In the future he would definitely be able to create a pill better than [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill]. When that time comes, not only he himself would benefit, but his beast's capabilities would also be increased.

As for knowledge relating to beasts, mechanics and runes, he would also pursue his studies in them.

If he knew of all the weaknesses of all the beasts, and once again encountered powerful beasts, then it would no longer be disadvantageous for him. If he mastered knowledge on mechanics, he would not only be able to create Puppet Beasts, but he could also inherit the Secret Grimoire left by Ghost Genius Yue Gong in the Puppet Palace. As for runes, they looked useless on the surface, but they were the only key to opening the Ruins Shrine...

“Big Brother, you don't know how to pick the herbs, right? You guys should be our bodyguards and we will complete the mission together. But all of you must listen to our instructions.” A few kids riding Flying-type beasts flew beside Yue Yang and company, and started to negotiate with them conditions of being their bodyguards.

“Did you guys discover something?” Yue Yang's brain worked faster than anybody else, and he understood a little after hearing this. These little imps must have found something good.

These little imps were not that simple, now Yue Yang did not dare to underestimate them too much.

What good things did they actually find?

Chapter 128 – Surprise!

Even though they were little kids, they were sly and clever imps. Unwilling to say much, they only told Yue Yang, Ye Kong and company to not move from their original position.

Their intentions were that they did not want to compete with the older brothers and sisters.

It goes without saying that they were young and weak, plus with Demon Insects roaming about everywhere, once they dismounted their Flying-type beasts, the situation could become dangerous for them quickly. Hence these smart little chaps targeted the new students like Yue Yang and company. They realised that Yue Yang, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and company did not know how to recognise the herbs, and were the type to just look around upon arriving in the Demon Abyss. Hence, under the leadership of a little girl around ten years old, they came over to discuss the possibility of cooperation with Yue Yang.

If it was purely to defeat demons or hunt for magic crystals, it would be a wonder if Yue Yang would even bother to pay attention to them. But when it came to gathering medicinal herbs, did he, who did not even know what the Black Eared Shrivell Heart Orchid looked like, even have a second choice?

“Found it!” A female classmate had first used her Snow Wolf beast to disperse the Demon Insects, then, in a pleasant surprise, found the medicinal herb in the rock crevice. She hurriedly placed it into her medicine sack.

The one who helped her find the medicinal herb was a little jumping mouse.

It did not have any battle capabilities, but through jumping and hopping about, it helped its owner find three Black Eared Shrivel Heart Orchids in succession.

At the start, Yue Yang initially thought that the Black Eared Shrivel Heart Orchid was only about one metre tall, and that they grew all over the ground, mingling with Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass, in a way that was so visually confusing that it was hard to differentiate. What he was unaware of was that it was entirely different from what he thought. This Black Eared Shrivel Heart Orchid was actually only about two centimeters tall in height and was also a weird type of plant that grew in the depths of rock crevices. Not talking about one entire plain, even to find one of them in a mass of stone rubble was definitely not going to be easy.

“You cannot just pick any grass, this isn’t a Black Eared Shrivel Heart Orchid at all, it isn’t Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass either. It isn’t even Silver Fragment Leaf Smelly Flower... This isn’t even a herb.” Fatty Hai tried to imitate their actions, digging up anything resembling a Demon Abyss plant. He thought that if he collected an entire nest, no matter what he would find a few Black Eared Shrivel Heart Orchids. In any case he just needed to bring the herbs back and cause headaches to the clinic’s doctors. However, there was a tall and pretty girl, who saw the herbs in his hands and could not help but laugh at him while covering her hand over her mouth, as if she saw a big gorilla that didn’t know how to peel the skin of a banana.

“Not even one?” Fatty Hai still refused to accept this reality.

“If it grew all over the ground, why is there a need to send us here? Besides, you did not employ the proper methods to gather the herb, so even if you collected it, it would have also become useless. Take your time to learn, don’t worry, I will collect more and not let the poisoned soldiers be deprived of the cure because of your failure to gather the herbs.” That tall girl’s tinkling laughter sounded like the ringing of bells.

Fatty Hai felt embarrassed upon hearing this, and hurriedly discarded the weeds in his hands.

Yue Yang did not distract himself gathering the herbs. He knew that in terms of differentiating between the herbs, he still had much to learn. Now what was most important was to prevent accidents from happening.

Yue Yang thought that working with Little Princess Bei Bei and company was a successful method of gathering the herbs. The eagle-eyed man did not stipulate that they must personally pick the herbs, working in teams was also within the rules. Otherwise, why would he require a group to be formed between every five people? Yue Yang reckoned that teamwork training was also an implied purpose in this.

“Newbie greenhorns should learn more.” A boy with a haughty appearance came over and picked a medicinal herb beneath Ye Kong’s feet, sauntering off looking immensely pleased with himself.

The beast he was using was a long-legged spider which could accurately detect the location of the medicinal herb.

This guy was actually not very good at it, he was just a little better than Yue Yang, Ye Kong and company. Currently he had also only picked two Black Eared Shrivell Heart Orchids.

There was also a solitary girl wearing thief's clothings that acted the most extreme. When everybody was still turning over rocks everywhere, she had already unfolded her scroll, and in a thin streak of white light, had directly teleported back.

Evidently, she had already collected ten Black Eared Shrivell Heart Orchids.

“If you guys really can't recognise the herb, you can ask for your beasts' help. Your beasts' sense of smell and sight tend to be sharper than humans on average.” The tall girl was a little puzzled by Yue Yang, who was currently using his Divine Vision to sweep his eyes over the surroundings, vigilantly guarding against sneak attacks by demons. But she was happy that somebody was being a bodyguard free of charge. This way, she could set her mind on gathering the herbs. She saw that Yue Yang's group of newbies really had such poor foundations that she couldn't hold back from guiding Ye Kong, who looked more honest. “Black Eared Shrivell Heart Orchid, generally speaking, would not nestle in places that are too deep. They also need to absorb energy from the Devil Moon, so you don't need to search in very deep and submerged areas. Secondly, you must keep a lookout for Demon Insects, normally, they do not like to stay near the stone crevices where the

extremely poisonous Black Eared Shrivell Heart Orchids are normally found, but they do not mind staying near the Rat Spot Flying Yang Grass, so places where the Demon Insects roam about can also be ignored. Thirdly

With the guidance of the tall girl, Ye Kong spent quite some effort before finally finding one herb growing in the middle of a shallow rock crevice, without any water submerging it or Demon Insects crawling about.

Since it corresponded with all the requirements, this should be that Black Eared Shrivell Heart Orchid, Ye Kong was just feeling inwardly gleeful.

But, as he grasped the herb, the Little Princess Bei Bei, who was riding a Level Two Bronze Hobby and spiralling about swiftly, swooped down on him fast and her girly voice continuously shouted. “Idiot, quickly throw it away!”

The tall girl also reacted, crying out “Oh God, that is Fishy Juice Tempt Worm Grass, the juice from this type of grass will attract large amounts of Demon Insects, quickly discard it!”

Ye Kong indeed detected that there was an additional faintly fishy smell in the air, and it was really different from the odourless juice of the Black Eared Shrivell Heart Orchid. Looking around him again, he didn’t notice when, but suddenly a large group of Demon Insects bearing their fangs and brandishing claws had appeared.

Frightened, he hurriedly threw away the herb.

He noticed that he hadn't thrown it far enough away from himself. The group of Demon Insects surged upon him, and it was still a far from good situation, so he hurriedly picked the herb up again and took to his heels, drawing the tide of Demon Insects after him.

When he threw that Fishy Juice Tempt Worm Grass far away and wanted to escape from the swarm of worms again, he realized that he had already been surrounded by the torrent of Demon Insects.

When the Li Clan brothers and Fatty Hai saw this, they hurriedly summoned their beasts to save Ye Kong.

After a long time, the four idiots, who had their entire bodies filled with bites of the Demon Insects and covered all over in wounds, finally fought their way out of the swarm of worms under the help of the Hui Tai Lang. They immediately fled to Yue Yang's side, every one of them worn out as a dead dog.

Ye Kong was still okay but had received a big shock. Fatty Hai was so tired that he immediately fell to the ground, unwilling to move even an inch even when Demon Insects had crawled all over his body.

Yue Yang had only sent out his Hui Tai Lang and did not personally go to rescue them. These Demon Insects were of a very low level. Ye Kong and company could deal with them. This was also a good opportunity to toughen them up.

Little Princess Bei Bei showed a very burdened expression and chided Ye Kong and company like a little adult. “Brothers, if you do not know how to pick the herbs, don’t randomly pick them. This is the Demon Abyss. My Empress Mother, ah, I mean, my mother said that in the Demon Abyss, one cannot lower one’s guard no matter what we are doing.”

When they realized that they were even scolded by a six or seven year old little child, Ye Kong and company looked at each other in dismay, not knowing whether to laugh or cry in their hearts.

There was one little girl of the group of five kids who flew down and waved her hand, advising them. “All of you don’t move. We discovered a few hundred Black Eared Spheres growing as a thicket. They are probably going to blossom in about an hour. We will gather them at that time, as that would be the most fresh and most useful type of Black Eared Shrivelf Heart Orchid. All of you don’t be too anxious and maintain your body strength. Later, just concentrate on protecting us while we are picking the herbs. Bei Bei, summon your beast to give them some treatment first. We’ll search again later and see whether there are still Black Eared Spheres around here.”

“Where are the Black Eared Spheres?” The tall and pretty girl was astounded. “Princess Qi Ming, it had not occurred to me that there’s somebody who can actually recognise the Black Eared Sphere amongst you. I have already learnt medical skills for three years and even now I do not dare to guarantee that I can definitely differentiate between the Black Eared Sphere and the Rat Spot Sphere, because they really look too similar. Can you really recognise them?”

“We all recognise them.” Little Princess Bei Bei nodded her head proudly.

Yue Yang inwardly sweated, looks like these few kids were members of the royal family, if not princesses, then they were princes.

Being princesses and princes, they did not study in Shang Jing Academy which was run by the royal family, but actually came to Ivy Academy to participate in the Death Class instead. No wonder the royal family of Soaring Dragon Continent could maintain its reign for a thousand years and not fall. Just looking at this type of educational method, one would know that the royal family was extremely strict in cultivating and nurturing their later generations.

To receive a long-term education in such a brutal environment, how would the princesses and princes, who matured from this, not be the most outstanding rulers in the future?

The fact that the Three Royal Households could rank higher than the Four Major Clans was not without reason.

Little Princess Bei Bei and the other little boy, who had a running nose and who was probably some country's prince, had both summoned special-type beasts to administer medical treatment for Ye Kong and Fatty Hai.

Yue Yang discovered that neither of the kids had Grimoire Contracts, but were already very proficient at summoning

“The Blood Moon of the Demon Abyss is already at its apex. Stronger Demon Insects will be coming out to look for food soon. All herb gatherers immediately leave now.” The black armoured eagle-eyed man rushed over while riding an Armored Beast, shouting sternly towards the students. “Our mission requires ten herbs. Greedy people often fail and ultimately end up not having anything at all. They even suffer a tragic death in the Demon Abyss. I definitely do not encourage such behaviour. Everybody who has accomplished the requirements of the mission immediately leave now. ”

Upon hearing the warning of the eagle-eyed man, almost all the students opened their scrolls, teleporting away.

Only a few students were still indecisive.

They hadn't picked enough herbs, but the number of powerful Demon Words was increasing and they could not guarantee their own safety. Especially when their peers had already left, they would definitely fail if they continued to stay here. Eventually, some of them gathered together and discussed a little with one another, finally teleporting back.

Two guys who were more confident in their battle strengths were still continuing.

The eagle-eyed guy went over to berate them, scaring the two of them and made them left in a hurry. Finally, only Yue Yang and company were left.

The tall and pretty girl looked at Yue Yang and Ye Kong, then shifted her gaze to Little Princess Bei Bei and company, who were still circling the sky riding on their beasts, and gritted her teeth. “I can stay back to help you guys gather the Black Eared Spheres. However, my primary major is not battling. You guys need to ensure my safety. If you guys can promise that under any situation you will never abandon your comrades, I will stay.”

“Ye Kong, you will be responsible for protecting her.” Yue Yang waved his hand at Little Princess Bei Bei who was still in the air. “All of you come down. There is an abnormal undulation in the air.”

“It’s possibly a swarm of Black Winged Worms. Quick. Descend!” Upon hearing this, the little girl, who was called Princess Qi Ming’s face changed, and she took the lead in descending. In this moment, the black armoured eagle-eyed man rode at flying speed to them with a fierce expression on his face, yelling sternly. “What are you doing? Aren’t you guys not going back?!”

“We haven’t completed our mission... ” Fatty Hai was so scared by him that he almost burst into tears.

“At most five minutes later, large swarms of Black Winged Worms, and an entire sky of Blood Sucking Mosquitoes will flood this entire bug-infested valley. You guys definitely cannot wait till the Black Eared Spheres blossom. Your failure to complete the mission is only one failure. But if you guys die here, then you will forever fail. In life, there can be many failures. Nobody can win all the time, but one must be living in order to move towards victory.

All of you go back at once... Eh?" The eagle eyed man saw dark clouds raging in the sky and his face immediately became cold, lowly shouting "People who have Grimoires immediately summon their Grimoires, everybody hide under the shield and don't use the Teleportation Scroll for now. The air movement here is extremely strange. All of you stay here. I'll go and see why the Demon Insects are causing such a violent disturbance."

Riding the Armoured Beast, the eagle-eyed guy sped towards the other side of the bug-infested valley towards the rumbling sound. Yue Yang looked at his retreating back and a trace of unease flashed across his heart. Even though he still could not see anything abnormal with his Divine Vision, but something bad was definitely going to happen...

Could it be that the Demon Army found this herb-gathering group?

Or could it be that some scary Demon Insects had come out?

At this moment, the sky was dark, and Black Winged Worms and Blood-sucking Mosquitoes emerged in large numbers like dark clouds filling up the sky.

The little girl, who was called Princess Qi Ming, immediately summoned her Grimoire and hid the five little kids under her Shield. As if in a mutual understanding, they even kept their beasts without panicking at all. Princess Qi Ming then summoned a normal-ranked Level Four Flaming Hatchet Puppet and calmly waved at the tall girl, indicating that she should also hide in here.

The tall girl hurriedly squeezed herself in, carrying Little Princess Bei Bei.

When they saw Fatty Hai idiotic manner of clumsily unable to summon his Grimoire for a long time, they stamped their feet in worry. Ye Kong and the Li Clan brothers had already gotten used to it. If Fatty Hai could swiftly summon his Bronze Grimoire, as a grimoire contractor, he wouldn't be weaker than an ordinary warriors. It is precisely because Fatty Hai summoned his grimoire a lot slower than other people, so usually the others had already beaten him to a pulp while he still had yet to summon his Grimoire, hence he was such a tragedy.

“See, I (Oresama), the boss is still the best.” Fatty Hai, having summoned his Grimoire with much effort, and after that summoned the Iron Rhinoceros, started to brag with a proud and pleased look on his face.

“.....” Ye Kong and company were speechless.

“Brother Xiao San, quick come behind the shield.” Little Princess Bei Bei hurriedly called out to Yue Yang whom she noticed was still outside.

“Everyone, there's no need to worry about me. All of you don't move. There's something strange coming.” Yue Yang stood in the midst of the Black Winged Worms and Blood-sucking Mosquitoes, which filled the sky with their hairs. Channelling his Innate Qi into his blade, the purple fires of the Hui Jin magic blade roared.

All of the Black Winged Worms and Blood-sucking Mosquitoes, which flew near to him, were burnt to ashes. However, there was even a higher number of Black Winged Worms and Blood-sucking Mosquitoes that pervaded the air like dark clouds, hiding the sky and covering the earth. Ye Kong and company could only vaguely see that in front, two masses of raging flames had ignited and rocketed into the sky. One was the soaring purple flames of Yue Yang's Hui Jin magic blade; the other was the black flames of Demonic Qi from the body of the Hui Tai Lang.

Yue Yang had used the Yin Yang Twin Fish Circle, the 'Spherical Beheader', the skill which he had self-learnt during the Yue Clan's New Year Tournament. The Hui Jin magic blade slowly spun. The purple flames burned the Demon Insects, which were trying to get near with all their efforts.

The one meter radius of space around him had become an area of Demon Insect vacuum.

No worm could approach.

Suddenly, the black flames on Hui Tai Lang's body became larger. With a final roar into the sky, all the black flames on its body exploded, gushing and squirting out with a rumble.

The frightful Demonic Qi that radiated from its body, as well as the infernal black flames enveloping its body, not only burnt and killed the surrounding Demon Insects, but even had an oppressing, pressuring quality that resembled a Demon King's presence, scaring the weak and little Demon Insects in front of it into disorder, as they hurried to scuttle away from Hui Tai Lang.

Fatty Hai's Iron Rhinoceros was so intimidated that it directly lay down on its stomach... Not only the beasts, but Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers also felt a wave of heart palpitations. Looking towards Hui Tai Lang, it gave them a feeling as if it was the Demon King standing right in front of them. Yue Yang was also slightly surprised. Turned out that it was only at this time that Hui Tai Lang finally started to emit the formidable power of Demon King Ha Xin's demonic power. Even though Hui Tai Lang only absorbed Demon King Ha Xin's demonic qi, it was after all the qi of the Demon King, hence it was not a small matter.

Could it be that being in a dangerous environment could stimulate the hidden capabilities within the Hui Tai Lang's body and let it level up or evolve?

Yue Yang was inwardly gleeful. If it really was so, then that really was an unexpected pleasant surprise.

As the black flames on the Hui Tai Lang's body intensified and its body continuously reconstructed and evolved in the black flames, the ground suddenly shook with tremors. The entire valley was shaking, as if there was something about to dig itself out from the ground.

"What the hell is that?" Yue Yang had a shock in his heart.

Aren't these tremors, caused by this demon who was trying to dig itself out of the ground, too big? Could it be the Godzilla of a different world?

The black flames on the Hui Tai Lang's body intensified increasingly. Its body was also continuously perfecting itself. As if it was stimulated by the Gigantic Demon, its evolution process picked up speed yet again.

Chapter 129 – Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle

The earth split apart and mountains collapsed. A deep crack had rapidly formed, and suddenly, a giant mountain had suddenly formed from the earth.

Gloomy rumblings of rocks and stones falling to the ground resounded non-stop.

The Black Winged Worm in the sky flew around together with the Blood Sucking Mosquitoes, mixing and buzzing around.

Due to the pressure from both Hui Tai Lang and the Gigantic Demon, they were all trying to disperse and escape, forming clouds of insects that flew around, as if they were reluctant to leave so easily.

Hui Tai Lang's body that looked like a small ox originally had become more solid and firm, its muscles rippled as its bones underwent an evolution, changing and reconstructing. It slowly expanded and grew to become gigantic. The black flames on its body burned intensely as the size of his body grew twice of his former size. In the end, Hui Tai Lang looked upwards and howled loudly, its claws penetrating deep into the ground as its body exploded with a burst of a black flame pillar that rose up to the sky above.

The Black Winged Worms and the Blood Sucking Mosquitoes that filled the whole sky froze at its howl, then fell to the ground one by one. The whole scene looked almost like a weird bug rain.

“Is this the pressure of a Gold King Beast?” Yue Yang could only feel such a strong pressure from a Gold King Beast. Normal King Beasts wouldn’t even compare to Hui Tai Lang’s current oppressing aura.

Hui Tai Lang was still not a Gold King Beast, yet it had such a domineering aura. Could it be due to the fact that it had absorbed too much of the Demon King Ha Xin’s evil demon qi?

Ye Kong and the others watched dumbstruck as Hui Tai Lang’s body grew larger within the fiery black flames. In the end, it had become a colossal monster with a dense amount of demon qi, looking extremely frightening.

When it stood up proudly, it reached the height of a full three metres.

Its two bloody mouth were decorated with dagger-like wolf fangs, and its noses breathed dense flames and smokes.

On its body, black flames had weirdly burned on its black, glistening fur. It had changed Hui Tai Lang’s whole appearance, making it look extremely tyrannical as if a Demon King had arrived.

Yue Yang had initially thought that Hui Tai Lang would grow another head and turn into the legendary ‘Cerberus’. However, he found that it only grew larger. When he used his [Divine Vision] to check, he found out that it was still a Two-Headed Demon Wolf,

however, it had successfully levelled up from a bronze-ranked level 5 to silver-ranked level 4.

This special evolution, although it had dropped its level instead of rising it, would increase Hui Tai Lang's battle power and potential greatly, like a giant leap to the sky.

This silver-ranked special evolution was the start of a new hope.

If Hui Tai Lang had levelled up to bronze-ranked level 6 instead, then it would be destined to only be a labourer beast who would only do coarse tasks in the future.

However, the current Hui Tai Lang was a beast that had successfully undergone a special evolution to a silver-ranked beast. Undoubtedly, it had opened a brand new path filled with hope. There would be a whole new world of possibilities waiting for him. Yue Yang would also be more patient and confident in raising it. If it had successfully evolved into silver-ranked, wouldn't a gold-ranked evolution be coming soon? With the basis of the amount of oppressing aura Hui Tai Lang gained when it underwent the special evolution, and its clever nature that it already had before, it would definitely become a Gold King Beast at least, maybe even higher...

Yue Yang suddenly thought of an even crazier idea. If one day he managed to get a Demon King's corpse and let Hui Tai Lang eat it, what would it evolve into then? Of course, this was only an idea at the moment. But he wouldn't eliminate that as a possibility.

“Awoooo” After Hui Tai Lang evolved, it was filled with a tyrannical aura. Its fighting spirit had increased to its maximum.

Hui Tai Lang leapt to right in front of Yue Yang, and gave a loud roar towards the Gigantic Demon which was drilling its way out of the mud, as if it wasn't afraid of its opponent, even when it was a Gigantic Demon.

A loud rumbling resounded, shaking the earth, as the Demon that had been drilling in the ground suddenly burst forth from within the earth.

Against Yue Yang's expectations, [this Demon](#) was not an elite monster, it was simply a normal-ranked Demon Insect. However, it's body was as big as a small hill, and it looked like a Rhinoceros Beetle. But the weird thing was that this Rhinoceros Beetle who was as big as a small hill actually had three horns instead of one. The two horns on the sides were shaped like half moons, as if they were giant, hard pincers. In the middle, there was a spear-like pointed horn. Its head looked extremely sinister and frightening, and its body was covered in a black carapace, making it look just like a small hill made of iron. If it was compared to normal beasts, it was definitely much more frightening. Even a Battle Mammoth or a Battle Kodo Beast would pale into insignificance by comparison.

When Fatty Hai saw the demon, he was so scared that his knees went weak and fell to the ground, “Heavens! How could there be such a big Dung Beetle?”

Ye Kong's teeth were also chattering, “Is this a level 7 monster?

Fortunately it's not an elite monster and is only a normal-ranked level 7. Otherwise we'd all probably be dead,"

The tall girl disagreed instead and refuted immediately, "Are you guys blind? This is obviously a level 8 Three-horned Rhinoceros Beetle, also called the Battle Hercules Beetle. Normally people would call it Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle. It is a Rhinoceros Beetle, and it is not related to Dung Beetle at all."

"Level 8?" Fatty Hai immediately started crying out of fright when he heard it.

Even if it's normal-ranked, a level 8 creature's power and strength was not at a level that that Fatty Hai could imagine.

Furthermore, this Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle whose body was like a small hill could already sweep through the battlefield just by crushing and colliding around with brute force. How could a Battle Kodo Beast compare to it? Compared to it, the Kodo's size wouldn't even reach one-fifth of the Beetle's size. If that Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle were to use its three horns to knock over the Kodo, the Kodo would probably be sent flying away high up into the air.

However, Fatty Hai had cried for nothing.

This Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle did not have any intention to attack humans, instead, it made its way with booming steps and crawled towards the valley.

It even turned a blind eye on Hui Tai Lang who had jumped on its back.

The crowd were all confused. What exactly was happening? Didn't it crawl out from the ground to fight?

Princess Qi Ming suddenly realised something and screamed loudly, pointing towards the direction of the valley and said, "It wanted to eat the Black Eared Sphere that was about to bloom... Stop it, quick! Otherwise all of the Black Eared Sphere's will be eaten by it!"

When Yue Yang heard her, he immediately chased after it hurriedly.

Raising his Hui Jin Magic Blade, he ignited its purple flames and slashed down towards the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle's back legs with an almighty amount of power.

Rumble...

The slashing sound was like a bolt of thunder in the clear blue sky, shaking the whole valley and echoing through the distance. However, that Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle almost had no reaction at all. It had continued to walk as if nothing had happened, completely not paying attention to Yue Yang's slash. Everyone's jaws had dropped to the ground and their tongues hung down from their mouths. What kind of crazy defense was this?

Even if it was an extremely hard rock, if it was hit by that heavy slash, it would probably be turned to dust.

Or at least, a deep gash from the blade would be left on that rock.

However, there was not even a scratch on this Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle's back legs.

Hui Tai Lang also raised its claws, that could easily crush rocks, and used the Explosion Killing Move that Yue Yang had taught him, slashing its claws ruthlessly on the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle's back section, that looked to be the weakest spot on its body. However, it was still to no avail.

The Iron Rod on Ye Kong's hands dropped to the ground with a loud clang as his whole body collapsed weakly.

Fighting against a level 8 beast with such a frighteningly abnormal defensive powers such as this Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, it would simply be wishful thinking if they thought they could injure it and break its hard outer shell. Of course, it had its own weak spots, and that was its airways, that could not be protected by its hard, outer crust. It had a total of 18 airways, but every single one of them were located on its abdomen. Furthermore, it was still protected by its extremely hard exoskeleton and outer shell, that was even harder than metals.

Yue Yang was also frowning. He thought that this Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle probably didn't have a very high attack power or even worthwhile skills.

However, its defense was way beyond abnormal.

How could they stop it from eating those precious Black Eared Sphere?

Attacking the mouth and eyes on its head might be a good idea, however, it must be very dangerous.

It wouldn't be a joke if he were attacked by those three horns. Yue Yang ignited the purple flame on his Hui Jin Magic Blade even further with his Innate Qi, and prepared to attack it one last time. If he really couldn't inflict any damage on it, he would just rush in front of it and take some of the Black Eared Sphere first. Then he would see if he could outrun it...

Seeing that Yue Yang was about to continue his attack, princess Qi Ming hurriedly shook her hand and said, "Brother, don't attack it. Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle's defense is really high, so it is immune to physical attacks. Furthermore, it has a herculean strength, it could easily lift up an object eight hundred times heavier than itself. If you were to receive its attack, even your bones would break to ashes. Bei Bei, you are the person most familiar with insect-type beast here. Do you know if this Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle has any other weak spots other than its airways?"

"I know. Attack the Beetle's butt, that would definitely catch its attention," Little Princess Bei Bei's words made Yue Yang fell to the ground with a thud.

Maybe normal beetles would behave that way, but the fellow in front of them was as big as a small hill, would that method even work?

Furthermore, groping its butt... That was really too depressing.

Yue Yang was only used to groping girls' butt. He should just let depressing stuff to be done by others. He waved his hands and said, "Boss Hai, go and grope some butts!"

Fatty Hai's body jolted when he heard Yue Yang. How could Yue Yang give him a chance to grope some butts, such a good thing?

He replied surprisedly, "Why me?"

Yue Yang replied full of common sense, "Easy, because you are the boss."

Fatty Hai wailed miserably first, before replying, filled with grievance in his voice and tears in his eyes, "Why didn't anyone think of this boss when it comes to groping a girl's butt?"

"Take it down first. We can talk about girls later. You are the boss, everyone would definitely let you grope girls first. Quickly grope its anus and take it down! You must act like you are the boss, and caress its anus carefully..." Yue Yang lectured Fatty Hai and ordered him to move.

“Hehe” The tall girl and the other kids started to laugh.

“No, I don’t want to! Ah, I mean, I’m too stout, so I would definitely not be able to caress its butt which is almost ten metres high. I am unable to help however I would like to!” Fatty Hai thought that this kind of work that required him to go high up above the ground was much too dangerous. If he were to fall down in a moment of carelessness, he would probably have a cerebral concussion at least. Furthermore, such a vulgar act of caressing a Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle’s butt in front of everyone, would he still even be able to get girls if that matter goes out to the public? Fatty Hai refused to do it even if he die. He would rather let Yue Yang tie him up and slice him up into red braised pork, than do such an embarrassing act. He was still the boss after all.

Just as Yue Yang was about to violently beat him up and turn Fatty Hai into a roasted pig, another Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle slowly crawled out from the gigantic pit behind them...

This one was a tenth of the size of the one in front. Although it was only as large as a Long-tusked Mammoth, even a blind person could see that it was still a growing beast, a young one at that. It was a Beetle Larva.

“Normal-ranked Level 4. This one can still be defeated.” Yue Yang immediately approached the Beetle Larva and hacked down heavily with his Hui Jin Magic Blade on the young beast’s body. Although it didn’t seem hurt on the outside, that Beetle Larva’s body had suffered an internal injury. Yue Yang’s Innate Qi had penetrated through its thick, hard outer shell and the Hui Jin Magic Blade’s purple flames had seeped into its internal organs,

burning it from the inside out. The Beetle couldn't stop wailing miserably.

However, when the young Beetle was attacked, the gigantic Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle immediately became furious. It turned its body viciously and charged towards Yue Yang with a loud rumble. Its sharp horn that was like a hundred sharp iron spears bound together, terrifyingly charging towards Yue Yang, whose body was like a grain of sand in comparison to the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle. Seeing that his method was effective, Yue Yang immediately leapt and dodged the attack. He executed his Spherical Beheader once again, hacking right into the Beetle Larva's back.

If he wanted to kill the Beetle Larva, he could just use his maximum strength and aim at a fatal spot.

However, in order to stall for time, Yue Yang did not do that.

“What are you guys waiting for? Quickly see if all those Black Eared Sphere have already bloomed!” Yue Yang bellowed loudly towards the crowd of people who were still stunned dumbstruck while he was luring the gigantic Beetle away. Hui Tai Lang also helped on the side. It would jump at times and spit fire towards Beetle Larva's head or bite at its back legs, threatening it to leave this place.

“There is still half an hour, Brother, please persevere a little more,” Little Princess Bei Bei almost made Yue Yang sweat to death. Luring the enemy for such a long time, wouldn't he be tired to death?

On top of a far away cliff.

In the darkness, the Eagle-eyed Man was just about to turn his body around and leave, “This idiot, he truly only has brute force. He doesn’t have any beast related knowledge at all.”

Half an hour later, after Bei Bei and the other just finished gathering all the Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid flowers that had just sprouted out, Yue Yang and Hui Tai Lang ran back from a far away place. Yue Yang shouted towards Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others, “Do any of you guys want to contract this Beetle Larva? Although it is not a battle-type beast, its defense is extremely high. It can be used as the perfect meat shield. Any of you want it? If nobody wants it I’ll slash it off and take out its magic core. Forget it, quick, that gigantic demon beetle is going to come back soon.”

Fatty Hai insisted on his own decision, “As your boss, I wouldn’t contract any other beasts except for beautiful humanoid Gold King Beasts. Furthermore, for meat shields, I already have my Iron Rhinoceros.”

“We also don’t want it, it’s too ugly and too big,” the tall girl and the other five children all waved their hands and refused.

“Then I want it!” Ye Kong stood up. Although it was normal-ranked level 4, but Ye Kong had high hopes for it after seeing the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle’s defense. Furthermore, he also understood that if the beetle really had no future, Yue Yang wouldn’t keep it alive and even intentionally bringing it back to

ask if anyone wanted to contract the Beetle Larva.

“Didn’t you have feelings for its anus? I can’t wait for the day when you will caress the Beetle Larva’s anus while smiling perversely... Ah, alright, please pretend I didn’t say anything.” Fatty Hai had actually wanted to ridicule Ye Kong, but when he saw that everyone was glaring at him, he was scared and hurriedly looked downwards and took back his words. He had to act pitifully like ‘please go ahead and hit me but just don’t hurt my face’ before everyone finally reluctantly let him go.

Facing against the dying Beetle Larva that had suffered serious injuries all over its body, Ye Kong had used five Contracting Scrolls continuously to no avail.

Beads of sweat formed on his forehead.

Little Princess Bei Bei handed him one last scroll. If he still failed to contract it, there wouldn’t be any hope left.

Usually, it’s very normal to fail a beast contract. However, Ye Kong didn’t want to disappoint Yue Yang and he also didn’t want to let such a good chance that Yue Yang had given him to go to waste.

“Calm down a little, you will definitely succeed. The gigantic demon beetle is going to come back soon, so Hui Tai Lang and I will lure it away first. 5 Minutes. Use this last five minutes to meditate a little and calm your heart. Unite both your body and mind and don’t be nervous to let your spirit qi take control of

you...” Yue Yang motivated him for a while before going with Hui Tai Lang to lure the gigantic demon beetle away.

Of course, he also had another purpose.

When he was luring the gigantic demon beetle away, he saw a weird looking plant with a spherical stalk. Not only normal Demon Insects, even the gigantic demon beetle didn't dare to come near it. Yue Yang decided to use the time when Ye Kong was contracting the Beetle Larva to observe the plant more clearly. He wanted to find out what kind of mysterious secret this plant with the spherical stalk had.

He couldn't even see through it with his level 3 [Divine Vision], what exactly was it?

Yue Yang decided to summon his thorny flower so that it could use its roots to link with the Spherical-stalked Plant. He could then channel some Innate Qi into it and probe around it a little...

Chapter 130 – White Jade Beetle

When Yue Yang approached that weird Spherical-stalked Plant, the gigantic demon beetle which was chasing after Yue Yang immediately turned around and retreated.

Yue Yang thought that this gigantic demon beetle would need at least three minutes to return to the place where Ye Kong and the others were. He thought that he had given enough time for Ye Kong to contract the Beetle Larva. Yue Yang walked right in front of the weird Spherical-stalked Plant and was about to summon the Thorny Flower that was still evolving. However, against expectations, the Spherical-Stalked plant suddenly moved, its cactus-like, thorny surface slowly opening up. A bright white light suddenly filled the air, looking extremely holy and soothing. The surrounding dirty earth had even melted into black particles under the bright white light, slowly ascending to the sky.

At first, Yue Yang had thought that there was a precious pearl inside the Spherical-stalked Plant, just like those pearls that were stored inside shells.

When the bright white light was not that dazzling anymore, Yue Yang reached out to see and froze as he saw what was inside.

In the Spherical-stalked Plant, there was a coconut meat-like layer. And in the middle of the plant that did not have much meat left, was a beetle with a jade-like, sparkling and translucent body, whose innards could be seen through its shell. It looked a little like the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, but its horns weren't that developed yet and also not as sharp. The horns didn't even look

like they were capable of injuring someone, instead, they gave others a mellow, lustrous and satiny feel.

The beetle looked like a masterpiece of a sculpture that had been polished repeatedly.

Its sparkling and translucent body looked like white jade and carried a tinge of gold barely visible to the eye. There was no other colour in its body. Its little horns, little feet and little body were all extremely adorable.

Yue Yang was secretly surprised. Even with his level 3 [Divine Vision], how could he not be able to see through this beetle?

Hui Tai Lang seemed to be a little annoyed by the White Jade Beetle who had enormous powers although it was still a baby. The reason was that the pure and holy power inside the beetle could disperse the demonic qi inside Hui Tai Lang's body. Hence, Hui Tai Lang was unwilling to come near the White Jade Beetle.

If it was any other beetle with such an abundant power instead, Hui Tai Lang would probably already swallowed it whole.

Yue Yang reached his hands out and took this White Jade Beetle into his hands.

If he didn't see that its feet and horns were moving ever so slightly, Yue Yang would have thought that this White Jade Beetle was a sculptor's valuable art piece.

Was this really a living thing?

In this filthy Demon Abyss, how could there exist such a pure living thing? There were really so many weird, unexplainable things in this world. Yue Yang opened his beast encyclopedia and looked through the insect-type beasts for a long time, but he couldn't find a matching record that fulfil the description of this White Jade Beetle. When he tried to feel it with his Innate Qi, just when he managed to get into it a little, a bright white light suddenly enveloped him whole... Hui Tai lang seemed to feel unwell amidst the white light and immediately retreated a few meters back, escaping from the vicinity of the white light.

Yue Yang studied it for a long time but he still could not find a good answer to this bizarre event.

He knew for sure that this beetle was a good thing, but he didn't know what beast this White Jade Beetle was.

The White Jade Beetle didn't struggle in his hands, even when Yue Yang was turning it upside down and all around to observe its every nook and corner. Only its little feet moved a little at times. Most of the time, it only stayed still quietly, as if it was in a deep sleep.

“Forget it, let's just pick it up and see what it is later at home.” Yue Yang put the White Jade Beetle into his backpack. Suddenly, Hui Tai Lang immediately charged forward with all his speed, intending to bite on that white layer of meat that was left behind.

Yue Yang sent it flying with a kick. What a good fellow, turning a blind eye and a deaf ear to its master's words upon seeing a good item.

“Wang Wang Wu...” Hui Tai Lang hurriedly acted like an honest dog and wagged its tail excitedly. He even put on an ‘I’m a good boy’ look.

“Could this fruit’s flesh be used to nurture beasts?” Yue Yang searched it using his Innate Qi and found that this fruit had a Life Energy just like the Oak Tree’s Heart, but its energy was a little weaker. Furthermore, there was also a kind of pure energy that Yue Yang couldn’t figure out. Yue Yang started to think. Maybe if he used this fruit’s flesh to nurture beasts, especially nurturing young beasts, it would have a stronger effect than eating magic cores. That was because this fruit’s flesh was simply too pure, almost untarnished. No wonder Hui Tai Lang, this fellow, looked at it with its drool falling like a waterfall.

The weird Spherical-stalked Plant’s fruit flesh had almost been all eaten by the White Jade Beetle, only a little layer of flesh was left.

Yue Yang scraped off one chunk and gave it to the drooling Hui Tai Lang, who chomped it as if it was [Zhu Ba Jie](#) who was eating ginseng. The piece of fruit flesh did not even touch its teeth and went straight to its stomach.

On the contrary, when Yue Yang summoned Xiao Wen Li out and gave her a piece, she took the fruit flesh and smelled it before giving it back to Yue Yang, as if she had no interest in that piece of

flesh. Yue Yang sweated hard as he caressed her little head, “Kids are not supposed to be picky with food.”

Xiao Wen Li still shook her head, her six arms hugging Yue Yang’s thighs as she acted like a spoiled child. When Yue Yang still forced the fruit flesh to her, she took it and pretended that she was going to eat it, before suddenly passing the fruit flesh to Hui Tai Lang and turned into a ray of rainbow light and entered back into Yue Yang’s body to rest. Yue Yang sweated hard when he saw this, but Hui Tai Lang, on the other hand, was overjoyed to eat another piece of fruit flesh. It was so happy that its long tails wagged hard to the left and right...

Trying to test it again, Yue Yang summoned the Bloody Queen out.

When she received a piece of the fruit flesh, she nodded her head at first, then shook her head and started spouting a chain of Demonic Abyss Language. She even gestured a few hand gestures to Yue Yang, it was a pity that Yue Yang couldn’t understand her at all.

Based on the Bloody Queen’s hand gestures, Yue Yang reckoned that she was saying this fruit flesh was quite delicious indeed, it was just that its real core was already missing. Yue Yang guessed that the best part of the fruit had already been eaten by the White Jade Beetle. As for the remaining fruit flesh, Xiao Wen Li wasn’t interested in it while the Bloody Queen’s reaction was only so-so. She liked to eat it but not to the point of drooling after it like Hui Tai Lang had.

“I should keep it first, maybe it will be useful in the future.” Yue Yang had never disliked more treasures coming his way. He put the rest of the Spherical-stalked Plant into his Lich Ring. With this ring, Yue Yang could gather treasures more easily.

Far away, a loud rumbling, followed by an earthquake had suddenly resounded.

In the air, the five little kids rode on their flying beasts as they rushed over to Yue Yang, screaming. They had not even arrived before their shout reached Yue Yang, “The swarms of insects are coming, we need to go to the teleportation gate quick!”

Below them, the miserable looking Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and company were running along the valley.

There were even more Black Winged Worms and Blood Sucking Mosquitoes in the sky, forming clouds of insects swarms. But the scariest thing was still that Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, its large body destroying everything in its path as it chased after Ye Kong and the others. The impact from its body shook the whole valley, causing chunks of rocks to turn into dust when it touches them with its horns. If it managed to catch up with Ye Kong and Fatty Hai, they would probably be turned into meat paste in an instant...

“What are you guys waiting for, open the teleportation scroll quickly!” Yue Yang almost sweated to death. Under such a dangerous circumstances, why are they still running here to find him?

“I have no problem with that, but Fatty Hai would need some time to activate the teleportation scroll.” Before Ye Kong even finished his words, Yue Yang had already taken out his Hui Jin Magic Blade and charged right at the furious Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle. On the other hand, Hui Tai Lang looked upwards as it gave a loud howl. Its whole body suddenly started emitting a Demon King-like demonic qi, threatening the swarms of insects and pressuring them from coming closer.

When everyone had teleported away, Yue Yang took Hui Tai Lang away from the head of the gigantic Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle and immediately teleported back.

At this time, a more terrifying swarm of insects had appeared in the sky. It was the parasitic Bee Swarm that liked to feed on young beasts...

Yue Yang thought that the Demon Abyss was indeed a terrifying place. It was no wonder that the monsters that grew in the Demon Abyss were all much stronger than the monsters in the Soaring Dragon Continent. The environment here was extremely harsh. Any monsters that managed to survive in this environment would naturally be the strongest.

“Very well, everyone has safely returned,” The tall girl saw that the five kids had all returned. Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others had also returned safely although they looked miserable as hell. As for Yue Yang, who returned last, she didn’t need to worry as Yue Yang’s battle capabilities were the reason that everyone had managed to survive in the first place. If not for him, their two little groups would probably have been completely wiped out.

“Hey noobie newbies, you guys are really late. I even managed to take a nap.” That arrogant guy ridiculed them ruthlessly. “Let’s see, what did you guys bring back with you? Your hands are all empty, haha, how could you even think of joining the Death Class with this kind of abilities?”

“Shi Lun, don’t be too much. You can show off in front of us again if you can win the Weekly Championship.” The tall girl’s face darkened, as she replied his ridicule with sarcasm.

“All of you shut up! We have to go to the Medicine Hall to send the medicines and complete our mission.” The black-armoured, eagle-eyed man suddenly bellowed strictly. In the Blackstone Square, the students of the Hell Class who were waiting immediately fell into their formation and walked towards the teleportation gate that the middle-aged doctor had opened. Yue Yang didn’t want to go at first. Such a thing like getting rewards from their work, he would rather leave it all to Fatty Hai, the ‘boss’. However, Princess Bei Bei pulled his hands and was adamant to bring him along. Unable to change this little royal loli’s mind, he could only follow along.

The Medicine Hall that they were teleported to was extremely large, it was at least ten times bigger than the Medicine Hall that Yue Yang had seen in the Tong Tian Tower.

Surrounding the Medicine Hall, there was a large square and three different buildings located in a triangular position with the Medicine Hall as the center.

When they were teleported, the first thing they saw was the huge number of people on the large square.

Most of them were soldiers.

There were also different students wearing different school uniforms. There were some wearing Shang Jing Academy's uniform, and some others that Yue Yang didn't recognize, but all of them were elites.

The whole ground was filled with injured soldiers. With simple estimations, one could clearly see there were at least three thousand people with one look.

Yue Yang secretly confirmed the suspicion in his heart. Indeed, not only Ivy Academy had dispatched their students to pick herbs, everyone who knew how to pick herbs had been dispatched to help. The number of injured soldiers that the Ivy Academy was responsible for was three hundred. If there wasn't enough Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid, then the soldiers that were under the Ivy Academy's responsibility would die due to failure in completing the mission. Yue Yang guessed that there shouldn't be many problems in completing the mission for the Ivy Academy, but what about the other Academies? Did they manage to reach their targets?

"Ivy Academy's students, please submit the herbs over here." A sweet-sounding female doctor welcomed them and led the Ivy Academy Hell Class' students to a benevolent, kind-looking old lady matron. Bowing slightly, she said, "Doctor, the Ivy Academy has come to submit the herbs. Seems like they have managed to

gather quite a few.”

“Very good. You are in charge of recording their achievements. Those with outstanding achievements will be given twice the reward from the Empire.” the old lady matron received every single medicinal plant and checked through them carefully.

Almost all of the Ivy Academy’s Hell Class students took out ten stalks, only five students didn’t manage to get ten and failed the mission.

However, the old lady matron still thanked them gratefully and said, “Every single Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid would be able to save one life. You guys have already done very well. Furthermore, you guys have all picked the right herbs, there are no mistakes or scraps. You are all extremely outstanding students, we hope that you will continue to do your best in the future...” This old lady matron had even given a passing mark on the Point Cards for students who hadn’t reached the target.

Her actions caused some people on the side to protest. There was a guy from Shang Jing Academy who stood up and criticized loudly, “Doctor, this is not fair. Why didn’t you give me a passing mark even though I have completed the requirements of the mission? They didn’t even manage to reach the quota, why do you give them a passing mark?”

“Young one, I thought you had known the reason yourself... Do you know why? That’s because they didn’t cheat. You must be willing to help people from your own heart when you are helping someone, and not simply for the sake of completing a mission.

Although you did submit ten stalks of Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchids, you had asked others to help you gather them. When you put herbs that were picked with different methods together, although you can't see any problems with it on the outside, it would affect the medicinal herbs quality later on. Luckily you didn't mix too much, otherwise they might even be useless. Student, I hope that you will remember that being honest is the foundation for saving lives. For the herbs that you have brought back with much trouble, I would like to thank you for your contribution on behalf of the wounded soldiers. However, as a doctor, I can't give you a passing mark." the old lady matron's words made that guy deeply ashamed and embarrassed.

Yue Yang saw that the records were recorded in different signboards according to students from different Academies. Most of the Academies had picked up around 200 stalks each.

The only different one was Shang Jing Academy, who had gathered more than 500 stalks.

There were also herbs gathered by elite soldiers who totalled up to around 100 stalks... Looking at these results, Yue Yang couldn't help but sigh in his heart. There were three thousand poisoned soldiers, and they had not even gathered 1000 stalks of herbs. What would the remaining 2000 soldiers do?

Could it be that other than the Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid, there was no other way at all?

The White Jade Beetle's pure energy was extremely effective to disperse demonic qi, would it be effective in curing poisons....? Yue

Yang entered into a deep thought.

Chapter 131 – Old Soldier, Undying Battle Spirit!

On the recording signboard, the names of the Academy and students were listed and ranked. For both, the Academy Ranking and Student Ranking Board, Shang Jing Academy was listed as one of the top.

Shang Jing Academy gathered five hundred and two herbs, its records far surpassing other academies. Even the total amount gathered by the herb-gathering teams could not measure up to the quantity gathered by Shang Jing Academy.

The top name on the Student Ranking Board was Yan Po Jun. Yue Yang saw that this guy had actually gathered about forty-five Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchids, looks like he was considerably knowledgeable in the study of medicinal herbs. Next was Feng Qi Sha, with thirty-six herbs at number two. As for that fellow Xue Tan Lang, Yue Yang realised that he was martial arts-obsessed, and had limited knowledge in medicinal herb research, and had picked only ten herbs, barely passing the assignment...

“Yan Po Jun... Yan Po Jun picked forty-five herbs?” The Ivy Academy students, who were queuing to hand over their herbs also discovered this ranking board, and an uproar was instantly caused.

“So cool! Just as what you would expect from the Three Great Killing Stars!” For a moment, all the girls’ eyes sparkled like little stars.

“This arrogant fellow...” Fatty Hai was extremely jealous.

“The few of you, what are you doing here with both hands empty?” The boy who was criticised just now saw that Yue Yang, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were empty-handed and could not help but sneer at them. “You guys can’t even gather one herb? Just as expected from students of Ivy Academy, tsk tsk tsk. Ivy Academy’s students are just of that standard.”

“Our standards, no matter how low, will never involve us cheating. Do you think you guys, as students from Shang Jing Academy, are outstanding like that? Good, all of you are excellent, each and every one of you are experts at cheating.” The tall girl laughed coldly.

“How can you talk like that?” On hearing this, the two companions behind that boy seemed to react as if a nail had been pierced their feet, glaring with anger.

“Want to fight?” The robber girl who had previously picked the herbs the fastest walked out. With eyes as cold as daggers, she tightened her gaze and glared at the few students from Shang Jing Academy. “I can entertain you any time.”

“Enough, get lost after you hand over the herbs, don’t stir trouble here.” The eagle-eyed guy shouted sternly. At this moment, the Shang Jing Academy students who had surrounded them on all sides backed down. Before leaving, the boy who had cheated left harsh words for them. “Ivy Academy students, remember, we’ll meet again at the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament. At that time it will be obvious who is superior and

who is inferior. Today you have your teacher covering up your shortcomings, when it comes to the competition, let's see whether he can still protect you all. As long as trash like you all dare to step into the arena, let's see if I (oresama) won't beat all of you down."

"This is practically bullshit, how could cheating fellows still dare to strut around here?" Fatty Hai was so angry that his nose was almost askew.

"I don't wish to talk to trash who will be beaten down after ten seconds in the arena..." That boy completely treated Fatty Hai with contempt, leaving with his nose high up in the air.

"Don't block me, I want to beat him up, all of you don't stop me." Fatty Hai was indignant. He rolled up his sleeves for battle, posing as if he was about to rush up to stake all and fight the other party like irreconcilable adversaries.

"Pighead, it's not that I want to put you down, but given your strength, you completely can't measure up to him at all. I reckon that you will persist for at most ten seconds in his hands before going down. If you want to seek death go ahead, we will not stop you. Don't worry, when you die, I guarantee that I will help you clear your corpse." Ye Kong put him down ruthlessly. When Fatty Hai heard this he fell headfirst onto the ground. This was too embarrassing for him. He, the boss, was actually being looked down upon by his own underlings.

"No, perhaps after special training, Fatty Hai still has a chance to win if he really fights." Yue Yang shook his head, disagreeing.

“Special training?” Fatty Hai bounced up from the floor with one leap.

“This special training regimen is a little challenging. Ordinary people perhaps cannot take it, so never mind.” Yue Yang obviously had a low opinion of Fatty Hai’s ability to take hardship.

“What are you saying? I am born to this world for the purposes of special training! You think I am an ordinary person? Do normal people have an entire body of stout and strong muscles like me? Let me tell you that there is nothing in this world that cannot be done by me, Master Hai. Sometimes when I really get serious, let alone other people, even I, myself would be scared by my own capabilities. Isn’t it just a special training regimen? For me, it’s as easy as pie... Does this special training regimen involve me eating a bowl of simmer-fried meat everyday? Let me tell you that even though this is difficult, I dare to slap my chest and tell you that I have absolutely no problems with it.” Fatty Hai slapped his chest, stirring up tides of meat.

“Why am I friends with a pig, I really regret this.” Ye Kong covered his head with his hand, looking extremely dejected.

“Idiot.” The students of Ivy Academy hurriedly distanced themselves from Fatty Hai, in case other people misunderstood that they actually knew this fellow.

“Little classmate, all these... Were all these Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchids that you have gathered herbs that had

just blossomed?” The old lady matron who had been smiling calmly all this while, could not help but be moved when she saw Princess Qi Ming and Little Princess Bei Bei hand over their medicinal herbs. “Did these Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchids grow together in the hundreds? You guys must have found Black Eared Spheres. Children, all of you did very well, each of these herbs have medicinal value twice the normal effectiveness... I am grateful for you on behalf of the soldiers. Children, because of your great effort, you are about to save many more lives.”

“This time, you were lucky to succeed, but in commending you I must also raise my criticisms to you. This method is extremely dangerous, especially in a situation where you are short of sufficient defensive ability. To wait till the Black Eared Spheres blossom is a mistake.” The eagle-eyed guy dampened the uplifted spirits of Princess Qi Ming and company.

“Indeed, children, in the Demon Abyss, whichever rare medicinal herb blossoms or bears fruit will draw formidable beasts searching for prey to them. Children, it is dangerous to wait for the Black Eared Sphere to blossom. You are the future of the country. Even if our soldiers die, they would not wish to see young children like you sacrifice their previous lives to save them. Remember, children, what you should first think of should not be the completion of our mission. For completing missions, one must think first before acting, and evaluate whether you possess sufficiently strong abilities or capabilities to do so... All of you did well, but it makes me worry. I don’t wish to chide all of you, but I must remind you all that in future, you must be careful when completing your missions. When proceeding into the dangerous Demon Abyss, you must be a hundred times, a thousand times more cautious and prudent than completing your missions normally.” The old matron stood up, and successively kissed the

few children's faces, finally carrying Little Princess Bei Bei, tenderly advising them.

“We had our older brothers protecting us, they played a part in getting these medicinal herbs.” Little Princess Bei Bei pointed at Yue Yang, Ye Kong and company.

“Did they? I had guessed correctly indeed.” The old matron took measure of Yue Yang, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Clan Brothers successively. Finally, she returned her gaze to Yue Yang and nodded slightly. “You all did well, I will give each and every one of you a distinction. Also, I want to tell you guys, thank you so much for your trouble. Your performance is worthy of the title of elite humans.”

“.....” On hearing this, Fatty Hai was so moved, that his eyes brimmed with tears. It was the first time for him, who had been trash all his life, to hear such an honorable praise. His heart was so moved that he almost cried out.

“.....” Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers similarly felt their blood burning with anger.

Originally, they had thought that they would die of hunger in Tong Tian Tower. They didn't expect that after they met Yue Yang, they would not only not die of hunger, they would actually turn from useless rubbish into elite humans.

Of course, they were also clearly aware that there was still a disparity between their strength and elite humans' strength.

All this credit was hard-earned by Yue Yang.

But being a member of the small Yue Yang Team, they felt that there was a reason to feel proud and honoured.

Even though currently they were still not elite humans yet, they believed they would eventually be worthy of this glorious title in the future, especially under Yue Yang's leadership. They just needed to follow his footsteps closely and they will be able to stride to the very front of the elites.....Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers looked towards Yue Yang, with a proud blaze burning in their eyes, just like raging flames.

These words, they would never say out loud, but they would engrave them into their hearts and use their entire lives to achieve them.

“Are these medicinal herbs sufficient?” Yue Yang asked a question that all the students, including the Three Great Killing Stars, had not asked.

On hearing this, the old matron's had a slightly astounded expression on her face.

On the contrary, the black armoured eagle-eyed guy's expression was as if it was to be expected, because he had always been secretly observing Yue Yang. No matter whether Yue Yang was running his eyes over the injured, or looking at the recording signboard, or his subsequent reflections, all of them were taken in by the black

armoured eagle-eyed guy.

Earlier in the Demon Abyss, the eagle-eyed guy had discovered that Yue Yang was completely different from the masses, hence he had paid special attention to him.

With regards to the doubtful Yue Yang, the old matron first muttered herself slightly, then lightly shook her head. “Originally, the number of all the medicinal herbs did not reach a thousand. Adding the number that you Ivy Academy picked, which is four hundred plus, the total is one thousand three hundred and ninety herbs. Your last hundred plus herbs has twice the effectiveness of the normal herb, but it can only save about a thousand five hundred people. But the number of poisoned soldiers is over five thousand. Even the ones that you saw in the Square was already over three thousand poisoned soldiers..... ”

“Why not send more people to pick the herbs?” Yue Yang thought it was strange. Why did the army not dispatch more soldiers to gather the herbs?

“Other than the army doctors, how would the ordinary soldiers know how to pick the Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid? Besides, there isn’t much more Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchids to pick. Your harvest is already an unexpected pleasant surprise. To save these people, we gathered the most elite students of the few Academies. Bearing the gravest risk and sending you to the Demon Abyss is already the biggest gamble. To be honest, although I am a doctor who saves lives, I oppose this method of doing things, because once the Demon Army discovers this, you will most likely be completely wiped out. All of you are the future

of Da Xia Empire. We shouldn't use you as a gamble. However, this is an order by His Majesty, so we could only nod and agree... Luckily, all of you have returned safely. Children, you do not need to feel guilty, you have all already did very well. The soldiers that we saved and their families, will be very grateful for your help. As for the remaining soldiers whom we cannot save, I will think of a way. Hopefully we will be able to keep them alive and let them see their loved ones one more time before they die." The old matron's voice was filled with pity, as if she was seeing her own loved ones on the verge of passing out.

"For the remaining three thousand people who cannot be saved, how do we choose them? They are also soldiers, is it by drawing lots or according to their achievements? " Yue Yang thought that no matter who died and who lived, it was a difficult question of choice.

Who was willing to die in a situation where it is possible to be saved?

Who was willing to look on helplessly at other people being rescued, but die himself?

"It is difficult to choose, but the soldiers themselves already made their decisions earlier. The young soldiers, who are the only child in their families, who have just become a parent and those with aged parents can obtain priority treatment. The older soldiers, who have spent their entire lives on the battlefields, are willing to sacrifice themselves and be role models for the youngsters... Matters like these are not a first to us, and also will not be the last. Students, this is where the spirit of Da Xia Empire

lies. With the military soul not dead, it is precisely because generations after generations of people sacrificed themselves, the older soldiers have today's Da Xia Empire, and tomorrow's hope. When you all grow up and gain knowledge and experience about more things, then you will understand the older soldiers' wishes. If the humans of our Soaring Dragon Continent do not possess such noble sacrificial spirit, perhaps we would have fallen to the Demon Abyss." The old matron lastly nodded at Yue Yang, and said "Just like you guys risked your lives to protect the kids in gathering the herbs, your behaviour, and the choices made by the older soldiers, are essentially the same."

"The soldiers in the Square have voluntarily given up treatment, hence they are here in the Square waiting to say their last goodbyes to their families." The eagle-eyed guy suddenly added a sentence.

"....." At this moment, Yue Yang's heart felt deep respect for these people.

No wonder the soldiers on the entire Square looked quite old, individually they were old people with grizzled white hair. So it turns out that they were the old soldiers who voluntarily chose to sacrifice themselves.

Yue Yang was overwhelmed by their sacrificial spirit.

In front of life and death, how many people could do this? In China, there were countless incidents of people simply standing by and watching, saying it's 'none of my business', not assisting even as one sees death in front of them. All the different sorts of coldness and detachedness in the society had sealed Yue Yang's

heart off tightly. What he saw was a lot of ingratitude, betrayal and repaying kindness with violence. What he saw the most was vile people making threatening gestures and kind-hearted people weeping bitter tears... All sorts of despicable, gloomy incidents such as bumping into fragile items, death by depression, death by nightmare, entrapment, hitting people without seeing blood and related things like that, made Yue Yang's heart tremble in cold.

(Yunichan: what Yue Yang means by 'bumping into fragile items' is the practice of how merchants of porcelain antiques sometimes place their most fragile items at certain positions of their roadside stalls so that passers-by will easily knock into them, hence getting them to pay for them. As for 'hitting people without seeing blood', it's usually an expression of getting an advantage out of somebody without having to resort to physical violence. What Yue Yang is referring here are basically unscrupulous methods of harming others mostly to reap benefits for oneself.)

Kindness? Honesty?

Aren't these things precisely the weaknesses that were preyed on and used by some people to their advantage?

He had always thought that the spirit of sacrificing oneself for others had already been spurned by people. Only idiots would do something like that.

Learning from Lei Feng to do good deeds, was something that was indeed present in the past. Now if anybody tried to do selfless deeds, that was equivalent to courting death..... Of course there would still be people who do that, but what they get from it was mostly tears of pain and suffering. For example, if one were to see

a hit and run robbery and stepped forward bravely to defend the weak, one would be stabbed by a knife. Even the person who was being robbed would not see this as an heroic action for a just cause and would probably even think that this fellow was meddling in other people's business. Another example, if one were to help an old woman, one must pay a great number; If one were to find a wallet and gave it to the authorities, one would immediately be suspected of hiding and keeping a part of it for oneself

(Yunichan: Lei Feng was made into a model of altruism and dedication to the CCP by propaganda from 1963 onwards.)

After travelling dimensions, he came to the Soaring Dragon Continent.

Yue Yang discovered that the world here was entirely different from the one he had known.

It was extremely normal to behave just as he was in China, but after coming here, he had become a 'weirdo'... He was a weirdo for always protecting himself, not letting himself be harmed and always protecting his own interests first. In China, Yue Yang believed that the people, who thought like himself, were practically innumerable. But in Soaring Dragon Continent it was the opposite, Fourth Aunt could reduce her family fortune to zero for him and use the thousand jin of gold that she had saved up for countless years to seek and buy a [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill] for her adopted son. She even left her own daughter with no money to learn skills.

If Fourth Aunt could do all that for her family, then what about these old soldiers?

Each of these old soldiers were blood-soaked from their battles and had rolled about in piles of corpses. They have come back alive with great difficulty. Yet in the final life-and-death crossroad they did not hesitate to choose to sacrifice themselves for other people... to give away the opportunity for them to save themselves to other people, to young people who were total strangers but with more hope.

If he did not see this with his own eyes, Yue Yang would absolutely not believe that this would be true.

China also used to have this practice of sacrificing oneself for others. There was an innumerable succession of heroes from the Yan Huang Tribe, hence the Flame of Wen Ming was able to extend its life and became the only one left burning in the Four Big Wen Ming Ancient Empires.

In Soaring Dragon Continent, for Da Xia Empire to be able to stand for thousands of years and not fall, it should be because of the longstanding existence of such spirit.

Precisely because of the devotion and sacrifices made by the predecessors.

That's the reason why later generations could grow and multiply and hand down from generation to generation

"Let's go, we have already done our best." The eagle-eyed guy patted Yue Yang's shoulder, and waved and commanded the

students of Death Class. “Everybody return to the academy, we will continue training tomorrow. Competition is cruel in this way, if you do not want to be knocked out of the race by natural selection, then you must be stronger than anybody else and more outstanding than everybody else.”

Yue Yang took huge steps, while following the procession to leave the place, he took measure of the surrounding poisoned soldiers.

He discovered that although these old soldiers had dark coloured facial complexion, their expressions bore some calmness and even pride.

Many soldiers surrounded them, helping these old soldiers change into brand new military uniforms. Some of the old soldiers' chest were filled with all sorts of medals, as dazzling as the stars. Yue Yang saw numerous medical personnel carrying bowls of Farewell Wine to them, handing them over to the hands of the old soldiers one by one. Even for those who were injured so badly that they could not hold the bowl, the medical personnel wet their fingers with the wine and lightly dabbed it on their lips, with eyes brimming with tears.

“General... ” A few soldiers put on a gold and dazzling General badge for an old person with his head and beard grizzled and white. One of them, who was the youngest in age, suddenly had red eyes and started to wipe his tears.

“Brat, what are you bawling for. Get lost. Don't make me lose face. I already got my money's worth.” The old man's voice was weak, but it was still as imposing as a lion.

“General, you cannot just die like this. You still need to lead us to continue fighting. If you’re gone, what are we supposed to do?” That youngest soldier started to cry bitterly.

“I am already tired. I don’t wish to fight anymore. Now I just want to take a comfortable nap. For so many years, I have never rested before. Everyday I am fighting battles here or there. I got an entire pile of medals, but I never even had the time to sleep a complete nap. All because of you brats, making me worry the entire time. Vexing me everyday and only after great difficulty have I transformed you all from cowards to true soldiers. All these years I am really exhausted... All of you do your jobs well. Don’t make me lose face. Otherwise, even if I am buried under the ground, I will still kick your butts... Give me the wine. Since the last time I heeded that goddamn doctor to give up drinking, I haven’t drunk a drop of wine in three months. Now that I am about to die, I don’t care anymore. Give me all the wine. At death’s door I want to be a hearty drunkard, haha.” When the old fellow changed into the general’s uniform, Yue Yang saw that his body was thickly dotted with wounds and injuries. Some of the injuries were terrifying, with the cuts so deep one could see the underlying bone.

A poisoned general actually couldn’t get treatment?

Of course that was impossible. If it was not it being him who refused treatment personally, the first in priority to be treated was probably him.

But why did he reject the treatment? Was it really just to give the

young people a chance and that he would rather sacrifice himself?

Yue Yang was a little curious and he could not help but stride over, asking “Are you really a general?”

On hearing this, the old fellow was astonished. Then he laughed out loud involuntarily and asked in reply. “Young fellow, you don’t know me? Well, well. That brat, Jun Wu You had even praised me and said that no man does not know me or haven’t heard of me in the entire Da Xia Empire. I knew that that fellow was just exaggerating, his purpose is to trick people into haplessly give their lives into working for him. Luckily I did not become very self-satisfied by his words. Otherwise, my face would be lost a lot by now.”

The black armoured eagle-eyed guy appeared behind Yue Yang and his voice had increased in reverence. “This is General Dao Feng, he is one of the Top Ten Generals in Da Xia Empire.”

“What Top Ten Generals. We all are just dead old fellows. If we were really so awesome, there wouldn’t be just me left alone from the ten of us. They had all gone. I really have had enough of living all alone for all these years. They are all enjoying being enshrined, worshipped and offered incense to in Military Soul Hall everyday, but here I am using this weary old body and fighting to my last breath. Even that fellow Yue Hai also threw in the towel and gave up. What do I even persevere for living in this hell everyday? Would letting people call me one of the Top Ten Generals, stop the pain of the wounds on my body? I can’t even drink even a cup of wine. There is simply no meaning in living like this. I might as well go to the nether world to gather together with those old

fellows... ” The old fellow’s name made Yue Yang a little distracted. This name of General Dao Feng, even he, being the guy who had travelled dimensions and had arrived at this place for not long ago, had heard of it.

General Dao Feng was one of the Top Ten Generals of Da Xia Empire and was also the last living one.

This old general’s age was unknown. It was said that he was already over two hundred years old and had the longest experience in the army. He had entered the army at eighteen years old to train and was promoted to General at forty. Then he had continuously fought till now and achieved many meritorious deeds and contributions for society. His legend was so long that even a few books could not finish covering it.

Originally with his achievements and capabilities, he was more than up to the task to become the Empire’s [Grand Marshal](#) of the entire Military Forces.

But the strange thing was that he had rejected the promotion to become the Grand Marshal ten times and insisted on just being a General. The reason behind this was was unknown to everybody. Only Jun Wu You the Da Xia Emperor and Elder Yue Hai, who had strongly recommended him for promotion to Grand Marshal, knew why. This General Dao Feng practically had the existence of a living fossil in Da Xia Empire and was also a fortunate general at the same time. He had escaped from desperate situations alive countless of times. He had fought a thousand battles in his life and had never experienced a total defeat. Even in the nastiest of environments and under a crushing defeat, he would still be able

to preserve the maximum strength of his subordinate Dao Feng Legion.

Dao Feng Legion was personally set up, organised and trained by him and can be said to be one of the Three Great Legions of Da Xia Empire.

It was hard to imagine, that such a legendary person would actually reject treatment, leaving the opportunity of living for his subordinates and soldiers, and lie on the Square himself waiting for death

“Why? Isn’t it better to live? Without you around, who is going to lead your soldiers into battle? Do you really feel assured in handing over Dao Feng Legion to others?” Yue Yang discovered that he really had the innate gift of being a gossipy paparazzi.

“I am about to die, what do I care?” The old fellow was very open-minded.

“What if you can continue living?” Yue Yang paused, asking.

“Actually I am sick of living. If I want to live, I can still live now... But who in the world will not die in the end? To live till two hundred years old and still be stuck fighting wars, is too much of a shitty life for me. I am a soldier, an old soldier, I should die with glory on the battlefield. I don’t want to die on a comfortable bed... This war, even though the Demon Abyss finished off about three thousand of my subordinates, but I had also not lost entirely. I killed off about thirty thousand of their soldiers and also

slaughtered two of their Demon Generals. So now even if I die, it doesn't matter anymore. If I waited till I am so old that I can't even carry my sword, then got myself killed off by a greenhorn, that is what I call pathetic." The old fellow struggled to sit. First gazing into the distance, then his gaze travelled to look at Yue Yang. "Young fellow, I understand your thoughts. Don't you just want to beat me unconscious and then secretly heal me? This trick is useless on me... Leave. For an old soldier to die in glory is the best final destination for me."

Yue Yang who had Level 3 [Divine Vision] could see the truth.

This old man, this famous General Dao Feng, other than being poisoned, he also had even more severe injuries.

Originally, he already had an aged body. With the addition of the multiple injuries and scars from the battle, his strong body had become extremely weak. Yet he had also received a fatal blow by the enemy. All of his internal organs were suffering from serious injuries and poison. For him, even if the poison was completely purged, his body could probably not last for more than a month.

This was probably the real reason why the old fellow rejected the medicinal treatment.

After knowing the truth, an odd feeling suddenly arose in Yue Yang's heart. Was it really impossible to treat?

White Jade Beetle plus Innate Qi could at the same time purging the poison and also help the body recover from wounds.

Using Innate Qi to make a breakthrough on the understanding of the study of medicinal science, was probably now. This was the best chance, in any case one could just administer treatment to an almost dead horse like treating an alive horse. Yue Yang thought that perhaps, he himself could try...

Chapter 132 – If You Want To Fight, I'll Fight!

Based on his heart and character, Yue Yang was definitely not a noble person. Saving others bravely without caring about his own safety, standing up bravely for justice, and sacrificing himself to help another were things that Yue Yang would distance himself far away from.

At any point of time, the first thing he would consider would be himself.

Afterwards, he would then think of Fourth Mother, Yue Bing and such other relatives.

For his own secret, he would lie to his relatives, using white lies to cover for himself.

For his close ones, he would raise his blade and kill his way through to the Yue Clan's Castle, making enemies out of the Yue Clan, one of the Four Great Clans in the world. Even if the whole world became his enemy, he would not hesitate.

However, if it was for some unknown stranger that he was not acquainted with...

Even if these people were highly respectable or mighty, Yue Yang would not treat them the same.

He would acknowledge the devotion that the veterans had shown and praise their attitude for staking their lives on the frontlines. He would even admire them from the bottom of his heart for their soul-shaking feats that made people's blood boil. However, that did not mean that he would do such a thing. Not to mention that he did not have the ability to rescue all three thousand odd soldiers, even if he did, Yue Yang would not dare to do something so grand when he did not have full self-confidence in his own strength right now... If Yue Yang was already the strongest in the world and could heal all three thousand men with a wave of his hand, then perhaps he would do it. But the current him did not possess that level of power yet.

The world was filled with various kinds of competitions where only the strongest would survive.

This was natural selection after all. Yue Yang did not want to ruin it, and he did not have the ability to ruin it as of his current state.

He could not change the fate of others. The only thing that he could change was himself. He had to become the victor in the struggle for survival, so that he could grow stronger than anyone else. This was the only way for him to be able to take charge of his own life, and have the ability to protect his own kin.

Under the urging of the black-armoured eagle-eyed man, Yue Yang walked forward and left.

But after walking a few steps, Yue Yang stopped again.

“General Dao Feng, if you really need it, I can perhaps try to heal your wounds, or I could also try to heal a few people whom you have selected. I must say first that I don’t know any medical arts.” Yue Yang was already leaving, but he eventually turned back and stood in front of that Old General. The words he spoke was not out of respect, nor was it because he was moved by the Old General. It was rather because Yue Yang suddenly felt that he was not just a war machine that followed his own principles as his highest order, but instead a human with flesh and blood.

He might not be able to execute some things perfectly like a machine, and it might not be a must for him to do it.

But at the very least, he had to have the heart to try and do it.

Sometimes, Yue Yang felt that he was pretty complex and contradicting. However, he felt that it was more interesting to live as he pleased.

He could still have his own principles, but it did not mean that he had to follow it all the way to the very deepest darkest end.

After all, even if he asked, the other party might not accept... This was just his kind feelings for the other party.

The Old General waved his hands, laughing out loud. “Very good. I’ve understood your heart! Hahaha! I did not think that I would be able to meet such an interesting kid before I die. I’m really going to die of laughter here. If you don’t know medical arts, how can you

save others? However, I understand and I'm very happy that this is something that is different between humans and demons. If a Demon General collapsed onto the ground, without any chance of being saved, the demons in the demon abyss would eat the dying Demon General away without a trace of hesitation, turning the energy of the Demon General into their own energy... To be honest, that way would be more reasonable. However, I still prefer the foolish behaviour of us humans. Haha, little kid. I'll be honest with you. Dying doesn't matter much at all. Do you know how many people have died in the battlefield since the ancient ages? If you've gone up to the battlefield and saw the millions of foot soldiers falling in front of you, layer upon layer, with corpses piling up as high as hills, would your heart not be numbed after that...? Where would there be a battle without casualties? If humans wish to survive, they must compete, and they must fight. Death is also a part of the competition. Although the three thousand of us were dying from poisoning, acting as a living bait, we have successfully baited tens of thousands of demons. We did not die in vain! Long before we baited the enemy here, we had already known this would happen... So, don't worry. Let us old folks leave in peace. We're already old and we can't do much more for the country. This is our final honour."

"..." Yue Yang was silent after hearing this.

"Little kid, if you don't want to be eliminated like us in the process of natural selection, then remember one thing. Become strong, stronger than anyone else." The Old General bestowed Yue Yang with his last words.

Yue Yang nodded his head slightly. After pondering for a long time, he finally came in front of the old lady matron.

(Shiro: calling the old lady matron – Old Lady Doctor from here on, sorry for the name change)

He took the White Jade Beetle out from his backpack, and softly asked, “Doctor, I found this in the Demon Abyss. Could you tell me what this is?”

The Old Lady Doctor’s expression immediately changed when she saw it. She quickly told Yue Yang to keep the White Jade Beetle. “Little kid, don’t ever use this to save people! This is a terrifying kind of insect! It looked exactly like a Golden Holy Beetle on the outside, and also could be used for healing and detoxification. However, within its body, a terrible Demon has been sealed inside. Not even some of the strongest, peak rankers can kill it. These Demons can reincarnate through certain methods, so in order to stop them from reincarnating, some peak rankers would seal their opponents within various items or creatures.”

Yue Yang jumped when he heard this. “Seal?”

He immediately thought of Empress Fei Wen Li, the Serpent Queen who was sealed within his Black Jade Pendant Necklace. Her strength was unimaginably powerful.

Even if she did not have a corporeal form, her abilities were sufficient to send Yue Yang out of the black hole.

He did not think that other than the Black Jade Pendant Necklace, there would be another strong entity sealed within this

White Jade Beetle as well... Thankfully he did not use it to save people, or it would have been a disaster. Thinking of this, Yue Yang secretly broke out in cold sweat.

If he had released a human peak ranker, then it might have been fine. But, if he released a demon peak ranker, it would have been a big laughing matter.

How could this White Jade Beetle, that seemed so harmless on the surface, be so terrifying in reality?

“My teacher had brought up the topic of the Warrior’s Seal a long time ago. They are split into five layers. The first and foremost layer is an animal-type. The seal itself must absorb the energy from the target animal to be sustained for long periods, just like your White Jade Beetle. Following that is the plant-type, treasure-type, crystal-type and space-type... The most terrifying seal is said to be the space-type. I cannot imagine how powerful the peak ranker must be to create a space like a black hole, throw his opponent inside, then seal the black hole and cause his opponent to be in a state of ruin forever. Aside from killing the person who created the seal himself, no other kind of power can break through this type of space. This type of everlasting, unbreakable Sealing Art was called the ‘Nirvana Seal’. As for the seal on the White Jade Beetle, it is called a ‘Soul Imprisonment’. Usually, at the 8th floor of Tong Tian Tower and above, strong Rankers who had defeated their opponents will normally use this method to eliminate their opponents...” As the Old Lady Doctor said this, Yue Yang broke out in cold sweat again. The seal that was applied on Empress Fei Wen Li seemed to be the highest-grade space-type seal – ‘Nirvana Seal’.

“What do we have to do to kill the sealed Demon inside?” Yue Yang quickly asked for the way.

“Before the Ranker who created the seal uses up his energy, I don’t know of any other way to kill it. However, if you can wait until the Ranker who created the seal uses up his energy, this White Jade Beetle will probably die out, and the sealed Demon inside will die along with it. This is why, it is best to prevent it from absorbing energy from its surroundings and refrain from using it to save people. Otherwise, once the power of the seal is used up, then the sealed devil will escape from inside.” The Old Lady Doctor’s words made Yue Yang felt like he had picked up a piping hot sweet potato. He could neither throw it nor keep it.

Suddenly, a white teleportation light flashed.

A middle-aged warrior whose whole body was shining with splendid rings of light flew over. His voice growled deeply like thunder as he shouted, “Everyone, leave this place now!”

The face of the Old Lady Doctor darkened and muttered, “Elder Tian Suo? Did His Majesty went to beg the Floating Mist Sect again? Seems like this time, the treasure of the Empire, the ‘White Dragon Pearl’, have fallen into the hands of the Floating Mist Sect... Sigh, it looks like the Floating Mist Sect will become much stronger. Da Xia is in danger...”

“Tian Suo, why are you here? This old folk doesn’t need your treatment, hurry up and scram!” The Old General started swearing loudly.

“It was your Da Xia Emperor who came to beg for help from Sect Leader Bai Yun! It was only because the Sect Leader had taken pity on you did he send me here. Do you think I’m that willing to save trash like you? All of you, regardless of who you are, leave now! I will only use a single holy light summon, whether you are saved by it is none of my concern!” The middle-aged warrior arrogantly smiled and answered. Following this, he let loose a thunderous roar that shook the body and hearts of everyone present and made their heads buzzed.

“I already said, we don’t need your treatment, scram!” The Old General angrily struggled. He wanted to stand up, but his own soldiers held hot tears in their eyes, pressing him down with their lives.

“Dao Feng, two hundred years have passed. Do you see what you have become? Did you think that you were still the invincible General Dao Feng you were last time? You are just a miserable old dog now. Even a single finger of mine is much stronger than you. Do you think you can roar at me like you did last time? Two hundred years have passed, have you not learnt to respect the strong? It doesn’t matter, I will forgive you. It’s my own fault for making you my friend last time.” The middle-aged warrior who was sparkling with rings of light, Elder Tian Suo, first summoned a Platinum Grimoire, and then another huge Golden Drum. He swung a drumstick and hit the Golden Drum once.

With a rumbling sound, all the soldiers present fainted onto the ground.

Even Yue Yang felt that his head was hit hard by someone. His ears felt a stabbing pain and his head was ringing.

This Golden Drum used a different method to achieve the same results as the Banshee Scream that the Bloody Queen could use. They both used sound waves to subdue their enemy. However, this was different from the Bloody Queen's scream. The Bloody Queen could not keep her Banshee Scream up for long. Also, the more injuries she sustained, the higher the power of the scream.

The Golden Drum was a treasure. As long as Elder Tian Suo had enough spiritual qi, then the drum could be played endlessly. It could continue on forever without losing its power.

Aside from the Old Lady Doctor, the eagle-eyed man and Yue Yang, everyone present, including the wounded Old General Dao Feng, fell onto the ground. The weakest soldiers already had blood flowing out of their ears, and fainted from serious injuries.

“Are you here to save people or to kill people?” The eagle-eyed man furiously took out his greatsword and pounced towards Elder Tian Suo.

“You are challenging with only your abilities? You're not even my match.” Elder Tian Suo's rings of light flickered on his face and he arrogantly smiled.

He summoned a white python that shot out from the sky.

At the same time, its mouth opened wide, intending to devour the eagle-eyed man in one gulp.

Meeting the attack in midair, the eagle-eyed first instinct was to leap high, rose up and dodged the python's deadly mouth. He did not think that the white python would be extremely cunning. Since it had failed on swallowing him whole, it immediately swept its huge tail towards him and sent the eagle-eyed man flying with its terrifying force. The eagle-eyed man crashed with a loud boom onto a wall, causing the walls of the Medicine Hall to fall. His crash had broken the pillar midway as his body fell onto the hill rock on the other side.

However, although that Silver-ranked Level 8 Giant Python had successfully hit him, it still chased after him without giving him an ounce of mercy.

Elder Tian Suo looked at the Old Lady Doctor. "My conditions for saving the people is to take your life. So, you can die now."

The Old Lady Doctor calmly smiled. "I had long guessed that you would propose these conditions. You've always been that kind of person who would kill as much as you wanted when the opportunity came. Elder Tian Suo, no matter how strong you are, you will never become a candidate for climbing the way to become a peak Ranker. Because, you don't have a true heart of a Ranker."

"Stop talking nonsense! It doesn't matter what you say, you're going to die today for sure anyway!" Elder Tian Suo summoned a monster with its lower half like fog, and ordered it to fly towards the Old Lady Doctor. The Old Lady Doctor smiled softly and shook

her head slightly, as she closed her eyes. She met it without resistance, only closing her eyes and waiting for death. The Fog Monster did not instantly kill the Old Lady Doctor but. Rather, it emitted great amounts of white fog, engulfing her in it. It looked like he was planning to use the most cruel method to slowly choke her to death...

Finally, Elder Tian Suo used a quarter of his vision to sweep across the field. He saw Yue Yang and seemed to be slightly curious as to how a worm-like weakling could still stand properly.

Yue Yang would definitely not wait for his death.

No matter what kind of opponent he faced, including demons like Demon King Ha Xin or Lich King Grun, he would definitely not back down.

Yue Yang knew that this was the strongest enemy he had ever faced out of all his human opponents. This fellow used saving lives as an excuse to kill off a few elderlies from the Da Xie Empire like the Old General Dao Feng and the Old Lady Doctor... As for himself, he was just a person who saw something that he should not have seen. He was just a passerby whom Elder Tian Suo must kill to eliminate all witnesses.

Seeing Yue Yang slowly raising up his Hui Jin Magic Blade, a grim battle aura enveloping him, Elder Tian Suo laughed loudly.

“Did I see wrongly? Instead of taking your own life, you are thinking of fighting back?” Elder Tian Suo, who was covered in a

splendid aura, seemed to have seen the most hilarious thing in the world as he laughed loudly.

“If you want to fight, I’ll fight!” Yue Yang coldly snorted. Purple flames enveloped his Hui Jin Magic Blade.

“A student from an academy wants to challenge me? I really can’t help but admire the idiotic courage you have, little worm! Die!” Elder Tian Suo summoned an Ox-head Warrior holding a bloodied axe, then gave the command, “Cut this little worm into 18 pieces, not a single piece more, not a single piece less.”

Yue Yang had seen many arrogant people, but he really had not seen before someone as arrogant as this strong Elder Tian Suo.

Yue Yang smiled at the corner of his mouth. The more arrogant the enemy was, the more they would belittle him and the higher his chances of victory would be.

Hui Tai Lang was furious and roared towards the sky.

The demonic qi in its body exploded, and black flames spewed out. Its vigor was as if a Demon King had descended. Although it was only Silver-ranked Level 4, it did not care about the difference in levels and released its pressure directly against the Silver-ranked Level 6 Ox-head Warrior...

The Ox-head Warrior was actually scared by Hui Tai Lang initially, taking a step back. However, immediately after that,

upon finding out that Hui Tai Lang's levels were far below his own, it angrily roared.

With a rumbling sound, the Ox's hooves shattered the rock surface of the Square and rushed towards Hui Tai Lang, leaving a line of broken rocks.

Yue Yang shot up angrily into the air at the same time, meeting the Ox-head Warrior who was about to swing its axe down in midair wildly. He crashed right into the Ox-head Warrior, not holding back at all, desiring to inflict grave injuries to it with a single hit. He unleashed Xiao Wen Li's Inherent Skill [Binding Chains] instantly, restricting the movements of the Ox-Head Warrior. With his right hand swinging his Hui Jin Magic Blade, he created purple flames that enveloped the entire sky, concealing himself from the opponent's view. His [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi shot out violently from his right hand, mercilessly piercing through the point between the eyes of the Ox-head Warrior...

Chapter 133 – I'll Send You Back To The West

Although Yue Yang could not instantly kill the Silver-ranked Level 6 Ox-head Warrior, his cold-hearted attack caused both of its two big red eyes to burst at the same time.

In mid air, the Ox-head Warrior who had lost its momentum and had both of its eyes destroyed was beaten black and blue by the Hui Tai Lang who had leapt towards him. Hui Tai Lang's sharp teeth dug into the legs of the Ox-head Warrior. It borrowed the strength from the momentum of its body, and together with its explosive power, it collided into the Ox-head Warrior, flinging it far away. This move was the result of the special training that Hui Tai Lang had received from Yue Yang after he learned about the weaknesses of various beasts.

The further away the beast was from its master, the weaker the effect of its master's control.

If the movements of a brute beast like the Ox-head Warrior were perfectly controlled by its master, then its battle prowess would be much greater, as if one were adding wings to a tiger.

Conversely, if it failed to receive the commands that the beast's master sent out, along with not possessing a pair of eyes that it previously depended on, it would become a blind beast as well, and the Ox-head Warrior's combat ability would inevitably suffer a great loss.

The Ox-head Warrior fell onto the ground and immediately

jumped back up furiously.

Both of its eyes had burst and blood was overflowing. However, its powerful body still possessed extremely high combat abilities.

“So it wasn’t a Guardian Beast after all... Die.” Yue Yang had even thought that the Ox-head Warrior was a Guardian Beast initially. Who would have known that Elder Tian Suo did not have any control over this crazy Ox-head Warrior. The killing intent on Yue Yang’s face grew thicker, and with his figure like a phoenix descending from the ninth heaven, he kicked the face of the Ox-head Warrior, causing it to fly roughly ten meters away. The Ox-head warrior was completely furious now. It swung its axe wildly, but how could it cut the ever moving and gracefully drifting Yue Yang while being blind?

“Awoooo... “ Hui Tai Lang snarled. With a thunderous power, it smashed itself against the waist of the Ox-head Warrior again, knocked him back another ten odd metres.

Yue Yang and Hui Tai Lang worked together as they assaulted the Ox-head Warrior, completely ignoring Elder Tian Suo. Elder Tian Suo was so angry that his face was completely distorted.

Within ten seconds, the Ox-head Warrior was knocked back over a hundred metres by Yue Yang and Hui Tai Lang’s joint force.

At the side of the treatment center was a hundred-meter tall cliff. Elder Tian Suo saw it, and instantly understood his opponent’s battle plan. They had planned to first take out the eyes of the Ox-

head Warrior, and then knock it down the tall cliff. Elder Tian Suo summoned two strengthening-type beasts in a row, and applied their buffs onto his body. Then, he raised his greatsword and pounced towards them like thunder. “You rat, don’t think you can get away with this!”

Facing the sky that was full of blade radiance, Yue Yang’s expression remained calm as he tossed out an object.

This was the item that he had taken from the Lich Suo Ge; the Sphere of Certain Death Dimension! As long as it shattered, this treasure could be used to teleport the user and the enemy into the Battlefield of Certain Death.

When Yue Yang faced this Elder Tian Suo who was as arrogant as a person could be, his heart had already secretly formulated a plan for murder. If Elder Tian Suo did not have the protection from his grimoire’s barrier, Yue Yang knew that killing this guy would be an extremely easy task. But, as long as he abandoned this protection and placed his body at risk, then his time of death would immediately approach.

This Elder Tian Suo was definitely a valiant warrior who specialised in strengthening-type beasts. Yue Yang estimated that his beasts were not any weaker than the Gold-ranked “Mother Earth Bear” within Elder Yue Hai’s body.

It was highly possible that he could have the combat ability of a Level 7 [Overlord] like Da Xia’s Emperor Jun Wu You.

This fellow was definitely a difficult opponent. Compared to Yue Feng's instructor, Elder Ming, his strength was a few times higher.

Yue Yang had heard before that under Sect Leader Bai Yun, the Floating Mist Sect still had Two Great Higher Elders and Four Great Elders. He reckoned that this Elder Tian Suo, who was so powerful and could even completely disregard the Da Xia Empire, was most likely one of the four Great Elders. If he did not use his [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi, then it would be very difficult for him to defeat this fellow. However, if the opponent did not die after he used his Innate Sword Qi and instead managed to escape, the fact that Yue Yang was an Innate Ranker would immediately be reported to Sect Leader Bai Yun.

Therefore, he had to die... Yue Yang reluctantly used the Sphere of Certain Death Dimension.

A purplish-black radiance scattered the moment his blades shattered the Sphere of Certain Death Dimension, and it was as if a shock wave was emitted as it diffused outwards.

As Elder Tian Suo was engulfed by the shock wave, he did not manage to jump out in time. His body had already been swept by the rays of light, and he completely disappeared into the Battlefield of Certain Death... Yue Yang vanished at the same time, but Hui Tai Lang on the contrary escaped, and he surprisingly jumped far away. When the teleportation was complete, it first baited the Ox-head Warrior to the edge of the cliff, then smashed itself into it with as much force as it could, causing it to fall down from the tall cliff. It ran back quickly, and pounced onto the Fog Monster which had wrapped the Old Lady Doctor in its fog. Without Yue Yang

here, it obviously would not be modest, and it immediately began its desert...

At the other side of the treatment centre, the eagle-eyed man raised his greatsword and slashed wildly at the White Python that had coiled itself around him.

However, that extremely cunning White Python used its tail to coil around the eagle-eyed man. As if it was spasming, it squirmed around violently. The eagle-eyed man's black armor was shattered, and his body was completely battered. Thankfully, his defense was exceptional, and the injuries he had suffered could not be considered very serious. His combat ability was still present.

There was a bitterness within the eagle-eyed man that could not be spoken out.

He was unable to summon his own beast because python-type beasts just so happened to be the nemesis of his beasts. He had to use his own strength to fight against this Silver-ranked Level 8 Giant Python.

In the Soaring Dragon Continent, the user of the Sphere of Certain Death Dimension would be teleported into the Battlefield of Certain Death along with the opponent.

The Battlefield of Certain Death was a little different from the Battlefield of Certain Death in the Demon Abyss.

The space here was larger and a little brighter. It was different from the darker Battlefield of Certain Death in the Demon Abyss, which was more advantageous for the demon race to battle in. The Battlefield of Certain Death was obviously more suited for the battles between human warriors.

“Good, what a good little rat!” Elder Tian Suo was definitely angry now. He felt humiliated, and this was the type of humiliation that came from realizing that he had been played with by someone else’s schemes.

“Old dog, are these your last words?” How would Yue Yang be courteous towards him? He instantly summoned the Bloody Queen and the Barbarian Cow Shadow.

“Bloody Queen? The Gold King Beast Bloody Queen?” With a single glance, Elder Tian Suo’s face warped. His heart shook greatly, and he could not believe that this young junior had summoned a Gold King Beast, a level that he was incapable of possessing. Jealousy welled up inside him, and the killing intent in his eyes grew even more intense. If he did not kill this kid now, his days would be spent with a great deal of misery.

Luckily, the level of the Bloody Queen was not that high, as she was only Gold-ranked Level 4.

Otherwise, nobody could be certain of today’s outcome.

The Bloody Queen flew high up in the sky, however, under Yue Yang’s control, the Barbarian Cow Shadow did not immediately

launch a head-on attack. Instead, it closely followed behind Yue Yang, waiting for an opportune moment to strike. As for the Thorny Flower, Xiao Wen Li and the Golden Beast, Yue Yang kept them in reserve, as he could use them as trump cards during a sneak attack.

Elder Tian Suo seemed to be extremely experienced in battle. He was unable to summon his grimoire again, but he did not put all of his beasts in his Platinum Grimoire.

(Shiro: sorry! mistake from previous chapter. Elder Tian Suo has a Platinum Grimoire.)

He took out a shining crystal and summoned a Bronze-ranked Level 7 Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast to fight against the Bronze-ranked Level 5 Barbarian Cow Shadow. As for the Bloody Queen, he summoned a Bronze-ranked level 7 Thunder Goblin Bat. This two-headed Goblin Bat that had a movement speed that was as quick as lightning, and could put up a fight against her. Elder Tian Suo had initially thought that Yue Yang would hide inside the shield instead of coming out, but who could have imagined that Yue Yang, against all of Elder Tian Suo's expectations, actually stored away his silver grimoire.

Seeing that Yue Yang stored away his grimoire, Elder Tian Suo laughed arrogantly. "Did you think that you could defeat me with just your Gold-ranked Level 4 Bloody Queen? What a joke!"

Yue Yang didn't reply. Instead, he raised the Hui Jin Magic Blade in his hands.

Purple flames shot up into the sky.

Elder Tian Suo also swung his blade ruthlessly and attacked, completely arrogant and confident in his own skills. Yue Yang disappeared like a wisp of smoke as he suddenly charged towards the Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast.

“Fool. You are seeking death.” Elder Tian Suo had thought that Yue Yang wanted to first greedily kill his Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast, then bring his own Barbarian Cow Shadow along to surround him and attack him together. He snorted in disdain as his blades suddenly moved, and they were as fast and fluid as quicksilver as they pursued Yue Yang’s figure closely.

As for that Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast, it raised its gigantic club and smashed its surroundings foolishly.

The Barbarian Cow Shadow in front of it avoided all of the attacks under the directions that Yue Yang gave her telepathically. The Great Massacring Blade in her hands hacked down heavily on the Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast’s waist, slicing a chunk of its rocks away. Yue Yang arrived and stepped on the Barbarian Cow Shadow’s back before leaping high up into the air. The Barbarian Cow Shadow also matched his move, and as she turned around, she used her hands to push Yue Yang’s body, making him fly up even further.

Yue Yang’s figure streaked across the sky like a meteor, shooting right into the Thunder Goblin Bat and the Bloody Queen who were fighting in the sky.

Elder Tian Suo's blade slashed into empty air. When he realized that the cunning little brat had already escaped, he roared angrily and lowered his body before leaping high up into the sky as well, chasing after Yue Yang like a fierce tiger.

He felt that as long as it was martial art skills, there definitely wasn't a single individual in the younger generation who could receive three of his moves, moreover, he even had the added strength from his two strengthening-type beasts. As long as he could land a single hit on that little brat, he would definitely be instantly killed.

But that little brat just had to slip away from death again and again, avoiding his attacks instead of facing them head on. This made Elder Tian Suo absolutely furious.

The Thunder Goblin Bat was not afraid of Yue Yang's attack at all. It was confident in its speed, and had already used its soundwave ability to probe its opponents' locations early on.

It first used its two heads to each shoot out a round electric sphere that buzzed with 'pipa' sounds. Then, with its giant wings, it created countless electrical waves as it flapped them around. The former attack was the Thunder Goblin Bat's natural ability, while the latter was an attack that Elder Tian Suo controlled. In Elder Tian Suo's eyes, as long as this cunning little brat touched just one of the electrical waves, he would immediately be electrocuted and paralysed before collapsing to the ground with no hopes of returning... Elder Tian Suo wasn't that confident that the electric attack could kill his opponent, but as long as this little brat's body

was paralysed, even if it was only for a second, his blade would be able to turn Yue Yang into a ghost...

“You came right on time.” Yue Yang’s Hui Jin Magic Blade suddenly rotated mysteriously.

He unleashed his [Spherical Beheader], the attack that he had gained insight to on his own. The Yin and Yang Twin Fish rotated as they chased each other.

The electric waves were cut through as soon as they touched this rotating blade. As for the two balls of electric charge, somehow, it mysteriously became the eyes of the Yin and Yang Twin Fish. The previously disarrayed electric waves in the sky were also absorbed by Yue Yang’s rotating blade, turning them into a beautiful, perfect circle. Under the control of Yue Yang’s right hand, the electric circle welcome’s Elder Tian Suo’s blade that was aimed at his back.

Elder Tian Suo was dumbstruck. Such a profound and magical martial art skill, it was simply unheard of even for him.

This, how could this be?

What exactly was this martial art skill?

In the sky, the Bloody Queen suddenly moved with a speed that couldn’t be seen clearly by naked eyes.

Swooping down, she swung down her Crescent Blade heavily into the middle of one of the Thunder Goblin Bat's brains, almost splitting the Thunder Goblin Bat, who had lost all of its electric energy, in half.

The Dragon Slaying Dagger in the Bloody Queen's other hand pierced through the Thunder Goblin Bat's shoulder, right into its heart. Less than an instant later, Yue Yang arrived and slashed the Thunder Goblin Bat's chest with his Hui Jin Magic Blade. Then, his left hand grabbed onto the giant bat as he threw it straight towards Elder Tian Suo, who had just dodged a piece of his blade that had been cut off by Yue Yang's Twin Fish Electric Circle.

The flying piece of his blade didn't know who was friend or foe. It finished off the previously heavily injured Thunder Goblin Bat, cutting it in two.

Yue Yang reached out, and with the help of the Bloody Queen, he jumped while using the corpse of the Thunder Goblin Bat who had already been killed as a foothold.

As Elder Tian Suo received the attack with a disdainful look, Yue Yang and the Bloody Queen instantly charged into him. Yue Yang gripped Elder Tian Suo's large blade tightly, as he struggled with him. Bloody Queen, on the other hand, went right next to Elder Tian Suo's ears and unleashed an extremely mournful Banshee Scream.

“Ayayaya...”

Elder Tian Suo could only feel his brain going blank. Even with the added protection from the strengthening-type beasts, he couldn't fight against a mental attack as he fell into a dizzy spell.

When he finally struggled out of the dizzy spell, he suddenly saw the madly turning, extremely sharp Twin Fish Electric Circle charging right into him. He couldn't help but to be extremely surprised, and his eyes were round as he hurriedly tried to avoid it...

Yue Yang coldly humphed, "It's too late. I'll send you back to the [west](#)."

(TLN: West or Western Paradise is invoked in buddhist funerals as favourable destination for the deceased)

Chapter 134 – Seal Unlocked: The Dark Golden Specter!

The Twin Fish sphere that Yue Yang controlled with his hands turned and buzzed frantically with electricity. When the spiral cut past right in front of Elder Tian Suo's face, he cried painfully from the pain of being electrocuted and shredded by the sharpness of the turning force. His face was badly mutilated as fresh blood spurted out. When Elder Tian Suo was still struggling, paralysed from the pain of being electrocuted, a flaming whip suddenly hit the back of his neck, causing him to stumble. It was Bloody Queen's new ability, [Flame Whip].

“Do you think you can defeat me like this? Dream on!” Elder Tian Suo glared angrily as he madly shouted towards the Bloody Queen who had mounted a sneak attack on him.

“Do you think you can still turn the situation around?” Yue Yang laughed coldly.

He also beat Elder Tian Suo's face with the [Flame Whip]. When Elder Tian Suo was writhing in pain from the [Flame Whip], Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade once again slashed through him with its purple flames.

Elder Tian Suo was thoroughly mad.

He had never seen a young person who was even more skilled at physical skills than himself. He had never experienced a predicament of being beaten down by his opponent. Although this

brat in front of him was still very young, his skills were so profound that it made others despair... Elder Tian Suo realized that, he, who was an honorable Battle Skills Grandmaster, did not even stand a chance countering his attacks. He couldn't dodge almost all of his opponent's attacks, causing him to be beaten black and blue. Elder Tian Suo had a powerful fist, every single punch from him was equivalent to the strength of thousands of soldiers. However, he couldn't land a hit on Yue Yang at all. He really wanted to brandish his large blade and behead this annoying brat in front of him, but against all expectations, Yue Yang disappeared and reappeared like a shadow. He didn't give him a chance to fully utilise his skills. Instead, punches, kicks, elbows and knees came onto him like a rain of attacks...

The thing that made Elder Tian Suo maddest was that whenever he wanted to kick Yue Yang, he would immediately be thrown into the ground by the brat.

It could be seen that Yue Yang was extremely good at the technique of throwing people down. It was somewhat thoughtless; the most important thing was to take control the opponent's body for a moment, make him lose his balance and fall hard on the ground.

“Big Idiot, come over here!” Elder Tian Suo immediately called when he saw that the Barbarian Cow was not at a disadvantage at all although the Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast was two levels higher than the Barbarian Cow. She could even execute those simple normal soldiers' physical attack and defensive skills.

Fighting this Barbarian Cow with brute force would not yield any

results in a short period of time.

Elder Tian Suo couldn't wait for too long.

He needed time; at least, he needed a few moments to breathe.

He ordered the Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast to abandon its opponent and come over to help him attack Yue Yang together. As long as this brat would retreat just a little and give him some breathing space, he could definitely win.

“[Two Dragons Vying Pearls]!” Yue Yang suddenly executed a crude, simple martial art skill that would aim at his opponents eyes. It was a move that even normal soldiers would think as useless. This move was simply too obvious. Furthermore, it would have been better if he didn't shout it out loud. Instead, Yue Yang had shouted “Two Dragons Vying Pearls” when executing the move. This was equivalent to telling his opponent that he was about to prick their eyes. Elder Tian Suo laughed coldly in his heart. It was only because he had been paralysed by the Bloody Queen's Scream that he got hit by the brat's Twin Fish [Spherical Beheader].

That brat would be dreaming if he wanted to land a hit on his face in a normal situation.

Even noobs wouldn't let others prick their eyes so easily, let alone himself, who was a Martial Art Skills Grandmaster.

Elder Tian Suo's bent his body backwards and dodged Yue Yang's fingers that were about to prick his eyes. At the same time, he opened up his palms and placed them in front of his face, blocking against Yue Yang's invading fingers.

Yue Yang's two joined fingers suddenly split apart, intending to drill through Elder Tian Suo's hands and bore his fingers straight towards his eyeballs. Elder Tian Suo's face was filled with ridicule and mockery. Before Yue Yang's fingers could bore a hole through his palms, he suddenly slapped his iron palms hard together, clamping Yue Yang's fingers in a deadlock.

Elder Tian Suo laughed coldly, "I have waited for you for a long time, idiot."

Yue Yang tried his utmost to prick his fingers into Elder Tian Suo's eyes, but his fingers had been clamped by Elder Tian Suo in a tight deadlock with no way of escaping.

"Die, you idiot..." Seeing that the brat had advanced prematurely and was caught by him, Elder Tian Suo was overjoyed in his heart.

"The idiot is you." Yue Yang laughed.

Suddenly, his clamped two fingers emitted a hissing sound as he shot out two Innate Invisible Sword Qi's.

When Elder Tian Suo realized something was wrong, it was all too late.

No matter how tight Elder Tian Suo shut his eyes, the two shots of Innate Invisible Sword Qi's could destroy both of his eyes easily... Blood splashed to the ground as Elder Tian Suo let out a miserable howl. He relied on his abilities to send a punch in his dying breath, pushing Yue Yang back. He was really afraid of him now, as he rolled around madly on the ground. Not waiting for Yue Yang and the Bloody Queen to attack him again, he immediately jumped and endured his pain, summoning his Platinum Grimoire out.

The blood oozing out of his eyes dripped drop after drop on his Platinum Grimoire. Elder Tian Suo did his best to channel his last bout of spirit qi and summoned out his Guardian Beast.

Against Yue Yang's expectations, Elder Tian Suo's Guardian Beast was actually a pitch black iron snake.

Its level wasn't that high, only a bronze-ranked level 5.

When the strengthening-type Iron Snake was summoned, it immediately fused together with Elder Tian Suo's body. Due to its low level, its addition to Elder Tian Suo's battle power was limited. However, Elder Tian Suo could draw out the Iron Snake's ability to sense living organisms with heat to replace his injured eyes.

"Only Innate-ranked sword qi could possibly injure me. This is an innate-ranked sword qi. You, how could you be an Innate Ranker? Who is your Master? Who taught you this Innate-ranked martial art skill?" Elder Tian Suo howled loudly, full of grief and

indignation.

He knew that he had fallen into a trap.

This brat was not only a simple brat with a Gold King Beast.

He had even mastered an innate-ranked martial art technique, and he knew how to release an innate sword qi that had the capability of ignoring all defense.

Previously when Yue Yang had blinded the Ox-head Warrior, he should have already be on guard. But Yue Yang had concealed it so well. Furthermore, at that time, he would never in his life have thought that this brat had already reached the innate realm at such a young age.

He remembered that half a year ago, the seventh Innate Ranker of Da Xia Empire was born, shocking the whole Empire.

At that time, an [Elder] called Ming Xin from the Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion Sect had said that this concealed Innate ranker was an extremely young person... So it turned out that she was talking about this brat. He was really too careless, how could he have sent his strongest beast, White Python, to attack the Eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie? If he had his silver-ranked level 8 White Python by his side protecting him, he wouldn't have ended up so miserable. He had fallen into one trap after another, which had all been set by his opponents in this battle. He had simply been too careless. This brat had shouted "Two Dragons Vying Pearls" in order to remind him and make him react to his attack, and then at the time when he

didn't feel any danger at all, this brat had shot a sneak attack with his innate sword qi... If not for that, he wouldn't even have been able to pierce his eyes with the sword qi.

“Kill that Rock-skinned Big Idiot beast!” Yue Yang didn't pay attention to Elder Tian Suo. Under his order, the Bloody Queen immediately released her second Banshee Scream right at the top of the Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast head.

Yue Yang shot another innate sword qi right into the Big Idiot Beast's head, creating a bloody hole on its rock-hard head.

However, the Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast's head was simply too big. One sword qi injury almost didn't seem to cause any injuries to it.

Although fresh blood and brain matters dripped down from the hole, the Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast didn't die. It even kept waving its large stick around, smashing it's surrounding wildly. Suddenly, Xiao Wen Li floated out with a rainbow light as her Dual Ice Blades slashed right at the Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast's legs, freezing both of its huge legs.

The Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast fell to the ground with a loud thud as the Bloody Queen stabbed it wildly with her Dragon Slaying Dagger. However, this did not have much effect on the Big Idiot Beast, whose flesh was extremely thick and hard.

The Bloody Queen could only add a few more bloody holes in its body. It wasn't possible to kill it instantly.

Yue Yang took out the Giant Hammer that he captured from the Gold Armoured Puppet previously and beat the Big Idiot Beast together with the Barbarian Cow Shadow. When the Big Idiot beast was struggling, suddenly, a sharp golden arrow accurately pierced into the bloody hole on its forehead.

This was actually one of Yue Yang's plans. He knew that his innate sword qi wouldn't be enough to instantly kill the beast, who did not even need to think with its brains. In order to defeat such a beast, he had thought of an idea to use the Medusa's skill, [Petrify], to petrify the opponent. Even If its head was immune to piercing, would it be able to withstand petrification? As long as its head had turned into stone, would this fellow still be able to move?

With the shot of the golden arrow, the Big Idiot Beast's head suddenly turned into stone.

However, the Big Idiot Beast had slowly stood up again, under Yue Yang's speechless, dumbstruck gaze.

Xiao Wen Li looked a little disdainful as she slashed her Dual Ice Blades across the Rock-skinned Big Idiot Beast. That petrified head flew several meters away.

Barbarian Cow Shadow also slashed heavily with her blade, full of strength, hacking that petrified head into two stone pieces. It was easier for her to hack the Big Idiot beast's head that had turned into a Stone Head. But even then, the Big Idiot Beast did not fall, its body was still moving slowly without its head. If not for

Xiao Wen Li's Dual Icicle Blades's strong freezing capabilities, it would really be hard to tell when it would truly die.

The Big Idiot Beast which was covered with ice from head to toe finally fell to the ground with a loud thud.

Yue Yang was afraid that it had not died completely, and even ruthlessly broke its four limbs. He would never give this tough fellow a chance to revive.

"Close one," Yue Yang patted his heart with his hands. Seemed like he was really lacking in beasts-related knowledge. If Elder Tian Suo wasn't blind, he would probably not be able to kill this Big Idiot Beast that could move without its head.

"Golden Holy Beetle... Haha, I never thought that this thing would fall onto my hands. Heaven never bars one's way, it is indeed true," Elder Tian Suo had suddenly picked up the White Jade Beetle from Yue Yang's backpack without him even realising when. He was absorbing the pure energy inside it madly, using it to heal his injuries.

Yue Yang secretly screamed "Oh my God! This time he has really done it!"

He wasn't afraid of the blind Elder Tian Suo, he was afraid of the frightening demon sealed inside that White Jade Beetle.

If there was really a frightening demon sealed inside it like what

the Old Lady Doctor had said, then it would be game over. If Elder Tian Suo really released the seal of an extremely strong demon, who might even be stronger than a Demon King and possess an unfathomable strength and power, he would never be able to imagine the consequences...

“Gosh!”

Yue Yang watched as what he was afraid of suddenly appeared.

A bright light suddenly shone from within the White Jade Beetle’s body as Elder Tian Suo’s injuries healed at an amazing speed. Even his destroyed eyeballs had recovered slowly.

However, as the bright light magnificently shot to the sky, an extremely mysterious, rapidly rotating golden seal pattern appeared in the skies, slowly turning darker and darker. A frightening Dark Golden Specter was striving to crawl out. Every single step it took seemed to be extremely difficult. The golden light that was emitted by the pattern seemed to melt its shadow away, at the same time, it was also purifying the Dark Golden Specter’s body continuously.

That Dark Golden Specter seemed to be throwing away his life, firmly set on coming out. Even when the lower half of his body was cut thoroughly by the golden seal pattern, he had given up his lower half body and come out with only his upper half body.

If Elder Tian Suo had seen that such a terrifying demon had crawled out right on top of his head, maybe he would have

stopped.

However, his eyes were blind, so he couldn't see anything.

Furthermore, Elder Tian Suo was extremely anxious to heal his eyes and fight Yue Yang to the death. He had already gone somewhat insane and did not care about anything at all. He had never in his life thought that while he was doing this, he had opened the a hell's door and released an extremely strong demon with an unimaginable amount of power.

The White Jade Beetle's light was just like a flame thawing snow, destroying the Dark Golden Specter's body.

When the upper half of the Dark Golden Specter's body finally crawled out of the golden seal pattern, his lower half body had already been completely dissolved, thoroughly destroyed.

Yue Yang had wanted to use his innate sword qi on the Dark Golden Specter immediately, but Xiao Wen Li had pulled his sleeves to make him stay and watch the end result first, her face a picture of seriousness. Her little body was moving ever so slightly, blocking in front of Yue Yang, looking like a good girl who was bravely and seriously protecting her father.

Elder Tian Suo finally sensed the danger, but he didn't know which way it was coming from.

His whole body was trembling. In front of the Dark Golden

Specter, he realized that he was just the weakest of worms. He was immediately so scared that his knees went weak, throwing the White Jade Beetle away in fright. He moved his body wildly, brandishing his large blades madly.

“Is this your doing? What has actually happened?” Elder Tian Suo shouted in fright.

Above his head, the Dark Golden Specter was floating wordlessly, preparing to seize his body...

Chapter 135 – Nirvana's Flame

Elder Tian Suo suddenly sensed the Dark Golden Specter with his beast's ability to sense heat. He sensed an extremely dangerous presence right above his head.

He howled loudly as he exerted all of his strength.

With the added ability from his strengthening-type beast with electricity attribute, his large sword flashed and resounded continuously with claps of thunder. Countless streaks of lightning scattered in all direction. Elder Tian Suo didn't care if this thing hovering in the air was Yue Yang, the Bloody Queen or some other beast. In short, he had released his ultimate attack that would bring everyone down along with him.

His sword tore apart heaven and earth.

“Either the enemy or I must perish” was the determination displayed by the attack.

Yue Yang couldn't help but be amazed by this. If someone had said that this Elder Tian Suo's character was trash amongst trash, Yue Yang would definitely agree. However, if someone now said that Elder Tian Suo's battle skills were bad, Yue Yang wouldn't quite agree. This Elder Tian Suo was definitely the person with the strongest martial art skills that Yue Yang had ever seen. If it wasn't for encountering the beautiful big sister's teachings in his Dream Realm, Yue Yang would probably not be able to fight him off as easily as he had just now.

Elder Tian Suo's martial arts technique was extremely profound. However, comparing it to the beautiful big sister's technique, one was like an ox-cart while the other was like a ferrari car. Although both moved on wheels, they were at totally different levels.

That's why, Yue Yang, who had been beaten by the beautiful big sister in the Dream Realm to the point where he didn't know which way was north, could easily fight against Elder Tian Suo.

Of course, if Yue Yang were to be hit by this ultimate move of Elder Tian Suo's, he would probably not remain unscathed.

However, the Dark Golden Specter had ignored the blow completely.

The blade that contained several hundred volts slashed through the Dark Golden Specter's illusionary body, right into the Dark Golden Specter's lower half body that had already been melted by the golden seal pattern. The Dark Golden Specter moved his body a little and blocked the large blade from coming down.

The ultimate slash that could tear heaven and earth apart fell on the Dark Golden Specter's body, but the blade just sunk into the Dark Golden Specter's body with no hope of returning. It was completely ineffective.

Yue Yang watched this spectacle speechlessly, his heart thumping loudly and his hair stood on its ends. This was really too frightening...

An attack as powerful as the Elder Tian Suo's ultimate move was actually completely useless against the Dark Golden Specter. However, the golden seal pattern had been able to easily melt the Dark Golden Specter's body. If these two were to be compared, wouldn't the difference of the power be too far apart? What kind of extraordinary Ranker was it who had created this golden seal pattern? The golden seal pattern had sealed the demon for such a long time, yet it was still so powerful. It was really hard to imagine!

The Dark Golden Specter now started its attack.

With just one attack from the Dark Golden Specter, Elder Tian Suo was like a small boat that had collided into a huge iceberg, weak beyond comparison. He was immediately sent flying, bouncing hard on the ground several times.

The Dark Golden Specter, who still had a frightening amount of strength left even after losing the lower half of his body, slowly descended to the ground. He then summoned something unknown and threw it towards Elder Tian Suo's body causing it to immediately float into the air. His body was unable to move even a single inch before he was slaughtered by the Dark Golden Specter.

Yue Yang saw the Dark Golden Specter reach out his hands to scoop out the two strengthening-type beasts from Elder Tian Suo's body alive.

There was a flash of dark light before the two strengthening-type beast were immediately killed.

With two loud bangs, the two strengthening-type beasts weren't even able to recover their own bodies as they exploded into two balls of badly mutilated flesh. As for Elder Tian Suo's Guardian Spirit Beast, the Dark Golden Specter seemed to be unable to pull it out and he didn't try a second time. Maybe he thought that such a low levelled beast couldn't possibly pose a threat to him. He gripped Elder Tian Suo's throat tightly with one hand, while he used his other hand to reach deep into Elder Tian Suo's throat from his mouth. Nobody knew what he was trying to do.

Could it be that he was thinking of seizing Elder Tian Suo's body to be reborn?

If this fellow could truly be reborn, how much power would he recover? How would Yue Yang fight in the next few moments?

It was an enemy that was completely unfamiliar and had an unknown level of strength. Furthermore, it was an enemy that had been sealed by a Peak Ranker.

This battle, even Yue Yang thought that it was a little bit impossible...

However, his manly battle spirit that vowed never to lose a battle was igniting from the depths of his heart. Yue Yang had always hoped to find an opponent that would test his limits. If he was only to battle opponents like Yan Shi, Wu Yi and Xie Huo, Yue Yang would not be satisfied nor feel that he had accomplished something. He wanted to feel the satisfaction of stepping on top of

an even stronger opponent.

His initial target had been a Demon King... But it seemed like this Dark Golden Specter in front of him may not be any weaker than a Demon King.

Fortunately this Specter didn't have a body. Otherwise, Yue Yang wouldn't even think of starting this fight.

Yue Yang wondered if he could use his level 3 [Divine Vision] to see through the fellow's weakness if this Dark Golden Specter seized Elder Tian Suo's body.

He prepared to summon his Divine Grimoire and set up its shield before thinking of a way to fight against this Dark Golden Specter who had been sealed for god knows how many years.

However, before he even managed to raise his hands, he suddenly felt a bout of sleepiness. He couldn't help but yawn.

“Eh?”

Why would he be sleepy?

Yue Yang could feel that something wasn't right. He looked up towards the Dark Golden Specter, whose demonic eyes had become something like stars, blinking and shining brilliantly.

In an instant, it was as if a fisherman was singing a light melody through the quiet night sky.

It sounded like a soft wind, brushing through the night ever so softly, captivating all the people walking on the shore.

The last thing that Yue Yang heard was a captivating voice calling to him in his heart, beckoning him forward. In his haziness, Yue yang couldn't help but follow the voice, wanting to find that strange voice that was calling his heart...

“Chi!”

Xiao Wen Li felt an anomaly and immediately appeared, beautiful like a white orchid, accompanied by thousands of rays of light. A shield immediately protected Yue Yang.

She saw that there was an invisible thing on Yue Yang's body.

It was struggling and hissing ever so lightly.

However, Xiao Wen Lin increased the intensity of her purification power, destroying it quickly without any trace.

Although the strange demon who had mounted a sneak attack on Yue Yang without anyone realizing it had been killed by Xiao Wen Li's purification, Yue Yang still fell to the ground with a loud thud.

His consciousness was clear.

But it was as if his body had been hypnotized to sleep and he couldn't control it at all.

He couldn't see anything in front of him. In the endless darkness, he could only feel in his heart that Xiao Wen Li was trying her best to save him. It seemed like she was using her purification ability to purify his body... The strange thing was that Yue Yang's body was all normal. His innate qi was flowing through his body unobstructed, and the thing that had caused him to fall asleep with a sneak attack had already been destroyed. However, he still couldn't open his eyes, and couldn't wake up from his sleep.

Yue Yang was really anxious in his heart.

He could be 100% certain that this was the Dark Golden Specter's doing.

Although he didn't know when the Dark Golden Specter had attacked, nor what method he had used, Yue Yang was certain that he had fallen into the Dark Golden Specter's trap.

What kind of beast was that which could hypnotize him soundlessly? How could it have done that without even Xiao Wen Li realizing it?

Yue Yang was extremely confused. What he was feeling in his current state was more or less the same as when he entered into his

Dream Realm. The only difference was that he could freely control himself in the Dream Realm, whereas he couldn't do anything right now...

What exactly must he do in order to wake up?

Could he enter into his Dream Realm from this space that he couldn't control and then exit from the Dream Realm?

Yue Yang's mind flashed as quick as lightning as he considered various methods to counter this attack.

Compared to Yue Yang, the extremely strong Elder Tian Suo was even more miserable right now.

He was just like a small worm being crushed within the Dark Golden Specter's hand. Initially, the Dark Golden Specter had wanted to crush Elder Tian Suo to pieces, but seeing that Xiao Wen Li had summoned a Diamond Grimoire to protect Yue Yang, his expression changed. He immediately stopped and put down the pitiful Elder Tian Suo, before reaching out his shadow-like hands into Elder Tian Suo's head, as if he was sifting through the memories inside.

The deeper he searched through the memories, the more surprised the Dark Golden Specter seemed to look .

He didn't have a mouth, but by resonating the air, he was strangely enough able to 'speak'.

“How could there be such a young Innate Ranker? That’s really strange. Little lamia, your master only has a silver grimoire. As his Guardian Beast, how could you have a diamond grimoire that is higher levelled than his own? This is really tiring... Only a thousand years have passed, but everything has become so disorderly... Looking closely, the three of you are all completely different but you are all Guardian Beasts. This is really unimaginable. This brat is really strange, I should have already summoned his spirit out, how could it fail? I have never encountered such a thing before... Could it be that this young human brat can actually fight me with his will? Could it be that human beings have completely revived after all these years? What exactly has happened in all these years while I was sleeping?” the Dark Golden Specter looked extremely surprised as he mumbled to himself, shaking his head continuously.

He looked like he was really vexed. He couldn’t understand such a mysterious and strange figure like Yue Yang at all.

In the end, the Dark Golden Specter shook his head, “Forget it, I should stop thinking about it. I should first fix my body and kill this dangerous brat quickly. He’s really dangerous. If he has already become an innate ranker at such a young age, what will he become when he grows up?”

The upper half of his body slowly melted into Elder Tian Suo’s body.

If Yue Yang was awake, he would see that Elder Tian Suo was not dead yet, and his consciousness was extremely clear.

Though Elder Tian Suo was not dead, his body was completely controlled by another 'person'. His whole body had been invaded by the Dark Golden Specter, who was taking control of everything.

The only thing that was left uncontrolled was his face.

His face that was filled with astonishment, fright, despair and helplessness... Countless expressions mixed together, twisting his face into a strange expression that would make others feel absolutely horrified. However, Yue Yang couldn't hear the Dark Golden Specter's words right now or see Elder Tian Suo's expression. He was still diligently struggling to escape from his dream.

Although his opponent was a powerful being who had reached the pinnacle, he couldn't just wait helplessly to die.

Wake up!

Fight a battle to the death with him!

Yue Yang cried out from the depths of his heart: Wake up quickly, fight, fight! You must not continue to sleep while your opponent might kill you easily. Wake up and fight! Kill him, it doesn't matter if he's a crazily powerful being or any other person, you must kill him...

Quickly wake up!

It was as if they felt Yue Yang's heartfelt cries, the Bloody Queen and the Barbarian Cow Shadow immediately fought against the Dark Golden Specter's terrifying pressure and advanced forward instead of retreating, their battle spirit bursting through the skies as they protected Yue Yang at his side. Yue Yang's innate qi circulated through his body madly. With each circulation, Yue Yang managed to seize back control of his body little by little. His mind and body's reactions were also getting stronger.

Xiao Wen Li suddenly turned into a rainbow light and disappeared.

"Could a Guardian Beast also flee a battle? No, that's impossible," the Dark Golden Specter that had melted into Elder Tian Suo's body and was preparing to join completely with Elder Tian Suo's body as one shouted unbelievably. Yue Yang's eyelids were moving a little, he felt that he was about to wake up at any moment. His spirit ignited even stronger as he cried out even more desperately in his dream. And suddenly, a power that he had never felt before burst forth.

The Dark Golden Specter's face started to distort, as if he was extremely furious towards Yue Yang's ability to resist his willpower and turn the battle situation around, seizing back the control of his own body.

How dare a puny human being fight against him?

Suddenly, a seven-coloured, brilliant light shot up into the sky.

A sparkling grimoire that was translucent like a crystal appeared in front of Yue Yang, emitting thousands of sparkling rays of lights, shining brightly with radiance.

The rainbow light spread across Yue Yang's body and formed a special rainbow shield.

Countless streaks of rainbow light flowed as a large golden halo suddenly expanded over Yue Yang. Its power was like a blazing sun, shining brightly like a star, illuminating the whole area in an instant.

The Dark Golden Specter jumped in surprise when he saw this. He howled in despair, "I really have bad luck! How could it be a Divine Grimoire? Damnation, how could it be a Divine Grimoire... How can he have two Grimoires? No, that's not right. He should not be able to own that Divine Grimoire-AHHHHH!!!"

Suddenly, a huge pillar of fire shot up into the skies from the Divine Grimoire.

The flames rotated continuously upwards, spreading wider and wider apart.

In an instant, there was only one thing left in the battle arena – the flame. It was a flame that could burn even the heavens.

In the midst of such a pure and powerful flame, the Bloody Queen

and Barbarian Cow Shadow's bodies began to evolve. They reconstructed and evolved repeatedly... On the opposite side, the Dark Golden Specter who had hurriedly left Elder Tian Suo's body and gone back into the White Jade Beetle summoned a dark-coloured shield desperately. However, in the midst of such a pure and intense flame, the dark-coloured shield was as powerless as a wisp of smoke, shattering in an instant, completely destroyed and purified by the burning flame.

It was as if there was a pair of beautiful creatures circling around each other inside the burning flame.

In the dimensional space, the burning flame started to burn even more intensely. It burned ten times, or even a hundred times more intensely, just like the legendary, most formidable [Nirvana's Flame] that could burn everything to the ground... The Dark Golden Specter who was initially strong beyond compare couldn't even last for three seconds, as its body was completely purified to its despair. In the end, only a soul that continued to writhe in the flames was left, as the Dark Golden Specter continued to struggle in pain.

The pair of mysterious creatures both cried out – clear, nature-like sounds that echoed through the ground – before they returned into the Divine Grimoire.

This nature-like cry had only resounded when the soul that was burning inside the flames looked like it had reached its limit and broke into thousands of pieces of light that dispersed in all directions. Even its soul had been completely wiped out.

Only a transparent pearl was left, which dropped to the ground.

Other than that, there was no other remnants.

“Ahhhh!” Yue Yang suddenly shouted out loud as he leapt high up into the sky like a magnificent, arrogant dragon. He had managed to break the chains on his spirit and had successfully taken back control of his body. It was only at this moment that he finally felt that he truly controlled his own life.

Because it was only in predicaments that he could come to a realization and overcome obstacles. That was what victory really was.

When Yue Yang finally snapped out of his proud feelings of getting back the control of his life, he almost fell to the ground when he looked at the surrounding area. “How could everything be over? I haven’t even started to fight! Who did this?!”

Chapter 136 – Mystery

The whole battle was already over. The strong Dark Golden Specter that had made others tremble with fear had completely disappeared.

As for the Elder Tian Suo, his body which was completely undamaged and intact suddenly turned into dust soundlessly and was dispersed by the wind and earthquake caused by Yue Yang when he leapt into the air just now.

Yue Yang was thoroughly speechless. Who did all this?

How could they instantly kill the Dark Golden Specter and Elder Tian Suo in just one move? While Yue Yang was doing everything he could to take back control of his body and wake up, he could vaguely feel that it was the creatures from the Divine Grimoire that had defeated the enemies. However, he didn't know what kind of creatures those were... He remembered when he made his first contract and when he first reached the innate realm, this creature had appeared back then... But Yue yang didn't know what it was, he only vaguely remembered its nature-like sound that was even more beautiful than heaven's bells. So it turned out that he already had that creature within his body? Was it the compensation that the Old Taoist Priest had given him for kicking his butt? Or could it be a creature that the Sword Goddess had created, just like the beautiful big sister in his dreams?

Countless thoughts swam across Yue Yang's minds, but he still couldn't figure anything out.

He only knew that the powerful Elder Tian Suo and the much more powerful Dark Golden Specter were both instantly killed by one move from the divine creature.

The Divine Grimoire was indeed a powerful item. Only one word could describe it: OP... Yue Yang, however, felt a little regretful as he still could not open his Divine Grimoire yet. Otherwise, he could be like the Celestial Crab*, destroying everything on his path, defeating all of his enemies.

(*Shiro: 天朝河蟹 tian chao he xie (lit. Celestial Crab) was actually a pun for China's internet censorship. Forums and internet are heavily regulated in China, making it very difficult for people to curse.)

Although the Bloody Queen and the Barbarian Cow Shadow were evolving, Yue Yang didn't care that much about them. He was looking for Xiao Wen Li frantically. His precious darling had disappeared and he hoped that nothing bad had happened to her. Yue Yang couldn't see Xiao Wen Li anywhere no matter where he looked. His heart was a frantic mess as he shouted, "Little loli, come out quickly, where are you? Don't scare me..."

Just as Yue Yang thought that Xiao Wen Li had been injured by the Dark Golden Specter and became thoroughly heartbroken, a rainbow ray of light and a Divine Grimoire floated out.

Yue Yang could smell the wonderful, familiar scent.

Xiao Wen Li's small body that was light as a swallow entered into Yue Yang's embrace as her six hands hugged Yue Yang's neck

tightly.

A smile blossomed on that rosy, adorable little face, radiant like the morning sun and filled with love. In that instant, it seemed like all other things on earth couldn't compare with her beauty. Yue Yang composed himself as he looked. Aih, wasn't this his precious darling? He happily kissed her cheek and raised her up high in the air, shouting carefreely, "You really scared Uncle Guai to death! Luckily everything is okay..."

(Shiro: Uncle Guai – some Chinese pun that means a strange, perverted uncle that would lure kids with sweets)

"En En!" Xiao Wen Li nodded adorably, her doe eyes blinking with joy.

When she saw Yue Yang worrying about her and then overjoyed when he found her safe and sound, she couldn't help but feel extremely moved. She hugged him tightly and kissed him a few pecks, before giving him a brilliant smile.

Yue Yang threw her high up in the air and caught her again, making the little loli laugh with joy. Finally, he put her down slowly.

On the side, the Bloody Queen whose body who had become completely naked after she finished her evolution, felt extremely jealous.

She had finally managed to evolve after great difficulty, but Yue Yang had actually ignored her naked body completely. This was

really a great blow for her. Luckily she couldn't speak the Soaring Dragon Continent's Language yet, or she would have scolded him as a lolicon. As long as the master was still alive, a Guardian Beast wouldn't truly die. What was he so worried about? Furthermore, what could be wrong with that strong little lamia loli? The Bloody Queen really had a headache. Having a master like this would be the death of her.

Seeing that Yue Yang had finished playing with Xiao Wen Li, the Bloody Queen immediately put up a 'I have just evolved, pay attention to me now' look.

Who could have guessed that Yue Yang's gaze would completely skip over her and fall on the Barbarian Cow Shadow instead?

If the Bloody Queen had a rod in her hands right now, she would definitely bash Yue Yang's head hard. Could it be that in his eyes, a beauty like her couldn't compare to a cow?

The Barbarian Cow Shadow had looked like a female cow previously, but right now, her appearance was not cow-like anymore. The Barbarian Cow Shadow, who had repeatedly perfected and reconstructed its body with the mysterious energy from the pure raging flame, looked liked she had benefited more than the Bloody Queen. As the Bloody Queen already had a strong foundation to start with, the energy she received had only helped her to level up to gold-ranked level 5. However, the Barbarian Cow Shadow had been bronze-ranked level 5. With the mysterious, magical energy from the flame, she had evolved into a silver-ranked level 5.

Even if she had successfully undergone a variant evolution, the Barbarian Cow Shadow who was a bronze-ranked level 5 should have evolved into a silver-ranked level 4 at best...

However, right now, the Barbarian Cow Shadow had actually had a variant evolution, a level up, and a body reconstruction all at the same time.

Yue Yang realized that after multiple reconstructions of the Barbarian Cow Shadow's body, it looked totally different from her previous self. Her previous body which had been almost three metres tall was now reduced to a smaller size. Her colossal, monstrous body had also lost some of its frightening amount of muscle, and she had become more slender. Her current appearance was practically a hundred times better than her previous one. Her horns didn't look as coarse anymore, and instead, they became extremely glossy and lustrous. Furthermore, her lines also looked better and sharper, like a beautiful killing machine. Her face, which had previously only looked like rough outline of a woman, had become fine and delicate right now. Although her looks had not reached the level of a beauty, she was definitely not ugly. She actually looked like a bold and powerful female warrior... Her eyes, which had previously been completely crimson red, became a little more like a human's eye with a white sclera. However, her pupils were still the same crimson red colour. In addition, her strength had increased multiple fold. Yue Yang reckoned that her [Doom's Eyes] power had greatly increased.

The oxen armour draped over her body previously had also completely changed in appearance.

Currently, The Barbarian Cow Shadow had completely lost the features from the Barbarian Cow that was a part of her fusion previously. She was more of an amazon warrior wearing an oxen armour.

She still had her muscles and her explosive, unbridled strength, but her skin had started to become glossy and soft.

Her body had become closer to a womanly figure, instead of her previous body which had the waist of a bear and back of a tiger. She had more curves right now... Of course, if one were to compare any part of the Barbarian Cow Shadow's body to a normal girl, no matter if it was the chest, waist, butt or legs, the Barbarian Cow Shadow would look like a female giant. It's just that she kind of looked like a girl right now. This made Yue Yang feel extremely relieved. He had initially given up hope for the Barbarian Cow Shadow to evolve into a hot girl. He was already more than pleasantly surprised that she could evolve into this.

Maybe she could become a great beauty if she could evolve another time.

"Yeah, I have decided. I'm going to call you Ah Man from today onwards." Yue Yang had officially given the Barbarian Cow Shadow a name. He had called her with this name before, but it was not official yet.

(Shiro: Barbarian Cow Shadow is man niu ying zi in chinese. Ah is a prefix while Man comes from the man in man niu ying zi)

"..." Seeing this, the Bloody Queen felt even more sour in her

heart. It was really a rare occurrence for him to name his beasts. Amongst so many beasts, he had only named Xiao Wen Li and Hui Tai Lang before. Now he had even given the Barbarian Cow Shadow an official name, but she, though a Gold King Beast, didn't have one. She was really a failure.

“Why aren't you wearing clothes?” Yue Yang finally saw her accidentally and asked curiously.

“...” the Bloody Queen almost fainted. In her heart, she thought: Did you just see me now? It's been so long that if it was snowing right now, I would probably have been frozen to death!

“It's also good this way. Ah, I mean, your body is really good. Sorry, I mean, I didn't see anything, please wear this first.” Seeing that the Bloody Queen was using her hands to cover both her chest and the other part below, Yue Yang gulped his saliva down. If it wasn't for the fact that Xiao Wen Li was at his side, he wouldn't be able to stop himself from pushing her down. She was simply too enticing, her snow white naked body, her beautiful peaks that couldn't be hidden from view, and also the lush garden underneath that peeked out for a moment.

Based on his conviction that he shouldn't teach bad things to small children, Yue Yang finally, with great difficulty, calmed his wolfy heart down.

Seeing this, the Bloody Queen had actually felt pleased secretly.

In order to take revenge on Yue Yang who had ignored her

earlier, when she was wearing the clothes he had given her, she purposely exaggerated her movements, sometimes even slowing her motions. She pretended that it was an accident and revealed a little bit of spring sunshine. Her actions made Yue Yang's wolfy heart rise again, and his eyes, which were pretending to face another way, almost pulled a muscle due to straining to look to the side too much.

The Bloody Queen coughed a few times lightly and Yue Yang immediately pretended that he didn't see anything, quickly running away from her as he searched for the remnants of the Dark Golden Specter. He found a transparent pearl and picked it up.

With his [Divine Vision], he saw something strange.

At first, Yue Yang thought that the Dark Golden Specter had not died completely and was hiding inside the pearl. However, when he used his [Divine Vision], he realized that there was not a single trace of a soul left inside the pearl, there was only an indescribable mystical energy inside... It was not an active energy, but a passive one, that seemed to be stationary and was close to burning out.

What use would this thing have?

Yue Yang couldn't understand at all. Suddenly, he remembered that when he was hypnotized to sleep by the Dark Golden Specter, his spirit was almost captured by him. He realized suddenly, could it be it was because of this pearl?

Pondering about it, Yue Yang finally made a decision to test it out

He held his Hui Jin Magic Blade in his hands, and brought the pearl closer towards the Flame Lord's molten core and the dragon core... As a result, this pearl made the whole Hui Jin Magic Blade tremble violently, as if it saw an extremely scary monster. On the contrary, when Yue Yang brought the pearl closer towards the Golden Beast that had become a wrist guard and was still digesting the Giant Frost Dragon's core, it had reached out its greedy arms as if it wanted to swallow the pearl down too.

“Don't even think about it. You didn't even participate in the battle, so there's none for you.” Yue Yang naturally wouldn't give the pearl to the Golden Beast to swallow. He decided to just keep it for now since he didn't understand it. There was nothing wrong with having more treasures. He would first store it into his Lich Ring and then research it later slowly.

He also picked up his White Jade Beetle.

The current White Jade Beetle had also undergone a change. Its back which was previously sparkling and translucent, now had an additional golden seal pattern. It looked similar to before. Other than having pure, clean energy, Yue Yang also discovered that there was a kind of crystallized demonic qi that had deeply condensed inside the White Jade Beetle. Yue Yang reckoned that this was the energy condensed from the lower half of the Dark Golden Specter's body, which had become a crystal after losing its master's control... Yue Yang felt that if he could take the demon crystal out and place it onto Hui Tai Lang's body, Hui Tai Lang would be extremely OP. It may even further evolve into a

Cerberus, or into a Demon King-level Demon Wolf.

Of course, because of that golden seal pattern, Yue Yang could only think about it at present.

Yue Yang placed the White Jade Beetle back into his backpack. He was extremely bewildered in his heart. He had definitely hidden this thing cautiously, right inside a small pocket at the bottom of his backpack. How could the White Jade Beetle fall into Elder Tian Suo's hands when there were no holes and nothing else from his backpack had spilled out?

Could it be that it was the Dark Golden Specter's doing?

Or could it be that this White Jade Beetle that looked sluggish and passive was actually a naughty little beetle, who liked to add troubles to people during battles?

"Hey, I'm (oresama) warning you. Don't give me any more troubles, otherwise I will have you deep fried and serve you with a beer." Yue Yang really didn't understand how it had happened and he also didn't care if the White Jade Beetle had understood him. He simply warned it strictly.

"..." Seeing him talking to a beetle like that, the Bloody Queen could only roll her eyes. However, she also felt that it was extremely weird. She didn't see how the White Jade Beetle had fallen out of Yue Yang's backpack. Based on her senses, she could feel everything clearly in a radius of one hundred metres as if she was seeing them with her own eyes; she could even feel the soft

winds that blew through the grasses. However, she completely didn't feel it when the White Jade Beetle had fallen out of Yue Yang's backpack and picked up by Elder Tian Suo.

This, was indeed a mystery that couldn't be solved.

Yue Yang tidied up everything and slept for around ten minutes inside the Battlefield of Certain Death before finally the one hour time limit was up.

The laws in the Battlefield of Certain Death then forced Yue Yang to transfer out and allowed him to return to his initial teleportation point. Yue Yang had not even stabilized himself when he suddenly saw an unbelievable scene right in front of his eyes... There stood Feng Kuang, Da Xia Empire's Imperial Guard Commander, the eagle-eyed man whose body was drenched in blood, and two other generals that Yue Yang didn't recognise. The four men were attacking madly in turn, working together to fight against Elder Tian Suo.

Wasn't Elder Tian Suo burned into ashes? How could he still be alive?

Yue Yang's chin was about to fall to the ground...

Chapter 137 – Today Is A Good Day

Yue Yang's sudden appearance had a huge influence over this battle.

The eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie, who was about to unleash his ultimate move onto Elder Tian Suo, immediately skidded across and stared at Yue Yang, shocked to his core, "You are alright?"

"Why was there two Elder Tian Suos?" Yue Yang pointed towards the Elder Tian Suo, who was being pushed back repeatedly by the 'Thousand Withering Bones' Feng Kuang's halberd.

"What...?" When the eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie was extremely shocked and astonished when he heard this. He quickly howled out, "General Feng Kuang, wait a minute, something's wrong!" He first stood on his guard at Yue Yang's side, protecting him, before asking again, "What did you say? Two Elder Tian Suos? Explain it more clearly..."

"There is another Elder Tian Suo for sure, but that other Elder Tian Suo is already dead. Could this person be his twin brother?" Yue Yang could guarantee that that Elder Tian Suo who died in the Battlefield of Certain Death couldn't die even further. Not only was his body taken over by the Dark Golden Specter, he was even burnt by the raging flame of the mysterious entity from the Divine Grimoire. His whole body had already been turned into ashes. Furthermore, if that Elder Tian Suo who fought a deadly duel with him had not died yet, he wouldn't be able to come out from the Battlefield of Certain Death.

“Are you speaking the truth?” the eagled-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie then shouted towards Feng Kuang, “We need to seek an audience with his Royal Highness the Emperor, the State Grandmaster and the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians as soon as possible. This matter is definitely suspicious.”

“I have already said before, someone is impersonating me.” Elder Tian Suo flew right towards Yue Yang and pleaded his innocence.

“Before you are free of any suspicions, please step away from our only witness. If you dare to make any suspicious move towards him, then the Emperor will continue to enforce his decree just now, declaring war against your Floating Mist Sect...” The Eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie looked at Elder Tian Suo furiously, protecting right in front of Yue Yang.

“Alright, as long as you don’t attack me, I will not attack anyone at random. I have received Sect Leader Bai Yun’s orders to come here and save people, so why would I purposely kill people instead? I do have grudges against General Dao Feng, but I wouldn’t kill him just for that grudge that happened so many years ago. Furthermore, I wouldn’t kill others so brazenly. As a representative of the Floating Mist Sect, how could I commit a massacre in your Medicine Hall? This is a misunderstanding, someone had disguised as myself. Although I don’t know who that person is, the person who attacked General Dao Feng and Grandma Feng (Old Lady Doctor) was definitely not me. I guessed that the person who has impersonated me wanted to create a conflict between Floating Mist Sect and the Da Xia Empire!” Elder Tian Suo threw his large blade onto the ground, stating that this matter was simply a misunderstanding and showing that he did not want to continue to fight.

“You are Yue Qiu’s son, right? Speak, what’s the real situation with this?” Feng Kuang had already seen Yue Yang in the Yue Clan Castle. He would only trust Yue Yang’s words now. With regards to Elder Tian Suo, if it wasn’t for the State Grandmaster convincing Jun Wu You to take back his declaration of war in the meantime, Feng Kuang would have to summon the whole of his Shang Jing troops to surround Elder Tian Suo.

Even if he was an Elder in the Floating Mist Sect, Elder Tian Suo would definitely not be so brazen to commit a massacre in the Medicine Hall of the Shang Jing Army Camp.

Furthermore, he even targeted a loyal subject of the country, who was also the hero revered to by the whole country, General Dao Feng.

When he heard this report, Jun Wu You was furious. He had almost intended to come here personally and kill Elder Tian Suo. At the same time, he had also released a decree for declaration of war and was about to personally take two Heavenly Royal Guardians to come to Floating Mist Sect... Fortunately the State Grandmaster had convinced him to change his decree to capturing Elder Tian Suo for investigation instead.

The Eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie had thought that Yue Yang, the student with the most potential in their academy, had been killed by Elder Tian Suo. That was why he kept attacking Elder Tian Suo madly, with the intention of killing him. He wanted to avenge Yue Yang’s death.

Who could ever know that amidst their heated fight, Yue Yang would suddenly appear. Furthermore, he even said that there were two Elder Tian Suos.

Yue Yang had never received so much protection before.

The Eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie stood at his front, Feng Kuang at his right while the other two generals that had arrived stood at his left and back, completely surrounding Yue Yang and protecting him from all directions.

Everyone was waiting for him to give an answer.

What had actually happened here...

“The matter goes like this. We had come here to deliver herbs, because there wasn’t enough herbs to cure all the injured soldiers. I had even exchanged a few sentences with the old General Dao Feng just now. However, at this moment, Elder Tian Suo suddenly arrived in an extremely arrogant manner. He then beat on a Golden Drum and knocked everyone unconscious.” Yue Yang had not finished speaking before Elder Tian Suo immediately denied, shouting “I didn’t do that!”.

“You didn’t? The whole square is filled with injured soldiers whose eardrums had burst – It was a fine thing you did indeed! I was also here at that time, and I saw you doing it with my own eyes!” the Eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie roared like a lion.

“I really did no such thing. That was done by someone who impersonated me!” Elder Tian Suo pleaded his innocence hurriedly.

“Shut up. Let him finish talking first!” Feng Kuang shouted loudly and nodded towards Yue Yang, signalling him to continue.

“Then, Elder Tian Suo summoned a Silver-ranked Level 8 White Python who immediately flew towards Teacher. He also summoned a fog monster who shrouded the Old Lady Doctor, intending to choke her to death. Then, he summoned a Silver-ranked Level 6 Ox-head Warrior to fight against me.” Yue Yang’s words almost drove Elder Tian Suo mad as he shouted frantically, “I already said, I didn’t do it! I don’t even have a Silver-ranked Level 8 White Python or an Ox-head Warrior. That was all done by the person who impersonated me! That fellow must have used a special-type beast to disguise himself to look like me. That was definitely not me!”

“I’m sure that that person was not wearing a skin mask or a special-type beast that could change appearances. He looked one hundred percent just like you.” Yue Yang also felt that this matter was extremely weird. If there was really someone impersonating as Elder Tian Suo, this was going to be an extremely huge plot.

However, he could guarantee that the Elder Tian Suo in the Battlefield of Certain Death had not used a skin mask. It was his real face.

Feng Kuang signalled to Elder Tian Suo to stop trying to explain himself, and nodded towards Yue yang instead. “So it is confirmed

that there were two Elder Tian Suos. What happened afterwards?”

Yue Yang obviously wouldn't tell them everything that had happened inside the Battlefield of Certain Death. He hurriedly glossed it over with a few main points, “After I had blinded the Ox-head Warrior's eyes, I ordered my Two-headed Demon Wolf to lure it towards a cliff. That Elder Tian Suo wanted to kill me, so I escaped to a special place, and he had chased after me. He summoned a Big Idiot Beast and a Thunder Goblin Bat. I didn't know what happened next too, because I had fainted after receiving an attack from him. When I woke up, that Elder Tian Suo had suddenly been instantly killed by an extremely strong warrior. Even his body had turned into dust... Then I came back here.”

“Instantly killed?” Elder Tian Suo, Feng Kuang and the others were struck speechless when they heard that.

Although it was an Elder Tian Suo's impersonator, he was still an extremely strong warrior who could knock everyone in the whole square unconscious and summon a Silver-ranked Level 8 White Python. How could he be instantly killed by someone?

Seeing the crowd's expressions, Yue Yang immediately shook his hands and explained, “I didn't know if it was an instant kill or not, because I was unconscious at that time! When I opened my eyes, I saw Elder Tian Suo's body in a good condition, but when I went over to look, he suddenly turned into dust. His body had crumbled with just one touch.”

The Eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie had a sudden revelation and nodded, “No wonder. When I was fighting a hard battle with that

White Python, it suddenly cried painfully, exploded and died. Turns out its master had died,”

Elder Tian Suo, however, expressed his doubts, “You said you were beaten unconscious, that I believe. But you said that that impersonating fellow had died, how could you prove it? I suspect that there was not even such a person, and you guys were deliberately setting a trap and colluded together to frame both myself and the Floating Mist Sect. You are just an academy student, how could you still be alive after being attacked by someone who was even stronger than us?”

Yue Yang didn’t explain much and immediately took out the Platinum Grimoire on his backpack.

At this, even Elder Tian Suo couldn’t say anything further.

His expression became extremely distorted as he furiously cursed, “This must be a plot by another sect to instigate us! A Ranker who owned a Platinum Grimoire had actually impersonated as me and did such a thing... Look, my Platinum Grimoire is not the same as that one, this proves that I’m not that person!”

Elder Tian Suo took out his own Platinum Grimoire.

However, Feng Kuang shook his head and said, “I don’t suspect you as that person anymore, but you are still a suspect.”

“I am willing to come before His Majesty Jun Wu You to explain this matter before returning to Floating Mist Sect. I am definitely not the murderer, so I’m not afraid of investigations or confrontations. Although I do have grudges against General Dao Feng, I don’t have any intention of killing him. I don’t even think about that matter that happened so many years ago anymore,” Elder Tian Suo knew that if he returned to the Floating Mist Sect right now, he wouldn’t be able to clear his name from suspicion. He hurriedly showed his willingness to accept investigation so that this incident wouldn’t affect the relationship between the Floating Mist Sect and Da Xia Empire.

“Is that person really not your twin brother?” Yue Yang made sure again, “He didn’t wear a mask but he looked exactly like you.”

“My brothers had died 180 years ago in a battle. At that time, Dao Feng and I was in the same team. Us, the three brothers, also did not look like each other at all. At that time, both my elder brother and younger brother had died during a battle. Dao Feng and I had barely escaped death, and we had a disagreement with regards to saving people. I felt that we shouldn’t fight another battle, we should save our strength or else we would all die together. However, Dao Feng felt that we should all fight to our deaths and save the remaining soldiers... At that time, I was really afraid in my heart and was dejected from the deaths of my brothers. I had a great fight with General Dao Feng, and we broke off our relations in the end... Afterwards, I entered the Floating Mist Sect as a disciple. My abilities rose greatly, and at some point of time, I had indeed did a lot of things that wronged General Dao Feng. We do have grudges against each other, but I definitely did not have any intention to kill him. Furthermore, I am a Floating Mist Sect’s representative sent to save people here, why would I commit a massacre instead? That is impossible. As for brothers, it is even

more impossible. Firstly, all my brothers had died; Secondly, they all looked different from myself... I would also like to know how that impersonator could look exactly like me. Someone who owned a Platinum Grimoire yet looked exactly like me, who would know how long he had been impersonating me and did all kinds of atrocities? I would also like to investigate this matter thoroughly. General Feng Kuang, I hope that you could send some people to invite Sect leader Bai Yun over so that he and His Majesty Jun Wu You can manage this matter together. This matter was definitely done by some other powers. Our relationship was not really good in the first place, so we make quite good targets for plot conspiracies.” Elder Tian Suo then looked towards Yue Yang, nodded and said, “I should thank you for this. If you didn’t return, I would have definitely become the black sheep. Furthermore, the relationship between Da Xia Empire and Floating Mist Sect would become hostile. If that happens, that enemy, who was secretly instigating us with treacherous and murderous intentions, would have succeeded with his plot.”

“It’s your turn to investigate this matter thoroughly, I have already said what I could say. I am still a kid, so I don’t care so much about the country’s matters. It would be better if I can be a good student and return back to my studies,” Yue Yang would definitely not want to be involved in such a conspiracy between Sects and Empires.

What a joke, all of these fellows wouldn’t be easy to handle at all.

He had spent a huge effort to kill Elder Tian Suo’s impersonator. Now if he tried to get involved with the real one, wouldn’t that be seeking troubles for himself?

The Eagle-eyed Xia Hou We Lie nodded and agreed with Yue yang's words. In his heart, Yue Yang was their new student who had the most potential in the whole of Da Xia Empire. He should never be taken notice by those old geezers from the Floating Mist Sect, otherwise they would ship him off to the mountains to cultivate. Then he wouldn't belong to the Da Xia Empire anymore.

One does not need to be with the Four Great Sects to cultivate.

As long as one had enough talent, one would definitely become a strong warrior no matter where one cultivated.

When he thought about this, he hurriedly took out the magic core of that Silver-ranked Level 8 White Python, passing it over to Yue Yang, "I can't go back to the academy right now, so you should return first. Don't worry about doing quests, I would suggest that you listen to Grandma Wu Teng's lecture first. She had a very rich and deep foundation knowledge. If you want to learn about medicine, I can also ask Grandma Feng to go to the Academy to become your teacher."

"Thank you, teacher." Yue Yang immediately received the Silver-ranked Level 8 White Python's magic core the moment he saw it, hurriedly pretending to be a good student.

"Ooo Wang!" Hui Tai Lang chose this moment to wiggle its butt over, wagging its tail wildly as it bit a Silver-ranked Level 6 Ox-head Warrior's magic core in its mouth. It had actually wanted to swallow it, but remembering Yue Yang's warnings, it immediately kept it so that it could win favour with its master.

“You have done quite well. I’ll reward you with a delicious meat later at night!” Yue Yang was thoroughly overjoyed. He had gotten another magic core! Today was really a good day.

“Is he really Yue Qiu’s son? His looks might be quite similar, but, his personality...” Elder Tian Suo seemed to be quite interested in the little brat as he watch Yue Yang’s retreating figure.

“Hey, you should solve your own problems first,” The Eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie couldn’t help but to remind Elder Tian Suo that he was still a suspect.

“Seems like the Yue Clan will abruptly rise again...” Elder Tian Suo muttered, ignoring him instead.

Chapter 138 – Grandma Wu Teng

Returning back to the Academy, Yue Yang saw Fatty Hai whose face was so swollen that he looked like a pig, Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers waiting for him. The Death Class students also hadn't left yet.

Seeing that Yue Yang had returned, the old cunning fox was the first to welcome him.

“Student Titan, are you okay?” The old cunning fox was actually most afraid of losing Yue Yang, his student who had the most potential for growth. Seeing that he had come back safe and sound, the old cunning fox was overjoyed in his heart. However, he then asked quietly, “What’s the situation right now?”

“There were two Elder Tian Suos and we are still investigating the matter. I don’t quite understand it either.” Yue Yang obviously would not provide him with too much information, as he replied him softly.

“Seems like there’s a conspiracy here...” the old cunning fox was extremely clever, he felt that something was wrong immediately.

However, the old cunning fox didn’t continue to discuss this matter. Instead, he turned around and praised Yue Yang’s bravery and quick wit, who had maintained calmness in the face of difficulties and danger, in front of the other students. Finally, the old cunning fox also announced that he would give all students extra Achievement Points and a reward of 10 gold for every

student. He even decided at the last minute to treat everyone to a meal to calm their shock. Instantly, the old cunning fox's extravagant rewards drew a loud cheer throughout the Death Class.

Although they were curious, those students who didn't know Yue Yang didn't try to approach him to make an acquaintance.

The tall girl, Princess Qi Ming and the other children immediately surrounded Yue Yang. Little Princess Bei Bei, above all, had immediately flew straight into Yue Yang's embrace, crying out loud.

Previously, they didn't understand the situation at all. When the Death Class students had woken up, they realized that they have all returned to the academy. However, as Yue Yang was still missing, the old cunning fox had continued to worriedly waited for his news. A lot of people had actually thought that Yue Yang, who had participated in the battle, was already killed. Only Ye Kong and the others firmly believed that Yue Yang would be able to come back safely. Little Princess Bei Bei, for example, was especially scared and worried. Although she was extremely outstanding in her studies, she was still a small kid after all. When Yue Yang returned, she immediately jumped into his embrace and cried out... However, Yue Yang had a gift in amusing little lolis. After saying a few sentences, Little Princess Bei Bei was coaxed by Yue Yang to the point that her tears had turned into laughter.

“Didn't I say it before? I knew you would definitely be able to return safely. Who are you? You are Master Hai's brother! With my, Master Hai's undying luck protecting you, it would be hard for

you to be injured even if you wanted to.” Fatty Hai chattered noisily, as he declared pompously.

“...” Ye Kong didn’t say anything, he only nodded towards Yue Yang with a determined look.

Yue Bing had only heard about the news and had rushed over quickly. Her face that was deathly pale immediately fell into Yue Yang’s embrace as she hugged her brother tightly, as if she was afraid that if she relaxed her embrace, her brother would disappear like smoke. Not only Yue Yang, others who saw also quickly tried to calm her down. After consoling her for quite a while, and after Yue Bing discovered that her brother was alright after sizing him up and down a few more times, she finally calmed down.

Yue Yang suddenly felt that there was someone watching him attentively from afar. However, with his abilities, he couldn’t sense where the person was hiding at.

Who was this person that was watching him attentively from afar?

Could it be that Drunken Cat Big Sis?

Just as Yue Yang was about to search thoroughly with his [Divine Eyes], that person who was watching him attentively suddenly disappeared. It was as if that person had felt that Yue Yang was about to search the surroundings with his abilities.

Forget it, seems like that person had no evil intention... Yue Yang was surprised to find that there were so many concealed talents in this Ivy Academy. Not only was there the old cunning fox and the Drunken Cat Big Sis, there was also that strong person who was hiding and watching him attentively. It was indeed an Academy that had three thousand years of history. They really had a strong foundation.

Due to Elder Tian Suo's incident, the Death Class didn't continue to train by completing missions like before. Instead, they had no classes for the time being, taking this time to rest or to do their own things.

Yue Bing gave Yue Yang a piece of letter, saying that it was from Yi Nan.

Her handwriting looked graceful and elegant, although it looked like she had purposely wrote her letter with a very big and coarse font. Some texts were even bolded. However, all these couldn't hide the fact that it was a girl's beautiful handwriting. Yi Nan wrote that she was receiving her aunt's training right now, so she couldn't come to the Academy at all. She would meet with Yue Yang again after a while.

With regards to the matter of Yi Nan not being able to come earlier, Yue Yang was a little disappointed. Studying without girls meant no romantic environment and no whisperings of sweet nothings. That would really be a waste of opportunity.

Yue Yang decided to study with Yue Bing and listen to Grandma Wu Teng's lecture.

Grandma Wu Teng was actually not only a highly reputable plant-category Grandmaster, she was also the most important one. She had a rich foundation knowledge that no one in the academy could compare.

At first, Yue Yang thought there would be a lot of students who would come to her lecture. However, other than two other students, there were only Yue Bing and himself in her lecture. Even after waiting quite a while later, only Ye Kong, who was dragging a drowsy Fatty Hai, joined the lecture. Maybe it was because this was a foundation class, hence almost no students came to this lecture. Only those two other weird-looking students were present. One looked like a skinny monkey but had a beast as fat as a pig. The other student's beast looked normal, but its master was covered all over with cuts and bruises, all wrapped up like a rice dumpling. These two people seemed to be extremely diligent. Even before the class started, they were already taking notes unceasingly.

As they were all new students, neither Yue Yang, Yue Bing, Ye Kong nor the Li Clan Brothers recognised these two weird-looking students.

The only one who was familiar with the other students, Fatty Hai, was still in his dreamland chasing after beauties. He had no time to open his eyelids. Ye Kong could only smile awkwardly at those two weird-looking students, showing his amicability.

The two students quickly shook their hands, gesturing to Ye Kong and the others not to sit too near to them, reason unclear.

“Students, I’m Teacher Wu Teng...” At first, Yue Yang thought that Grandma Wu Teng would look like the benevolent Old Lady Doctor. Who would have thought that he was actually completely wrong.

Grandma Wu Teng was a woman who didn’t look to be over fifty years old on the outside. Her face was rosy and her skin was still exquisite. Her eyes looked as clear as spring water.

Other than a few wrinkles at the corner of her eyes, she didn’t look old at all.

Although her clothes were plain and simple, her personality was right the opposite.

The rationality and wisdom that she exuded made her character look especially unique. She looked as if no things on earth would make her facial expression change. She looked gentle and serene, as if she was a dried up well that wouldn’t be affected by outside events.

If Yue Yang hadn’t known earlier that this Grandma Wu Teng was actually Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the old cunning fox’s teacher, that she had been teaching students for over 200 years, and that she was actually over 300 years old, he would definitely thought that she was only a forty plus year old woman.

Grandma Wu Teng’s class was a little more casual. She didn’t take attendance nor teach from books. Rather, she taught from her

own experience.

After talking about the foundation knowledge about plant-category beasts for ten minutes, she stopped and asked with a smile, “Other than the plant-category related questions that we have just went through, everyone can ask any question.”

“I’d like to ask a few question with regards to beasts and summoners. If it is possible, I’d like to understand more about Holy Beasts and Mythical Beasts.” Yue Yang had a lot of questions in his heart. Due to the knowledge that he received from the grimoire, he knew about nurturing techniques of higher levelled beasts, but he was completely clueless on basic knowledge.

“Beasts, as everyone knows, are divided into normal-ranked, bronze-ranked, silver-ranked, gold-ranked, platinum-ranked and diamond-ranked. Most summoners will interact with normal-ranked beasts the most. Bronze-ranked beasts and above are called Elite Beasts. When they reached gold-ranked, we will call them a Beast King, which is where the term ‘Golden King Beast’ come about. As for platinum and diamond-ranked beast, they are not something that could be cultivated by humans. They are exceedingly rare, so let’s not focus on them now. Normally, when one attained the title of level 7 [Overlord], there would be a special Grandmaster that will lead them further to a whole new realm above... In this Soaring Dragon Continent that we live in, under normal circumstances, an entity higher than level 10 would not appear. In other words, normal-ranked beasts could only reach level 10 at the most. In most cases, these level 10 beasts existed due to a special reason. For example, Level 10 beasts such as the Ocean King Whale, Island Tortoise, Ten Thousand Years Ancient Tree, etc, could only exist due to their enormous sizes and endless

lifespan. They also had no natural predators in the whole world, which was why they could smoothly grow to level 10. At the same time, they also had formidable strength. As they had no predators, they had not encountered many battles in their whole life. Which is why, they have very little chance to go through a variant evolution, and will usually be normal-ranked their whole lives, without a chance of evolving.”

As Grandma Wu Teng spoke, the other two weird-looking students behind took down notes furiously.

Yue Yang, on the other hand, was listening very intently. He found that Grandma Wu Teng was actually an extremely formidable Ranker who was hiding her strength. On the outside, she looked like she only had a level 5 [Grandmaster]’s strength, but in reality, when Yue Yang saw through her with his [Divine Vision], he discovered her false appearance. Compared to the old cunning fox whose capabilities could not be seen by Yue Yang, Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai, this Grandma Wu Teng was actually, much, much stronger.

Yue Yang even wondered in his heart if this Grandma Wu Teng was one of the six Innate Rankers in the Da Xia Empire.

But why would an Innate Ranker be teaching in an Academy?

There was no evidence, so Yue Yang didn’t dare to be sure of his guess.

Of course, it didn’t matter what kind of person Grandma Wu

Teng actually was. Yue Yang felt that her knowledge was so much wider than those information stored in the records.

“If normal-ranked beast had a body like the Ocean King Whale, under the circumstances where they have no natural predators, they would have been able to level up to level 10. Our standards also only measure up to normal-ranked level 10. At Bronze-rank, we all know that that was the beginning of the Elite Beasts rankings. Every bronze-ranked beast on any level would be a level stronger than a

normal-ranked beast at the same level. The higher the level, the greater the difference in strength. I shall give you an example. A level 3 normal-ranked beast might fight on an equal ground with a level 2 bronze-ranked beast, however, a normal-ranked level 7 would definitely not be able to win against a bronze-ranked level 6, even if it was one level higher than the bronze-ranked beast... This is the difference in growth between an elite beast and a normal beast.”

“In Soaring Dragon Continent, bronze-ranked beast could only level up as high as Bronze-ranked Level 9. Generally speaking, beasts at Bronze-ranked Level 9 won't have anymore predators, so they won't be able to surpass themselves in their whole life anymore, forever stuck at Bronze-ranked Level 9. This is because in a sense, Bronze-ranked Level 9 is the peak, where a beast can practically dominate the whole area of its domain. Therefore, it does not have a predator anymore, which makes it impossible for it to evolve further... Out there in the nature, beasts such as Colossal Kodo Beast, Gargantuan Mammoth, Earthquake Dragon, Great Mountain Beast and the others, have no natural predators due to their enormous sizes. Although they are not as large as the Ocean Whale King and the Island Tortoise, to humans, they are already gigantic beasts. Hence, they will go through very little battles in

their lives. Generally speaking, they will definitely be the boss of their territory, so they can only reach bronze-ranked level 9 at the most.”

“According to what you said, does it mean that in Soaring Dragon Continent, Silver-ranked will only level up to Silver-ranked Level 8 at the most, and Gold-ranked will only level up to Gold-ranked Level 7 at the most?” Yue Yang asked.

“Yes, in this natural world, if no human is cultivating it, Silver-ranked level 8 and gold-ranked level 7 would have no more enemies in the world. They could only prey on any beasts under the sky, other than those on the same level as them. However, everyone must take note of one thing. As it is very difficult to go through a variant evolution, amongst beast that had reached the maximum level, normal-ranked level 10 beasts are the most, while beasts that evolved to gold-ranked are the least. If there are around 1000 normal-ranked level 10 beasts right now, there would be less than 50 gold-ranked level 7 beasts. Most of them only exists in legends, nobody could directly prove the existences of these beasts that had reached their peak...” Grandma Wu Teng nodded assuredly.

“Then in another place, would there be an existence of a beast that is higher than gold-ranked level 7? For example, would they exist in Tong Tian Tower?” Yue Yang asked further.

“Yes. However, those are not the topics that we will go through today. In the future when you guys already have the powers of a level 7 [Overlord], a specialist will be assigned to you to explain them. Let’s talk about your second question now, about warriors.

Other than the different level of titles that we knew about, after level 7 [Overlord], there would be another realm. When you have reached that realm, there would be a person that will guide you to reach greater heights...” Grandma Wu Teng didn’t explain what the realm after level 7 was, but Yue Yang could guess that that was the Innate Realm. After Level 7, one could start cultivating into the Innate Realm.

“Could you explain more about the difference in a beast’s and a warrior’s strength? Also, could you explain more about Holy Beasts and Mythical Beasts?” Yue Yang wanted to use this pretext to understand his abilities more clearly. What realm had he actually reached? Most importantly, he wanted to understand his beasts, such as Xiao Wen Li. Was she a Holy Beast or a Mythical Beast, actually?

“Alright, I will talk about the relationship between a beast and a warrior now. Also, I will talk about how to cultivate a Holy Beast and a Mythical beast.” Grandma Wu Teng spoke out calmly, but her words immediately shook everyone present. Cultivating a Holy Beast and a Mythical beast?

This, how could this be possible?

Holy Beasts and Mythical Beasts, could they really be cultivated with a person’s strength?

Chapter 139 – Mission, Starlight Serene

Indigo Grass

“With regards to Holy Beasts and Mythical Beasts, everyone should know that they exist. Furthermore, there are a lot of people who know the method to cultivate a Holy Beast. However, regretfully, these methods are useless to a normal person. Just like a normal person and summoning grimoires, they know that grimoires exist, but they simply can’t contract with them.” Grandma Wu Teng smiled, “If you want to know the method, then you must first understand what a Holy Beast is and how to evaluate them.”

Not only Yue Yang, even Yue Bing, Ye Kong and the Li Brothers were all listening intently with their ears perked.

Only Fatty Hai was still in his big dreams, snoring so loudly that his snores could be heard from the heavens.

Grandma Wu Teng didn’t mind the sleeping Fatty Hai. Instead, she looked at Yue Yang, then at Yue Bing, before nodding her head slightly.

Ye Kong suddenly felt that it was because Yue Yang and Yue Bing were listening in class that Grandma Wu Teng had decided to talk about this secret. Otherwise, if it was only normal students, they wouldn’t have had the chance to listen to such things.

“The term Holy Beasts actually does not refer to a specific type of beast, nor does it refer to a rank or level. Holy Beasts are actually a

realm. Any beasts that has a high intelligence is a Holy Beast. No matter if they are normal-ranked, bronze, silver, gold, platinum or diamond, as long as they have a high enough intelligence, they could be considered a Holy beast... Of course, it would be difficult for beasts under platinum-rank to possess a high intelligence. Hence, beasts under platinum-ranked that can become Holy Beasts are only one in a million. Other than those level 10 beasts that have lived in the natural world for thousands of years, even tens of thousands of years, it would be difficult for most beasts to reach the Holy Beast's realm. Holy Beasts' specialities are Speech and Learning. Due to their high intelligence, a Holy beast can speak human's language and at the same time, it can also learn a human's ability. Only when your beasts reach that kind of realm, will you understand that in reality, the Holy Beast's realm is actually just the starting point for a beast to reach the peak..."

"Then what about Mythical Beasts?" Yue Yang was secretly curious in his heart. The Bloody Queen had intelligence and could speak Demon Abyss Language. Would she count as a Holy Beast? Or had she just reached the doorstep to the Holy Beast's realm, and was just starting to evolve into a Holy Beast?

"With regards to Mythical Beasts, I don't know that much." Grandma Wu Teng paused for a while before talking about Mythical Beasts. She then continued indifferently, "I've heard that Mythical Beasts are the same as Holy Beasts, possessing a high intelligence. However, the largest difference between a Mythical Beast and a Holy Beast is that Mythical Beasts possess their own grimoires." Grandma Wu Teng words made Yue Yang's whole body jump with surprise.

Possess Grimoires?

Beasts that possess their own Grimoires are called Mythical Beasts?

If that is so, then Xiao Wen Li, she...

“Mythical Beasts can possess their own grimoires? This, how could that be possible?” Ye Kong and the Li Brothers were extremely shocked, they completely couldn’t believe that.

Grandma Wu Teng waved her hand lightly, gesturing towards Yue Yang to sit. “I’m not very clear about the specifics. I don’t know if these are facts or rumors. When you have reached that realm, you can research them on your own.”

Yue Yang was a little bit worried, afraid that Grandma Wu Teng would see through his abnormal behaviour.

This matter of Xiao Wen Li possessing her own grimoire must be kept an absolute secret. Hence, Yue Yang immediately tried to change the topic. “Then could you tell us more about Holy Beasts?”

“Holy Beasts, other than possessing a high intelligence, they can also learn and speak. They also have another ability, and that is to turn into a human form. It doesn’t matter if their initial body looked like a lion, an eagle or anything else, they can turn into a human. They would slowly evolve to look like humans, to speak our language, and study our martial art skills. The stronger the Holy Beast is the more perfect its evolution to human will be and the more they will look like us. If a Holy Beast can reach Ninth-

tier, then they would become identical to us. They can even sit here with us and listen to lectures, without us being able to differentiate who are beasts and who are humans.” Grandma Wu Teng’s words completely shocked Yue Yang.

His Bloody Queen, Xiao Wen Li, Barbarian Cow Shadow and even Thorny Flower, as time passes, they were turning more and more like human.

Not only their abilities, even their intelligence and emotions were continuously rising.

Could it be that the method of cultivating a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was a method to cultivate a Holy Beast? Could it be that Holy and Mythical Beasts weren’t as simple as 9 and 10 Star beasts, they could also be sub-divided into tiers?

Amongst Holy Beasts, how could we divide the strong and the weak?

Yue Yang hurriedly asked, “Amongst Holy Beasts, could they be divided by tiers? Is it like First Tier, Second Tier, Third Tier and so on?”

Grandma Wu Teng nodded assuredly, “The rankings of Holy Beasts are different from the ones used for normal beasts. Rankers would normally divide Holy Beasts into nine different tiers. Even if it is only a First Tier Holy Beast, its battle power would be equivalent to a normal-ranked level 9. However, as their battle power is simply too powerful, way beyond what a normal person

can imagine, normal warriors wouldn't need to know all this. Hence, Rankers classified Holy Beasts' tiers generally as 9 Stars. Of course, this 9 Stars classification is completely different from a normal-ranked beast level 9. When your beasts have reached that realm, you would understand on your own."

(Shiro: Refer to Chapter 41 for explanation about beasts' star rankings)

Ye Kong and the others listened until their heads almost exploded. If First Tier Holy Beast already had a level 9 normal-ranked beast's strength, then how frightening would the powers of a Ninth Tier Holy Beast be?

Furthermore, above Holy Beasts, there were still Mythical Beasts... No wonder they said that being a Holy Beast was only the starting point of reaching the ultimate strength. This, for a normal warrior, was indeed hard to imagine. No wonder Rankers who had reached the Ultimate Strength would think that warriors below level 6 were ants.

A thought suddenly flashed through Yue Yang's mind. Why didn't he also ask about the mysterious beast that had instantly killed the Dark Golden Specter? "Above Mythical Beasts, would there be an even stronger entity?"

"It was said that above Mythical Beasts, there exist beings called Transcending Mythical Beasts. They are a kind of innate entity, born with their master. It wouldn't be possible for normal warriors to have them... Legend has it that once in every ten thousand years, someone with that luck would appear in the Soaring Dragon Continent. But it is only a legend and there are no

records about Mythical Beasts in this world. With regards to Mythical Beasts, I don't really understand. I can only talk about Holy Beasts as the main point in this lecture."

"Transcending Mythical Beasts..." Yue Yang thought in his heart, before he woke up from his unconsciousness, could the mysterious beast that appeared and killed the Dark Golden Specter in an instant be...

Could the lucky person that had not appeared in Soaring Dragon Continent for ten thousand years be him?

However, he wasn't someone from the Soaring Dragon Continent at all. He was a guy who had travelled dimensions. Even if the lucky person appeared, how could it be him, who was a guy from another dimension?

Right now, the only thing that he could be sure of was that Xiao Wen Li, who owned a diamond grimoire, might be a Mythical Beast...

She might even be a Transcending Mythical Beast...

Although he was a guy from another world and was not born with a Transcending Mythical Beast, he had met Empress Fei Wen Li who had been sealed for tens of thousands of years. He had even incubated Xiao Wen Li together with her. This might pass for the prediction that the lucky person who was born with a Transcending Mythical Beast would appear once in ten thousand years... He thought that the relationship between Xiao Wen Li and

himself could pass as the requirements for a Transcending Mythical Beast...

Yue Yang quietly decided that no matter what kind of existence Xiao Wen Li was, he would slowly cultivate her.

As for that Divine Grimoire, he would definitely be able to open it when he had cultivated his Innate Invisible Sword Qi high enough.

At that time, he could look at the Divine Grimoire's records.

He believed that all of his questions would be answered then.

Grandma Wu Teng's eyes that were filled with wisdom brushed across Yue Yang's face as she smiled, "With regards to cultivating a Holy Beast, actually, a lot of people know the method of cultivating them. However, they don't have the powers to do it. Listen to this carefully and, maybe you guys could cultivate a Holy Beast in the future!"

"Yeah!" Yue Bing felt that it wouldn't be possible for her, but it should be possible for her brother, who owned a Bloody Queen. Due to her instinct, she listened to the lecture with keen interest.

"In order to cultivate Holy Beasts, it is best if they are Guardian Beasts, as they will never truly die or betray their master! If for some reason the Guardian Beast couldn't be cultivated, you can cultivate other beasts too. A Holy Beast cultivation method is simply to make your beasts level up continuously, increase their

intelligence and evolve them to be more human-like. It is the same for every type of beast. In Tong Tian Tower, there is a World's Tree Quest that will give you a Wisdom Fruit as a reward. This is one way to increase a beast's intelligence. Refining a Magical Pill that will develop a beast's brain, increasing their intelligence, is another way. Also, in the first floor of Tong Tian Tower, at the Twelve Zodiac Temples, every time one finishes a challenge with one hundred percent completion rate, one will receive a reward from the Ancient Code. If one completed it with more than one hundred percent completion rate, he may be able to increase his beast's intelligence... Therefore, if one could complete all the challenges in the Twelve Zodiac Temples and successfully passes, he should be able to cultivate a beast with a Holy Beast's intelligence." Grandma Wu Teng's words suddenly made Yue Yang realize that those extremely difficult challenges were actually created to help people cultivate Holy Beasts... No wonder they were so abnormal!

"As long as one succeeded once in completing the challenge and acquired the higher intelligence rewards, then they would not be able to redo the challenge. They can only go to the next temple. If all twelve Zodiac temples have been completed, they can go to Tong Tian Tower's Second Floor and complete the Heaven, Earth and Humanity Halls. These Three Halls also have the same type of reward. On higher floors, there is also the continuation for the World's Tree Quest, and many other difficult quests... The older generation had passed down these wise words before, "Higher risks, higher returns!". If you want to cultivate a Holy Beast, you would need to go through countless difficult challenges, and experience many more arduous battles. Only then will your beast level up even higher. This cultivation depends on each individual's training – how many quests you can do, how many hardships you can stand, how many battles you can face, and how high you can cultivate your beasts – all these depend only on yourself, no one

can help you with them. There's no shortcut to cultivation... Children, at your young age, it's the best time for you to learn and improve yourselves. Hence, you must treasure your youth and your chances!" Grandma Wu Teng's words opened a new door of knowledge for Yue Yang, Yue Bing, Ye Kong and the others.

Although they had not stepped into that realm, they now had the knowledge. They now knew that there was another realm at higher places, another wonderful world beyond what they had thought of.

The Soaring Dragon Continent was just the starting point.

The real place for strong Rankers was in the higher levels of Tong Tian Tower, that was the real world that belonged to the strongest.

For the next three days, Yue Yang and the others all came early for Grandma Wu Teng's lectures. Her knowledge was as deep as the oceans, supplementing Yue Yang's lack of basic knowledge and quenching all of Yue Yang's unanswerable questions. Yue Yang felt like he had learnt new things and improved every single day.

No matter if it was with regards to controlling himself or his beasts, or fighting against the opponent's beast's weaknesses, Yue Yang had remarkable improvements.

It was only now that Yue Yang finally realized that he was still just at the starting point on the road to becoming a strong Ranker...

Equipped with this knowledge, he was like a tiger who had been bestowed with wings. He could soar up to the sky.

His next breakthrough should be very soon!

Grandma Wu Teng's words actually did not help Ye Kong and the Li Brothers too much, because the difference in their abilities were too far. Their beasts' levels were also heaven and earth apart from becoming Holy Beasts. They were just like primary school kids who had gone to a university lecture. Although they had absorbed some knowledge, in reality, they couldn't understand much. Yue Yang, on the other hand, was the exact opposite. His abilities were the closest to what Grandma Wu Teng was lecturing about. Almost every speech that she said assisted his improvements greatly. A lot of things that Yue Yang was confused about initially, had dispersed like clouds being blown away by the wind, giving way to a clear and bright sunlight.

At the lecture, most of the time, it would be Yue Yang asking questions and Grandma Wu Teng answering them.

In other words, Grandma Wu Teng's lecture was mainly teaching Yue Yang alone. Almost all of the content of her lecture was structured in order to teach Yue Yang. For Ye Kong and the others, they could only remember it in their hearts, and leave it for later when their abilities had increased to understand it better.

"Today's lesson will stop here. In order to put the materials that we have talked about in class into practice, I have decided to arrange some homework for you guys. Go to the Despair Abyss and bring a Starlight Serene Indigo Grass back. If you guys succeed, I

will bestow your beasts with one [Fortune] from my [Fortune] Inherent Skill.” Grandma Wu Teng’s quest was actually set up for Yue Yang. Ye Kong and the others, including Yue Bing, would not have the ability to go to the Despair Abyss to get a Starlight Serene Indigo Grass. Only Yue Yang had that kind of ability.

“Yes.” Of course, Yue Yang had perfectly understood Grandma Wu Teng’s intention. She wanted to help him improve!

“I’ll give you guys one month. We’ll meet here again in one month!” Grandma Wu Teng nodded her head lightly as she slowly left.

A month? Could it be that Grandma Wu Teng felt that he would need at least a month’s time to pick a Starlight Serene Indigo Grass in the Despair Abyss? What kind of shithole was that Despair Abyss?

Even Yue Yang, who was already mentally prepared, was shocked by this.

Chapter 140 – Marriage

After Grandma Wu Teng left, Yue Bing took out a map of the Soaring Dragon Continent and spread it out on the table, letting everyone else see it as well.

Despair Abyss wasn't located in the Soaring Dragon Continent. This was the biggest problem.

In order to get into the Despair Abyss, one must go to the Tian Luo Kingdom.

In another sense, Despair Abyss was like Gui Jian Chou, another one of the Five Great Land of Deaths. However, it was also very different from Gui Jian Chou. Despair Abyss was not a place that a normal person could go to. Every spring and summer, there would be countless adventurers venturing into Despair Abyss to pick herbs. There would also be thieves trying to steal demon beasts' eggs. However, due to the high death rate, especially in the inner regions of Despair Abyss, only 10% of those adventurers that risked their lives and entered would come back alive. Hence, when normal mercenaries heard from their leader that they were going to Despair Abyss, they would write their wills and say farewell to their families... After a long time, this deep rift valley which was originally called Coiling Snakes Valley was renamed as Despair Abyss.

Amongst the three main causes of deaths in Despair Abyss, the first one was not due to ferocious beasts, but the terrain instead.

The death rate due to falls while walking in this rift valley was extremely high. There was a high chance of falling at any time, even higher than the chances of getting killed by beasts. The second cause of death was the mountain winds. It was said that those biting cold winds could easily blow a herd of goats several miles away, let alone people. The third cause was Spider Demonesses. No matter if it was the gigantic Bloody Nest's Queen or the miniature Funnel Spider Demoness, they were all champions in causing death.

The spiders all belonged to the same species, the Wolf Spider, which was able to crawl and climb at an extremely fast speed. There were Bird Spiders that preyed on birds, Sand-drilling Spider that could hide under the ground and Dark-water Spiders, that would hide underwater and launch a sneak attack on its preys at any time. All these spiders were like countless killing machines scattered all over the valley.

The most frightening thing was that the spiders here loved to eat humans.

Between humans and animals, these spiders would attack humans first. This was the reason for the despair of the adventurers.

“We should first prepare our luggage well and then teleport to Crowleaf City. There, we can take a horse carriage to Sand Gate to cross the country's borders. Afterwards, we can teleport to Waterbull City, then teleport to Mountain Cats City and then hire a carriage to the Coiling Snakes Town. We can buy the detailed map of Despair Abyss when we arrive there.” Although Ye Kong

had never gone to Despair Abyss before, he had plenty of experience, so he could quickly come up with the shortest path. The only thing that Yue Yang needed to do was to nod his head.

“Yue Bing, do you want to come with us?” Yue Yang was a little worried that her body wouldn’t be able to endure the harsh conditions. Despair Abyss, such a harsh-sounding place, would definitely not be a place of leisure and fun.

“Yeah, I also wanted to train hard!” Yue Bing showed a determined attitude.

She had always hoped to follow her brother and increase her abilities quickly so that she wouldn’t be her brother’s burden.

Since they had a chance to practice, she felt that she shouldn’t be afraid of the Despair Abyss. She was determined to challenge her limits with hardships. Of course, she also knew that her brother would definitely protect her if there was any danger. She only needed to grit her teeth and force herself to follow at his side, and train diligently.

When Yue Yang saw how determined Yue Bing was to improve, he didn’t stop her. Despair Abyss, in normal people’s heart, was a frightening place. But in Yue Yang’s heart, this place was much better than Gui Jian Chou. Let alone the Demon Insects infesting the whole of Gui Jian Chou, there was even a Gold-ranked Level 7 Reaper Mantis, which was definitely not a herbivore. Although the terrain of the Despair Abyss was a little bit frightening, accompanied by strong mountain winds, if they had the combination of the right talents and flying-type beasts, it

shouldn't be too difficult.

The only thing that made Yue Yang alarmed was Grandma Wu Teng's time limit.

One month!

Even if he subtracted five days for the time spent on the journey there, there would still be 25 days left. If it was that way, the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass would definitely not be so easily found!

Furthermore, with such a precious treasure, it would be impossible if there wasn't a strong beast vying for it too! Even when they went to the Demon Abyss to gather Black Eared Shrivelled Heart Orchid, they had to fight with a Level 8 Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle!

“Ye Kong and the others, please prepare the things needed for the journey. I will go to the Shang Jing Beast Store to look around for a while, and look for a suitable Chaos Egg. I will also need to send Luo Hua City Mistress a letter to ask her if she has any advice on how to pick the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass. Seventh Sister and I will also go back home to bid our farewells to Fourth Mother. If you want to come along, then meet us at Sand Gate National Border and wait for us! Oh right, I also need to send Brother Yi Nan a reply...” Yue Yang felt that there wouldn't be enough force if there were no girls in their party. Thus, he decided to ask Yi Nan again if she had the time.

“Sure, let’s do as you say!” Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers naturally had no other opinions. Simply relying on their own abilities, they could only protect themselves in Despair Abyss. Gathering Starlight Serene Indigo Grass could only be done by Yue Yang alone.

Fatty Hai was still snoring louder than thunder, his saliva flowed like waterfall from the table to the floor.

Yue Yang realized that this fellow actually had a [Sleeping] Inherent Skill. As long as he entered a class, no matter whose class it was, he would immediately fall into a daze and when he took out his books, he would immediately fall asleep.

As a warrior who had contracted a grimoire, it was really rare to see such a useless Ranker.

However, he might be hiding a secret reason...

Through his Level 3 [Divine Vision], Yue Yang could see that Fatty Hai had a strong point that others didn’t have. Furthermore, this strong point was also extremely unique and it also had a good effect when used!

“Let’s go, pighead!” Seeing Fatty Hai sleeping like a log, Ye Kong couldn’t help but bestow a slap upon him.

But there was no reaction from Fatty Hai, his snores getting even louder than ever, shaking the earth.

Ye Kong was left with no choice but to use his ultimate move, pouring water on Fatty Hai's head. As a result, Fatty Hai shivered a little before finally sitting up and wiping his face with his chubby hands. He looked all around with a blank face. When he saw Yue Yang, he suddenly shouted noisily and anxiously, "It's raining, it's raining, let's gather all the clothes drying outside!"

Yue Yang was almost stricken to death by this fatty. He didn't study when there were important things to be studied and instead, he had learnt how to be a maid.

When Yue Bing saw this, she covered her mouth with her hands and giggled.

"Let's go, we have a quest!" Ye Kong furiously kicked Fatty Hai's legs, signalling him not to embarrass himself any further.

"What are the rewards for the quest?" Fatty Hai was only concerned with this.

"If you succeed, you'll get a beauty as a reward." said Yue Yang, sounding extremely serious and honest, without the slightest hint of doubt in his expression.

"Why didn't you say so earlier? I, Master Hai was born to this world to finish quests! As your boss, of course I would need to bring a party, bring all of you guys to finish our quest... Right, what is the quest about? Picking Starlight Serene Indigo Grass? Where? Despair Abyss? Ahh, isn't that just Despair Abyss... Wait,

what did you say? Where was it again? Despair Abyss? No! I'm not going!" When Fatty Hai heard it, he immediately changed his mind. It seemed like in a choice between beauties and his own life, he would still choose his own life.

"Since boss is not going, the beauty will be Ye Kong's!" Yue Yang extravagantly gave Ye Kong the non-existent beauty.

"There really is a beauty? I... I'm throwing caution to the winds! I don't want this 150kg body anymore! Isn't it just Despair Abyss? I'll just pick the grass... Can we go to another place? Going there is equivalent to courting death... I, your boss, have never even embraced one woman before. If I die just like that, isn't that simply too miserable?!" Fatty Hai started crying loudly.

"You can not go if you want, but then the beauty would be mine!" Ye Kong whistled.

"Relinquish the beauty immediately and get rid of your greed and lust. The beauty belongs to me, do you understand?" Fatty Hai grabbed Ye Kong's collar, roaring furiously.

"Fatty, didn't you say you weren't going?" Ye Kong asked curiously.

"Call me big boss. As your boss, how could I cower in the face of danger? Do you think I'm that kind of person? I'm a brave man! I'm a hero... a hero who was born to be paired with a beautiful girl. You, a monkey of a footman, should be more low-key, otherwise I will chop your bones alive. No one can fight over beauties with this

boss, do you understand? Before this boss manages to get rid his status as a 'boy' and become a 'man', don't even think of getting rid of yours. Otherwise I will go on a rampage, I will ignore you forever!" Fatty Hai's eyes were like a berserk bull's, looking extremely ferocious and violent.

"As the boss, you haven't graduated from your virginity? Did I hear wrongly?" Yue Yang who was about to leave, turned his head and asked.

"What are you talking about? Your boss here is a casanova. I had already graduated from my virginity at 12 years old. How could I be so miserable that I am still a virgin? There are so many beauties chasing after me that I struggle to cope with them. I lose sleep every day because I'm too busy pleasuring these girls. Can't you see that girls everywhere are fighting over me? Why are you worrying about me not having lost my virginity yet...? Cry? I didn't cry, when did you ever see me cry? I was just a little bit excited; these are proud manly tears! Could I not be excited about getting acquainted with you bunch of crazy people, could I not be proud?" Fatty Hai continued to blabber, and finally cried in the end.

Bringing Ye Kong and Fatty Hai along, Yue Yang then went to the Beast Store and looked around.

However, he didn't see a suitable Chaos Egg. Yue Yang knew that this matter depended on luck, so he shouldn't be anxious. He then wrote two letters and sent them to Yi Nan and Luo Hua City Mistress respectively.

Yue Yang then returned to the Yue Clan's Castle along with Yue

Bing. As for Ye Kong and the others, they went to prepare all sorts of different things needed for the journey.

Fourth Mother was extremely happy when her son and daughter came back.

She happily told Yue Yang about her husband, “Your Fourth Uncle is much better now! It was all thanks to Miss Feng’s care, day and night. I have met with that lady and she doesn’t seem to be one of those kind of ladies. Her personality and temperament are all extremely docile and kind, she is a true well-bred lady. If not for that, why would she be willing to sacrifice herself to save your Fourth Uncle!”

Yue Yang didn’t say anything. He thought that even if Miss Feng was a kind person, this matter was definitely still a trap laid out for them on purpose.

However, right now, the most important thing was not to make an enemy out of Yue Shan.

He would need to wait for the best time to attack!

Yue Yang decided to train and improve as he waited quietly for an opportunity. Since he had decided to unveil the plot, he would catch the mastermind behind this plot... Since he had decided to fall out with his clan, then he should fight a great battle once and for all with them. He would attack with a fatal blow, so that his enemies would never have the chance for a come back! Furthermore, there were still the matters of Fourth Uncle with

Miss Feng, the cancellation of the pitiful guy's engagement with Miss Xue, and the pitiful guy drowning himself...

All these matters, Yue Yang needed to investigate them thoroughly in secret and then release the evidence about his enemy with one move!

During his return this time, other than visiting Fourth Mother, Yue Yang had also wanted to help Yue Shuang open her channels. Yue Shuang had never cultivated before, but Yue Yang had frequently channeled some of his innate qi into her body earlier to help her open her meridian channels. This way, the little girl's body would be healthy and not fall sick easily.

Afterwards, Yue Yang realized that after opening her meridian channels, Yue Shuang's spiritual qi in her body had become denser than ever before. This would make her chances of contracting grimoires extremely high.

However, Yue Yang did not immediately give her the Bronze Grimoire to contract. He wanted to wait for an appropriate time and hand it over to her in front of an audience. He wanted to let the whole clan witness her successfully contract the grimoire... Of course, in order to guarantee Yue Shuang being able to contract the grimoire, Yue Yang reckoned that he would need to open at least five of her meridian channels first. He had only opened two channels for now, so it was still too early. Furthermore, helping Yue Shuang open her meridian channels was the kind of thing that should not be known by others. More importantly, he shouldn't let Yue Shuang herself know about it. Otherwise, this loose-tongued little girl would probably leak the secret out easily to anyone who

gave her a candy.

Yue Yang pretended to play with the little girl, and when she wasn't paying attention, he would channel innate qi into her little by little, helping her open her channels step by step.

Yue Shuang, this little girl, liked to play the most. When she went crazy playing, she wouldn't realise that her body was getting hotter.

In any case, he didn't need to rush to get Yue Shuang to contract her grimoire. Yue Yang felt that if she really managed to contract the grimoire, she wouldn't have the time to play anymore. She would need to work hard to cultivate everyday, which would be really pitiful. Hence, Yue Yang didn't have a mind to allow her to contract her grimoire so soon. Instead, he was preparing to find a suitable opportunity so that the Fourth Branch could show off in front of all of the Yue Clan's members!

Fourth Mother, he must bring her even more glory and honor!

He must make her the most glorious and proudest mother in this whole world!

“San-er, since your engagement with Miss Xue was cancelled, you don't have a marriage partner right now. This cannot be. How about if I help you ask around if there are any girls who are looking for a marriage partner? Didn't you get along quite well with Princess Qian Qian? She is a Princess, so her status matches yours. Your [Four Pillars of Destiny](#) also match each others. It's just your

ages that are a little bit messed up...” Fourth Mother seemed to be prepared to talk about marriage partners with Yue Yang. This gave Yue Yang a huge shock.

“Please don’t think about this. Currently, I only have the mind to cultivate seriously. Can we talk about this later?” Yue Yang hurriedly shook his head and rejected the offer.

“Alright then, find a suitable girl for yourself. If you can’t find one, then Fourth Mother will make the decision for you.” Fourth Mother had heard her daughter talk about someone called Miss Yi Nan before, but she hadn’t seen her yet. She didn’t know what Yi Nan would be like, but Fourth Mother would definitely not oppose her son’s freedom in his own love relationships. She was even afraid that her son would be too shy to ask Yi Nan out or tell her he wanted to meet her again.

Yue Yang only stayed for one night in the Yue Clan’s Castle before hurriedly leaving, afraid that Fourth Mother would mention marriage to him again.

Taking Yue Bing along, he made his way to the Sand Gate National Border.

When they arrived at the National Border, which was an endless line of high defensive walls, Yue Yang discovered that at the place where people were queueing to get across the border, Ye Kong and the others were fighting with strangers. Both sides were fighting ferociously, causing a loud ruckus. There was even a crowd of people watching them.

Aih, what is going on now?

Chapter 141 – A Mysterious Female Thief

Neither party summoned their beasts. They only waved their fists around, striking out indiscriminately.

Ye Kong and his group had fewer people, but they were staunch and unyielding in character.

Moreover, they were used to working as labourers and mercenaries. Even though they were ganged up on and beaten, they did not retreat even one step. Instead, they fought with all their might, and they were not entirely at a disadvantage. Especially the Li Clan Brothers, with the two brothers covering for each other, one attacking and one defending, they acted with such tacit understanding and rapport between them that the multiple men who attacked them on all sides could not gain any form of advantage.

Since he had contracted with King Kong Demon Ape and Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, Ye Kong's body constitution had greatly improved. The additional strength he received from his beasts was also enhanced. Most importantly, his confidence was back.

Even if he did not summon King Kong Demon Ape, he would still be able to match his opponents.

He, alone, challenged two people.

Those two people whom he challenged had faces so similar that

they could only be twin brothers. These two brothers had tall and sturdy figures. Furthermore, the two of them had teamed up against Ye Kong. They fought intensely and aggressively, as if they wanted to swallow Ye Kong whole. Ye Kong was also not resigned to his fate and spared no effort in returning their blows. The three of them punched and kicked one another with fervour, ferociously beating up each party's face... The three people's faces were beaten up so much that there was blood everywhere and their faces were thoroughly bruised and battered.

Maybe the anger in their hearts had been ignited by their fight, none of them were willing to stop, and were determined to fight till the bitter end, until one party collapsed.

The surrounding spectators also did not think that this was odd because the scene of mercenaries fighting was a common one which happened every day, no matter where or when.

Even the frontier soldiers were unconcerned and nobody came forth to dissuade or stop them.

Under Yue Yang's signal, Hui Tai Lang pounced. With a thunderous roar, it first shocked every person and beast present. Then it easily knocked away the few men who were ganging up and beating Fatty Hai, saving this fellow who was kneeling on the ground covering his head and not caring about the state of his butt.

With the appearance of the Silver-ranked Level Four Hui Tai Lang, the surrounding mercenaries immediately retreated ten meters away, one after another. The colour of their faces even changed.

All the people fighting were also intimidated into hurriedly stopping their fights.

“Oi, this is not in accordance with the rules. It was clearly stated that beasts cannot be used, you summoned such a strong beast to take part in the battle, aren’t you taking unfair advantage of us?” From the crowd, a girl and a guy walked out. The guy still looked amicable, with a normal expression on his face, but the girl’s eyebrows were erect with anger as she reproached Yue Yang loudly.

“I am not sure about what happened, but ten people are ganging up on four of them. Is this part of your rules?” Yue Yang replied sarcastically.

“We don’t care about the matters regarding the Ye Clan. But before you came, firstly, we did not summon beasts to attack your comrades, and secondly, we did not participate in the fight, this proves that we have no evil intentions. This is just an internal dispute of the Ye Clan. Furthermore, both parties are exercising restraint. They did not use weapons or firearms, they only use their fists. Once they finish this fight, their anger would have been vented. Why don’t we just forget it this time.” The guy had a polite attitude, and he spoke neither servilely nor overbearingly. When he saw the Silver-ranked Level Four Hui Tai Lang, he did not turn pale from astonishment unlike the surrounding mercenaries, it seemed like he was also an extraordinary person.

“Forget about it? What forget about it? You guys saw that Hui Tai Lang is here, hence you guys are frightened, of course you

would want us to forget about it. Just now when I was being beaten up, why didn't you say 'forget about it'?" Fatty Hai's anger was excessive, but his face did not have any injury at all, there were just a lot of shoeprints on his butt. Perhaps the other party saw his useless appearance and did not hit him with much force. They did not even hit his face, but kicked his butt instead.

"Ye Kong, don't you think that just because you found a powerful person to lean on for support, you can change your own fortune. You are a piece of rubbish, you were trash last time, you still are trash and next time you will still continue to be trash. You are such a useless person that you will forever be useless." One of the twin brothers pointed at Ye Kong and abused him loudly.

"I am not going to quarrel with you. When it's time for our family to pay respects to our ancestors, we will compete again in front of the entire family. Let's see who is the real useless piece of rubbish then. " Ye Kong condescendingly spit out a mouthful of bloody spittle.

"Who's afraid of you? When that time comes, if you don't dare to compete, you are an ostrich." The two twin brothers sporting nosebleeds furiously returned to their comrades' sides.

"What's going on?" Yue Yang's curiosity was piqued. Could it be that this Ye Kong was the same as the tragic guy? Could it be that both of them had the same situation of family disputes leading to family members killing each other?

"They are my older cousins..." Ye Kong started to say, but he was afraid of Yue Yang misunderstanding, so he added another

sentence. “We don’t have animosity towards each other, just some conflicting views. We have had them since young.”

“So why did you all start fighting?” Yue Bing asked.

“Cough, during new year’s there was a little conflict at home, and when we met here, they were swearing and cursing at me so much that I couldn’t hold back my temper, hence we started fighting. This is just a conflict between me and the two of them. My father and uncle are actually on good terms with each other, so we just quarrelled a little and did not really use our real strength.” Ye Kong was a little embarrassed when answering Yue Bing’s question. Yue Yang understood the situation a little. This guy, Ye Kong, had two powerful beasts, the King Kong Demon Ape and Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, but he did not summon any of them. That was mainly because he was afraid of accidentally killing his two cousins. Otherwise, with the King Kong Demon Ape’s and Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle’s battle power, he could easily crush the entire group of the opposing party. Of course, the amicable guy who looked quite strong was an exception.

“Use real strength... Even if you really used your real strength, you are still a useless piece of rubbish. If not for the fact that I held back in consideration of Uncle, would you still even have your life?” The two twin brothers laughed coldly.

“I’ll re-compete with you all again during the family ancestral ceremony. Now I am not going to fight with you.” Ye Kong had complete confidence in himself now.

Now that he had the Bronze-ranked King Kong Demon Ape and

the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, Ye Kong felt that he was close to or even be better than his strength last time, before his beast was killed. Hence, he was unafraid of facing challenges. He felt that after following Yue Yang to train and level up, he had improved ten times faster than if he had done it himself. When the familial ancestral ceremony comes, his strength would probably have enhanced even further. His two cousins would definitely not be able to evenly match up to him by then.

If they still thought that he was the same useless piece of rubbish who was lying on the ground in Tong Tian Tower, disheartened and awaiting death, two months ago, they couldn't be more wrong.

“Everybody is still young and reckless. Once they are provoked, it is normal to start a fight. Now that the matter is resolved, everybody has their own things to do. Why don't we all disperse?” The amicable guy cupped his hands and bowed towards Yue Yang, preparing to leave with his group.

“Wait, does this mean I just endured your beatings for nothing? You, the beautiful lady over there, come out now, I want to challenge you individually.” Fatty Hai's real purpose was not to fight a duel with her, his real intentions were to touch and be in physical contact with the beautiful girl's body.

“Shameless. Who wants to fight with you.” The little beautiful girl on the opposite side was smart and did not take the bait, rejecting the offer, pulling a cute grimacing face.

“I, Master Hai, shall give you a handicap of three punches... ”

When Fatty Hai saw that the girl wanted to avoid fighting, he was even prouder and more obnoxious with himself.

“You damned fatty, just wait, today the big dog is here, so I will not lower myself to your level. I will skin you alive the next time if I see you.” The little beautiful girl was not afraid of Fatty Hai at all, but she was actually a little fearful of Hui Tai Lang.

“Even without Hui Tai Lang I am also powerful. I am the Boss, get it? All the people here are the little minions that I am taking care of. Hui Tai Lang’s level is a little high, but this Master Hai’s beast is also not in the least bit inferior. I am just a low-profile person, and hence I don’t show it. Don’t tell me people who are low-key like me would tell you guys that I am a Grimoire contractor and that I own a Bronze-ranked Level Two Iron Rhinoceros?... Oi, all of you don’t leave, I haven’t finished what I am saying!” Once Fatty Hai opened his mouth, all the people scattered in all directions. Nobody was willing to listen to his crap, this drove him quite mad.

Yue Yang looked into the distance. There was a masked thief with a tall, slim body and slender and lanky legs who was silently standing in the empty space, observing quietly.

At first, Yue Yang had thought that she was Miss Yi Nan, but when he seriously studied her, this female thief was at least half a head taller than Yi Nan, and was also quite strong. When Yue Yang used his Level 3 [Divine Vision] to observe carefully, he couldn’t help but react in shock.

This female thief, she was the strongest person at his age that he

had ever met.

Yue Yang estimated that this female thief was even stronger than Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Xue Tan Lang, those Three Great Killing Stars. From a certain angle for comparison purposes, she was another Princess Qian Qian, with her true capability perhaps on par with Princess Qian Qian, that Royal Swordswoman. The Royal Swordswoman primarily majored in battle skills, but this was clearly not the case for the female thief. She only disguised her appearance to look like a female thief, but actually under Yue Yang's [Divine Vision], he could see that she was an element-type summoner. Her true ability was concealed quite well.

The oddest thing was that the ancient book in the female thief's hands, Yue Yang realised, was actually a Spirit Equipment that was alive like his Hui Jin Magic Blade.

The equipment's energy and spirit had been concealed. If they were all to be unleashed, its abilities were perhaps equal to Hui Jin's.

Who was this female thief?

How could she have so much strength and capability?

Yue Yang was really very astonished. If the world had one Princess Qian Qian, it was only because Jun Wu You that fellow had taken much painstaking effort to nurture her. Then as for this lady who had disguised her appearance as a female thief, which royal family's nurturing result is she? Without a Clan, country or

even a sect's power, to train one of the younger generations to this level at such a young age was practically impossible. The Three Great Killing Stars were the result of their clans' all-out effort in nurturing them, and Princess Qian Qian was a result of the royal family, so this unknown female thief who was even more low-profile than Princess Qian Qian was perhaps the disciple that was groomed painstakingly by some sect...

“What is it?” Yue Bing followed Yue Yang's face and saw the silently observing female thief. She immediately shook her head. “That's not Sister Yi Nan, ah, I meant that's not Brother Yi Nan.”

“Let's go.” Yue Yang stroked Yue Bing's little head lightly.

When Yue Yang and company walked towards Sand Gate National Border, a light wind suddenly picked up.

Yue Yang couldn't help but turn his head back to look, and he realised that the female thief who was originally standing there looking on silently had disappeared without a trace unknowingly.

This, isn't this speed too fast?

How did she do it?

It was neither through teleportation or invisibility... How did she even leave?

Could it be that the girl was here because of him? Yue Yang's

thoughts kept spinning around in his head, at a speed as fast as lightning. Amongst the Four Great Sects, which sect was targeting him?

After they passed the national border and rode in their carriage to Waterbull City, before entering the city gates, Yue Yang unintentionally turned his head to look at behind him. The female thief was just about a hundred meters away, looking on silently. How did she manage to chase after them? Yue Yang was even more surprised, her actions could still go undetected by him, it was really... This girl was really godly.

Yue Yang was extremely alert. Once he entered Waterbull City, he immediately proceeded with his team towards the Teleportation Circle, to teleport to Mountain Cat City.

At Mountain Cat City, they were getting ready to find a place to have their lunch.

Yue Bing suddenly tugged at Yue Yang's elbow with her small hand. "Look over there, isn't that the older sister from just now? How did she come here even faster than us?"

At a restaurant for martial arts practitioners named "Customers Come Again", on the second floor by the window, the female thief was quietly sitting there. She was still clasping her hands and watching them, giving them her full attention.

Evidently, she had arrived earlier than them.

Yue Yang was secretly frustrated by this girl. No matter whether she wanted to fight or push him, she just needed to come over and say something. Acting so mysteriously all the time, didn't she know that curiosity kills the cat? Who was she? He had never provoked her before, so what was her problem that made her follow him everywhere?

After they finished their lunch, Yue Yang and his companions sat in their carriages and made their way to the Coiling Snakes Valley.

On their entire journey, they did not see the female thief.

Yue Yang's heart suddenly felt a little empty, and his imagination started to run wild. Was there any chance that the person was actually not following him at all, and previously, she was just coincidentally going the same way as he was for half the journey?

Luckily he didn't go up to her to demand an answer from her, otherwise it would have been very embarrassing.

However, when they reached the Coiling Snakes Valley, the female thief was silently sitting high up on a rock, cupping her hands and watching them. Under the boundless twilight, she was as still as a stone statue, peaceful and calm. This time, not only Yue Bing, but even Ye Kong noticed this and frowned. Fatty Hai did not notice this initially, and when he first heard somebody was following them, he did not care, but when he saw that it was a beauty, he immediately started rubbing his fists. "Just you wait, wait for me to seize her... Once I seize her, we'll interrogate her carefully."

“She can simply use one finger to flick your 150 kilograms of meat away. Go and try it if you don’t believe me.” When Yue Yang heard this, he almost fainted. Even if Fatty Hai wanted to take unfair advantage of girls, he still need to see who he was dealing with first.

“Pretend I didn’t say anything.” Fatty Hai was so scared he started to sweat profusely.

“Who is this older sister?” Yue Bing was curious. If she knew them, why didn’t she come up to greet them? If she didn’t know them, why would she follow them for such a long journey? If they just happened to be going the same way, wasn’t this too much of a coincidence?

Chapter 142 – I'll Wait For Your Apology

Outside the Coiling Snakes Valley, there was a small town. The town was originally called Coiling Snakes Town, but mercenaries liked to call it 'Hope Town'.

The reason was because when one entered the Despair Abyss, their lives would be in peril until the moment they get off from the rift valley, and saw this little town that was located high up on a mountain. Only then could one say that one had truly escaped from the Despair Abyss alive.

To be able to see this little town was equivalent to seeing hope.

There were a lot of mercenaries inside the town. This was the best time to harvest Fire Red Ant's eggs, and one Fire Red Ant's egg could be sold for 1 gold. That was why there were a lot of mercenaries here seeking for wealth.

Generally speaking, no ordinary mercenary troops would be able to live after provoking the Fire Red Ants colony, whose bodies were more than five metres long. However, this season was an exception.

In these two months, there would be countless female Fire Red Ants flying out to seek for a place to build a new Fire Red Ant Kingdom. When these female Fire Red Ants started to lay eggs, they didn't have the protection of the Fire Red Ants army. Even if there were, the number of Fire Red Ants present were extremely small. Hence, mercenaries would seize this opportunity to steal

those eggs and sell them for gold. Of course, the whole place surrounding the Despair Abyss was the haven of Fire Red Ants. There would be a high chance of meeting other Fire Red Ants which were foraging for food when going through the tunnels underground. Hence, this was truly a job that exchanged one's life with gold.

“The cost of one map is two gold. Young one, please don't complain, because this map could only exist in exchange for countless adventurers' lives. We would always give a half of the profit from every single map that we sell to the grieving families as compensation.” The old man who was selling the map in the Warrior's Guild pointed out a few dangerous locations on the map to Yue Yang very sincerely and honestly.

Despair Abyss was a great rift valley that lay from east to west. It was over 600 km long.

It's widest part was in the center, spanning over 120 km wide. It's average valley width was around 40-50km wide, while its deepest part was, from the records, 10 km deep.

There were few level grounds on the terrain, it was mostly filled with jutting pillars and weirdly shaped, rugged rocks. A lot of places at the bottom of the valley had never seen sunlight. Furthermore, the terrain was also extremely dangerous.

The center of the rift valley had so far been a place of certain death, but nobody was able to verify why.

There were a total of six prohibited locations indicated on the map. These were the regions where death tolls were extremely high. They were the “Abyss Blackwater Lake”, “Flame Mountain”, “Crushed Bones Bridge”, “Sandstorm Canyon”, “Cloud Peak Lake”, and “Death Center”.

Other than Death Central Point, the other five places were scattered all along the stretch of the rift valley from east to west.

Yue Yang and company wanted to pick Starlight Serene Indigo Grass, which was only located on a high cliff near the Cloud Peak lake. It was said that one would have to climb over 3000 meters of steep, dangerous precipice of a cliff before one would be able to go to a place where the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass bloomed.

“Yi Nan... Brother Yi Nan had left a message at the Thief Guild, saying that he will join us in a few days. Luo Hua City Mistress had also left a message that she will personally come in half a month to pick the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass together with us. She asked us to explore the terrain here first.” Ye Kong, who went over to the Thief Guild had returned. The news that he brought gave Yue Yang a little headache. He could embrace a girl if there was only one, but if the two of them came at the same time, he could only hope that their jealousy from each other wouldn't be too great.

“That's perfect, we could explore the pathway in the meantime. It is extremely dangerous here, it's better to spend a few days to explore the terrain first.” Yue Bing knew that that picking Starlight Serene Indigo Grass wouldn't be that easy. It would be better if they can wait for Luo Hua City Mistress' help.

Yue Yang also had the same thought. He even hoped not to bring Yue Bing, Fatty Hai, and Ye Kong along to pick the herbs.

Bringing them to “Cloud Peak Lake”, one of the six dangerous locations, if he climbed up the steep precipice to pick Starlight Serene Indigo Grass and leave them alone at the bottom, what would he do if something happened to them? This matter was no joke. Yue Bing, especially, how would he explain to Fourth Mother if Yue Bing was injured?

Before exiting the town and making their way to the Despair Abyss, Yue Yang looked around again. However, he didn’t see that mysterious female thief who liked to watch him.

Although there were a few mercenaries walking in front of them, there were also a few following them.

However, as they walked through the cliff track that was not even half a meter wide, their heart started to become even more frightened as they walked a few meters down, turned and walked a few meters deeper, making their way down layer by layer.

Looking down, the group of mercenaries making their way down the valley looked even smaller than ants. Although Ye Kong and the others had some guts, they couldn’t help but feel intimidated.

If they fall because of a moment of carelessness, not even their bones would be left.

The most frightening thing was that the mountain winds was extremely strong, blowing and whizzing. At times, the wind force could even lift people up.

Even Fatty Hai with his large body, a lump of 150 kg meat, couldn't withstand the violent wind. When the mountain winds blew, he would quickly hold onto the walls of the precipice. Otherwise, he would similarly be blown away by the wind... Behind him was Yue Yang, who was the calmest of all the members in the part. When the mountain winds blew, countless mercenaries would curse or become pale with fright. Only Yue Yang's expression remained calm and collected.

Ever since he understood [Nature's Heart], this kind of small wind did not mean much to Yue Yang anymore.

Yue Bing pulled on her brother's sleeves as she walked at his side.

Whenever the biting cold mountain winds blew through, Yue Yang would grab her hands to prevent her light body to be blown away by the wind.

In the skies, spiders, mountain goats or even huge lizards would appear from time to time, blown away by the strong mountain winds. Some were even smashed to the valley's walls, crushed into a pile of bloody mess. If the force of the wind suddenly dropped, the animals that were blown halfway would all drop to the ground. One could only hear the muffled 'thump, thump' sound as they fell to their deaths. Most of the time, one could see that the mountain goats that were blown by the wind were still alive, crying miserably.

Those cries muffled in the midst of the whistling of the violent wind sounded so frightening that it made the others tremble and feel weak.

Yue Yang saw that above, there was a mercenary who accidentally slipped. His whole body didn't even manage to fall to the bottom of the cliff before he was blown away by the mountain wind.

In an instant, he was blown far, far away. No one knew where he would end up.

They could only hear his cries echoing throughout the rift valley continuously for a long, long time.

"Don't be afraid, everything is alright." Yue Yang immediately consoled Yue Bing. Who would know that the little lady's heart was actually very strong and determined. She immediately shook her head and said, "I'm not afraid."

"I'm really afraid. Console me too..." Fatty Hai cried miserably.

"Shut up." Ye Kong really wanted to beat this fellow to death. It was a pity that this was not a suitable place to do that.

"You pigheaded guys, if you don't wish to die, be more spirited. Think about your babies who are still drinking milk. Do you want to return alive with a newfound wealth? If you don't want to die

here and become a lizard's dinner or a spider's shit, then be more alert and spirited. Follow me, observe how I tread this path and copy it. If you fall, no one can help you, and no one would dare to help you." There was a mercenary group leader with a great beard that spoke loudly. Seems like that was the mercenary troop of the guy who had tripped just now.

Walking down the turning small alley down the precipice took a full two hours.

When they arrived at the small Settlement Camp at the bottom of the valley, the sky had turned completely dark. The last few mercenary troops even had to light up fire torches in order to make their way down.

The mercenaries at the bottom of the valley all sat on rocks as they gnawed on mountain goat's meat and ridiculed Fatty Hai, "Noob, welcome to Despair Abyss. You seemed to have prepared a lot of things, but it seemed like you forgot to bring your wet nurse along".

"Ah, how would I drink milk then? I haven't stopped drinking milk yet!" a skinny mercenary shouted out with a ridiculing tone.

"Hahaha!" the mercenaries laughed out loud altogether.

"... " A flash of anger crossed Fatty Hai's expression, but he looked down very quickly.

“When you are ridiculing others, don’t forget to watch your backs...” Yue Yang suddenly laughed coldly.

“What are you talking about?” That skinny mercenary was furious when he heard Yue Yang. He threw the piece of meat to the ground and took out a dagger immediately.

“I was just advising you to be more careful,” Yue Yang shrugged his shoulders leisurely.

“Newbie, seems like I need to teach you a lesson about what shutting up is about.” The skinny mercenary soldier then walked over with a malicious smile. However, suddenly, from the darkness, a dark figure charged out. It wrapped itself on the mercenary’s body and quickly pulled him back to the darkness. When the mercenary troops saw this, they immediately cried out ‘shit’, threw away the pieces of roasted meat on their hands, and took out the weapons from their waists. They raised their fire torch and chased after the figure into the darkness.

When the mercenaries chased into the darkness, there was completely no movement in the darkness anymore. That monster that had murdered the skinny man had disappeared without a trace with its prey.

After getting worked up, the mercenaries who failed at catching up returned resentfully.

There was a bald mercenary troop leader who walked over to Yue Yang and bellowed furiously, “You saw the Ghost Shadow Rock

Spider, but you didn't give any warning. You caused my brother's death!"

Yue Yang shook his head indifferently, "I gave him a warning already, but he took my words as wind passing by. If that Ghost Shadow Rock Spider had not appeared, I might might have even been stabbed by his dagger and collapsed to the ground already. At that time, I didn't see you, the leader, trying to stop him. I know that you care about your subordinates, but I, too, care about my brothers. Ridiculing them is equivalent to slapping my face... Now, I just wanted to say that if there were next time, I wouldn't wait for that Ghost Shadow Rock Spider to attack. I would attack you myself."

"Even if it was my brother's fault, how could you watch him being killed by a Ghost Shadow Rock Spider without doing anything? We are all humans. In dangerous situations, we ought to help each other." That Bald Mercenary Troop Leader stomped his feet anxiously, anger and guilt mixing in his heart.

"These words really sounded ironic coming from you. When he took out his dagger, why didn't you say that we are all human beings, who should help each other out in a crisis?" Yue Yang rebuked.

That Bald Mercenary Troop Leader's face turned red and green at the same time, so angry that he beat his chest a few times, before roaring painfully, "Even if it was his fault, you shouldn't have just watched him die. He wouldn't have really killed you anyway. He was only exaggerating his attitude, because he wanted to teach you a lesson. He didn't deserve to die! You clearly had the chance to

save him, so you should have saved him first. If he had made a mistake, I could make him apologize to you later!”

“Alright, then. I’ll wait for your apology.” Yue Yang gestured with his hands and Hui Tai Lang suddenly flew out from within the darkness.

In its mouth, there was the skinny mercenary soldier who had turned all green.

All of the mercenary soldiers couldn’t catch up with the Ghost Shadow Rock Spider, but in Hui Tai Lang’s eyes, the Ghost Shadow Rock Spider was slower than a tortoise.

Hui Tai Lang returned to Yue Yang’s side all high and mighty, throwing the skinny mercenary soldier who was on the verge of death to the ground. At the same time, it gave a low growl towards the other mercenary soldiers who were shocked speechless. Its imposing presence was extremely dominating. Thick, dense demon qi engulfed its whole body. The mercenary soldiers were all so frightened that they immediately retreated.

That Troop Leader was also shocked.

Looking closely, it was a Silver-ranked Level 4 Two-headed Demon Wolf. Even he, who was used to seeing formidable beasts, couldn’t help but to swallow his saliva and calm his wildly thumping heart when he saw it.

He then saw that his brother had not died yet. He quickly rushed towards him and held him, shouting loudly to his subordinates. “Bring the antidote here, quick!”

Yue Yang pulled Yue Bing along as he turned around and started to leave.

“I, I am the Boss, how could I let my subordinate defend me... Yue Yang, listen well. In the future, I wouldn’t be dragging you down. I will definitely be a qualified boss, who will never run away or cower in fright. Never, you hear me? I said never.” Fatty Hai was like an injured wild beast, rushing towards Yue Yang’s back as he shouted loudly.

“Even if you are not qualified right now, after this special lesson, you would be a qualified boss. I believe that you have that strength in you.” Yue Yang turned around and smiled.

“Scoundrel, you are not allowed to say I’m unqualified. Isn’t it just a special lesson...” Fatty Hai’s tears rolled down his face.

Ye Kong also walked over and patted the emotional Fatty Hai’s shoulders, whose body was trembling unceasingly. Beyond expectation, he didn’t say anything condescending.

Li Qie and Li Ge, the two brothers, also did the same. They walked over and patted Fatty Hai’s shoulders.

Then, they all followed Yue Yang together.

That Bald Mercenary Troop Leader, who had just saved the skinny mercenary soldier, looked at Yue Yang's figure, which was disappearing into the darkness, as he murmured, "Yue Yang, could he be one of the Yue Clan member? Is he that rumoured useless Third Young Master? Heavens, such a person like him... I can only say that we are completely blind. No, the whole world is blind... This humbling lesson that has moved me but also made me feel ashamed of myself, I will remember it well. I will forever remember it in my heart."

Chapter 143 – Cower, A Single Slash That Shocked The Heaven And Earth!

For the next three whole days, Yue Yang, Ye Kong and the others trained at the Ant Holes. They did not return to the Settlement Camp.

Yue Yang's purpose was not like the other mercenaries, who were looking for Fire Red Ant Eggs. His purpose was to train the team's beasts and the coordination. Yue Yang didn't summon any of his beasts to fight, his main priority was to protect everyone's safety while allowing them to train. At the same time, during Ye Kong's, Fatty Hai's and the others' training, Yue Yang had secretly cultivated his Yin Yang Twin Fish [Spherical Beheader], seeking a greater breakthrough.

Yue Bing trained together with Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Clan Brothers on the first day, but when Yue Yang saw that her Hundred Year Old Tree Defender's abilities were simply too powerful, he told her to train alone at a place a hundred meters away from Ye Kong and the others. He also told Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Clan Brothers to divide into two groups to train.

Ye Kong had a Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle which had a formidable defense, and a King Kong Demon Ape which had formidable attack power. He immediately became the main pillar of group.

He had improved by leaps and bounds, but it was a pity that the King Kong Demon Ape and the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle were both still young beasts. They still couldn't display their maximum

potential, otherwise they would definitely be extremely powerful.

Fatty Hai changed his lazy ways and followed Yue Yang's training plan, focusing on training his Iron-skinned Rhinoceros that he didn't really like.

Yue Yang knew that Fatty Hai's potential was actually not bad.

It's just that he was too lazy most of the time. He only liked eating and hated to train. In addition, he had a weak and cowardly disposition. This was why he ended up in his present state. If Fatty Hai could grit his teeth, bear the pain and cultivate hard, he could still become a little successful in the future.

As for the Li Clan Brothers who liked to keep silent most of the time, their martial art skills were gaining obvious improvements under the random pointers that Yue Yang gave them, as he couldn't stand looking at their inadequacies.

Although they weren't very talented, they were extremely hardworking.

In such cases, diligence could make up for lack of talent.

However, after they split into two groups, the Li Clan Brother's Wind Wolves were burnt to death by a Fire Red Ant Soldier's Flame when they were besieging a Fire Red Ant Soldier. It was all due to the Li Clan Brother's lack of control over the two beasts, hence they were extremely sad and disheartened. There was

always a time limit to summon beasts. In order to quickly improve and stop being Yue Yang's burden, Ye Kong and the others had trained unceasingly. They would immediately initiate an attack when they spotted a Fire Red Ant foraging for food. Under exhaustion, the Li Clan Brothers could still force themselves to hold on, but their Wind Wolves couldn't, hence they died in the battle. Within the span of 3 days, Ye Kong and the others managed to kill 7 Fire Red Ants, including one gigantic Fire Red Giant Ant Soldier whose body was over 8 meters long.

Yue Bing had killed 6 Fire Red Ants on her own. Furthermore, she had finished them off very easily.

Accompanied by Yue Yang's advice and her own instincts, her control of the Hundred Year Old Tree Defender had become even more coordinated.

Suddenly, a sound wave from an SOS Scroll pleaded for help from somewhere deep in the Ant's Hole, "Golden Ant Eggs, we found Golden Ant Eggs! However, we were discovered by Ant Guards, and an Ant Wave had exploded inside the whole Ant's Nest now. We, a hundred or so mercenary soldiers, are surrounded inside. Anyone who can enter the Ant Hole to help, please help us. We will definitely reward you. We hope that you guys will come to the second layer of Ant's Nest to help us,"

The whole tunnel resounded with the echoes of their voices.

That type of SOS Scroll was the lowest grade SOS Scroll which was generally used by Mercenary Soldiers. Its area of broadcast wasn't very wide, only around 5 km wide. Usually, using sound

waves to call for help could easily leak the user's position and attract many enemies. This would increase the danger to the user of the scroll, who was pleading for help. Hence, they were not used by most troops.

However, in Despair Abyss, it was very commonly used.

This was because the monsters there detected their prey using scent and heat. They were not very sensitive to noises, so they wouldn't seek for the source of the pleading voice.

Another thing was that the terrain there was extremely complex with many holes, pitfalls, cliffs and sudden depressions. Hence, using voice to call for help was much more effective than using fireworks, flash lights and so on.

“Bing-er, let's go!”

Hearing about the Ant Wave explosion, Yue Yang hurriedly brought Yue Bing and met up with Ye Kong and the others again, preparing to leave.

An Ant Wave explosion was an extremely scary thing.

There were around ten thousand or so Fire Red Ants in an Ant Nest. The map showed a few hundred Fire Red Ant Nests that had been located. Yue Yang reckoned that there was many more nests which remained undiscovered. The whole Ant Hole was filled with countless Fire Red Ants. Generally, when an intruder was found to

have killed an Ant or broken a large number of Ant eggs, the whole colony of Fire Red Ants in the Ant Nest would move out together and blindly massacre every single intruder they found...

These Fire Red Ants all came from one Original Ant Queen. After thousands of years of continuous expansion and multiplication, the number of Ant Queens continued to increase, and that was how the Ant Hole of the present day came into being.

In reality, all the Ant Queens were either mother-daughter or sisters. Because they belonged to the same family, they could coexist in peace.

With regards to fighting opponents, they would help each other with all their strength.

Facing an ocean of Ants in the hostile terrain of the Ant Hole, let alone ordinary mercenary soldiers, even a Level 6 [Elder] wouldn't be able to escape alive.

“Quick, Fatty, quick!”

Ye Kong and the others had already started running towards Yue Yang. An Ant Wave was definitely not a joke.

Although the Golden Ant Egg was an enormous temptation, but between their own lives and the Golden Ant Egg, everyone would definitely choose their own lives. Yue Yang and the others had originally entered the hole for the sake of training, and not looking

for eggs. They managed to escape from the hole in just a few minutes. However, just as they exited the hole, they saw a lot of mercenaries brandishing their weapons and summoning their beasts, were charging into the hole continuously.

The saying that “People die for wealth and birds die for food”, was perfect to describe the current situation.

There were even more mercenaries who stayed on guard outside the hole.

They weren’t willing to throw their lives away and enter the hole, but they were concerned about the situation.

“Brother, why don’t you go and take a look? We will stay here outside. Don’t worry, nothing will happen to us,” Yue Bing hoped that Yue Yang could do as he liked instead of caring for her all the time. After so many trainings and experiences, she had already understood her brother’s powerful strength. She had great confidence in her brother and she knew that her brother wasn’t a hot-headed person. If he entered, even if he couldn’t get the Golden Ant Egg, he would at least return safely. The little lady thought that her brother had strong martial art skills, as well as the aid of the Bloody Queen and the Barbarian Cow Shadow. There shouldn’t be any problems for him to enter the Ant Hole alone.

“Yes, we will be alright.” Ye Kong also nodded towards Yue Yang. He, like Yue Bing, also hoped that Yue Yang could improve greatly. He was still the leader after all. No matter what happened, Yue Yang had always been the fastest to improve. This was the perfect time to improve, so of course they would encourage him to enter.

“If the Ant Wave burst out from the hole, I will wait for you at the Settlement Camp.” It was the first time in Fatty Hai’s life that he said something other than bullshit.

“I’ll come back quickly,” Yue Yang had actually really wanted to see what the deeper parts of the Ant Holes look like.

Yue Yang left Hui Tai Lang outside. This was because, first, it could protect Yue Bing, and second, it wasn’t very useful in front of a swarm of Ants.

Mercenaries who had gone deeper into the Ant Hole would bring back different kinds of ores at times. However, Yue Yang realized that the deeper he went, the weirder-looking the plants were. A lot of the fungi that he came across were actually precious herbs. In just three days, Yue Yang had picked at least 10 different kinds of mushroom that couldn’t be found elsewhere.

Yue Yang did not hope for a Golden Ant Egg, because the mercenary soldier who had gotten the Golden Ant Egg would probably left using a teleportation scroll already. He couldn’t possibly have stayed.

The people trapped inside had said it that way simply to attract more people to save them.

If the mercenary soldiers had not stolen their Golden Ant Egg, the Ant Colony wouldn’t be so frenzied, and an Ant Wave wouldn’t have occurred.

Yue Yang's main purpose was to explore the deeper layers of the Ant Hole, and in passing, check if there were any precious herbs around. According to Grandma Wu Teng's plant-related lecture, Yue Yang planned to concoct a pill that could help plant-type beasts evolve for Yue Bing's Hundred Year Old Tree Defender... The 'Green Spirit Pill' required 72 types of herbs, 5 of those were fungus. Yue Yang had only collected 3 types of fungus right now, he still needed the other 2... To Yue Yang, who had the [Nature's Heart] which made it possible to hide one's presence, the Ant Wave did not pose as a great danger. Fire Red Ants detect their enemies mainly using their sense of smell, Yue Yang was like an invisible person in front of them. Other than touching Yue Yang with their antennas or body, even if Yue Yang walked right before them, he wouldn't be found out.

Yue Yang followed a crowd of mercenary soldiers through the winding Ant Tunnel, running for around ten minutes.

Suddenly, they came into a wide clearing.

There was a space in the cave that was even larger than a football field appearing into view.

The mercenary soldiers gathered at the entrance, not daring to go into the wide clearing. This was because, no matter if it was ground or a cave, the whole place was infested with Fire Red Ants. There seemed to be more than ten thousands of them.

Let alone ordinary mercenary soldiers, even Yue Yang was frozen

on the spot.

Even if they were only ants, if there were so many of them, it would be very scary.

Furthermore, in the Soaring Dragon Continent, the weakest beast was not ants... These Fire Red Ants were already Level 3 monsters when they finished incubation. There was even the larger Ant Soldiers that were already Level 4 monsters when they hatched, and the Ant Queen Guard that could breathe fire that were Level 5 when they hatched.

Although they were not elite monsters, with their numbers, they had an extremely formidable battle power.

Even if the mercenary soldiers were to force a battle and dispatch over ten thousand soldiers here, the result would probably be a total defeat and they would all be the Fire Red Ants' dinner.

“Pour Ant Water on yourselves! These Fire Red Ants are all fools, they would think that we are them so they will not discover us!” There was a brave Mercenary Troop Leader who suddenly took out a bottle of Ant Water and poured it over himself. Bringing along his troops, who were not afraid of risks and death, their purpose was not the reward, but the Golden Ant Egg.

“Those who have flying beasts, follow me.” There was also someone who had thought of an idea, and that was using flying beasts to advance forward.

“Those who are not going, please move away. Cowards, watch me count my money later!” There was an especially arrogant mercenary soldier who was pushing other soldiers to come out from the crowd. He brandished his axe and jumped out of the Ant Tunnel with a group of people. They had covered themselves with an Insect Repellant Liquid. Let alone Fire Red Ants, many other insect type organisms hated that kind of disgusting smell. In normal situations, insects would immediately avoid them, unwilling to attack such a smelly enemy.

There wasn't only one Ant Tunnel that lead to the space clearing; there were a few dozens of them. Countless mercenaries who were willing to throw away their lives for the sake of wealth set out, causing disturbances amongst the swarm of Fire Red Ants.

From time to time, there would be mercenaries that were found out by the Fire Red Ants, needless to say they were immediately killed on the spot. However, there were many more people who managed to escape as they had poured vast amounts of the Ant Water and the Insect Repellant Liquid.

Yue Yang came out from the crowd soundlessly and followed closely behind these desperate mercenaries.

They passed through another Ant Tunnel below, and they arrived at a nest that was even larger than the space before. They realized that there were more Fire Red Ants here. Countless Fire Red Ants were violently moving and crawling, seeking their enemies everywhere. There were also the gigantic-bodied Ant Guards, who could breathe a long pillar of fire that danced in the air. There were layers of Fire Red Ants crawling on the ground,

looking for the intruder that stole their Golden Ant Egg... Close to over a hundred mercenaries were standing on a platform at the side of a cliff, their teeth chattering with fright. They had sprayed a large amount of Insect Repellant Liquid and lighted up torches to protect themselves, keeping watch on top of that platform.

But it seemed that they wouldn't be able to hold on for too long. When the Insect Repellant Liquid's smell dissipated, they would definitely be torn into shreds by the Ant Colony.

The enormous Ant Colony surrounded the ground beneath them like crazy. Although Fire Red Ants didn't have intelligence, they had a natural instinct to not give up on their search easily. They continued to determinedly look for the 'invisible' intruder.

"Brothers, for money, let's charge with our lives!" Actually, most of the mercenary soldiers weren't there for the reward money, they were there for the Golden Ant Egg.

Some of the soldiers had thought to kill the group of mercenary soldiers on the platform and keep the Golden Ant Egg to themselves.

Pleading for help?

What they were doing right now was to pretend to help them, then they would lure the Ant Colony over to kill the mercenary soldiers on the platform, and then use the opportunity to steal the Golden Ant Egg away...

Yue Yang had seen it with his own eyes as a few Mercenary Troop Leaders colluded together, then threw an Insect Bait onto the platform. The Insect Bait attracted the Ant Colony even more, making them more frenzied than ever. The mercenary soldiers on the platform immediately cursed out loud. The small amount of mercenary soldiers who truly came to help the trapped soldiers started fighting with these selfish people furiously... The whole place was a mess.

The fresh blood flowing from the fight attracted the Ant Colony.

The Fire Red Ants were just like a tide of water, charging up towards them like a giant wave.

“Could it be that the Golden Ant Eggs was still here? They didn’t teleport it out?” Yue Yang had a sharp eye, and saw that at the center of the group of mercenary soldiers, there were a few people who was carrying a large backpack. They were hiding their expressions, their faces looked complicated as they saw the situation turn even worse.

As regards to their response, Yue Yang’s heart was again moved.

These fellows should have found things that were even more precious than Golden Ant Eggs. They were just using the Golden Ant Eggs as a cover.

The people who had returned using the teleportation scroll should have already brought back the best stuffs. If those that were left over here were Golden Ant Eggs, then what could the thing that was brought back be...? What other thing could be more

precious than a Golden Ant Egg?

Curiosity bubbled up in Yue Yang's heart. Perhaps, he could do some negotiation with them.

That was because, there were still quite a few teleportation scrolls in his backpack...

Unlike the ordinary warriors, Yue Yang was almost like an invisible person, weaving through the Ant Colony leisurely. Even if he stamped on an Ant's back, he wouldn't alert the Ant Colony.

Under the dumbstruck gazes of the mercenary soldiers who couldn't believe what had happened, Yue Yang walked towards that platform and stopped around ten meters away. He stood on top of a large Ant Guard's back and followed the Ant Guard's movements, his body bobbing up and down. Everyone was struck speechless as they watched him. Yue Yang smiled as bright as the sun and asked, "Gentlemen, are you interested to talk for a while? Maybe we can do a little trade, but I don't know what kind of things you can give me as a barter item."

On the platform, there was a man who looked seemed to be the leader, who said, "If you have teleportation scrolls with you, we are willing to buy them at a high price. Please just name a price."

Yue Yang knew that if he didn't show them some capabilities, these people wouldn't be so scared that they would start to speak honestly.

He didn't answer, but pulled out the Hui Jin Magic Blade on his waist.

He imbued the blade madly with his innate qi, and purple flames ignited suddenly, exploding like a volcano.

The Hui Jin Magic Blade revolved and drew a circle under Yue Yang's control. After diligently cultivating his Twin Fish [Spherical Beheader] for three days, his skills had gotten better and more perfect. The giant circle drawn by his blade's purple flame sharply slashed across the space around Yue Yang, and those Fire Red Ants that were within the range of the circle was soundlessly cut in two. The Fire Red Ants which were originally resistant to fire had actually been charred into ashes by the purple flames...

The area within a radius of ten meters around Yue Yang immediately became an empty space.

It was a single slash that shocked the heaven and earth.

This, was one slash of Yue Yang's [Spherical Beheader]'s true power.

When they saw Yue Yang's hand which he revealed, all the mercenary soldiers including their leader were so frightened that their legs turned to jelly, and they couldn't help but nervously swallow one mouthful of saliva.

Horrifying!

In the situation where he had such frightful power without even summoning any beasts, how strong of a Ranker is this masked robber?

The leader on the platform wiped the cold sweat that trickled out and hurriedly showed a little more deference and respect. “We pay respects to you, esteemer Ranker. We are very happy and hopeful for assistance from a strong warrior like you. If you are willing to lead us out and leave the Ant Hole, we are willing to offer one Golden Ant Egg as repayment.” The mercenary soldiers on the platform quickly nodded, parroting his offer. To have a truly strong warrior lend a helping hand to them was better than hundreds or thousands of armies and horses. Their only worry was that they did not know what conditions the other party required from them in return.

“No, I am not interested in your Golden Ant Egg.” Yue Yang was not interested in Fire Red Ants, even if they were larvae that were Golden-ranked.

Ants are living things that wins by numbers. No matter how strong an individual ant was, it wouldn't be able to be truly strong alone.

When the man would looked like the leader heard Yue Yang's words, his expression changed a little. He looked eye to eye with his two comrades beside him, and then shouted in Yue Yang's direction. “Most respected strong warrior, we do not know what conditions of repayment you need. From what we have with us, the most precious thing would be the Golden Ant Eggs. But we only

have three of them in total. We already promised to sell one of them to the Alliance Beast Shop. There are only two left. Sharing these fruits of our fresh blood with you is already the most that we can pay you. ”

Yue Yang smiled serenely. “I want the thing that is more precious than the Golden Ant Eggs.....”

On hearing this, the leader shuddered. His eyes showed disbelief, and then he immediately tried to gloss over his reaction and deny it. “No, we don’t have such a thing on our bodies. Could the Ant Holes contain something that is even more precious than the Golden Ant Eggs? That is impossible.”

“Is it?” Yue Yang smiled, then he suddenly made a promise to the people on the platform. “Which one of you says what that precious treasure is the fastest, I will give him a Teleportation Scroll.”

“.....” All the people immediately looked at each other.

Everybody wanted to say it, but nobody was willing to be a disgraceful traitor.

Yue Yang suddenly made a movement which entirely defeated the perseverance all the people had maintained at the bottom of their hearts.

He took out a Teleportation Scroll from his backpack.

They just needed to say it to be able to leave, to be able to live... Survival was just one word away. To say, or not to say?

“Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit,” Just as Yue Yang took out the teleportation scrolls, a skinny mercenary soldier spoke up. His actions were extremely fast, not only had he said the name of the precious item, but he immediately jumped down the platform, afraid that he would be killed by his comrades after betraying them. He jumped agilely on a few Fire Red Ants backs, and finally jumped right in front of Yue Yang. He extended his hands and looked at Yue Yang desperately, “We found the legendary Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit. It is one of the most important ingredients needed to compound a Martial Spirit Pill... Please give me a teleportation scroll, I don’t want to die, nor can I die. My family still needed me to come back alive... Please consider it on behalf of my elderly parents and my newborn daughter who is only three months old, Ranker, please give me a chance. I don’t want anything, I only wish to be safely reunited with my family. Please honor your promise, you are an extremely strong Ranker whose words must also be honorable. Please have pity on me, I beg you, I beg you...”

“Very good, your initiative and honesty gave you the privilege to continue living,” This was exactly the results that Yue Yang wanted. He handed that soldier a teleportation scroll. When that soldier received it, he immediately opened the scroll and bowed deeply towards Yue Yang emotionally before he left. Then, he quickly disappeared under the bright circle of light, teleported away.

“... “ That Leader couldn’t stop him, and the rest of the mercenary soldiers on the platform were extremely regretful.

The chance to live had already been presented right in front of them, but they had missed it just like that.

They knew that not everyone here could return alive. There would definitely be some people here who would be sacrificed in order to get others out.

Even they knew what the end would be, but none of them were willing to become that pitiful sacrificial lamb. Even if there was only a trace of hope, they all hoped that they themselves would be able to leave alive, and to live. Nobody was willing to die.

Yue yang took out a dozen or so scrolls and showed it towards the Leader on the platform, “Right now, you can make a choice. The first is you can die altogether with your comrades here. When you have all died, I can still take the things I want. Second is to accept my offer, and leave this place with the comrades that you have selected. As you would have gone away with the precious items, the Ant Colony and those mercenary soldiers eyeing for the precious items will disperse naturally. There would be more chances for the rest of the people left here to live. Third is to defeat me here, then all these teleportation scrolls would belong to you.”

Everybody looked at their leader, hoping that he would make a decision.

To choose one out of three, it was that simple.

But this was also the hardest choice to make in life ...

Chapter 144 – Are There Really Dragons?

If there was only one Teleportation Scroll, perhaps the Mercenary Troop Leader wouldn't have made a decision, since he couldn't possibly abandon his comrades who followed him through life and death.

But there were over a dozen Teleportation Scrolls in Yue Yang's hands.

These scrolls were enough for him to bring along his most trusted and loyal brothers to safely leave this dangerous place where death was almost certain.

“I understand. One should only obtain things that match their abilities. If you are powerful, you will obtain even more... I decide to choose the second proposal, and I accept your offer. However, I have another proposition. Being the leader, I hope to bring all my comrades out. Perhaps you might not be satisfied with getting only one Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit. If you need me, I can stay back and be your guide... My request is for you to open a path for my brothers to leave this Ant Hole, so that they can at least safely leave in front of me. I hope that you will allow me to carry out my last duties as a Mercenary Troop Leader. Will you grant me my wish?” The Mercenary Troop Leader put forward a request that slightly astonished Yue Yang.

He was actually willing to stay back as a hostage and a guide in exchange for a chance for all his comrades to escape.

This point alone showed that he was a qualified leader.

A dark skinned oaf with a tall and sturdy figure immediately voiced his opposition. “Leader, whoever it is that is going to be left behind, it should not be you. I’ll stay here, you bring the others out.”

“Shut your mouth. Right now, what you need to do is to just listen to your Assistant Troop Leader. You must be especially careful when you go out so that you can prevent disasters that might lead to death.” The Mercenary Troop Leader nodded towards another middle-aged man with a lanky figure. The middle-aged man had two eyes shimmering with the radiance of wisdom and farsightedness. The Mercenary Troop Leader then exchanged his backpack with the middle-aged man, and shouted at Yue Yang. “As long as my brothers can safely reach the Ant Tunnel, I will bring you to a place two levels down. We found this Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit there. Perhaps with your capabilities, you can find even more hidden secrets and treasures there.”

“Aren’t you afraid of me cheating you?” Yue Yang asked, smiling slightly.

“Those who are truly powerful have lofty and unyielding characters. They will not be so mindful of us commoners, and of course they will not be as excessively greedy as bandits and robbers. If you wanted to cheat us, you could have killed us all off just now, why would you wait until now?” The Mercenary Troop Leader shook his head.

“Open your backpacks, first let me see the Hard-shelled Dragon

Fruit.” The reason that Yue Yang did not kill them, was not because of a Ranker’s pride. He wanted to further explore and learn the location of the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit, and hopefully to find more secrets. This type of Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit was different from normal Dragon Fruits, it only grew at the side of the hot springs around volcanic craters. According to legends, it was created out of the poisonous saliva of giant dragons. If it was used as an ingredient for making a [Martial Spirit Pill], it could be used to stimulate the martial arts potential in practitioners.

One [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill] might cost a thousand gold, but the price of a [Martial Spirit Pill] was priceless.

After all, contracting a grimoire was a privilege that was limited to an extremely small number of people.

But to simulate one’s martial art potential in one’s body, this pill was necessary for any martial arts practitioner.

For some people, when they face a bottleneck that they could never overcome in their entire life, their potentials could be immediately stimulated if they simply consume one [Martial Spirit Pill]. They could break through the bottleneck and level up with one leap. They could even break through more levels.

Three hundred years ago, there was a martial arts practitioner who had trained hard until he was forty plus years old, but his ability remained on par with that of an [Apprentice]. He was unable to rise into the ranks of a warrior, and he was mocked by people as being a ‘dumb old man’.

However, after taking one [Martial Spirit Pill], his body's potential was immediately stimulated, and he broke through the level of an [Apprentice]... Ultimately, this 'dumb old man' who was continuously mocked and ridiculed by others, achieved a state that common people found difficult to even believe and admire, a Level Nine [Sage]. This martial arts practitioner who was previously ridiculed and named 'dumb old man' became one of the Two Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Da Xia Empire, the 'Ascetic Practice Sage'. Although not everybody who takes a [Martial Spirit Pill] would be able to become a [Sage], this Ascetic Practice Sage's potential was indeed stimulated by the [Martial Spirit Pill], that he was able to change wholly and became what he is today.

If he did not take that [Martial Spirit Pill], he would perhaps truly be a dumb old man his whole life.

Making a [Martial Spirit Pill] was a hundred times harder than making a [Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill]. Just the main ingredient, Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit, was enough to cause major headaches for common people.

The high difficulty level was not because the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit grew at the side of the hot springs around volcanic craters, nor was it because of the fact that a giant dragon's nest was most likely beside it, but it was because the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit only ripen once every one thousand years.

If it was not ripe, it couldn't be picked, and it would also not be effective.

One needed to wait for at least a thousand years for it to ripen, and by that time, human beings' bones would have already become a pile of mud in their graves... Moreover, once it ripened, there would usually be strong beasts fighting over it.

With so many challenging conditions and obstacles, the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit was what common people considered as one of the “World’s Top Ten” hardest Supernatural Fruits and Flowers to pick.

“I can’t open it now, because once I open it, its fragrance will seep out, and all the Fire Red Ants in the entire Ant Nest will go crazy. My most respected powerful warrior, I swear, please believe me. I can guarantee with my life, this is the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit, and its meat is definitely ripe.” The leader shook his head. He tossed up his backpack high in the air, and it landed right in front of Yue Yang.

Yue Yang definitely would not believe a stranger easily. Although he couldn’t open it, he had his [Divine Vision] and Innate Qi senses.

As for determining whether it was truly the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit, he did not need to open the backpack at all, he just needed to touch the backpack.

When the backpack touched his hand, Yue Yang felt an immense amount of energy stored in it... It was so strong that he did not need to try sensing for the energy to feel it clearly.

Yue Yang stored it into his Lich Ring with no trace of courtesy at all. He then raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade and said indifferently. “If you guys are able to keep up, I can send you into one Ant Tunnel, but don’t even think of counting on me to send you out of the Ant Hole, I am not your nanny.”

Even if Yue Yang did not have the heart to save others, the mercenaries on the platform were still extremely touched.

In these days, people who do not hit others when they are down were already very hard to come by.

All the mercenaries on the platform took out Insect Baits in succession and tossed it far away, hoping to lure more Fire Red Ants away from them and open up a temporary escape path for them. Most people started to apply even more Ant Water and Insect Repellant onto their bodies. There were also some who smeared mud on their bodies, hoping that the Insect Repellant effectiveness could last a little longer. The three men carrying the Golden Ant Eggs hugged their leader tightly. Numerous devoted and loyal team members also took out things like their throwing knives, poisonous powders, daggers etc. and handed them over to their leader, hoping that this would somehow help their leader increase his battle capabilities a little, and increase his chance of surviving...

Journeying deeper into the Ant Hole, they did not need to think to know how treacherous this journey would be.

It was definitely an action that meant a huge risk of death.

But in order to save everybody, the leader himself had volunteered to stay back as both hostage and guide. This was already their best choice.

Similarly, Yue Yang also tossed the Insect Baits he bought at Hope Town into the distance, creating a disturbance in the ant crowd. The Fire Red Ants started throwing themselves frenziedly at the place where the Insect Baits was thrown, not caring one bit about killing all living things that were in contact with the Insect Baits, even if they were their own comrades.

A different smell meant an enemy to them.

The purple flames from Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade soared into the sky. Yue Yang emulated Yue Qiu's Earth Splitting Slash, creating an explosion.

As compared to when he was at the Yue Clan Castle, Yue Yang's sword technique had vastly improved yet again.

Yue Yang's previous Earth Splitting Slash was only similar to Yue Qiu's in sword technique; it was entirely different in its power and style. Now, however, even Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai who were extremely familiar with Yue Qiu's battle tactics may not recognise this as the same technique... The power of this slash, as compared to before, had improved by two times at least.

This was still not its full power, as Yue Yang intentionally held back on his attack.

“All of you, scram!”

Yue Yang realised that there was a giant Ant Guard together with over ten other Fire Red Ants crawling over. The Ant Guard seemed to have detected that there was an odd smell here. A few of the mercenaries on the platform who had jumped down successively were injured. The smell of fresh blood had spread out through the gentle breezes in the cave, causing some Fire Red Ants to turn their heads and return, feeling around the area with their antennas. Yue Yang knew that if these close to ten thousand Fire Red Ants rushed forth at once, he could only try to run away, let alone save others.

The purple flames from his Hui Jin Magic Blade grew bigger, and exploded with a loud ‘boom’, it scorched the entire space at once as it swept across it.

The mercenaries felt the hot surging waves assaulting their senses. All of them were extremely frightened.

In the end, luckily, only their hairs turned into afro. Their hairs did not catch fire as they thought initially. At this moment, they prostrated themselves in admiration of Yue Yang’s ability to control the fire... because all of them saw that for the same explosion, the Fire Red Ants at their front and on both of their sides had been charred alive by the purple flames. Countless Fire Red Ants were rolling about in the flames, looking as if they could not bear the pain.

This move was practically as cool as the legendary Fire God who

could manipulate and control all flames in the entire world.

“What are you still waiting for?” When Yue Yang saw that these fellows were frozen in terror as they stared at him foolishly, he was immediately angered.

“Yes!” The wise Assistant Troop Leader responded the fastest.

He immediately stuffed something into the Mercenary Troop Leader’s hand, then followed the path that Yue Yang had opened, sparing no effort in rushing out of the hole.

Behind him, a whole group of mercenaries followed desperately, outrunning each other. In front, Yue Yang continuously slashed with his sword. Using his purple flames to force the Fire Red Ants back, he opened a road with only a few Fire Red Ants present, spread thinly apart. This allowed the mercenaries to run towards the nearest Ant Tunnel. The ones who took the lead in rushing into it were the Assistant Troop Leader and the black oaf, and they had already started fighting the Fire Red Ants in the Tunnel. The other mercenaries immediately rushed forward to help in order to survive.

The one who was the last to go was an elderly person who carried the Golden Ant Eggs. He had stayed behind for a while to receive the ten Teleportation Scrolls from Yue Yang.

“Ah Hao, you must come back, you must. If our family loses you, it would definitely fall apart. You must remember that.” The elderly person looked like he was the leader’s uncle or older

relative. He didn't forget to force a Teleportation Scroll into the leader's hand before he left.

"I'm fine. You guys go, quickly go now!"

The Mercenary Troop Leader named Ah Hao did not reject the Teleportation Scroll. He received it and stuffed it into his robe, then he quickly ran back to Yue Yang's side.

If he did not have Yue Yang's protection, the chances of him surviving in the sea of ants was practically zero.

Yue Yang watched as the mercenaries rushed into the Ant Tunnel like a hive of bees. The ones who were slightly slower were crying out for help in desperation, begging their comrades to pull them along. However, most of them only cared about fleeing themselves, very few people turned back to lend a helping hand. In any case, it was simply a huge mess. Yue Yang slashed his blade and created a trailing blaze, setting the antennas of the few Fire Red Ants which had followed them on fire. The blade slashed the Fire Red Ants which were about to reach the mouth of the Ant Tunnel open. This was his final parting gift to them, Yue Yang could not be bothered about whether they lived or died beyond this... When he turned his head back and looked towards the Mercenary Troop Leader Ah Hao, he pointed at an underground cave where numerous Fire Red Ants were crawling out of with his shaking fingers. His lips trembled with fear but he said with certainty, "That, that, that's where you should go in."

By no means would Yue Yang bring a nuisance into the cave, he grabbed the Mercenary Troop Leader and jumped back onto the

platform, then handed a map to him. “Mark the location clearly on the map, and you can go.”

“Really?”

Hearing this, the Mercenary Troop Leader Ah Hao was startled. He could live?

He was instantly so moved that he kept thanking Yue Yang continuously. He hurriedly marked the path he previously walked on the map.

Finally, as he took out the Teleportation Scroll and prepared to leave, he suddenly raised his head and looked towards Yue Yang, asking emotionally, “Can you at least tell me what your respected name is?”

Yue Yang could not be bothered to pay attention to this fellow. Could it be that he still wanted to take revenge on him?

As for repaying his kindness, just forget about it...

The Mercenary Troop Leader Ah Hao offered the little object that the Assistant Troop Leader had stuffed into his hands with both hands to Yue Yang. “We relied on this to find the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit. Previously we kept this from you because we were afraid that you would go back on your promise, and refuse to save us after getting the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit. We acted as vile characters, and we’re really ashamed for that. We hope that you

could be magnanimous and forgive us. Farewell. If I, Zhong Hao can return alive, and if we can see each other again, we, the Wild Sand Mercenary Troop, will await your orders if you have any mission for us, any time. ”

“Double Dragon Shears? I had been suspicious about how you could actually pick the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit. Turns out that you guys had this with you. Not bad, with this, I do not need to use the Dragon Slaying Dagger which requires so much effort... How many Hard-shelled Dragon Fruits are left down there? ” Yue Yang played with the little shining golden item in his hands, tossing it into the air and catching it again, before keeping it in his robe.

“We don’t know. As there are dragons down there, we didn’t dare go too close to them. We had only picked one when we heard the dragons roaring suddenly. We were so scared that we immediately ran out.” When the Mercenary Troop Leader thought of what happened when they stole the fruit, he shuddered hard. He then immediately opened the Teleportation Scroll and left.

“Are there really dragons down there? Is it a giant dragon, or is it a flying dragon?” Yue Yang’s heart twitched with excitement. If he could kill a dragon, then the profits of his journey would definitely be even larger.

No matter whether there were dragons down there, he must find out and see for himself.

Chapter 145 – Are You Ready To Die?

Yue Yang walked for a long time in the underground Ant Hole, but he had not found the place indicated on the map where volcanoes were supposedly present.

Of course, he could have moved in a much faster speed. However, the Ant Hole which was more twisty than a labyrinth made Yue Yang's head hurt. The one thing that made Yue Yang sweat most was that most of the markings that the mercenaries had left were either duplicates or incorrect. He had walked in circles and went through a lot of pointless routes. Although Yue Yang did not really care about the time, he was afraid that Yue Bing would be worried waiting outside. She should not by any means enter the Ant Hole to find him, otherwise she would be in danger.

He had walked for an unknown amount of time in the underworld.

Finally, Yue Yang heard the flow of running water, and a blackened underground river appeared in front of him.

Following the markings on the map, Yue Yang waded upstream from the shallow riverbed, then walked for nearly half an hour before finding some traces left behind by the mercenaries on the wall.

Leaving the riverbed, he entered a small hole. After going in a few hundred metres, he found that the temperature of the surrounding had risen noticeably, and the air was thick with the

smell of sulphur. Yue Yang increased his speed and walked out of the small hole. To his awe, an extremely huge underworld came into his view.

In a remote area, a low volcano was glowing with lava.

Below the tiny volcano, there was a hot spring lake with steam rising slightly. This caused Yue Yang to be astonished. There were many small islets floating like a chain of islands on the hot spring lake, with each islets having many different kinds of weird plants growing on them. How could there be such a thriving growth in this kind of underworld? Yue Yang had seen this phenomenon before. The Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit was completely different from the Dragon Fruit found normally in the desert. Its leaves, the 'Sky Measuring Ruler', were thinner and stiffer. Not only that, they were deep green in colour and was as strong as steel plates. It took root ashore deep into the bottom of the hot spring, absorbing huge amounts of energy as stockpile for its fruits. It required a duration of a thousand years in order to float to the surface of the water. At that point of time, the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit would slowly separate itself and begin to reproduce itself... It was absolutely impossible to harvest the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit as and when one wanted to. The only time they could was when it matured, then use a specialised medical scissors to cut it off.

The Twin Dragon Scissors* was a type of medical scissors. Not only that, it was the trademark product of the Smithing Grandmasters, Jiang Clan.

(*Shiro: Previously translated as Double Dragon Shears, I'm changing it to Twin Dragon Scissors as it is easier to remember...)

In the world, there were many plants that could not be cut by ordinary blades. For example, the Obsidian Bamboo, the Iron Bone Scale Star Grass, the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit and many others.

However, a pair of small Twin Dragon Scissors could easily snip them off...

Obviously, the Smithing Grandmasters Jiang Clan would never admit that although it was a design made by their ancestor Jiang Qiao Er, the first pair of Twin Dragon Scissors was actually crafted by the ghost genius Yue Gong from the Yue family. This Twin Dragon Scissors was the betrothal gift that the ghost genius Yue Gong gave to Jiang Qiao Er. Its original use was not to harvest medicinal plants, but rather made for her to do her sewing. Yue Gong and Jiang Qiao Er's intellects were unsurpassed throughout the world. However, due to the two of them being frail and ridden with sickness, they did not even make it in time to be wed and died very early on. However, their love story that touched people was passed on for centuries without end.

On every pair of Twin Dragon Scissors that was manufactured by the Smithing Grandmasters Jiang Clan, they would engrave the words "Workmanship of the Gods"*, to pay respects to their ancestors.

(*Sephilia: This is an idiom, lookup 巧夺天工)

"It's no wonder that it had such a tiny and feminine design. It was a scissors that was meant for girls to use..." With his big hands, Yue Yang held the scissors and felt that the Twin Dragon Scissors was very small. Thinking a little, he finally realised that this was designed by the ghost genius Yue Gong specially for Jiang

Qiao Er's small hands. He did not know why the Grandmaster Smithing Family Jiang did not make it a little larger.

After searching through the entire hot spring lake, Yue Yang found that there were still two Hard-shelled Dragon Fruits at the bottom of the lake.

However, they had not matured yet.

Yue Yang furrowed his eyebrows. He found that there were two different cuts. Could it be that someone else had already taken the other Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit before him?

The marks left behind by a scissors' cuts were completely different from an animal's bite. Furthermore, this other cut was different from the cut made by the Twin Dragon Scissors. This proved that someone had come here before, and the mercenaries did not know about it either. The greater doubt that Yue Yang had was that although the mercenaries had heard a dragon's cry, he did not find any trace of a dragon even after searching for every nook and corner of this hot spring lake and the mouth of the volcano. The only suspicious thing was that the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice found a kind of energy within the water that was dissipating...

Had a great battle happened in the water?

Who was it that knew there were Hard-shelled Dragon Fruits at the bottom of the Ant Hole? Not only that, how did they know when to come here and harvest it just as it matured?

Where did the ‘dragon’ that was protecting these Hard-shelled Dragon Fruits originally go to?

It didn’t take long for Yue Yang to be filled with suspicions. He definitely knew that something was wrong, but he could not think of what was wrong. As Yue Yang was collecting his thoughts, suddenly, a black silhouette appeared behind him soundlessly. With a unique, magnetic voice, he asked, “Are you looking for me?”

“Eh?” Yue Yang was shocked.

He had always been careful and never let an enemy approach him closer than five metres before, but he did not sense this person’s presence at all.

Who exactly was this person?

He forced himself to calm down and turned over to look, but he found that there was nothing behind him. There wasn’t a single trace of existence of any humans. It was as if the sentence that was spoken just now was simply a hallucination inside his head. Yue Yang was completely motionless. He did not use his eyes, but he could feel that the enemy was right behind him. Not only that, his enemy was extending his hands close to the back of Yue Yang’s head. If Yue Yang had moved even a little, the enemy’s hand would probably smash the back of his head...

A drop of cold sweat glistened as it slid down Yue Yang’s

forehead.

This was the most powerful enemy that he had encountered in his life.

“Are you scared?” The person acted as if he was provoking a little worm. His voice was filled with disdain.

“Who, who are you?” Yue Yang turned around quickly and found that there was a tall imposing middle-aged man with a power that seemed to belong to a god. He had a haughty look, and he looked at Yue Yang with a gaze as sharp as spears. Yue Yang felt another jolt of shock in his heart.

This unknown middle-aged man was definitely not inferior to Jun Wu You in any way.

Furthermore, he could conceal his killing intent even better than Jun Wu You.

That middle-aged man heard Yue Yang’s question and furrowed his eyebrows. “You actually dared to not recognise me?”

Yue Yang was sweating profusely. Could it be that this was tragic guy’s deceased father Yue Qiu, as talked about in legends? No, that was not right, everyone else said that the tragic guy resembled his father, Yue Qiu shouldn’t look like that... Was this guy the tragic guy’s uncle? Or another relative? Or a killer out to plot murder against the tragic guy? Yue Yang’s thoughts flashed as he thought

of the endless possibilities, yet none of them could be proven to be true. However, Yue Yang was certain that this man was hiding his killing intent that was directed towards Yue Yang. No matter who it was, it was definitely an enemy and not a friend.

“Commoners usually call me the Marquis of Zi Jin.” The middle-aged man called himself the Marquis of Zi Jin.

“What?” Yue Yang turned pale at this.

Within the three great countries Da Xia, Tian Luo, and Zi Jin, there were countless of strong rankers present. No matter whether it was the Da Xia Emperor Jun Wu You, the Tian Luo Emperor Hua Xu Ri (Sephilia: literal rising sun) or the Zi Jin Emperor Chu Tian Xiao, they were rankers who were at least Level 7 [Overlord] and above. Their strength was extremely terrifying and could completely deter a military unit from invading.

Within the royal families, almost none could match the power of the three emperors.

The sole exception was this the Marquis of Zi Jin who was standing in front of Yue Yang. He was the publicly recognised ranker whose strength was said to be even stronger than the three emperors.

Thirty years ago, he had once challenged his brother, the Zi Jin Emperor Chu Tian Xiao, for the position of Zi Jin Emperor... The whole Soaring Dragon Continent was shocked by this. Countless warriors in the world witnessed it and Zi Jin’s Emperor also agreed

to it. However, a month before the challenge, the Marquis of Zi Jin, who had an arrogant personality, had offended Tian Luo's Emperor Hua Xu Ri when he went to the Tian Luo Kingdom as an ambassador . He was subsequently heavily injured by one of the three Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Tian Luo, Ye Hou... Afterwards, the Marquis of Zi Jin fought his elder brother while still recovering from a serious injury. After three days and three nights of bitter fighting, he was eventually defeated.

If not for being seriously injured, nobody would have been able to predict who would win the battle.

And thus, the Marquis of Zi Jin made his name with this battle, becoming the strongest prince in everyone's hearts. Even Zi Jin's Emperor, Chu Tian Xiao had also set up a prince's seat nine steps below the Imperial Throne as respect to the Marquis of Zi Jin.

Everyone on the planet felt that perhaps the elder brother Chu Tian Xiao was more suited to be an emperor. However, strength-wise, the Marquis of Zi Jin was better than him.

the Marquis of Zi Jin was originally the Zi Jin Country's Sixth Prince.

However, after the battle for the throne of Zi Jin, the three great countries' emperors came together to give him the unique title of "the Marquis of Zi Jin".

This kind of overpowering existence had appeared right in front of him out of the blue. Yue Yang did not think that this was a good

thing, especially when he met him next to the hot spring lake where the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit grew... Yue Yang's vigilance was at its highest. He wasn't sure whether this guy had tailed him or had made camp here early on. If the Marquis of Zi Jin was here to take the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruits, then after he had taken it, he should have left. Why was he still staying here?

If he had tailed Yue Yang, when did that happen?

Was it since he entered the Ant Hole or was it just a few moments ago?

"You've heard my name. Should you not bow in respect to me? Not mentioning that I'm a noble, I am after all your senior and a ranker. Shouldn't you give your proper respects?" the Marquis of Zi Jin looked at Yue Yang using his especially arrogant face. His gaze was as sharp as blades.

"Do you intend to smash my head the moment I bowed to pay my respects?" Yue Yang tried his best to act naturally. At this time, he definitely could not let the enemy see through his entire strength, otherwise it would be dangerous.

"Oh? I did think along those lines. I'm not willing to see a young man who can't see through the strength of others to grow up slowly." the Marquis of Zi Jin actually nodded in agreement. He casually made a remark, saying, "Before I kill you, I can give you three options. You can choose three different ways to die. First, you can resist and get your bones and heart completely smashed by me. Second, you can choose not to resist and let me kill you instantly, without a single shred of suffering. Lastly, you can try

your utmost to escape and let me catch up to you. I'll then skin you alive and douse you in this scalding hot spring. Then, I'll watch you die alive... Think about it. Once you've chosen, I'll move."

Yue Yang had never seen such an arrogant guy in his life.

He thought that he, himself, was arrogant enough. However, compared to the Marquis of Zi Jin, he seemed to be lacking by a huge margin.

Yue Yang was very arrogant and unbridled, he never once did he think about trying to reason. This guy, on the other hand, was good. He made his arrogance seem as if it was well-reasoned.

Yue Yang grinned at his words. "Can I choose to commit suicide?"

the Marquis of Zi Jin coolly and emotionlessly refused while shaking his head. "Without my permission, it is impossible for you to commit suicide."

"I don't care whether you are the Marquis of Zi Jin or the Monkey of Zi Jin*. Saying all this crap, did you think that by being a few years older than people, you can arrange for someone else's life or death in such a loud tone?" Yue Yang raised his middle finger in front of the Marquis of Zi Jin. "You can act like a tyrant, but don't act like an idiot."

(Shiro: Marquis 侯 and Monkey 猴 sounds similar in chinese.)

“It seems like you’ve already made your choice.” the Marquis of Zi Jin was actually not angry and had rather asked in a peaceful tone. “Now, are you ready to die?”

“What about you? Are you ready to die too?” Yue Yang spat this question back at him.

At the same time, the magic blade Hui Jin in his hand slashed out with the speed of lightning, cleaving towards the Marquis of Zi Jin’s face.

Sparks of fire scattered shaking the area. The entire underworld was shaking from Yue Yang’s slash. The hot spring lake’s water was cleaved in half by the blade’s qi, forming a deep gap, and raising the waters into 2-metre high waves that dissipated towards each end...

However, after a single second, Yue Yang’s gaze was frozen.

That was because, the strike he used all his force in had been stopped by two of the Marquis of Zi Jin’s fingers.

The Hui Jin Magic Blade, that had a thunderous power capable of completely cleaving metal and rocks was held by the Marquis of Zi Jin’s index and middle finger, unable to budge a single inch further...

Chapter 146 – You Are The One Who's Gonna Die!

“Abnormal.” Yue Yang could not help but thought of this word in his heart.

However, for Yue Yang who had undergone the beautiful girl's special training regimen for a long time in the realm of dreams, he was definitely not an idiot who would resign himself to death the moment he saw a strong opponent.

Before the Marquis of Zhi Jin's other fist collided forcefully with a loud 'boom', Yue Yang executed the silent summon which he had learnt from Xiao Wen Li. It was the silent summon that he had trained hard in and succeeded. His Silver Grimoire floated into appearance, and its protective shield rose up with an irresistible speed, repelling the Marquis of Zi Jin away. Yue Yang saw that the protective shield was slightly fluctuating from the aftereffects of the Marquis of Zhi Jin's powerful fist. Although he was aghast, he heaved a sigh of relief silently at the same time. Luckily, this Marquis of Zhi Jin was not as overpowering as the Demon King Ha Xin. He had no means to smash the protective shield... If it was a punch or a finger thrust from Demon King Ha Xin instead, his protective shield would probably be unable to stand the impact. Yue Yang would definitely have a headache then.

At that time, the Halo Shield from Xiao Wen Li's Diamond Grimoire was also not able to withstand a furious attack from Demon King Ha Xin's finger.

However, this time, it seemed that even though the Marquis of

Zhi Jin was an expert, he really wasn't entirely unbeatable.

The first thing that Yue Yang did was to increase the number of Giant Phantom Shadows on his body. His strength, that had suddenly become a hundred times greater, exploded at that instant, enabling Yue Yang to completely recover his confidence to compete with the other party.

He did not use the Teleportation Scroll to leave. Instead, he started to compose himself and draw on his Qi, readying himself for a major confrontation with the Marquis of Zi Jin... As for the Marquis of Zi Jin who was floating down slowly from the sky, a surprised look flashed across his face for a second. He did not expect that the young-aged Yue Yang actually knew how to instantly summon a grimoire. He felt that if the protective shield of the grimoire had not blocked his punch, this brat would have already suffered from fractured bones, severed tendons and crushed internal organs.

What surprised him even more was that this fellow did not take advantage of the situation and run away, but instead summoned his beast, looking as if he wanted to fight him.

Could it be that he really had that much confidence?

"You're playing the summoning card? I'll entertain you." Marquis of Zhi Jin summoned a Platinum Grimoire, flipping a few pages at will, looking as if he was choosing a beast. In the end, he chose one carelessly, and extended his hand to summon it.

A freakish dog-like animal with a human body, ox legs, and bat wings was summoned. It looked extremely ugly.

However, it seemed to have a little intelligence. It knew how to use a giant sword as its weapon and was also wearing a set of blue battle armour.

Its red eyes flickered with bloodthirst. When it was summoned, it immediately knelt in front of Marquis of Zhi Jin, as if offering its most respectful loyalty to its master.

Looking at it, Yue Yang discovered that this monster's level was Silver-ranked Level Six. He was slightly pleased. It looked like this the Marquis of Zi Jin had not seen through his capabilities yet. Under the protection of [Counterfeit], enemies would always inaccurately estimate and also grossly underestimate his power. This is because they did not believe that such a young person like him would be an [Innate] Ranker, their line of thought was easily limited by reality.

They would definitely not expect that he was a guy who travelled dimensions and hence an exception...

“Come, what does a Monkey of Zi Jin even count as? Other than the Great-sage Sun, that monkey, other monkeys are just transient beings.” Yue Yang put away his Silver Grimoire and raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade as he walked over.

(TLN: Great-sage Sun is Sun Wu Kong, the monkey from Journey to the West)

“Eh?” the Marquis of Zhi Jin’s face colour had really changed now.

This fellow was not only not running away, he even put away his grimoire. Could it be that he was really not afraid of death?

Without the protective shield, he could instantly kill him off at any time. What was going on in his brain?

This, this was too strange.

Yue Yang’s actions were puzzling to the Marquis of Zi Jin. He frowned slightly as he also put his Platinum Grimoire away. Easing his hands behind his back, he stood distantly opposite Yue Yang. Instead of approaching him immediately and execute his moves to attack Yue Yang, he only sent a look towards the ugly beast and indicated to it to go forth and kill Yue Yang.

He was not anxious to kill Yue Yang. He wanted to test out Yue Yang’s capabilities first.

The ugly beast immediately leapt into the air as it received his master’s orders. Fanning its wings, it swooped towards Yue Yang like a swift lightning.

The huge blade slashed down from the sky.

Yue Yang dodged, avoiding the tip of the ugly beast’s blade with lightning speed. As he was about to counterattack, the ugly beast

started to spin high up in the sky, its sword tip spiralling like a spinning top.

This was the humans' martial art technique 'Whirlwind Blade'. What was different was that humans stood on the ground and spiralled, but this monster spun in the air. Yue Yang leapt backwards, withdrawing from the attacking range of the sword blade. The ugly beast flapped its wings wildly and kept chasing, finally forcing Yue Yang to back up into the lakewater. Sure enough, this ugly beast had intelligence. When he saw Yue Yang enter the lake, the bloodthirst in its red eyes intensified, revolving and slashing faster as it chased.

The Marquis of Zi Jin felt a little astonished. He did not think that this masked brat would easily fall into a disadvantageous position.

Backing into the lake was most likely a crafty plan.

However, he completely did not control or warn off his summoned beast. He only quietly observed, looking at Yue Yang's counterattacks, hoping that he could find a hint or trace from this fight to deduce Yue Yang's identity.

The Marquis of Zhi Jin could be certain that this fellow in front of him was a young Ranker that was secretly nurtured by one of the Four Great Sects, because he did not recognise him at all and had never heard about such a young Ranker in this world. How did a person like him not even chosen to be one of the Three Great Killing Stars? Even if he was not chosen, how would he be completely obscure and unknown? Also, the most important point

was that with this fellow's skill, courage and insight, were definitely not something that normal people could have. He must definitely be a young Ranker secretly nurtured by one of the Four Great Sects.

“Counterattack!” Yue Yang shouted loudly, raising his Magic Blade to fake an attack.

The ugly beast clearly could understand the human language. It immediately reacted with a kind of vigilant defense when it heard him, and its revolving speed had also slowed down quite a lot.

With this single test, Yue Yang confirmed what he thought... He then repeatedly raised his Magic Blade and put them down, shouting “Counterattack!” at each time. The ugly beast was completely confused by his actions and its offensive attacks ended up hindered time and time again and again. Finally, its spiralling form ultimately disintegrated into nothingness.

“It's really an idiot, haha!” Yue Yang jeered at it loudly.

When the ugly beast heard him, it flew over, flustered and exasperatedly, Meanwhile, Yue Yang was stepping on the surface of the lake, using his Magic Blade to stir the water slowly.

The Marquis of Zhi Jin noticed some irregularity. The true power did not lie in the purple flames on the Magic Blade, but in the turbulent undercurrents in the whirlpool of waves underneath this fellow's feet.

Unknowingly, a giant whirlpool had appeared at the bottom of the lake, but the surface remained as calm as ever.

What made the Marquis of Zhi Jin's heart beat faster was that this masked brat had used the Magic Blade in a very ingenious way. When he tried to observe and compare Yue Yang's moves carefully, he actually found that he, himself, would not be able to do this... In the instant when the ugly beast thrust at Yue Yang's face, Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade had arrived before it and met the sharp tip of the giant sword. Taking advantage of this moment, Yue Yang caused the ugly beast to entirely lost its balance and fell heavily onto the lake's surface. When it flapped its wings desperately wanting to fly up, Yue Yang chopped at the wings on its back with one slash of the Magic Blade, laughing coldly. "Go to hell and be a water ghost!"

The ugly beast dropped onto the lake's surface with a loud sound.

Initially, with its strength, even if it was injured, it would still be able to fly towards the sky within a few seconds. However, the strange whirlpool at the bottom of the lake entirely destroyed any possibility of it even struggling and simply swallowed it whole.

Suddenly, a fist cast a shadow onto Yue Yang's head. "You too go to hell to be a water ghost."

It was the Marquis of Zhi Jin.

Even though Yue Yang had already put the most attention on him, he still could not sense the Marquis of Zhi Jin's movement.

Yue Yang completely could not understand how this fellow could move to the top of his head in an instant... It was like he had disappeared in midair, and then re-appearing again suddenly here. There was no trace of movement in between, no indication of change at all.

If there was, Yue Yang would definitely have been able to feel it. But the weird fact was that the enemy seemed to have gotten control of the entire space. He could carelessly disappear and appear in any place, including the place right above Yue Yang's head. Looking at his punch which was almost within reach, Yue Yang dropped his body rapidly downwards, his entire back smashing against the lake surface. A hint of cold killing intent flashed through Marquis of Zhi Jin's eyes. Nobody could ever escape from his clutches.

Ever.

As long as he wished to kill, nobody could escape from him.

When his fist hit Yue Yang's face, Marquis of Zhi Jin laughed coldly and snorted. "Young fellow, you are still too green."

However, in the one-thousandth of a second, in the instant that the force of the fist had exploded, he discovered that the masked brat under his fist had disappeared...

At the same time, in the sky, with a frightening amount of power that seemed to be capable of overturning seas and waves, an

unstoppable clenched fist ruthlessly punched Marquis of Zhi Jin vital pressure point on his back.

It was Yue Yang.

Some time unknowingly, he and the Marquis of Zhi Jin had exchanged positions and furthermore, they had also exchanged roles.

From being attacked, to become the attacker.

“You are practically courting death.” Marquis of Zhi Jin’s fury hit the roof. He turned his body, and as he reduced most of the impact of Yue Yang’s punch, his left palm counter-hit at Yue Yang’s chest with a speed and strength ten times more than his right palm just now. He no longer had the mood and patience to make fun of his prey. His move was one fatal blow.

“Two idiots.” Yue Yang did not avoid or dodge at all; he merely extended his hand and pointed leisurely.

The Silver Grimoire was yet again instantly summoned, and the protective shield started to spread over Yue Yang’s body.

The Marquis of Zi Jin’s powerful fist that had an incomparable power hit onto the protective shield, deforming it slightly. However the protective shield that had an unequivocal defense immediately rebounded the Marquis of Zi Jin into the lakewater. With a loud boom, the Marquis of Zi Jin was rebounded by the

power of his own move and smashed into the water. Even though within a second, he had split the lake surface and leapt high up into the air with water splashing up everywhere... His clothes were half drenched in water. It could not be concealed anymore, his miserable appearance after playing right into Yue Yang's trap was completely exposed.

This was definitely one of the biggest humiliations in his life.

Furthermore, it was an enormous humiliation that was, for the first time ever, caused by a younger generation.

“Abominable, Masked Brat, you are definitely screwed. I'll let you see that in front of a truly strong person, that laughable witty plan, is simply a display of a weak person and simply not worth mentioning.” the Marquis of Zi Jin was really angered. There had never been anyone from the younger generation that put him in such a sorry state.

What made it so difficult to bear was that he was actually tricked by this fellow.

He hated the feeling of being tricked the most.

The ugly beast started to struggle up from the lake. It opened up its bat-like wings which were drenched in water and was about to fly up. Yue Yang immediately put his grimoire away again and landed down to the lakewater, wordlessly and soundlessly.

With one foot, he stepped on the ugly beast, pushing it back into the water, his Hui Jin Magic Blade revolving again on the lake surface.

The ugly beast struggled in the water, and was yet again embroiled by the whirlpool into the deeper waters.

The Marquis of Zi Jin disappeared.

Yue Yang kept using his Level Three [Divine Vision] to sense him, but the Marquis of Zi Jin still managed to easily disappear into the air without Yue Yang's [Divine Vision] capturing even a trace or a hint.

“Die!”

When a furious voice travelled over from Yue Yang's back, the Marquis of Zi Jin's clenched fist had already hit the fulcrum joining Yue Yang's spinal cord and head.

As long as he hit his target with one punch, Yue Yang would most likely die.

The terrible power of this one punch, let alone one person, even a Battle Mammoth or Battle Kodo Beast would be beaten into a pulp of mud. The Marquis of Zi Jin definitely believed in his own strength. There was no non-Innate Ranker body that could withstand his [Perishing Blow]. Under this punch, this follow would only have one end, and that was his entire body dissolving

into flesh and blood fragments, splashing as far as hundred metres away.

“You are the one who’s dead!” Yue Yang bellowed in rage. He completely ignored the Marquis of Zi Jin’s punch, both hands clasping together, in that instant his [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi executed his [Supreme Sword].

He had already planned this counterattack and waited for this opportunity for a very long time.

Thinking of using normal weapons or punches to kill the Marquis of Zi Jin was one of the most ridiculous moves.

To kill Rankers that were Level Six [Elders] or above, the best way was to use [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi. Only this Sword Qi that could conquer every obstacle and destroy everything. Only this could cause a fatal blow to them...

The Marquis of Zi Jin saw countless golden sword tips extending out from Yue Yang’s ten fingers, then collecting into one extremely sharp Sword Qi. He was inwardly alarmed.

He instinctively wanted to summon his grimoire to protect himself.

However, he discovered that he could not move at all.

A sort of shapeless strength had bound his entire body... He had

concentrated all his power into this punch and the momentum was bringing his body forward. Currently, his protective shield had not been raised and his strongest summoning beast was still not summoned; in addition, his entire body was bound so tightly that he could not budge. On the other hand, his enemy was an [Innate] who had concealed himself. That Innate Sword Qi was aimed at the space between his eyebrows and was about to deal a fatal blow.

At that instant, a shadow of death flashed across the Marquis of Zi Jin's heart.

If he had a chance to regret, he definitely would not fall into the enemy's trap like that again. He would first summon his strongest summoned beast to protect him instead.

He would even rather have let this fellow go back and never meet with him again. He would never even think of killing him...

It was because of one ill-considered action, that now he had fallen into such a dangerous situation where death was certain.

The Marquis of Zi Jin almost went crazy.

Who could expect that this fellow was actually an Innate Ranker that hid himself so well? Who could expect that he still had an innate skill that could bind a person's entire body up?

If he had known it would be like this earlier, the Marquis of Zi Jin would definitely not have attacked so impulsively... However,

there were no 'what ifs' in this world.

He also understood this himself. It was just that he was too careless and too confident in himself.

And also too stupid.

Chapter 147 – I’m Sorry, It’s My Natural Reflex!

Yue Yang pointed his [Supreme Sword] at the Marquis of Zi Jin’s forehead. His Innate [Invisible Sword Qi] exploded with a burst.

In that instant, a bloody hole appeared on the Marquis of Zi Jin’s forehead.

In that instant before the effects of [Binding Chains] wore off, Yue Yang had even grabbed the Marquis of Zi Jin’s head with his fastest speed and greatest strength, twisting it in another direction, breaking the bones in his neck.

When the effects of [Binding Chains] wore off, the Marquis of Zi Jin’s fist still attacked Yue Yang with a devastating amount of strength.

However, this punch, couldn’t cause any damage to Yue Yang anymore. This is because when Yue Yang’s surprise attack succeeded, he had already soared up into the sky.

“Phew, that was a close one.”

Yue Yang’s nervously beating heart that he had tried to forcefully calm all this while started to thump wildly suddenly.

The Marquis of Zi Jin was definitely the strongest enemy that he

had seen in his life. Fortunately he didn't see through his capabilities, and he could successfully kill him instantly with his surprise attack comprising of his [Binding Chains] and Innate [Invisible Sword Qi] skills.

If not for that, Yue Yang really didn't know who would emerge as victor.

He had mounted a sneak attack on his enemy's weakest point with his strongest attack.

In the end, he had finally succeeded with his gamble.

Although Yue Yang had definitely killed the Marquis of Zi Jin, his heart was still beating hard. He was still shouting about his luck for that sneak attack just now. Had the Marquis of Zi Jin summoned his strongest beast right from the beginning, or had he unleashed his maximum power, his body wouldn't be so easily exposed to the Sword Qi. Then his sneak attack would not even have been successful! The Marquis of Zi Jin was definitely not a careless person, but his deducing capabilities was limited by his knowledge... He would never have thought that Yue Yang was an Innate Ranker. He had even thought that he could kill him off easily any time. This was his reason for failure.

Eh?

As Yue Yang finished calming his breath in the air was about to drop down onto the ground, unexpectedly, he found that the Marquis of Zi Jin, who should have died and fallen into the lake,

had instead stood on top of the lake surface in a strange manner.

His neck had already been broken by Yue Yang's twist.

His forehead was drenched with fresh blood, as it continued to spurt out.

However, something absolutely horrifying had happened, making Yue Yang's head hurt.

The Marquis of Zi Jin had actually not died from these attacks, and he could even stand on top of the lake without falling in...

This, how could this be?

The Marquis of Zi Jin, who had his neck twisted off and a hole in his forehead had actually instantly summoned his Platinum Grimoire, without waiting for Yue Yang to snap out of his shock. As his protective shield rose up, he first summoned a flaming strengthening-type beast to fuse with his body, then he raised his hands slowly and twisted his neck back. Re-connecting his spinal cord with his head, he then took out a golden headband and bound the hole in his forehead that was bleeding profusely tight.

Yue Yang watched, dumbstruck. His whole soul had almost become frozen. Is this fellow still human?

How could he not die from such an attack?

“From my childhood until now, in all the 1328 big or small battles that I have fought in, no one has ever managed to injure my face. No one ever did. You are the first.” The Marquis of Zi Jin slowly took off his top garment and revealed a body full of scars. there were hundreds of scars on his body overlapping on top of each other. However, compared to his body, there was not a single scar on his face. The Marquis of Zi Jin pointed at five of the scars on his chest that had already healed, “This was left by Ye Hou during our battle that time. She had almost killed me, but fortunately, I managed to escape quickly. But even at that time, the situation wasn’t as dangerous as today... You are the first person that could threaten my life to such an extreme. I would never have thought that I could die by your hands... Just a little, if you were stronger by just a little bit more, I would definitely be in danger today.”

“Are you not human?” Yue Yang was 90% sure in his heart that this person was not a human being. That was why the method that he had used to counter against human would not work on him.

“I admit that I have wrongfully underestimated you. That’s why I was almost killed. But fortunately, you have also underestimated me.” The Marquis of Zi Jin’s voice was gentle, as if he was speaking to a friend, completely without a trace of anger.

Yue Yang’s heart froze, he immediately summoned his Silver Grimoire and erected his shield.

This Marquis of Zi Jin was really too abnormal.

In this kind of situation, he should never be careless.

Just as his shield was erected, Yue Yang found that in that split second when his shield rose up, a bloodied scythe that was ignited in flames was about to slash at his back mercilessly. However, in that thousandth of a second, the attack was blocked by his shield. If he was late by even a tenth of a second, his soul would probably have ended up in another place. Yue Yang turned around and saw that there was a Blood Scythe Demon wielding a bloodied scythe ignited in flames, standing more than five metres tall and glaring at him with an extremely vicious look... This Marquis of Zi Jin... When did he summon this Blood Scythe Demon?

When Yue Yang observed the demon closely with his [Divine Vision], his heart beat soared up to three hundred beats per minute.

Gold-ranked Level 7.

This Blood Scythe Demon whose whole body was ignited in flames was actually an extremely high levelled Gold-ranked Level 7!

This, this was already the limit of the beasts in the Soaring Dragon Continent... Before this, Yue Yang had heard about different versions of beasts' levels. Most mercenaries believed that normal-ranked beasts wouldn't be able to rise above level 8 and only elite beasts could. Ye Kong and the others had also misunderstood this belief. This was because a normal-ranked level 9 and level 10 was not something that could be 'seen' by the common folks... Ten Thousand Year Ancient Tree looked like a

forest on the outside, but it was actually a single large, old tree; The Ocean King Whale lived deep in the vast ocean, so no one could see it; As for the other level 10 beast, the Island Tortoise, its shell looked exactly like a small island. It was said that it wouldn't be crowded even if a city was build on top of the shell.

All these beasts were not beasts that were normally seen by mercenaries. Even if they had seen one, they might not realise it.

Normal mercenaries wouldn't even think that they were beasts.

However, under Grandma Wu Teng's proper teaching, Yue Yang's knowledge had changed beyond recognition, and experienced a 180 degrees change.

She had clearly pointed out that normally, in Soaring Dragon Continent, the beasts over level 10 wouldn't exist. Grandma Wu Teng didn't say it out, but Yue Yang knew the hidden meaning behind her words. She meant that under normal circumstances, in Soaring Dragon Continent, there wouldn't be beasts over level 10 that came into being naturally.

However, if beasts wanted to exceed this limit, they would only need to follow 1 point; that was – Transform into humans.

As they transform into humans, beasts would be able to learn and improve like human beings, breaking through new limits each time. They could only surpass level 10 this way... Otherwise, level 10 was a beast's maximum limit. Those who did not conform to the requirement of 'transforming into humans' would be limited at

level 10, existing as a colossal beast and becoming a peerless existence in an area of Soaring Dragon Continent.

Transforming beasts into human had always been the secret amongst the deepest secrets.

Only the truly strong Rankers would be allowed to know these secrets that normal people wouldn't be able to access.

Yue Yang suspected that the Marquis of Zi Jin in front of him was actually an extremely high levelled strong beast who had transformed into human and had this human appearance now...

Otherwise, a normal human's body wouldn't possibly still be alive under the circumstances of having their brains destroyed and spinal cord detached. Most importantly, the Marquis of Zi Jin's words had also hinted on admitting this point.

This Marquis of Zi Jin was definitely not a human being.

Could it be that he was that Giant Dragon that the mercenaries had said before?

Yue Yang didn't think about it that much, he immediately took out a Teleportation Scroll, channelled his Spirit Qi into it and prepared to teleport away. Why would he fight with a Giant Dragon who could already evolve into a human? Why would he fight with such a powerful entity who wouldn't die even after his forehead was pierced through and his neck twisted off? Yue Yang

wouldn't bother with such a pain in the ass. Such a meaningless fight was not something that Yue Yang was seeking. Furthermore, the Marquis of Zi Jin even had a Gold-ranked Level 7 Blood Demon Scythe as his beast. Who would still want to fight with him?

Surprisingly, although the Marquis of Zi Jin should have hated Yue Yang to his every bones, he didn't have any reaction when he saw Yue Yang teleporting away.

Yue Yang immediately felt that something was wrong when he entered into the teleportation pillar of light.

To his surprise, he found that the place he was teleported into was not the Settlement Camp at the bottom of the Abyss; it was right in front of the Marquis of Zi Jin.

In the air, it was as if the Blood Demon Scythe had known beforehand that the place where Yue Yang would teleport into was right in front of the Marquis of Zi Jin. His bloodied scythe split the air as it slashed down. Yue Yang was extremely shocked and hurriedly tried to avoid it. However, he found out that his body was moving right in the opposite direction to what he had intended, as if his body wanted to welcome the scythe and deliver his life on a silver platter. As a result, his final body's movement and control had defeated his original purpose of trying to avoid the attack.

This must be the Marquis of Zi Jin's doing. He must be able to manipulate space...

Yue Yang secretly cried, “It’s the end!”

In a span of less than a tenth of a second, he wouldn’t have the time to summon his Silver Grimoire and set up a shield.

Could Xiao Wen Li withstand a Gold-ranked level 7 Blood Demon Scythe’s attack? Furthermore, there was still this Marquis of Zi Jin’s fellow heavy punches that could come at any time... In the brink of life and death, Yue Yang raised his arms and welcomed the frightening bloodied scythe coming down swiftly towards him with the Golden Beast, who had transformed into a wrist guard. His right hand executing [Binding Chains] again on the Marquis of Zi Jin, who was closing in for a sneak attack.

However, the ugly beast that was at the bottom of the lake suddenly burst out and flew towards Yue Yang. It thrusted its greatsword, looking as if it couldn’t wait to cleave Yue Yang into half.

There was a blood scythe above, greatsword below, and a palm behind, the most frightening one.

Yue Yang realized that he had never fallen into such a dangerous situation before, to the point that his life was on the line.

At that moment when the Marquis of Zi Jin’s eyes flashed with a cruel desire to kill, the Blood Scythe Demon exerted his utmost strength to slash down, and the ugly beast almost succeeded in mounting a sneak attack on Yue Yang, a protective shield started to spread around Yue Yang’s body suddenly, blocking every single

attack, keeping the enemies out.

It was Xiao Wen Li who had managed to summon her Diamond Grimoire on time...

“My precious darling!” Yue Yang was moved beyond compare and immediately hugged the figure that had appeared in front of him. However, the moment he embraced the figure, he felt that there was something wrong. Xiao Wen Li was still a small girl, it would be strange if she had breasts. Why did this figure had two lumps in front?

Yue Yang was puzzled as he squeezed those lumps. The elasticity of those mounds shocked him. This obviously belonged to a big sister (oneesan) with an extremely hot and sexy body!

Could this be Luo Hua City Mistress? Had she came to save him?

Or was it Princess Qian Qian big sis (oneesan)?

The feeling on his hands were incredible. It seemed that it was much bigger than apples... Yeah, the only thing that he could be sure of was that this wasn't Yi Nan's. Yue Yang was still imagining things when that figure who had summoned her grimoire and saved his life turned around, her beautiful eyes glaring at Yue Yang icy cold. It was so cold, as if she wanted to freeze Yue Yang into an ice sculpture alive.

“Let go.” The owner of those mesmerizing eyes was furious. Her

anger was different from the ordinary ones, her expression was even more furious and colder.

“I’m sorry, that’s my natural reflex,” Yue Yang was so shocked that his heart almost jumped out of his mouth. This beautiful girl was neither Luo Hua City Mistress nor Princess Qian Qian; she was also most definitely not Yi Nan. She was that female thief who had watched him along his journey here. Even at this point of time, Yue Yang’s wolfy paws were still grabbing onto the girl’s chest. Looking at their positions right now, even Yue Yang himself looked down on his own actions... He was simply too rude and wretched.

“This is also my natural reflex.” The female thief raised the Ancient Book in her hands and slapped it into Yue Yang’s face.

Chapter 148 – Who On Earth Are You?

Not only did Yue Yang have thick skin; he was also shameless.

He leapt up, immediately assuming an air of refinement and courteousness. “Beautiful lady, I’m so sorry, I grabbed you by mistake just now. Actually I am a man of honor. As long as you hear my name Xue Tan Lang, you would know how decent and honorable I actually am.”

“Xue Tan Lang’s head is silvery-white in colour...” The female robber immediately exposed Yue Yang’s attempts to impersonate Xue Tan Lang.

“Ha, actually I am Yan Po Jun, just now I was just kidding.” Yue Yang broke out in sweat internally. It looked like this beauty not only liked to check out handsome guys, she also committed them to memory.

“Yan Po Jun has a lion dog...” On hearing Yue Yang’s words, the female robber kept rolling her eyes. If he really wanted to impersonate somebody, why didn’t he impersonate somebody who is not too well known? Who didn’t know the Three Great Killing Stars? Unless they were blind, anyone could immediately see through his attempts in wanting to impersonate the Three Great Killing Stars.

“I also have a dog whose name is ‘Lion’. I just happened to not bring it along with me today. Firstly, beautiful lady, I would like to thank you for saving my life. I want to give you one million gold as

a reward. However, I happened to not have this little amount of pocket money on me, but don't worry. You can go to our Yan Clan to ask for it. I'll give you an IOU shortly. I, Yan Po Jun have always been a man of my words, I would definitely not forget your kindness in saving my life... May I know your name?" Even if Yue Yang's identity was exposed, he still forcefully insisted on using Yan Po Jun's name. He would not be foolish enough to reveal that he was actually Third Young Master of the Yue Clan in front of the Marquis of Zi Jin anyway.

That was not a heroic act, that was practically courting death.

There were advantages in impersonating Yan Po Jun; he was the one who molested the beautiful lady, but the one being made the scapegoat would be Yan Po Jun. Moreover, in the event that the Marquis of Zi Jin wanted to take revenge, he would also not seek Yue Yang for revenge.

He didn't know what the Marquis of Zi Jin was thinking secretly, since he was keeping quiet all this time.

But the mysterious female robber who liked to watch him glared at the guy who travelled dimensions with cold eyes, snorting. "Why didn't you say you are Fatty Hai Da Fu?"

"....." Yue Yang was flabbergasted. This beauty actually knew Fatty Hai. Then, she must also know him... Who was she? How did she get to know him and why did she follow him? Could it be that she wanted to push him down?

“I have no interest in knowing who you are, I just wanted to know what tricky moves you still have up your sleeve. Quickly use them to beat the Marquis of Zi Jin.” The mysterious beauty changed the topic right back to the main point. On hearing this, Yue Yang’s mood immediately soured. Beat the Marquis of Zi Jin? What a joke. He even refused to die with his brain burst open and neck broken. What other methods could he use to defeat him?

“I don’t have any methods left. What about you?” Yue Yang shrugged, throwing the question back to her.

“I think I will only be able to defeat him after training another fifty years,” The mysterious beauty answered.

“What about now?” Upon hearing her answer, Yue Yang almost fainted.

“Now my plan is to kick you out to attract his attention and then take that opportunity to run away. What do you think about that?” The mysterious beauty asked earnestly.

“Not a very good plan.” Yue Yang immediately opposed the idea. “Think carefully. I am a guy. At the most, I will just be killed by the Marquis of Zi Jin. Once my head drops, the pain stops and I am free from suffering. But it’s different for you. You are a girl and a beautiful one at that. If you are caught by him, he would most likely rape you and perform those sinister and wicked acts on you which I actually secretly want to do but I don’t have the guts to. At that point, in my opinion, you would end up in a more tragic death than me.”

“Perhaps you don’t know this, but I heard that the Marquis of Zi Jin actually prefers handsome guys, especially those who are ninety nine thousand nine hundred and ninety nine times even more handsome than the Three Great Killing Stars, a guy like you.”

Originally, this was what he told the Imperial Swordswoman, Princess Qian Qian. However, this mysterious beautiful woman had also knew about this now.

Yue Yang did not believe that Princess Qian Qian, that rouge tiger of a girl, was a big-mouthed person. It was even more impossible for his other older cousin, Yue Yu, to brag that her own little brother was a handsome guy.

If this mysterious beauty did not eavesdrop when he was joking around with Princess Qian Qian, then how did she know all these? Could it be that she was one of Princess Qian Qian’s close friends? But why had he never heard Princess Qian Qian talk about her before?

What made Yue Yang sweat the most was that the Marquis of Zi Jin, who was standing at the opposite side, had actually agreed with the mysterious beautiful lady’s words, nodding. “That’s right, I actually like handsome guys.”

This sentence made Yue Yang’s little heart thump wildly. The shock inflicted to him was not little.

He was done for.

His anus was in danger.

In order to protect his sacred anus, Yue Yang decided to go all out and fight this pervert Marquis of Zi Jin.

He firstly tried to calm his madly beating heart. Composing himself, he asked the mysterious beauty. “Let’s work together to defeat him. Do you have any idea how to counter his Instant Teleportation?”

“What Instant Teleportation?” The mysterious beautiful lady asked as her curiosity was piqued.

“Didn’t you see what happened earlier? This huge pervert Marquis of Zi Jin knows a terrifying skill of immediate movement, disappearing from one place and then appearing immediately in another. It’s extremely difficult to make sense of it. Only if we can find a way to neutralise this move can we fight him. Otherwise we would certainly lose.” Yue Yang’s words were all sincere. To fight a Ranker who could instantly teleport was courting trouble. Furthermore, this fellow was also a perverted Ranker who was impossible to kill.

“That’s his Inherent Skill, [Space Teleportation]... ” The mysterious beautiful lady was made speechless by Yue Yang’s lack of foundational knowledge.

“What the hell, how could he have such a good Inherent Skill? This is too unfair! I want to complain to God Game Company, this is definitely a bug.” Yue Yang was thoroughly jealous. Inherent Skill [Space Teleportation]... How would they even survive with this?

“What is God Game Company? What is a bug?” The mysterious lady was entirely confused by this fellow’s vocabulary. Even a baffled look appeared on the Marquis of Zi Jin’s face. The mysterious lady swept her gaze across Yue Yang from head to toe, and then asked curiously. “All Demon Kings have the same Inherent Skill, and that is the ability to control space. You should have known this, right?”

“Ah... He, he’s a Demon King?” Yue Yang was astonished. So this Marquis of Zi Jin was actually a Demon King who had come over from the Demon Abyss?

No wonder he had a Golden-ranked Level Seven Blood Scythe Demon as his beast. As it turns out, he was a Demon King.

Yet when he thought about it carefully, there was still something wrong.

The Marquis of Zi Jin was a Demon King? This was not possible. The previous Demon King that he met, the Demon King Ha Xin, was so powerful that he was utterly defeated even when he only used one hand against him. However powerful this Marquis of Zi Jin was, his capability was not even one-tenth of Demon King Ha Xin’s. How could such a person also be a Demon King?

Wasn't this Demon King too weak?

If he was a Demon King, then where did the dragon roar that the mercenary soldiers heard underground come from?

The confused and disoriented Yue Yang asked. "How is he a Demon King? Isn't he a human being, the final result of a human transformation of an underground Red Dragon or Black Dragon?"

The mysterious beauty sweated profusely. "There are no Red Dragons and Black Dragons in Soaring Dragon Continent. Those are products of the Demon Abyss, even if they migrated their habitats over to Soaring Dragon Continent, they wouldn't hide in this underground hole. There's nothing other than ants over here, what would they eat? As for human transformation, not any living thing can transform into a human being. To do so, one must have extremely superior intelligence, and must also fulfil other conditions... The Marquis of Zi Jin is currently not yet a Demon King, he should be a prince in the Demon Abyss. There's a rule for future Demon Kings in the Demon Abyss: All Demon Kings must learn human beings' knowledge and gain human experiences in Soaring Dragon Continent first before they can return to become Demon Kings."

"That's right." the Marquis of Zi Jin naturally nodded and admitted it. "All Demon Kings must learn human beings' [Innate] battle skills. If we can't master it, we will not be recognised. Even if we become Demon Kings, our thrones will be easily usurped by others."

“Are [Innate] battle skills so powerful? Isn’t the most powerful skill in Soaring Dragon Continent Summoning?” Yue Yang’s jaw dropped to the ground. His mouth opened so wide that one could force three big steamed buns into it.

“.....” The mysterious beauty and the Marquis of Zi Jin looked at him as if they were looking at an idiot.

“Summoning is indeed the strongest for normal people. [Innate] Skills, however, are an entirely different ball game. One cannot look at them with a worldly perspective. Also, don’t you think that the power of [Innate] battle skills, if used together with summoning, would increase one’s overall battle power? According to legends, both of these skills are complementary when one reaches the peak. Neither can be left out.” The mysterious beautiful lady explained to Yue Yang in one of the rare moments that she did. It is unknown what she was thinking about when she did it.

“If you can write down all that battle skill that you know, I will let you live. I can swear to the Demon God.” the Marquis of Zi Jin said this with a very sincere expression on his face. There was no trace of resentment or hint of revenge that could be seen on his face, only self-restraint and sincerity.

“Okay, look over here.” Yue Yang lifted his middle finger. Moreover, it was two middle fingers.

“Both of you are dead meat, there’s no use struggling.” the Marquis of Zi Jin did not mind waiting for a few minutes more. As long as the time limit of the protective shield was up, the death

knell had sounded for the both of them.

“Who taught you your battle skills?” The mysterious beauty was also very curious about the sword stab that Yue Yang just used to instantly trap the Marquis of Zi Jin.

“Wasn’t it taught by you? Master Xiao Long Nu, all of Guo-er’s martial arts were imparted by you! Oh no, I should call you Long-er.” Yue Yang had yet to finish saying his sentence before he was slapped to the ground by the mysterious beauty. “What nonsense are you spouting? Besides, dragging out the time is useless in dealing with the Marquis of Zi Jin. He can control space for at least three hours, and his control scope is at least one kilometre in diameter. We can’t wait until then, and we can’t escape to any place that’s so far... Are there any other ways? If not, we should start directly attacking. Every passing minute will only weaken my battle strength. Hurry up and say it, do you have any other ways?”

(Shiro: Xiao Long Nu and Guo-er are characters from [Return of the Condor Heroes](#) written by Louis Cha.)

“Now that you have said it, I actually have a way...”

Yue Yang stood up matter-of-factly.

When the mysterious beauty and the Marquis of Zi Jin perked up their ears to listen, Yue Yang suddenly zoomed in front of the Marquis of Zi Jin like lightning, and his Hui Jin Magic Blade struck down as if he was tearing the heavens and splitting the heavens.

His idea was to launch a sneak attack.

The Marquis of Zi Jin snorted lightly, disappearing and appearing on the lake surface a hundred meters away.

The Blood Scythe Demon in the air did not wait for Yue Yang who had failed in his sneak attack attempt to return to anywhere within the protective shield, and had already flown in front of him to obstruct him.

The blood scythe was raised at the same time as Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade.

Both sides ruthlessly chopped towards the other's body...

When the flaming Blood Scythe was about to slash into Yue Yang's face, it was suddenly stunned entirely by the [Binding] Inherent Skill. Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade ruthlessly pierced onto the demon's heart through its chest. At the same time, the mysterious beauty appeared with a flash. With rapport as if they had gone through thousands of practice with each other, she strike the Blood Scythe Demon's back coordinatedly. Her lily-white hands glowed with a strange, cold beam of light.

The ugly beast swiftly pounced downwards from the sky, preparing to launch a sneak attack on Yue Yang. However, its face was immediately stamped upon by Yue Yang's leg that had moved like a tornado. The ugly beast was entirely blasted away.

The Blood Scythe Demon was still entirely fearless even after getting receiving two attacks continuously.

Brandishing the burning blood scythe, it moved horizontally, whirling and slashing. It first slashed at Yue Yang's body, and then slashed towards the mysterious beautiful lady behind him...

Shocked, Yue Yang hurriedly flew over to save her.

However, his wolfish claws had yet to embrace the fragrant body of the mysterious beautiful lady before he was hit away by her elbow.

The blood scythe swiftly chopped across the head of the mysterious beautiful lady. However, it did not actually hit its target before the mysterious beauty disappeared in mid-air like the Marquis of Zi Jin had and reappeared behind Yue Yang without making a sound. She then instantly summoned a Golden Grimoire, using the protective shield to resist the Demonic Whip that the Marquis of Zi Jin had brandished and thrashed against her from a distance away. The attack that produced a thunderclap sound shook the protective shield wildly.

If not for her quick reactions, Yue Yang would most likely be unable to deal with this attack.

She clearly had more battle experience than Yue Yang.

She could easily coordinate with Yue Yang's attacks, but Yue Yang who was used to fighting alone could not coordinate with her.

They had failed in their sneak attack, but luckily they were unhurt.

On seeing that the danger had passed and the battle situation was in a deadlock yet again, Yue Yang heaved a sigh of relief inwardly. While wiping away the cold sweat on his forehead, he asked the mysterious beauty in hushed tones. “You are also a future Demon King? Are you a princess of the Demon Abyss?”

“Have you gone crazy in thinking about princesses? This is not an Inherent Skill, it is a beast called the ‘Evil Spirit Breeze’. Don’t lean so close to me, I fear that your idiocy is contagious.” The mysterious beauty looked like she was extremely familiar with Yue Yang’s words and behaviour. Even though Yue Yang dared to be sure that he had definitely never seen her before, strangely, what she said was exactly the same things he said last time to flirt with some pretty girl.

“Who are you exactly?” Yue Yang’s curiosity had reached its limits. Who on earth was this girl?

Chapter 149 – Attack And Defense, Naturally Intertwined

“It doesn’t matter who I am. I’m telling you now, I can only give you one minute at most to kill that Gold-ranked Level 7 Blood Scythe Demon, or we’ll all die here.” The mysterious beauty said this calmly, as if it was something natural.

“Pretty lady, you know that’s a Gold-ranked Level 7 Demon, right? I’m not God, how can I beat it within one minute?” Yue Yang expressed his helplessness in this situation.

“Do you want to swap and fight the Marquis of Zi Jin instead?” The mysterious beauty was extremely democratic, giving Yue Yang the freedom to choose.

“Ah... I guess I’ll go take down that damned Blood Scythe Demon then.” Yue Yang knew that the Marquis of Zi Jin was harder to handle than the Blood Scythe Demon. The more terrifying thing was that the Marquis of Zi Jin knew how to teleport. Once his guard was up, it would be extremely difficult to kill him. If Yue Yang were to fight him, it would probably end up with either the Marquis of Zi Jin chasing after Yue Yang to attack him with his [Heavy Palm], or Yue Yang chasing after the Marquis of Zi Jin to attack him with his Innate Sword Qi. He would definitely not be able to defeat him.

“I’ll give you a minute. Take out the Blood Scythe Demon, then come over and help me.” The mysterious beauty set up this impossible mission for Yue Yang.

“Okay. Then what about that ugly beast?” Yue Yang pointed towards the other Silver-ranked bat-winged monster with a jackal head.

“Take it out while passing through.” The mysterious beauty gave this terrific job to Yue Yang.

“That can be done very easily. However, if you are willing to give me a kiss, I believe that the process would definitely be much simpler.” However, before Yue Yang could finish his sentence, the mysterious beauty had already had a foot on his butt, kicking his entire body towards the Marquis of Zi Jin.

A bit of sword qi seemed to break out from the golden brilliance in Yue Yang’s hands.

The Marquis of Zi Jin’s expressions darkened but did not face the attack head-on.

With a flick of his whip, his figure vanished and he re-appeared ten metres away. Although the sneak attack that was coordinated by the mysterious beauty and Yue Yang was very sudden, to the Marquis of Zi Jin, who could control space, it was not even a threat.

Of course, Yue Yang and the mysterious beauty who knew about this only used it as a feint. The objective was to push the Marquis of Zi Jin back.

Their true target was the Blood Scythe Demon.

At the same time, the mysterious beauty flashed right above the head of the Blood Scythe Demon. With a light touch of her hand, a frost storm that was far colder than Xue Tan Lang's tornado was summoned. Even more mysteriously, the impact from her attack on the area behind the Blood Scythe Demon's heart that she had hit before, only started to show its effects now. Under the echoes of the frost storm, the place where she had attacked before turned into a continuously growing and freezing piece of ice with unparalleled power. In the end, even the flames on the body of the Blood Scythe Demon were sealed up in the ice...

Yue Yang realised that the ice sealing ability that the mysterious beauty had was much stronger than Lich Suo Ge's Demon Crystal Ice Spirit Orb.

The Gold-ranked Level 7 Reaper Mantis was not a fire-element beast. This Blood Scythe Demon, on the other hand, which was also a Gold-ranked Level 7 beast, was actually a fire-element demon.

Her ice could still freeze it solid. From this, it could be seen how terrifying her ability was. Yue Yang figured that her power were already far above the borders of his own imagination. Compared to the other ice cube guy Xue Tan Lang, this mysterious beauty's freezing power was at a much higher level. She also concealed it much better. Yue Yang did not think that her move, which was a momentary burst of an ambush, would have such a high efficiency.

However, his amazement would remain only as amazement.

Yue Yang's reaction was not slow at all.

Currently, it was a matter of life and death. Yue Yang had no room to care about hiding his strength now. The Gold-ranked Level 5 Bloody Queen was instantly summoned. With a single scream, she shocked the ugly beast, causing it to be completely disoriented. At the same time, her Dragon-Slaying Dagger penetrated deeply into the back of the ugly beast's head.

The Barbaric Cow Shadow pulled the leg of the Blood Scythe Demon, and smashed it brutally on top of a rock.

With fragments of ice scattering, Yue Yang flew downwards as if he was dancing. He abandoned his Hui Jin Magic Blade which was blazing with purple flames, and used the Golden Armour Puppet's giant club instead. He aimed straight between the two horns on the forehead of the Blood Scythe Demon and used all of his might to swing the club downwards. Suddenly, without any warnings, the Marquis of Zi Jin appeared behind Yue Yang and struck Yue Yang's back with his [Heavy Palm]. He had been waiting for a chance to launch a sneak attack too... The mysterious beauty crashed into Yue Yang's arms and she swapped their positions ingeniously. Using her back, she forcibly withstood the [Heavy Palm] strike that the Marquis of Zi Jin delivered as she cried out delicately.

Unexpectedly, the one who was jolted into midair was actually the Marquis of Zi Jin, whose palm could probably even split rocks into half...

As for the mysterious beauty's back, the clothes around the area where the palm had struck instantly turned into powder and was scattered by the wind, causing a huge patch of snow-white skin to be exposed.

Yue Yang knew that this was her trying to buy some time for him. He violently shouted, his full power exploding. His Innate Qi violently shot out like a sword, with a strength that was several times stronger than the usual! A golden light in the shape of a sword that was almost half a metre long drilled into the forehead of the Blood Scythe Demon, whose forehead was slightly concave after suffering from the heavy blow previously. After that, Yue Yang spiralled his finger, turning the insides of the Blood Scythe's Demon head into a mess.

When Yue Yang was using all of his power to kill off the Blood Scythe Demon, the Marquis of Zi Jin was also using his full power to pounce and kill the mysterious beauty.

The Marquis of Zi Jin could see that although the masked boy was proficient in both attack and defense, he was most suited towards attacking.

On the other hand, although the mysterious beauty was proficient in both as well, she was more suited for defending. If it was a one-on-one against either of them, they would not be his match at all. However, with the two of them cooperating to fight against him, their combined battle power would increase by ten times, making them extremely difficult to handle. So, he had to kill off one of them first... This masked boy was hard to kill. He had a

[Binding] Inherent Skill, if he were to try and kill him forcefully, it would be easy for him to counterattack.

The mysterious beauty was even harder to kill, but she had a fatal flaw.

She had to use her body to protect the masked boy, to cover for him so that he could kill the Blood Scythe Demon.

Now, he could not think of anything else. The most important thing to do now was to kill off this mysterious lady thief. Without her powerful battle intuition and almost unexplainable defense, this battle's victory would be his.

The Marquis of Zi Jin moved. His whip was like a poisonous python biting towards the mysterious beauty's head.

A whizzing sound was heard after the whip struck.

The speed was so fast that one could not see the flashing whip at all.

The mysterious beauty used her body to protect Yue Yang who was wildly attacking, without moving back a step at all. Then, a lovable shout was heard as a ripple scattered out from her body, eliminating the shockwaves of the whip, then sending it back with ten times its strength. This was the power of her elemental-type beast "Countercurrent". Along with "Evil Spirit Breeze" and the two other beast she had, they were her four great beasts.

The Marquis of Zi Jin immediately let go of his whip.

Just now, he was enticing the enemy to attack him. The objective was to let the enemy's beast act beforehand. After this, he would use his [Thunder Heavy Palm] to deliver a fatal blow.

As long as there was no assistance from [Countercurrent] who could eliminate and send back the power, the mysterious beauty would be eliminated without a trace if his attack hits..

“Ayaya!”

The Bloody Queen who was in midair pounced downwards rapidly. Her banshee scream exploded right above the Marquis of Zi Jin.

However, the banshee scream that could cause the Demon Commander Ma Li Ang to faint did not have much of an effect on the Marquis of Zi Jin. With a whirl of his left arm, the Marquis of Zi Jin threw his fist backwards, creating a cold wind from his swift fists as he sent the Bloody Queen flying. His right hand had continued to execute his [Heavy Palm], inching closer to the mysterious beauty's head.

What he wanted was to kill her in one blow.

Yue Yang originally wanted to go back and save her, but the mysterious beauty elbowed him and warned him not to lose

concentration.

She then held her hand high up. All of her fingers released streaks of white lightning, and with a boom, they landed on the Marquis of Zi Jin.

The Marquis of Zi Jin had vanished.

He had fled a hundred metres away, and his chest was heaving.

His sneak attack had failed and he was even hit by the mysterious beauty's lightning. This could really be called going for wool and coming home shorn*. The Marquis of Zi Jin was a little dishevelled. His left hand that he had used to block the attack was now charred black and smoking. It was obvious that the mysterious beauty's lightning strike was much stronger than him, and it was not easy to receive.

(Shiro: Chinese idiom – trying to steal a chicken only to end up losing the rice used to lure it)

“Do it again! Shock him until he can't recognise his grandmother!” Yue Yang was very happy.

“Don't bother about me!” The mysterious beauty was angry.

Her form swayed slightly. It seemed like the consumption of spiritual qi in her body was significant. Under the consecutive rounds of fierce fighting, she was quickly reaching her limit.

Yue Yang madly swiped towards the Blood Scythe Demon's heart and head, but this Blood Scythe Demon's body was extremely abnormal. Even though it was completely frozen, had its head blown off, its demon crystal pierced into pieces by his Innate Sword Qi and the Dragon Slaying Dagger piercing through its heart, it still didn't die. Not only that, it continued to recover as well. If it was allowed to recover and continue to fight, combined with the Marquis of Zi Jin's sneak attacks, this battle would be extremely dangerous.

Yue Yang found out that the Marquis of Zi Jin did not care whether the Blood Scythe Demon lived or died. The weird thing was that it wasn't even a Guardian Beast. Yue Yang suddenly had a bad premonition.

It's a trap!

Using normal methods, it might not be possible to kill off this Blood Scythe Demon...

He carried the mysterious beauty on his back, and tied her with a long ribbon, tying her sweet body tightly against his back.

Originally, Yue Yang wanted to use this move to protect Yue Bing. He did not think that he would have to use it on this mysterious beauty who was a stranger. Seeing that the Blood Scythe Demon who could not be killed and had abnormal recovery powers, he instantly fled... If it was under normal circumstances, the last stratagem of the 36 Stratagems, "[If all fails, retreat](#)", would probably work under Yue Yang's feet, whose movement was as slippery as oil.

However, he just had to meet the Marquis of Zi Jin who could control space. After running over a dozen of metres, not only did he not succeed in escaping, he had even defeated his purpose of fleeing, falling towards the edge of the volcano.

The Marquis of Zi Jin seemed like he was laughing, yet he was not. He looked at him, completely ignoring Yue Yang's attempt to flee.

The Blood Scythe Demon who had suffered serious injuries painfully crawled back up.

Its wounds were recovering quickly.

Seeing that this was not turning out well, he quickly called the Barbaric Cow Shadow and the Bloody Queen back into the summoning grimoire.

Although his repeated blows had greatly shaved off the Blood Scythe Demon's battle power, trying to kill this Blood Scythe Demon that has an incredibly strong recovery power was something that Yue Yang could not do. Yue Yang could not do it now, unless he could use a long sword qi to shatter that Blood Scythe Demon's body that could not be penetrated other than using the Dragon Slaying Dagger.

It was completely impossible to kill this weird Blood Scythe Demon via normal methods.

“You have to use plant-type beasts to defeat the Blood Scythe Demon. Do you have any strong plant-type beasts?” The mysterious beauty asked in an exhausted tone.

“Yes, but you might be disappointed if I say it. The plant-type beast that I can summon is only the Thorny Flower, and it’s only a Level 1.” The mysterious beauty was speechless. What could a Level 1 Thorny Flower do?

Even though Yue Yang tried his best to play it down, the Marquis of Zi Jin had a premonition of danger.

A ranker’s intuition told him that he could not let this masked boy summon his Thorny Flower, otherwise it would be disastrous.

It was a great lesson in the history of the Demon Abyss. Although the warriors of the Soaring Dragon Continent may have already forgotten about it, but in the Demon Abyss, any intelligent life form could still remember it vividly. There was once a single Thorny Flower, that was looked down upon by everyone, who had completely annihilated two Blood Prison Demon Kings and five thousand of the most elite soldiers of the Devil Army...

Hearing that this fellow’s plant-type summoned beast was a Thorny Flower, and feeling that he still had energy left to spare, the Marquis of Zi Jin quickly teleported nervously and brought down his demon whip on Yue Yang’s face.

When Yue Yang dodged, the Marquis of Zi Jin exploded. He did

not conceal his power anymore, and used his greatest power. At the same time, he used his strongest equipment to deal the most powerful blow.

The Demon King's Trident appeared in his hands.

This Demon King's Trident which was clad in the black flames of hell, holding a terrifying amount of demonic qi, was thrust at an extreme speed towards Yue Yang.

The mysterious beauty on Yue Yang's back used Breeze to teleport out, wanting to protect Yue Yang with her body.

However, Yue Yang would never let a lady die for him. He used his legs and kicked her little butt away. With his left hand, he met the Demon King's Trident, risking the danger of getting pierced by it as he rushed towards it. The Innate Sword Qi on his right hand gathered to become a sword, shining with golden brilliance... This was a move that put his life on the line. Yue Yang was prepared to use this move against the Marquis of Zi Jin's and kill each other... Whoever could survive in the end would be the final victor.

The Marquis of Zi Jin's heart shook. He felt that this masked boy was indeed ferocious enough.

Amongst other humans, there really wasn't anyone as fierce as him.

When Yue Yang pounced over to fight him, the Marquis of Zi Jin

roared, not budging a single inch. He raised his Demon King's Trident towards Yue Yang's chest and thrust towards it...

He was determined to fight to the bitter end.

If even humans could stake their life in a fight, how could the rankers from the Demon Abyss show their weakness?

Who would emerge victorious?

That would have to depend on whose final attack was stronger, and who was more tenacious.

Chapter 150 – Little Thorny Flower

Demoness

The Demon King Trident pierced through Yue Yang's left arm easily.

In the instant when it was about to penetrate through his chest, Yue Yang turned his arm, bringing the force of the trident outward. At the same time, he turned his body, narrowly dodging the deadly blow aimed squarely at his heart. His body rubbed against the side of the Demon King Trident, coldly ducking and bolting forward. His right hand's Innate Sword Qi flared, its aim locking on the Marquis of Zi Jin's eyes.

“Howl.....”

The Marquis of Zi Jin received the blow fully with his right hand. The Innate Qi cut the meat of his palm, blood splashing everywhere.

His attempts to receive blows fully had blocked Yue Yang's counterattacks.

One move after another.

One blow after another.

The outcome of both sides' competition of wit, brawn and

ruthlessness was still an evenly matched one. Both Yue Yang and the Marquis of Zi Jin's arms were injured.

The Marquis of Zi Jin suddenly opened his mouth and puffed out a raging flame, burning Yue Yang who was close at hand. He was not human, and hence had more attack moves up his sleeve. Yue Yang could not have expected that he would breathe out demonic flames, hence this was also a trick he had in scheming against Yue Yang. However, Yue Yang, who had instantly become engulfed in flames, did not move back even for one inch of a step. When talking about competing how ruthless and cunning one could be, human beings have never been inferior to the Demon Clan. How would Yue Yang's attack strategy just consist of one sole attack? He lifted his leg and trampled with all his might on the Marquis of Zi Jin's chest. His boots smashed into pieces, and at the same time, a beam of golden sword Qi passed through, penetrating The Marquis of Zi Jin's demon heart.

When the [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi entered its second stage, it could emit sword Qi from the hundred acupuncture points of the human body. Now that Yue Yang had already reached [Innate]'s third stage, he could use it with both hands and feet, and had already become adept at employing it.

Hit squarely in the heart by the sword, the Marquis of Zi Jin let loose screams of despair and pain in a bloodcurdling scream that shattered the heavens and earth. His large arm swept across, knocking Yue Yang away.

Behind him, the mysterious beauty appeared in a flash, one hand equipped with her ice and the other with her lightning ability.

Her two hands struck at Marquis of Zi Jin's two ears respectively.

There was a loud rumbling sound.

The Marquis of Zi Jin who, on top of an injured heart, continuously endured these heavy attacks, had half his body scorched black and the other half frozen.

This was Yue Yang and the mysterious beauty's best coordinated attack after he had deliberately attacked the Marquis of Zi Jin with considerable force and successfully distracted him. This was also the mysterious beauty's most powerful attack.

But the heavily injured Marquis of Zi Jin was still standing strong. He brandished his Demon King Trident madly, and even managed to blast the mysterious beauty away.

"I am going to kill you!!!!" The severely injured Marquis of Zi Jin had gone entirely mad with rage.

After suffering severe injuries and completely losing his mind, he had also lost his ability to control space. As he chased after Yue Yang, he could no longer use his teleportation skills. Strongly affected by the electrocution and freezing, his blow had missed Yue Yang. Instead, his face was struck by Yue Yang's spiralling Hui Jin Magic Blade. This drove him even madder, flying into berserk mode. The demonic flames on his body soared into the sky. On seeing that his opportunity had arrived, Yue Yang raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade and wildly hacked at the completely mad and

roaring Marquis of Zi Jin as if he was beating a drowning dog.

Aren't you always acting cool?

The one I am chopping at is you!

The special-type demonic flames which the Marquis of Zi Jin summoned were originally supposed to serve as a magical armour for defense. However, he did not expect that before it could complete its transformation into armour, Yue Yang's swift chopping attacks had smashed it to smithereens. Contrary to what he thought, this actually gave Yue Yang a chance to work the situation to his advantage and launch unrestrained attacks at him.

The extremely furious Marquis of Zi Jin immediately returned the blows with heavy fists.

He pummelled Yue Yang's chest with punches, while Yue Yang also brandished his blade and wildly chopped at the Marquis without taking a single step back.

Using his blade to counter against the Marquis' fists ... Why should he be afraid of him?

Yue Yang also become more ruthless in his attacks. Previously, the Hui Jin Magic Blade was not able to inflict any injuries on the Marquis, but now, for every chop endured by the severely injured Marquis, a deep and bloody cut is produced.

Similarly, the frightening strength of this fellow's punches had also made Yue Yang so disoriented that he saw stars.

Both of them were enduring each other's blows, hoping to persevere till the time of conclusive victory.....

At times like these, battle strength was no longer important. What was most important were determination and resilience. Whoever could persevere to the last moment would be able to achieve victory.

The tip of Yue Yang's blade and strength of the Marquis' fists intertwined with each other, creating loud rumbling sounds.

Fresh blood was flying and splashing everywhere. It was hard to differentiate whose blood it was.

Amidst the chaos, both of them tangled with each other like lunatics, attacking each other like mad people without caring about their lives. Neither of them dodged each other's attacks or defended themselves.

If one's concentration laxed even by a little, he would fall down and then be killed by his opponent, becoming the ultimate loser in this battle ... One must grit his teeth and press on, and press on further, until the other party collapsed in defeat.

The mysterious beauty crawled to her feet. Her shivering little hands clutched at her ancient book as she staggered over, readying

herself to lend a helping hand to Yue Yang with her final bit of strength. The Blood Scythe Demon which was similarly covered in cuts and bruises had also recovered its strength by now. It ran over with big steps, brandishing its scythe and fiercely attacking the mysterious beauty who had already completely exhausted her spiritual qi after releasing many attacks and had reached her physical limit. More than a few times, she fell into perilous situations and was almost chopped off at her waist.

Yue Yang was greatly alarmed. He abandoned the Marquis of Zi Jin whom he was concentrating his attacks on, and rushed over urgently to help.

The blood scythe was raised highly in the air, chopping down in vehemence.

The mysterious beauty lifted her ancient book, her lily-white hands trembling as she opened a page in the book. A specter-like girl darted out from it. Opening her mouth, a ball of ice-cold air sprayed towards the body of the Blood Scythe Demon, before she immediately disappeared into thin air.

The Blood Scythe Demon froze rigidly for a few seconds. However, the demonic flames on its body started to burn again very quickly, and as before, the blood scythe slashed downwards with force fit to tear the heavens and split the skies.

All the spiritual qi in the mysterious beauty's body had already been used up. She no longer had any more energy to continue battling.

She slowly closed her eyes which were clear as a spring, waiting for death to arrive.

However, at the instant when the blood scythe slashed downwards, Yue Yang had managed to reach her in time. He hugged her close to him with one hand while his other hand waved his blade to reduce the force of the blow.

A tearing sound resonated in the air.

The blood scythe which had not been completely neutralised cut a deep wound on Yue Yang's shoulder and his back, unfurling his skin and flesh, splattering fresh blood in all directions..... The mysterious beauty and Yue Yang fell down onto the ground heavily, both of their streams of fresh blood flowing and converging together, and forming a very strange bright red colour. However, the two of them did not notice the strange colour as they were both utterly beaten and gasping for their breaths.

The consecutive tough battles had entirely exhausted their strength.

Let alone the two of them, even the Marquis of Zi Jin, whose power was so mighty that he induced despair in his opponents, also needed time to recover his strength for now.

The Blood Scythe Demon took wide steps towards them, brandishing its terrifying blood scythe as it tried to attack Yue Yang relentlessly.

However, its body had also suffered multiple injuries and was greatly affected by them. Before it even managed to take two steps forward, it stumbled and lost its footing, sliding and falling noisily down the slope for a dozen metres. It only managed to break its fall by hooking onto a rock with its blood scythe.

The Blood Scythe Demon struggled to get up. Its talons wildly clawed at the crushed rock on the ground. It struggled a few times but still did not manage to get up, looking battered and exhausted.

The Marquis of Zi Jin hastened the recovery of his bodily injuries while picking up his Demon King Trident, preparing to give Yue Yang and the mysterious beauty his final blow.

“If we don’t have plant-type beasts, we won’t be able to win him I can still use ‘Breeze’ for the last time to send you away. You might not be able to defeat him now, but after a few years, you definitely would be able to. When that time comes, take revenge on my behalf.” Blood continuously seeped out of the mysterious beauty’s purple-red mouth, which was hidden under her face scarf. She then pulled Yue Yang’s face scarf down and looked at his face. Suddenly, a serene and calm glint of a smile surfaced in her eyes. “Your looks are above average and you are also glib-tongued, no wonder so many girls are smitten with you ... ”

“Beautiful lady, it’s okay to flirt with me, but remember that you must take responsibility for it.” Yue Yang was totally exhausted except for his mouth.

If his naughty hands could actually move, he would definitely reach his wolfy paws out and molest the mysterious beauty.

But he no longer had any strength now.

“You want to leave? There’s only one path left for both of you: death.” The Marquis of Zi Jin had already recovered a part of his physical strength. He leapt over into the air, raising his Demon King Trident high up with both of his hands. He ruthlessly slashed it down, preparing to penetrate through both Yue Yang and the mysterious beauty.

“Just when we were having a little romantic moment ... ” Yue Yang wished for this Marquis of Zi Jin’s penis to rot since he had interrupted his sexual bliss at this crucial time. Hugging the mysterious beauty to himself tightly, he started to roll away, dodging the Marquis of Zi Jin’s attack. However, he did not think that that damned Blood Scythe Demon would actually throw its Blood Scythe at them. The mysterious beauty gave a delicate shout as she turned over, pushing Yue Yang down beneath her. The blood scythe penetrated her frail shoulder easily, stabbing a little into Yue Yang’s chest.

“What I owed you just now, I have now returned you.” The mysterious beauty was already at her last gasp of breath, but a smiling expression had crept into her eyes.

“Let me send you both on your way..... ” The Marquis of Zi Jin laughed maliciously, stabbing the Demon King Trident again in their direction. Though Yue Yang had used all of his effort to roll away, the Demon King Trident still pierced into his thigh, even

penetrating the mysterious beauty's calf.

Both of their fresh blood had flowed into each other's again, creating a strangely bright coloured red.

Yue Yang smiled at the dying mysterious beauty. "Now, you owe me one yet again."

The light in the mysterious beauty's eyes was starting to fade. She tried her best to raise the volume of her voice, but it still remained as weak as that of an ant. "Are you really willing to die together with me?"

Without even finishing her sentence, she had already fainted.

Yue Yang was almost scared to death. He reached his bloody hand out to sense her breath and found that she was still breathing. He also groped her developed, tightly bound chest, and found that her heart was still beating, although it was very weak. Sensing this, he heaved a sigh of relief. Yue Yang let go of the mysterious beauty lightly. Struggling to stand up with his entire body in a mass of cuts and bruises, he shook his head at the Marquis of Zi Jin, who was smiling maliciously and looking pleased with himself. "If I were only fighting by myself, I would perhaps have long been dead with so many injuries. But I have a beast whom I share my life with, so you are dreaming if you want to kill me."

On hearing this, the Marquis of Zi Jin was startled.

A beam of rainbow-coloured light floated out from Yue Yang's body as Xiao Wen Li, whose face was pale and body was completely trembling, appeared in front of Yue Yang.

Once she appeared, she immediately swung her Dual Icicle Blades to attack the Marquis of Zi Jin.

The Marquis of Zi Jin's Demon King Trident had just been raised when its movement was frozen by her Binding Inherent Skill. Xiao Wen Li's Dual Icicle Blades deeply penetrated into the Marquis' demon heart, as she poured boundless white light into it... In the sky, Yue Yang flew downwards like a blood-soaked dragon. His ten fingers combined into one sword. Aiming at the bloody hole on the Marquis of Zi Jin's forehead that was previously opened by him, he superimposed on the sword injury previously inflicted, giving his brain another more ruthless bout of spiralling Sword Qi.

There was a loud rumble.

The Marquis of Zi Jin's chest exploded. His head also smashed into a large bloody hole the size of a fist. Fresh blood and milky substances poured forth.

“Want to kill me? You are at most a bento guy.” Yue Yang wanted to pick up his Hui Jin Magic Blade to behead the Marquis of Zi Jin, but Xiao Wen Li stopped him, seemingly worried that the severely injured him would be devoured by the Hui Jin Magic Blade instead. Also, she was especially wary of the Marquis' collapsed corpse, as if still worried that he had not completely died. Yue Yang was astonished, he couldn't be so abnormal, right?

Even with these injuries, he's still not dead?

The Marquis of Zi Jin's body slowly start to change its shape.

Multiple demonic flames started to burn in a raging manner. The Marquis of Zi Jin's body instantly grew larger as bones and scales continuously sprouted in large numbers. Giant wings, bent horns and talons extended from his body. Within a minute, the Marquis of Zi Jin had transformed into a Demon Prince whose entire body was burning with the black flames of hell. His height was still shorter than Demon King Ha Xin, but he was taller than the Blood Scythe Demon by two meters, having a body that was seven meters tall... The Marquis of Zi Jin's numerous body wounds had recovered completely. Except for the terrifying big hole on his chest that could not close, even the bloody hole on his forehead had shrunk to the size of an infant's fist before it stopped shrinking further..... Looks like the wounds caused by Yue Yang's Innate Sword Qi could not easily recover even for bodies as strong as the demons'.

“This is the first time that I have been so thoroughly beaten by a human being that I have to return to my original body ” The Marquis of Zi Jin covered his head and groaned in pain. “Even if I kill you, it would be hard for me to recover my human body. This battle has been too disadvantageous for me, I hate battles like this! You loathsome human being, how should I put you to death so that my hate for you will subside?”

“I think that you can reflect on your life while being plant fertiliser.”

Yue Yang summoned his grimoire out, and started to summon his thorny flower.

On the other hand, Xiao Wen Li had already summoned her Diamond Grimoire, summoning Stone Element Medusa and Storm Mermaid.

When Stone Element Medusa and Storm Mermaid appeared, a terrified expression immediately appeared on the Blood Scythe Demon's face. It started to take small steps backwards.

The Marquis of Zi Jin's expression was also strained. He completely did not expect that at this point of the battle, Yue Yang still retained such power. He wanted to capture the mysterious beauty as his hostage, but this idea had barely formed in his head before Storm Mermaid had summoned a Water Dragon, smoothly sliding the mysterious beauty into her embrace easily and gently placing it under Xiao Wen Li's diamond protective shield.

"I heard that the demons' greatest nemesis are thorny flowers. What a coincidence, I also have one." Yue Yang had spent most of his time and effort in condensing a little spiritual qi to summon the Thorny Flower Demoness.

A beam of dark golden light flowed out from his fingertips, gloriously shining upon the entire volcano, casting a layer of dark gold on their surroundings.

Dozens of clusters of stalks that were thicker than the bowls

crawled out from the ground.

Amongst them, there were Level One [Spitting Thorny Flowers] and Level Two [Carnivorous Thorny Flowers]. However, most of them were Level Three [Giant Thorny Flowers] and Level Four [Thorny Flower Overlords] which had flower faces as gigantic as a round table. Yet, these were only the stalk clusters. Subsequently, the secondary bodies that were as bulky as water buckets appeared.

Out of six secondary bodies, two of them had transformed into Thorny Flower Demons that were similar to human shapes..... Their heads, faces and bodies were strikingly similar to women, but they had gigantic bodies that reached five or six meters in height, hence looking like green giants. Their hands and lower bodies consisted of long thorny tree trunks. The only feature that made them different from human beings was that these two Thorny Flower Demons' eyes were closed, and their facial expressions were stiff and rigid. It looked like they had no soul or consciousness.

Finally, the main trunk burst out with a rumbling sound. What was different from the past was that now the main trunk looked more like a flower terrace or a gigantic ball of flowers, filled with green leaves and blood-red thorny flowers.

The giant green leaves and blood-red thorny flowers opened up as the flower terrace blossomed.

Dark golden light radiated all around.

A little girl with a petite and exquisite body lay quietly in the middle of the flower terrace. When she opened her eyes, an aura that was as biting cold as a Demon King's immediately broke out At the sight of this Level One Bronze-ranked Thorny Flower Demoness, the Level Seven Golden-ranked Bloody Scythe Demon actually started to shiver in fright.

Yue Yang noticed that this naked little Thorny Flower Demoness who didn't have a shred of cloth on her was practically no different from a human little girl. She only had an extremely thin green stalk that was connected to the flower terrace on her little butt. As she flipped over and got up, she opened her eyes and looked towards Yue Yang with the green pupils of her eyes, seemingly extremely curious about him. She then looked towards Xiao Wen Li, and tilted her head. Finally, she looked towards Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, and the unconscious mysterious beauty.

Her little hand pointed towards the mysterious beauty.

All the secondary bodies and stalk clusters started to move without warning, as if getting ready to devour the unconscious mysterious beauty.

"Idiot, the enemy is over there." Yue Yang was not just a little angry, he had spent so much effort to nurture a Thorny Flower Demoness, yet it was a little dunce... Is it that hard for him to get an oneesan with a sexy figure? Yue Yang suspected that he was cursed by oneesans. Why did all the oneesans make life so difficult for him, while the little lolis were all competing with each other to assail such a perverted old man like him?

“Hmm?”

Looks like the Little Thorny Flower Demoness was still far below Xiao Wen Li. She was so muddle-headed that she could not even tell who the enemy was.

She looked towards the direction that Yue Yang pointed at with a dazed expression. However, when she saw the Blood Scythe Demon and the Marquis of Zi Jin, she immediately started to salivate.

She then sucked her thumb like a good-for-nothing.

Her excited expression was like a child who saw a sweet.

Chapter 151 – Bloody Battle, Glory, Triumph!

Yue Yang continued to observe the Marquis of Zi Jin and the Blood Scythe Demon's facial expressions.

The Marquis of Zi Jin's face did not show terror, but he looked a little disturbed and gloomy. It was evident that the appearance of the Little Thorny Flower Demoness was not a small blow to him.

As for the Blood Scythe Demon, unexplainable fear had crept up on its face. Even Yue Yang felt shameful for it. How could a Gold-ranked Level 7 beast like itself actually be afraid of a Bronze-ranked Level 1 Little Thorny Flower Demoness? Even though this Little Demoness had a large arsenal of moves and was nurtured with Demon King Ha Xin's arm, it was ludicrous that she caused so much terror to it.

Xiao Wen Li gently tugged the corner of Yue Yang's shirt. Yue Yang understood what she mean. She indicated that she was about to execute a surprise attack.

At this moment, on the other hand, the Marquis of Zi Jin seemed to be a little indecisive.

Should he summon a beast to continue the battle, or should he leave instead?

He was unable to make a decision. If he left now, nobody could stop him. However, to let the little Innate thief who was already bruised and battered get away just like that was really a pity. Now,

he was this close to finishing him off. If he allowed this little Innate thief to level up further, perhaps today's battle outcome would not repeat itself if they met again in the future. Human warriors tend to level up fast, especially for Innate Rankers. Such a young Innate would surely rapidly progress up the ranks... If he did not kill him off now, and if they met again in future, he could not bear to think of the outcome then.

But even if he summoned another beast, would he be able to defeat this little Innate thief?

It was hard to say!

With the assistance of the little loli serpent demon, he would most likely get caught up in yet another new round of hard battle... What the Marquis of Zi Jin was the most afraid of was not Little Thorny Flower Demoness, but Xiao Wen li, who had till now kept a low profile.

He felt that this baby loli serpent demon was actually the most formidable enemy. She was even more terrifying than the crafty little Innate thief!

Not only was she a Guardian Beast, she also possessed a Grimoire and even had [Binding] Inherent Skill... Unless he killed the little Innate thief, it would be impossible for him to kill her. Just having these two Stone Element Medusa and Storm Mermaid alone was already hard enough to deal with.

With the instinct of a Ranker, the Marquis of Zi Jin sensed that

this little loli serpent demon still had a reservoir of power hidden inside her. She was definitely still concealing her true strength, waiting to give him a ruthless strike.

Hence, he was stuck in a dilemma.

To leave, or not to leave?

While the Marquis of Zi Jin was still thinking with a serious expression on his face, Little Thorny Flower Demoness had already ignored the difference in ranks, and initiated an attack against the Gold-ranked Level 7 Blood Scythe Demon.

Her body still situated on the flower terrace, her infant-like little hand pointed.

Ten stalks from the stalk cluster rapidly extended to ten or twenty meters long and launched towards the Blood Scythe Demon. Numerous secondary bodies curved and revolved in mid-air like green giant serpents, coiling and shooting themselves towards the Blood Scythe Demon. The two soulless Thorny Flower Demons were the wildest ones, shooting high up into the sky, bending over and hanging down as they became green giants which engulfed all living things, charging down viciously.

The Blood Scythe Demon's reaction made Yue Yang's jaw practically drop to the ground, because it actually deserted the Marquis of Zi Jin right in front of the latter.

A Gold-ranked Level 7 demon was actually afraid of a Level One Bronze-ranked Thorny Flower?

If these words were to travel to the ears of others, out of ten thousand people, ten thousand and one would not believe it!

The stalk cluster, which was as thick as a large bowl, did not actually pose much of a killing threat towards the Blood Scythe Demon. However, its use was not to kill, injure or devour, but to entwine. Although the Blood Scythe Demon was seriously injured, it still retained considerable battle strength. Especially in a situation where it was intent on escaping, it waved its Blood Scythe about and the stalk clusters of the Thorny Flower were cut off as if they were grass being mowed down, scattering everywhere on the ground. Even the four secondary stalks that were as thick as a water bucket were also unable to defend itself against the Blood Scythe as they were snapped in two by a swing of the Blood Scythe, even if it was slightly more difficult to cut them. Only the two Thorny Flower Demons were barely able to defend themselves. Even when their bodies had suffered two slashes from the scythe, they still continued to pounce towards their enemy, using the stalks which served as their upper limbs to encircle the Blood Scythe Demon's body.

Unknowingly, countless white spores started to float down from the sky.

The moment these spores came into contact with blood stains or armour fragments on the ground, or the surfaces on the ground that had been bombarded by skills during the battle, Spitting Carnivorous Flowers and Carnivorous Thorny Flowers started to

grow from them.

On the other hand, the Thorny Flower stems that were cut off and laying on the ground started to grow roots and were reborn, forming new Thorny Flowers.

The more the Blood Scythe Demon tried to cut, the more Thorny Flowers bloomed on the ground.

In the blink of an eye, a mini sea of flowers had formed.

These countless Thorny Flowers extended their stalks, twisting and twining as they unfurled towards the Blood Scythe Demon's body. Many of the Thorny Flowers which encircled it bared their fangs and opened their mouths wide. No matter whether it was the skin, the armour or the energy from the demonic flames ignited by the Blood Scythe Demon, they devoured everything entirely... Such a barbaric way of consumption made even Yue Yang, who was usually extremely brave and unafraid, to shiver involuntarily.

The Blood Scythe Demon did not stop waving around the Blood Scythe in his hand, using its utmost efforts to break away from the thorny chains, as it hacked at the long stems of the Thorny Flowers which seemed to surround him everywhere.

Normally, a Gold-ranked Level 7 beast like it was so highly ranked that it just needed to swing its Blood Scythe a few times to entirely defeat other beasts.

Unfortunately, he was now up against a Little Thorny Flower Demoness which was entirely immune to being hacked or cut off, and also had a terrifying speed of growth. It was practically a tragedy for him. However, if there was no one else to help, the single efforts of the Little Thorny Flower Demoness would perhaps be insufficient to kill it off. After all, their levels were too far apart.

Its true misfortune, however, started from the single golden arrow shot by the Stone Element Medusa.

The golden arrow whizzed and pierced right into the Blood Scythe Demon's right leg. At that moment, its entire right leg slowly started to petrify.

Taking advantage of this, the secondary stalks of the Thorny Flowers unleashed [Take Root] in its leg, directly growing new Thorny Flowers from within its right leg. There were thousands and hundreds of stalks that twined and entangled with each other, tying the Blood Scythe Demon to the ground.

The Blood Scythe Demon howled in pain. Lifting its Blood Scythe in madness, it looked like it wanted to chop off its own right leg.

However, Yue Yang might possibly be the world's most shameless guy who was an expert in dealing extra blows to an enemy which was already in a disadvantageous situation. When he saw that the Blood Scythe Demon was stuck, he immediately rushed over to make its life more difficult.

He first used his Giant Club to hit the Blood Scythe away, then he

struck the club squarely in its face... In the two seconds where the Blood Scythe Demon was disoriented by the blow, the Thorny Flower stalk clusters, secondary stems and the two Thorny Flower Demons entangled themselves around the Blood Scythe Demon so tightly and thickly that only its head was left outside. Yue Yang then snatched the Blood Scythe from it very despicably and then threw this dangerous weapon into the lake. Losing its most compatible weapon and being tied by countless dense and thick flower stems made the Blood Scythe Demon let loose an earth-shattering howl of despair...

Even though it had lost its weapon, endured serious bodily injuries and had its entire body wrapped around by stalks without an inch left, the Blood Scythe Demon was still a Gold-ranked Level 7 demon and thus still had terrifying amounts of energy left. Even when it was tightly trapped, it was still able to forcefully struggle free of the Thorny Flower stalks, one at a time.

At this moment, however, Yue Yang wouldn't hold himself back for it. Upon seeing that this fellow was about to struggle free of its reins, he quickly took out the Dragon Slaying Dagger and frenzily started to stab it multiple times.

The Blood Scythe Demon's fresh blood that spurted out further spurred on the vigorous growth of the Thorny Flowers. Every small piece of meat or armour that Yue Yang managed to slice out was devoured by the Thorny Flowers. Some of them even sunk their mouths into the wounds to nip at it.

The power of the demonic flames had no use on them at all. There were numerous big mouths waiting to devour it.

Every time the demonic flames were ignited, countless mouths pounced on them to take them in.

On seeing this, the Marquis of Zi Jin's heart grew cold. Now, he understood a little why such a small Thorny Flower could kill off two Blood Prison Demon Kings and the five thousand elite soldiers of the Demonic Legion. The reason was simple. It was a battle between a natural predator and its prey. How could the prey defeat its natural predator? That could not be achieved by mere battle strength, because their predators had too many characteristics that neutralized the prey's techniques... The demonic flames which served as protection for the demons' body, their tough, rock-solid demonic bodies, immense strength, and terrible power of their weapons were all completely ineffective against the Thorny Flower. Thorny Flowers could devour the demonic energies in the demonic flames, and they could also swallow and digest the tough, rock-solid demonic bodies. The immense strength that the demons were proud of were completely useless against the soft and supple strength of the Thorny Flowers. As for their weapons, they were also obsolete as Thorny Flowers could grow at fast speeds and could even grow from within the bodies of their enemies...

There were simply too many Thorny Flowers. Once their numbers reached a certain quantity, their destructive power could overpower level differences and overwhelm all obstacles.

Even though the Marquis of Zi Jin could no longer exert his control over space, his Inherent Skill to teleport could still be used after it was accumulated for some time.

He drew a circle with his hand and turned the space within it into a vortex. He got ready to enter the vortex and appear at its corresponding exit. This was a special teleportation skill that he had only managed to master after training hard for fifty-odd years. Even if he could not control space, he could still use it to teleport and leave without a hitch.

When he had completed half of the teleportation process, as he just started to enter the vortex halfway and his back still outside, Xiao Wen Li made her move.

She already had intentions to launch a sneak attack earlier, and she had already waited for a long time... Now that her opportunity emerged, she immediately took action!

The precision with which she seized opportunities was ten times faster than Yue Yang who had for all this time been using his [Divine Vision] to observe the Marquis of Zi Jin's actions. She used her [Binding] Inherent Skill and simultaneously chopped down on the Marquis of Zi Jin's demonic wings with her Dual Icicle Blades. At the same time, the Storm Mermaid's golden trident penetrated the Marquis' back, and by then, the Stone Element Medusa's second golden arrow had already hit the Marquis of Zi Jin's demonic tail.

The Marquis of Zi Jin's teleportation vortex immediately shattered into pieces. The recoil of the teleportation failure and the three heavy blows taken on his back caused immense pain to the Marquis of Zi Jin.

Yue Yang was in front, Xiao Wen Li was behind, and there was

still the Little Thorny Flower Demoness at the side.

By now, the Marquis of Zi Jin could no longer afford to protect his Demon Abyss Ranker's ego. At the first chance he got, he escaped towards the direction of the volcanic crater where there was nobody to stop him.

Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li immediately pursued him. As for Storm Mermaid and Stone Element Medusa, they could not keep up with the pace. Instead, they turned to attack the Blood Scythe Demon which was still stubbornly resisting its binds. The Marquis of Zi Jin was neither able to fly nor had time to teleport and escape, hence he could only run. Behind him, Yue Yang whipped out his Crescent Blade and slashed at him wildly as he chased after him. Compared to his barbaric swings, Xiao Wen Li's attacks were more efficient. Every attack she executed froze the Marquis of Zi Jin for one or two seconds. However, the Marquis of Zi Jin's protective demonic flames could thaw the ice very quickly. Also, he was fleeing for his life with all his might. Adding to that was the fact that his huge size gave him a large advantage in the mountainous road upfront. Hence, he was able to escape from the attacks of the two.

Even so, he had suffered a couple of heavy hits on his back by Yue Yang. In his entire life thus far, the Marquis of Zi Jin had never been in such a sorry state before.

But now in order to live, his only option was to run.

The little loli serpent demon still had some strength left, and was still preparing to execute some of her frightening attacks. As an

extremely strong ranker, the Marquis of Zi Jin instinctively felt danger incoming.

Hence, no matter how much Yue Yang jeered at him or lashed out at him, and no matter how much he attacked him, he completely ignored it.

Just a mere Crescent Blade would not cause any fatal wounds to him.

That brat currently also did not have much strength left. Furthermore, he did not dare to use his Hui Jin Magic Blade for fear of recoil and was devoured himself instead. Normal physical attacks would only cause flesh lacerations, which were only exterior physical injuries to him. The Marquis of Zi Jin swallowed his fury and escaped to the mountain peak. When he saw the bubbling lava at the crater that was boiling ceaselessly and hence forming a dead end, and was immediately pleased.

He leapt towards the volcanic crater.

In the air, he opened up his injured demonic wings, preparing to flap them with all his might, to fly out of the crater and escape from this place

“Your end is here!” Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li were waiting for this exact moment. both of them jumped onto the Marquis of Zi Jin’s back at the same time.

Yue Yang, who had been holding back his final bout of [Innate] Sword Qi till now, explosively released it.

A bloody hole was created on the Marquis of Zi Jin's back.

Xiao Wen Li stabbed her Dual Icicle Blades into the hole, enlarging it and further damaging the wound on the the Marquis of Zi Jin's back. At the same time, she gathered a ball of pure white light that was even brighter than the aurora lights, and channeled it into the Marquis' wound yet again... Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li then leapt upwards together. When they were still in mid-air, the Marquis suddenly furiously turned back his body. His pair of demonic claws raked forcefully towards the two people, as if he wanted to drag the pair into the clutches of death together with him.

But he forgot that Xiao Wen Li was the original possessor of the [Binding] Inherent Skill.

Xiao Wen Li's round eyes grew big as she glared at him.

His demonic claws froze in motion in mid-air, missing the two people by a mere hair. As the Marquis of Zi Jin's body started to fall, its claws dropped powerlessly.

With a rumble, the Marquis of Zi Jin fell into the pit of lava.

Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li who were both standing at the edge of the volcano were completely exhausted, and almost fell to the

ground in weariness.

But because they were concerned with the final outcome of the battle, they persisted in observing the Marquis of Zi Jin in the lava pit below.

If, even after such a combination of tricks and attacks, the Marquis of Zi Jin was still could not be killed, they really had no other choice but to use Yue Yang's Teleportation Scroll to escape... The Marquis of Zi Jin who fell into the boiling hot lava struggled to get up, but the white light that had been channeled by Xiao Wen Li into his back mutually opposed his demonic Qi, igniting a gigantic explosion.

Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li both watched as the Marquis of Zi Jin's giant body fall into the blood-red lava. Within a blink of an eye, he was engulfed by the lava, only leaving a green wisp of smoke rising in spirals into the air.

Xiao Wen Li was so exhausted that she could not say a single word. She directly dissolved into rainbow light, floating into Yue Yang's body to hibernate.

Without her help in this battle, Yue Yang would have been utterly defeated by the Marquis of Zi Jin who had resumed the use of his demonic body.

After killing the Marquis of Zi Jin, Yue Yang pushed down the excitement in his heart, and staggered down the mountain slope. Finally, he fell down next to the lovely and soft body of the

mysterious beauty. He hurriedly took out a medicinal stone from his Lich Ring and kneaded it into fragments, giving both of them medical treatment at the same time... If they postponed their treatment any further, both of them would die! At this time, however, as Yue Yang was using all his strength to fight and hit the Marquis of Zi Jin into the volcanic lava, the Little Thorny Flower Demoness had miraculously started to evolve.

From a Bronze-ranked Level 1 Thorny Flower Demoness, she evolved into a Silver-ranked Level 1 Thorny Flower Demoness.

Also, the change was quite a drastic one. Yue Yang realised that this Little Thorny Flower Demoness was previously only about seven or eight years old in appearance. After not seeing her for just a moment, she had already grown into a child that was about ten years old in appearance. She had also grown taller in height. what kind of growth pill had she taken?

The Blood Scythe Demon was still tirelessly struggling, and had yet to be entirely devoured.

What was happening here?

Yue Yang was still in shock, when he suddenly realised that this Little Thorny Flower Demoness had stuck out her tongue, and was licking up the blood stains from his and the mysterious beauty's body. She looked like a greedy little cat who was stealing fish to eat. Yue Yang was instantly furious. "You little vampire! Scram, otherwise I'll beat you up!"

The Little Thorny Flower Demoness seemed to be very afraid of Yue Yang.

Seeing that he had blown his top, she was immediately so scared that she scampered her little feet back to the flower terrace, naked and shaking her little butt.

After the little disturbance caused by her subsided, Yue Yang realised there was something wrong. Why were the Thorny Flowers grown from the spores beside him different from normal Thorny Flowers? The Thorny Flowers beside him were blood-red in colour, and even had a golden mark on them. What was going on?

Was it because his own blood had such magical properties, or was the mysterious beauty's blood special or rare?

If the mysterious beauty had not sustained such serious injuries and was near the point of death, Yue Yang really wanted to strip her clean and peel her like a little lamb, and study her body in detail ...

Chapter 152 – Medicine Encyclopedia

Acquired

Just as Yue Yang was reaching his greedy hands out towards the mysterious beauty, the skies rumbled with a blast of thunder.

Following that, a dragon's roar resounded through the air.

On the surface of the tranquil hot springs, countless waves raged around, creating a huge whirlpool.

Yue Yang was stunned as he looked upwards and realized that unknowingly, a silver colored dragon-like creature that was coiling in the air had appeared, undulating its elegant long body through the skies... Ten seconds afterwards, the silver-coloured dragon-like creature dove into the center of the whirlpool in the lake, without a single splash or sound.

“My god, there are really dragons in this world?” YueYang hesitated for a while, not knowing how to react.

“Human child, I'm not a dragon, I'm a [Jiaolong](#). It's very close to a dragon, but a little different.” A lady wearing a white robe, with a head decorated with silver rings ornaments and a silver silk mask that covered her face, appeared in front of Yue Yang, startling him yet again.

(TLN: Some kind of water dragon with the ability to control rain and floods)

Her face was smooth as jade, however, her head was filled with neatly combed silver strands of hair.

A venerable feeling was present, but she didn't look old.

She had a mysterious air, with an uniquely classical and elegant look that gave people a very pleasant feeling.

Yue Yang hurriedly retracted his perverted hands while putting up an innocent appearance and asked, "You are?"

The lady whose head was filled with silver hair but didn't look old at all created a hand gesture. Yue Yang completely didn't understand what she meant, but he felt that it would be useful and remembered it deep within his heart. The lady then started speaking softly, "Human boy, you can call me Grandma Chi. I was originally this lake's mistress. However, the Marquis of Zi Jin had come suddenly with the intention to steal the Medicine Encyclopedia that I possessed. He didn't even try to negotiate and started attacking me immediately. In the end, he even used a Artifact to confine me inside a dimensional space. If it wasn't for the fact that he left the Soaring Dragon Continent and caused the Artifact to disappear without his presence, I wouldn't have been able to come out of my confinement! Young little Innate human, I thank you for saving me. I don't have anything to show my appreciation, but please drink this Dragon Fruit Elixir!"

The masked lady who called herself Grandma Chi summoned a Platinum Grimoire.

She then summoned a ball of the holy, pure light that enveloped Yue Yang and the mysterious beauty's body.

Yue Yang felt a warm feeling seeping through his Bai Hui acupoint and then flowing through his blood channels. He also felt an uncomfortable feeling coming from both his outer skin layer and the bones inside his body as he was immersed in the holy light, and he groaned in pain. With a kind of rebirth radiance, the holy light melted into his body very quickly.

(Shiro: Bai Hui, an acupoint at the top of the head)

The wounds on his skin recovered with a speed that could be seen with naked eyes.

The bruises and demonic flames burns on his body also take turn for the better constantly. His swellings were reduced, and his dead skins fell off as new skin regenerated, with an elasticity as soft and supple as a baby's.

Other than the tiredness from the battle that couldn't be removed, even his body's spiritual qi had recovered a lot.

Yue Yang jumped up from the ground. Until now, he still couldn't believe that his serious injuries could heal so quickly.

The mysterious beauty who had fainted from her serious injuries also slowly opened her eyes. However, because her body was still very weak, she still couldn't move her body very much.

“Seems like your Thorny Flower will require more time to end the battle. Maybe you can bring your comrade to my domain to rest for a while. It’s not too late to go back after you have recovered!” The masked lady turned her body after she had finished speaking, walking towards the lake.

Yue Yang immediately turned and carried the mysterious beauty before quickly following closely behind the masked lady.

His wolfy paws had pretended to be unaware and secretly touched the mysterious beauty’s snowy peaks, which were still standing tall even after they were tightly bound. Obviously, on the outside, he pretended an appearance of “I’m a good boy who has never done anything”. When he was carrying her up and picking up her Ancient Book that had dropped to the ground, he also took the opportunity to sniff at her body. Her fragrant smell assailed his nose and went straight to his heart, almost melting his heart away.

The mysterious beauty rolled her eyes in rebukement. She had truly never seen such a person before. It was obvious that he was a pervert, yet he pretended to be a good boy. She really had enough of him!

If she could move her hands and feet, she would have sent him flying with a slap of her Ancient Book.

As the masked lady who called herself Grandma Chi continued to walk forward, and the water in the lake suddenly started to slowly split apart. However, what was revealed wasn’t the lake’s bottom, instead, it was a wall made out of the lake’s water. Ahead, there was a blue-coloured Water Door.

Yue Yang curiously touched the walls of the lake water as he carried the mysterious beauty's fragrant body.

His finger caused some ripples on the wall surface as he touched it...

After passing through the Water Door, Yue Yang realized that he had entered into a strange dimension. It wasn't very big, maybe as big as the lake, but it was completely different from the bottom of the lake. There was no water in this place. However, if he looked at the four walls of water surrounding the area, he could see fishes swimming around. There were also different kinds of plants and adorable little animals growing in this place, such as the slow-crawling tortoise and the fast-scampering little crab. This area was a separate dimension from the lake bottom, but it had the ability to observe every single thing that happened in the lake and above the lake. Even the Little Thorny Flower Demoness who had climbed up onto her flower terrace, falling into a peaceful sleep, and the different kinds of Thorny Flowers that were relentlessly absorbing the Blood Scythe Demon's blood and energy, could be seen very clearly from this place.

Inside this dimension, the interior design was similar to a human's dwelling.

The masked Grandma Chi invited Yue Yang and the mysterious beauty to sit. There was a cute beast that Yue Yang couldn't recognise holding a silver tray on its little claws, serving two cups up to them.

Yue Yang observed it, but it seemed that it was scared of him and quickly turned into a ball of smoke and disappeared.

Grandma Chi pointed with her fingers and a white little jade pot appeared. Her movements was extremely graceful as she poured a fragrant, white-coloured Elixir into Yue Yang's and the mysterious beauty's cups.

At this time, the mysterious beauty's stamina had recovered, and she pushed Yue Yang's bad hand. which had been taking advantage of her all this while away and struggled to sit down herself. She also thanked Grandma Chi who was sitting on the other side. However, perhaps it was due to the fact that Yue Yang was present, the mysterious beauty didn't reveal her name and clan. Instead, she formed a gesture with her ten snow white fingers, as if showing some kind of identity.

Yue Yang completely didn't understand this gesture, but he decided to memorise it in his heart.

As long as he could find the right person, he should be able to guess the mysterious beauty's identity... Yue Yang felt that maybe Luo Hua City Mistress would know what this hand gesture symbolize.

Compared to the mysterious beauty's gentle sipping and careful tasting, Yue Yang was like Zhu Ba Jie* who found a ginseng, gulping the white-coloured Elixir in the little cup down into his stomach. He felt a kind of refreshed feeling oozing out from within his stomach, turning into spiritual qi and dispersing throughout his body. He also felt a kind of cleansing feeling in his body that

seemed to widen his limits and potential capacity. The feeling was heavenly, just like the feeling he got when he drank a cold drink to satiate his thirst on a scorching summer day. He couldn't help but to cry out: "Ah~"

(Shiro: Zhu Ba Jie, the pig on Journey to the West)

"Since you seemed to like it, please drink a little more." The masked Grandma Chi filled Yue Yang's cup one more time. Shortly after, she also poured another cup for the mysterious beauty.

"Thank you, Grandma Chi..." The mysterious beauty was very polite, she immediately bowed down to show her appreciation.

However, as for the guy from another world, on the other hand, knowing that this Dragon Fruit Elixir was a good item, didn't even bother to stand on ceremony and said, "It would be really great if I can have one more cup!" The mysterious beauty who was sitting on the side watched his greedy and sly ways and she really wanted to bash her Ancient Book on that guy's head. He was fortunate that she didn't have much strength right now to teach him a lesson.

The silver-silked masked Grandma Chi didn't care about his manners at all and had instead taken a liking to Yue Yang's honest and frank attitude. A smile bloomed on her face as she said, "If three cups of Dragon Fruit Elixir were enough to show my gratitude, I would be really happy to comply."

However, Yue Yang couldn't bear to drink the third cup.

He decided to bring it back and save it for Yue Bing or Yue

Shuang.

Yue Yang reckoned that this Elixir was the best feature of the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit. Even he, who was an Innate ranker, felt that he had broken through new grounds and increased his potential capacity just by drinking it, let alone Yue Bing and Yue Shuang. Hence, he had set his heart on bringing back this Dragon Fruit Elixir and gave them to his two sisters.

Taking the opportunity when the mysterious beauty and Grandma Chi were chatting, Yue Yang placed his cup on the table and secretly took out a small bottle from his Lich Ring. He filled the bottle with the contents in his cup, and even rinsed the cup with clear water twice and poured it inside so that nothing would be left behind. This little brat's actions was extremely sneaky and secretive, causing the mysterious beauty who was watching on one side to be stunned speechless. He had already shamelessly drunk two cups, but he even thought of sneaking some back? Seemed like the word "shameless" had originally been created to describe this brat!

However, she had actually underestimated Yue Yang's shamelessness.

If it wasn't for the fact that the Jade Pot didn't have much Elixir left, Yue Yang had even thought of stealing the whole pot back. Stealing one cup was just a child's play to him.

"You guys are really amazing. You managed to defeat the Marquis of Zi Jin at such a young age." Grandma Chi started to speak. However, she smiled wryly and shook her head as she

explained the result of the battle when Yue Yang pushed the Marquis of Zi Jin down to the volcano crater, “The Marquis of Zi Jin is an extremely sly person. He shouldn’t be dead, he only pretended to die falling into the lava as a ruse to trick you. This is because all of the Demon King Race had hellfire flowing through their blood channels, so intense flames and extremely high temperatures were actually advantageous to them instead of harmful to them... He didn’t actually die. He simply sustained too much serious injuries, hence he has to escape back to the Demon Abyss in the meantime to recover. He will definitely return back to the Soaring Dragon Continent when the time is right. You guys must be careful in case he want to take revenge in the future!”

“Ah!” Yue Yang could only stare like a fool when he heard this. How could he not die even after falling into a volcano crater? This Marquis of Zi Jin was simply even stronger and more resilient than a cockroach!

“I have finally understood now why the Marquis of Zi Jin had a hard time defeating us. Furthermore, he had only summoned a Gold-ranked Level 7 Blood Scythe Demon instead of his Guardian Beast. Seems like he had fought a hard battle with you, Grandma Chi, before fighting with us. Hence his battle power had significantly been reduced...” The mysterious beauty suddenly spoke after her realisation.

“Really?” Yue Yang started to sweat.

But thinking about it again, what the mysterious beauty said had indeed made sense.

If it wasn't for the fact that Grandma Chi had fought a great battle with the Marquis of Zi Jin previously and reduced his battle power, their battle would probably be much harder to fight!

First of all, the Marquis of Zi Jin did not summon his Guardian Beast from the start to the end. Furthermore, as a high ranking Demon Abyss Prince, there was no reason for him to only possess a Gold-ranked Level 7 Blood Scythe Demon and a Silver-ranked Level 6 Ugly Beast. He must definitely have other stronger beasts in his arsenal.

Even when the Marquis of Zi Jin was in a dangerous situation, he didn't summon any other beasts.

This showed that his powers had been severely reduced after his great battle with Grandma Chi. He had become so weak that even Yue Yang could kill him. That was why he had ended up in such a sorry state and even had to escape for his life. However, thinking about it in another perspective, Yue Yang started to break out in cold sweat. If the Marquis of Zi Jin hadn't fought with Grandma Chi previously and had faced him with his full strength, it seemed like the mysterious beauty and him would have suffered a miserable defeat under that fellow's horrifying attacks.

Even after defeating and confining Grandma Chi, he still had enough power left to fight him to such a bitter end. This Marquis of Zhi Jin was simply too powerful!

“Actually, most of the credit still goes to both of you. Most of my beasts are special-types, so I didn't last very long fighting with the Marquis of Zi Jin.” Grandma Chi was extremely humble, but Yue

Yang wasn't an idiot. Grandma Chi, a Jiaolong who could transform into human and was an entity that he couldn't even begin to see through with his Level 3 [Divine Eyes], was definitely much stronger than him. She had definitely injured the Marquis of Zi Jin more than him.

“The Marquis of Zi Jin's human body has been destroyed, and seems like he will require a long time to recover. We have time to train and improve ourselves in the meantime.” The mysterious beauty's words was actually meant for Yue Yang as a motivation.

“A year, or maybe he would only need around eight to nine months to fully recover his human body and return to the Soaring Dragon Continent. As for completely recovering his battle power, he would probably need around 1.5 years. In this one year, he would probably not think of seeking revenge but concentrate on hiding himself and recovering his battle power instead.” After Grandma Chi stated her time estimation, which was a year, Yue Yang really had a headache.

A year. This was neither a long time nor a short time.

However, even if he tried to train his Innate Invisible Sword Qi quickly, there would still be limitations.

Unless he could drink precious concoctions like this Dragon Fruit Elixir frequently and increase his abilities boundlessly, he wouldn't have hope to defeat such an abnormally strong entity like that Marquis of Zi Jin!

Grandma Chi suddenly took out a simple, ancient looking book and placed it in front of Yue Yang, smiling, “The Marquis of Zi Jin might come again in the future. I don’t like fighting, I prefer to avoid battles if possible. I think going out to travel might be a good idea, maybe I could even go to the Tong Tian Tower and find my old friends for a reunion. This ‘Medicine Encyclopedia’, it’s useless in my hands. I’ll leave it to you to safeguard it!”

Yue Yang looked at the Ancient Book in front of him. There was a bold and cursive calligraphy written in dark golden ink on the book cover. He guessed that that was “Medicine Encyclopedia”.

As he flipped it open and looked through the pages, he found that every single page was about Medicine Prescriptions and Methods of Refining Medicines.

However, there was a great portion of refining methods written that were not methods to refine mere ordinary medicines. They were even specifically marked as “Innate Refinement System”. Yue Yang immediately understood why Grandma Chi had given this book to him. No matter what, he was still an Innate, hence this Medicine Encyclopedia could only be useful to him.

However, he would think twice before receiving gifts from others. Yue Yang felt a little hesitation in his heart.

If Grandma Chi then asked for some strict terms and conditions, he wouldn’t feel good rejecting her request.

It was as if Grandma Chi had seen through Yue Yang’s thoughts.

She revealed a meaningful smile and nodded, “I am already old. If you could find Lustrous Branch of Life, Undying Dark River Water, Regeneration Springwater, Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe, Dream Fruit and other herbs and concoct an “Immortal Pill”, can you give one to this Grandma?”

“Alright!” This was as simple as writing an empty check. Wasn’t that easy?

He immediately agreed, then hurriedly snatched and hugged the Medicine Encyclopedia tightly into his embrace. His hands had moved as fast as if he was stealing the book.

Seeing this, the mysterious beauty could only roll her eyes at him in annoyance.

However, this gesture was useless towards Yue Yang. He even thought of her move as a flirtatious glance designed to entice him!

After bidding farewell to the hospitable Grandma Chi, Yue Yang and the mysterious beauty walked out of the Water Door and returned to the edge of the lake. The mysterious beauty then took out a teleportation scroll and prepared to leave. However, Yue Yang hurriedly stopped her, “Wait a minute, beautiful lady. I wouldn’t even start on how you played a trick on me or how you were rude to me, but you even kicked my butt. Are you thinking of shirking your responsibility?”

The mysterious beauty could only sweat in speechlessness, “Wasn’t that because there was a need to trick our opponent

during the battle? Furthermore, afterwards, you have also kicked my butt, so doesn't it balance out in the end? Hey, were you taking revenge on me when you kicked my butt afterwards?!"

When Yue Yang heard this, he quickly shook his hands, "No, it's not revenge! I wanted to protect you and prevent you from getting injuries. That was a kick out of concern for you, it's different from your kick that was designed to push me towards the enemy. My parents have told me before: Whoever kicked my butt must become their daughter-in-law as a compensation for my loss. Since you have kicked my butt, you must atone for your sins. This is our family's rule that could not be broken!" Yue Yang blabbered shamelessly, causing the mysterious beauty to almost fall on the ground. She replied with a headache, "Then what were you thinking when you were kicking my butt? Do you think that you are the only one with parents? Don't you think my body is also precious? You are practically making trouble without any reason! No, that's wrong. You are practically shameless!"

"I'm not! I am speaking logically. I have decided that I will also compensate you for your loss, and be your husband if need be!" Yue Yang smiled widely showing his shiny teeth, his smile bright like the sun and easy like the spring breeze. Of course, his smile was also extremely pervertic.

"Stop acting cool! Who would want to be your wife!" The mysterious beauty raised the Ancient Book in her hands and sent Yue Yang flying with a slap.

Chapter 153 – Learning [Space Teleportation]

Yue Yang really wanted to ask who this mysterious beauty was in his heart. Why did she follow him? Why did she save him? Even if it was a battle to her death, why did she still help him to fight the Marquis of Zi Jin? Who was she exactly?

This girl was simply too mysterious.

She made him feel a kind of tickling curiosity. He really wanted to expose her and examine her clearly.

This mysterious beauty was different from Yi Nan. Although Yi Nan, that girl, was also a little mysterious, Yue Yang could still guess her identity a little. This mysterious beauty in front of him, on the other hand, he couldn't figure her out even a single bit. As for why she wanted to help him, Yue Yang really couldn't understand at all. Normally, for someone like the pitiful guy who was not close to his uncles nor grandma and was not cared by anyone other than Fourth Mother, he couldn't possibly have luck with the ladies. As for him, although he had already caused chaos in the Yue Clan Castle only a few months after he came to this world, he hadn't done anything too drastic, so why would she take notice of him?

She was even familiar with his usual attitude, behaviour, words and actions.

This was simply too strange...

“I have to go now, you should ask your Brother Yi Nan for comfort!” The mysterious beauty even knew about Yi Nan. This caused Yue Yang to break out in sweat secretly.

“Brother Yi Nan is a guy, he wouldn’t be able to comfort me!” Yue Yang would obviously not admit that he was a womanizer who had decided to set his foot down on a number of ships.

“Who are you trying to trick!” The mysterious beauty rolled her eyes adorably. That sort of girlish and pouty gesture immediately scored a homerun at Yue Yang’s heart, making his heart thump wildly. In that thousandth of a second, he found that he seemed to have taken a liking to this mysterious beauty, whose face he had not even seen before. Furthermore, this ‘like’ was not the like the normal ‘like’. Although it wasn’t much, his feeling towards the mysterious beauty was definitely not less than his feeling towards Yi Nan. Yue Yang really wanted to reach his hands out and pull her face scarf to see her face. Even more, he wanted to embrace her and fiercely kiss her cherry lips... His desire to subdue her surged high up.

Yue Yang really wanted to face upwards and gave a loud, wolfy howl, then push her down right at this place.

Of course, that was only his imagination.

In the first place, don’t even think about whether the mysterious beauty would retaliate or not, this place was still right in front of Grandma Chi’s house. If Yue Yang pushed this mysterious beauty

down, he was afraid that Grandma Chi would pretend to pass by and watch them excitedly.

“I’m really going now...” The mysterious beauty said this on her mouth, but her legs didn’t move a single inch.

“I’ll send you off!” Yue Yang was particularly attentive to her.

“Send your head off. Your glib tongue doesn’t work on me at all!” The mysterious beauty suddenly laughed. Her laughter sounded very unique. To Yue Yang, Luo Hua City Mistress’ laughter showed off her personality, sounding bold and unconstrained. When she laughed, her whole delicate shoulders would tremble uncontrollably, and she would also move her body animatedly. Yi Nan’s laughter, on the other hand, was lovely and reserved; she always covered her little mouth when she laughed. This mysterious beauty’s laughter was even more unique than the both of them. She laughed with her eyes. Her eyebrows revealed a smiling expression that was unique to her own. It didn’t look like she was laughing out loud on the outside, but her smiling expression gave him the feeling that she was smiling directly from the bottom of her heart. Her smile particularly warmed his heart.

As she opened her teleportation scroll, Yue Yang suddenly had an impulse to shout at her, “Stay here with me. I will make sure to treat you well all my life!”

The mysterious beauty waved her hand that was holding her Ancient Book a few times to bid him farewell.

Yue Yang watched her leaving him with reluctance in his heart.

He really wanted to run towards her and embrace her tightly, stopping her from leaving him. However, he also understood that if he wanted to attain her heart, he couldn't show his anxiousness for her. Even more, he couldn't be too aggressive or he would definitely scare her off.

Chasing girls require patience.

He had to go about it slowly. This was a war of attrition with the goals of pushing her down forever and obtaining all of her body and soul. It would be impossible if he didn't spend some time for this. Besides, it was fine this way too. As long as she continued to follow him, he would have many chances in the future. He believed that after this battle, she would have a favourable impression on him... Yue Yang changed his hand that was about to grab her into a wave, bidding her farewell freely and easily.

The mysterious beauty glanced back and gazed upon Yue Yang with her especially clear and bright doe eyes before stepping into the teleportation gate and left.

Those pair of eyes had sent a strong jolt of electricity through Yue Yang's body.

"Heavens, beauties are really creatures that can send out electric currents!" Yue Yang realised that he felt like he had just been struck with lightning. He felt uncomfortable yet extremely comfortable at the same time, and he felt an indescribable feeling

of parchiness in his heart. He couldn't help but to give a loud wolfy howl.

He then looked at the Blood Scythe Demon who was still struggling. Although it couldn't escape, the Little Thorny Flower Demoness also had a hard time to swallow it.

Yue Yang had wanted to use his Hui Jin Magic Blade to hack at it wildly, chopping the Blood Scythe Demon to 18 pieces for better digestion... However, he changed his mind. Maybe he could use some other special ways.

For example, the Fragrant Sleeping Flower.

Indeed, when Yue Yang poured the Fragrant Sleeping Flower Perfume to the top of Blood Scythe Demon's head, the originally beaten and exhausted Blood Scythe Demon showed a peculiar reaction. Its body lost its control! As sleepiness came over it, the Blood Scythe Demon's struggles became slower with time. No matter how it tried to resist its sleepiness with all of its strength, the effects of the Fragrant Sleeping Flower finally overcame it.

As its resistance became weaker, countless Thorny Flowers immediately seized the opportunity to absorb its body's energy.

Two Thorny Flower Demons enveloped the Blood Scythe Demon's whole body, digesting it slowly in the Blood Scythe Demon's dreams. At long last, the super strong Gold-ranked Level 7 Blood Scythe Demon met its tragic end!

At this time, the Little Thorny Flower Demoness who was sleeping on her flower terrace had actually woken up without Yue Yang realising it.

She kept on observing Yue Yang, her master, as if she was extremely curious about him.

Yue Yang didn't pay attention to her, instead, he scooped the blood scythe out from the bottom of the lake, and started to search through the whole battle area for loots. At the same time, he also thought about his battle and even tried to copy the Marquis of Zi Jin's [Space Teleportation] technique. He was extremely envious of the [Space Teleportation] ability. When the Marquis of Zi Jin executed it just now, he had especially used his level 3 [Divine Vision] to observe it clearly. He wanted to secretly learn the shameless [Space Teleportation] technique, so that it could be his trump card when he mounted a sneak attack in the future.

In reality, Yue Yang, who had long realised the [Nature's Heart], had an indescribable sense of clarity with nature, space, and other elements.

He also had this special feeling when he used teleportation scrolls normally. When he had entered the Battlefield of Certain Death and the Demon Abyss, Yue Yang had already had the determination to unravel the secret of spaces. Previously, when he was tricked by the cunning old fox and entered the Dimension of Test that he had created, Yue Yang's interest towards space and dimensions had greatly increased. Entering Grandma Chi's Underwater Dimension just now had also allowed him to realise that it was not that it was impossible to master dimensions, he

only needed to execute the right method to master it! Hence, Yue Yang gathered all his body's awareness and realizations, including the information he gathered from observing the Marquis of Zi Jin's [Space Teleportation] skill, and started to try mastering spaces and teleportation...

It even need more attention to detail and care to be executed than his Twin Fish [Spherical Beheader].

He first created a sphere with Innate Qi in the space, allowing the space to take a physical form of a vortex, a passageway.

Yue Yang calmed his excited heart and continued to train. He failed again and again, tried again and again, and improved a little with every try... Every time he failed, he gained a new understanding of space, a new feeling of space...

After countless number of failures, right before Yue Yang's last bit of spiritual qi was exhausted, he finally created a Space Vortex.

His Space Vortex wasn't as big as the Marquis of Zi Jin's, its revolving speed was also faster, hence the time it could be sustained was extremely short.

But Yue Yang had succeeded.

He couldn't wait and leapt into it, trying to teleport. As a result, as he teleported out after passing through the space passageway, he found that his body had re-appeared right above the water... His

teleportation had failed, he had missed his teleportation target that was 10 meters away by a few dozen meters, teleporting right into the middle of the lake.

Splash!

Yue Yang plunged into the lake, his whole body completely drenched.

“Nn?” Waiting for Yue Yang to swim back miserably to the edge, the Little Thorny Flower Demoness was engrossed in watching his movements. However, her expression seemed to show her confusion, as if she didn’t understand why her master had purposely jumped into the lake on his own.

“This [Space Teleportation] was indeed more difficult to master than the average skills!” Yue Yang heaved a sigh.

If the Marquis of Zi Jin heard his words, he would probably throw up blood.

The Marquis of Zi Jin, who regarded himself as an unparalleled genius and was born with [Dimension Control] Inherent Skill, had trained for many years before he could even learn his teleportation skill. He even spent a full 50 years to train before finally having such a mastery in teleportation today. However, Yue Yang managed to secretly learn the skill from him although he had only fought him for a while. This matter... it was fortunate that the Marquis of Zi Jin didn’t know about this matter, otherwise, he would probably die immediately out of anger and vomiting blood.

As Yue Yang trained his teleportation ability, the Little Thorny Flower Demoness watched him excitedly with great interest.

Of course, watching Yue Yang did not stop her from eating her snack.

The Silver-ranked Level 6 ugly beast was like a snack to her. She extended her secondary stalk that was as thick as a bucket and swallowed it whole, even inclusive of its greatsword.

“What are you looking at? Little kids should sleep early!” Yue Yang realized that this naked Little Thorny Flower Demoness had been watching him non-stop without lifting her gaze off him even a single moment. Yue Yang became flustered as he had accidentally let her saw his embarrassing moment, hence he immediately brought out his might as her master. The Little Thorny Flower Demoness was indeed afraid that he would get angry the moment she heard him. She immediately retracted her flower terrace and covered herself, comfortably sleeping inside.

By the time she finally woke up again, the Thorny Flower Demons would probably have finished digesting the Gold-ranked Level 7 Blood Scythe Demon.

At that time, she would probably be able to evolve into a Gold-ranked Level 1 Thorny Flower Demoness. Yue Yang reckoned that she would probably grow up a little more and become a beautiful lady... Could it be that she would be a beautiful, mature onesan when she became a Golden Crown Thorny Queen?

Yue Yang's mind started to wander.

Other than the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit that the mercenaries picked, the other two were still unripe. They were useless even if he plucked them, so after Yue yang created a Teleportation Point at this place with his teleportation scroll, he decided to return back to the Settlement Camp and reunite back with Yue Bing. He would come here again in the future to pluck those fruits when he had the time.

With the Medicine Encyclopedia, Yue Yang had decided to make studying Medicine Refining as his short term goal right now. At the same time, he had also wanted to learn about [Space Teleportation] from the old cunning fox.

He realized that there were still a lot of things that he could learn from his school.

Yue Yang who had now upheld the model student's attitude towards learning had a new direction and a new goal to work hard on.

Yue Yang, who was joyful and pleased after winning a huge victory from a great battle, recalled the Little Thorny Flower Demoness and opened his teleportation scroll, teleporting back to the Settlement Camp. However, before he even had the time to stand upright, a sword blade suddenly swung down upon him right on his face. Behind him, an axe was sweeping towards him horizontally, giving him a fright. With a swing of his Crescent

blade, he swept away the two weapons that were endangering his life and quickly turned around, kicking with lightning speed and sending his sneak attacker away with a loud boom.

Just as he was about to ask why the opponent had launched a sneak attack on him, Yue Yang suddenly realized that the whole Settlement Camp had turned into a holocaust.

Corpses were strewn all over the ground.

There were chopped heads of mercenaries everywhere around, and bloody weapons filled the whole place.

There was a large fire on the Main Camp. Countless mercenaries acted like wild, insane beasts, killing everyone within their sight.

Yue Yang was greatly shocked. A feeling of uneasiness crept up to him. Could it be that the mercenary group that owned Golden Ant Eggs had returned and started a mercenaries' war with other mercenaries who wanted to steal those eggs?

Looking at the situation right now, it seemed like every single person in the Settlement Camp had participated in this looting massacre. No one had self-control on themselves anymore. In this place, those who didn't want to kill would be killed. No one was spared... When Yue Yang thought about how Yue Bing, who was standing right outside the Ant Hole, might be implicated too, he immediately became anxious. He roared loudly and flew towards the entrance of the Ant Hole with the speed of light.

If something were to happen to Yue Bing, how could he explain it to Fourth Mother?

No, she must definitely not be injured even a little bit. She was his smartest and most obedient little sister!

“Whoever blocks my path will die!” Yue Yang thought. He anxiously held his Crescent Blade on his left hand and Hui Jin Magic Blade on his right as he passed through the crowd of people, his body moving like a purple flame tornado. Every single mercenary who tried to attack him or blocked his way was immediately killed on the spot...

Chapter 154 – Fight Then, Hero's Comrade!

Yue Yang had guessed right. At the entrance of the Ant Hole, there was indeed a massacre.

Countless mercenaries were hacking and slashing their blades blindly, tangled and bundled in a crowd. Some mercenaries were slaughtering others while some were merely defending themselves. They had also summoned their beasts who had started to bite and tear at each other. Every single person had gone stark, raving mad, wanting to kill all the enemies in front of them and carve a way out to survive for themselves. However, more people were killed, and even more were falling down. Chopped limbs and heads were strewn all over the ground. Beasts' corpses laid in disorder, forming mountains of corpses everywhere and emitting a bloody smell that made Yue Yang feel like puking.

Amongst the fighting crowd, miserable cries resounded continuously as corpses fell to the bloodstained ground one after another.

Beasts roaring, blades striking, close combat noises resounded through the whole mountain.

“You guys have all gone mad. The Golden Ant Eggs are not with us at all. You guys have really gone mad!” There were a few mercenaries who were innocently dragged into battle.

Facing against the other mercenaries who had turned into mad slaughterers, they couldn't help but to pick up their weapons and

kill as a self-defense.

Yue Bing, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were also the same.

A few hours ago.

The five of them were resting outside of the Ant Hole, quietly waiting for Yue Yang to return. Never would they thought that a moment later, there was a disturbance at the entrance of the Ant Hole. At first, mercenaries only started to curse at each other. However, a few minutes later, it was unknown who had started it, but a shocking, crazy news had suddenly exploded. It was said that in the bags of three mercenaries, there was a Golden Ant Egg each... Hence, every single mercenary who carried a backpack became a target for greedy mercenaries, causing a bloody war to explode immediately. The fire of the war ignited in every single mercenary soldier, and not even a single one was spared. Yue Bing, Ye Kong and the others had initially avoided the battle and was climbed up to a high mountain cliff, unwilling to fight a deadly battle with these mercenaries. However, before 10 minutes even passed, they were found out by the mercenaries below. Some devilish and monstrous mercenaries with fierce appearances started to charge towards them.

They had already become mad from the killing, turning into a killing machine that would kill anyone within their sight.

In order to create more disorder, there were even some mercenaries with a hidden intention to provoke other mercenaries, who started to point towards Yue Bing and shouted loudly, “The Golden Ant Egg is on that little lady!”

Thus, mad, violent mercenaries started racing their way towards her. Their beasts also climbed along.

It was impossible to avoid the battle again.

Yue Bing and Ye Kong had initially wanted to teleport back to Hope Town, but found that their teleportation scroll failed when they opened it.

Seemed like there was a dimensional disturbance in the Settlement Camp and Hope Town. The purpose for this disturbance was to prevent anyone from teleporting away from this place. In the sky, countless mercenaries riding their flying beasts descended on the ground.

It was evident that these were the mercenaries from Hope Town who had heard about the news and decided to come over.

Even if they were to teleport to Hope Town, it seemed like it wouldn't be safe anymore!

Previously, they had never thought that something like this would happen. All the teleportation scrolls on Yue Bing, Ye Kong and the others had all recorded Hope Town or the Settlement Camp as their Teleportation Point. Only Yue Yang had a teleportation scroll to Shang Jing... Furthermore, Yue Bing was also not willing to abandon her brother and flee. If his brother who had entered the Ant Hole didn't return for one whole day, she would also not leave this place for one whole day.

No matter what, she would wait for her brother to return.

“Don’t force me to kill you!” Yue Bing had a kind heart, in the beginning, she only summoned two Hundred Year Old Treant Defender to threaten the mercenaries. She only sent those mercenaries climbing up towards her flying away, but she didn’t hit them very hard. However, slowly, the stronger Mercenary Commanders amongst the mercenaries realized that this little lady’s abilities were really powerful and started to believe that she truly had a Golden Ant Egg in her backpack. Hence, under that misconception and the influence of their greed, the mercenaries’ attacks became even more crazed.

From the ground and the sky up above, countless attacks came down on them like heavy rain.

Arrows, rocks, poisonous powders, flammable smoke, fire, ice, lightning and all other kinds of attacks poured down. There was not even a single kind of attack that wasn’t used.

There were archers shooting arrows and crossbows with accurate aims, there were berserkers throwing rocks, there were assassins throwing poisonous powders and flammable smoke, and there were also beasts shooting flames, ice and lightning attacks... Under the rain of all these attacks, the Bronze-ranked Level 5 Hundred Year Old Treant Defenders’ bodies were all covered in cuts and bruises. However, they still continued to fight relentlessly. With the two Treants guarding in front of Yue Bing, no mercenaries managed to take a step closer.

Yue Bing couldn't afford to be merciful to these people anymore. Neither being nice nor denying the possession of Golden Ant Eggs had any effect on these crazed mercenaries. She ordered her Hundred Year Old Treant Defender's [Tree's Thorns and Brambles] and [Coiling Roots] to shoot out, killing every single beast that had come close to attack her.

In 30 minutes, over dozens of greedy mercenaries and almost a hundred of beasts were pushed down the mountain cliff and died a violent death, all under the power of the Hundred Year Old Treant Defender ... The mercenaries' endless attacks were all useless to Yue Bing, a summoner who owned a Halo Shield and two Bronze-ranked Level 5 beasts protecting her.

However, a few moments later, they started to retreat slightly and reorganize as they waited for Yue Bing's Halo Shield to end. When it had ended, they continued to attack again like madmen.

Fatty Hai's Halo Shield could only stand for ten minutes.

Yue Bing had really hoped that her brother could come back right at this moment. With her brother here, all these mercenaries would retreat. However, at this time, Yue Yang was still underground, looking for the Volcano spring.

Fatty hai's Halo Shield disappeared very quickly as it reached its limit.

Under the blindness of temptation and benefits, countless mercenaries started to crawl up, filled with killing intent as they

swore to capture Yue Bing.

In the sky, countless flying beasts were continuously circling around and launching attacks on them. Some sinister mercenaries who were riding on these flying beasts had even used crossbows to rain arrows down onto their body... In order to protect Yue Bing, whose spiritual qi and mental power had been severely depleted, Ye Kong exploded. He first summoned his strengthening-type beast, the King Kong Demon Ape, to strengthen his body. Then, he summoned the strong Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle and used its almost unbeatable defense to protect Yue Bing.

Ye Kong unleashed his [King Kong's Rod Technique] which had greatly improved in power after Yue Yang's pointers. Furthermore, with the support of the strengthening-type beast King Kong Demon Ape, his attacks utterly decimated the legion of mercenaries.

However, after an hour, Ye Kong collapsed to the ground, unconscious, having spent too much energy.

The Li Clan brothers' power were weaker than Ye Kong's. Although they have also acquired Yue Yang's pointers, they didn't improved very much. Furthermore, they couldn't display their maximum capabilities fighting against a swarm of people.

After all, their beasts were too weak, hence they couldn't provide much support to them.

After losing the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle's protection, the Li

Clan Brothers could only bitterly fought against the sea of mercenaries for 15 minutes, before they were pushed down by the tsunami of mercenaries down the mountain cliff. Although Yue Bing had hurriedly saved them, they were gravely injured and had difficulties breathing. Seeing this, Yue Bing, who had a strong heart, didn't curl up in fright. Instead, her power exploded.

Yue Bing summoned her grimoire again. When she summoned the Hundred Year Old Treant Defender this second time, it swept its trunks wildly and pushed all the mercenaries and beasts down the mountain cliff.

A part of the mountain walls had actually collapsed due to the Hundred Year Old Treant Defender's multiple heavy and sharp attacks.

A dark, deep precipice was revealed after the mountain walls collapsed.

There were mercenaries in front and a cliff behind.

Yue Bing was caught in a desperate situation.

When the mercenaries saw this situation, they became even more insane and motivated, charging forward with a power stronger than before.

With both her body and mental completely exhausted, and with the addition of the mental strain from the dire situation she was

facing, even Yue Bing couldn't endure such despair anymore.

After bitterly fighting for ten minutes, Yue Bing couldn't endure it anymore and dropped to the ground.

Before she collapsed to the ground, she cried out "Brother..." loudly.

Her loud scream echoed throughout the whole mountain.

At this time, Yue Yang was still at the Volcano fighting a deadly battle with the Marquis of Zi Jin. He completely didn't think that his sister would fall into such a dire straits, to the point that she had fainted, waiting for his rescue.

Fortunately, Hui Tai Lang, whom Yue Bing sent to seek Yue Yang previously had returned.

It had fought countless battles with numerous Fire Red Ants and went through countless of tunnels in the Ant Hole. However, it still didn't manage to find its master, and in the end, could only return back with nothing... Seeing that there was only Fatty Hai who was left standing amongst the party, Hui Tai Lang completely exploded. The dark demonic flames on his body ignited and soared up high to the sky. Like a Demon King descending, a tornado killing machine, it immediately killed the hundred over beasts and mercenaries that were climbing upwards...

An hour later, there were more than 300 people and 500 beasts

killed with its sharp teeth and claws.

When it returned to the cliff and stand guard in front of Yue Bing, it was filled with wounds and lacerations, fresh blood dripping from all over its body. It was like a rain of blood, dripping onto the cliff.

It, who was a Silver-ranked Level 4 beast, had killed countless Level 5 beasts, and even a few Level 6 beasts. All the mercenaries who came from the Hope Town and the powerful warriors hiding amongst the crowd had used every single means they had. Hypnosis, contract, temptation, ice and thunder, but they completely couldn't stop its onslaught. In the end, they were massacred by Hui Tai Lang instead, thrown below the cliff. However, the endless surge of beasts who attacked it relentlessly finally subdued Hui Tai Lang with numbers. In the end, Hui Tai Lang miserably lost to numbers.

Although it continued to kill the beast on the mountain cliff and guarded in front of Yue Bing, it had already reached its limits and did not even have the energy to continue to stand.

“That two-headed dog is finally done for, let's go!”

“Kill!”

“Whoever gets the Golden Ant Egg will be rewarded 1000 gold.”

“Kill them and take revenge for our fallen brothers. Whoever

first reach the mountain will be rewarded with that girl. Charge!”

Against those mercenaries who were rushing up the mountain like ants, Hui Tai Lang furiously gave a loud howl, “Awooooo!”

Just as Hui Tai Lang was struggling to stand up and was about to give its all one last time, a fat hand suddenly patted its head. “Why are you so anxious? Nobody has died yet! When did I ever tell you to show off your loyalty here? Watch this carefully, there’s still this Master Hai, you know? If I, Master Hai, couldn’t endure it anymore, you’ll have to carry Yue Bing and jump down that cliff! You must not let Yu Bing fall into those mercenaries hands! Also, as for Ye Kong and the others, you have to free them from their suffering. There are only men who die in wars, not men who kneel as prisoners of wars!” Fatty Hai tore the upper portion of his clothes and shouted with a twisted expression, “You imbeciles, didn’t you guys want the Golden Ant Eggs? Fight for it then!”

He then threw Ye Kong’s and his bags down the mountain, causing the mercenaries to kill each other as they tried to snatch the bags.

Flesh and blood flew all over the place. Countless mercenaries died from each other’s blades.

In the midst of the chaos, the bags had been torn into shreds.

However, other than food and clothes, there were no Golden Ant Eggs inside at all...

The Mercenary Commanders all started to suspect if the Golden Ant Eggs were actually hidden by Fatty Hai. A lot of mercenaries harbored deep hatred towards Yue Bing, Ye Kong, Li Clan Brothers and Hui Tai Lang, who have killed hundreds of people. This party had almost killed all of their brothers. They had already went crazy a long time ago. No matter what, they had to destroy this party. The Mercenary Commanders were willing to fight to the bitter end. They felt that other than themselves, they should definitely not even leave a single person alive. Only those who survived would have a chance to acquire those Golden Ant Eggs. Hence, other than themselves, they wouldn't let anyone off!

Spurring, encouragement, commands, rewards and promises were all spewed out from their mouths, with the goal of motivating the mercenaries who have fought the battle for countless of hours without winning.

Their purpose was to leave all these cannon fodder to die and acquire all the loots and rewards to themselves.

“Charge!”

The mercenaries climbed up ferociously without caring for their lives, they had long since gone insane from the massacre.

At this time, Fatty Hai had not even summoned his summoning grimoire yet. Instead, he took out a piece of dark crystal, then mumbled a long summoning incantation.

Dark light permeated the air, as if night had enveloped the whole

sky.

“Rooarrrr!” A roar that sent chills down everyone’s spine blasted from within the darkness, echoing throughout the mountains.

There were also countless loud booming sounds from the mountain.

In the middle of that dark light, there was an ugly, frightening monster that made people feel like vomiting and trembled with fright at the same time. It suddenly appeared in front of the mercenaries. It had an enormous head, shoulders and a gigantic body. Its arms which were as thick as tree trunks and as hard as steel. Its dark claws were even sharper and longer than daggers. On that ugly monster’s face, there were extremely sharp fangs, growing long down the monster’s mouth.

What kind of monster was this? No one had ever seen it before.

However, this frightening monster could actually speak in human language. Its bloody mouth opened and resounded with a human-like voice, “Haven’t you seen handsome guys before? You guys all deserve to die, go and die right now!”

“Is this a person or a monster?”

“It seemed like a Behemoth, but I have never heard of a Behemoth that could speak! This doesn’t seem to be a strengthening-type beast. What kind of weird being is this?”

“Quick, kill it!”

The mercenaries hurriedly rushed over. Although they were many in numbers and countless mercenaries reinforcements kept coming from Hope Town to increase their numbers, fear and panic still filled the air.

The creature that the mercenaries thought was a Behemoth raised its pair of claws and jumped down from the mountain. With just a slash from its claws, a level 3 Wild Bull King's head was immediately swept away.

Countless of attacks and rocks were aimed on it's body.

However, the frightening Behemoth was simply in pain and not injured in the slightest. Instead, it became more furious and crazed as it gave a loud howl, slashing its claws right in the place where there were the most number of people and caused a bloody massacre...

Two hours later.

After that frightening Behemoth monster used its utmost effort to kill hundreds of beasts and hundreds of mercenaries, it finally fell under the rain of attacks from the mercenaries. Just when a few dozens mercenaries were about to surround and behead it, suddenly, that ugly Behemoth sat down on the ground and started to spout human language again, “This Young Master don't want to play with you guys anymore, this Young Master is tired. Let me go

back and rest up for a while!” From within the crowd of mercenaries surrounding it, it charged and slashed forward, carving a bloody pathway out, in hope of being able to return back to the mountain... Arrows poured down on the Behemoth’s back like a heavy rain.

Within the arrows, there were some enormous arrows that wounded the Behemoth greatly. These arrows were shot by strong warriors who were hiding in the crowd.

The Behemoth looked like it had turned into a porcupine, its back was filled with arrows.

It had thoroughly exhausted its strength and had no more power to climb up the mountain cliff.

In the end, it struggled to embed its claws deep into the cliff’s walls, and just like that, it hung there suspended, 5 metres right below Yue Bing’s body, not even moving a slightest bit.

No matter how the mercenaries shot its body with rocks or arrows, it only swayed a little at the most and did not have any other reaction anymore.

Maybe the Behemoth’s blood had already been squeezed dry, maybe it had already died long ago!

Hui Tai Lang stood up and howled towards the sky in pain.

“Awoo...awoo...” Its sad and shrill voice echoed throughout the whole mountain.

“The Golden Ant Eggs are now ours! Brothers, charge forward and snatch those Golden Ant Eggs! Whoever reach the top of that mountain cliff first will be rewarded a hundred gold! Whoever can find the Golden Ant Eggs first will be rewarded a thousand gold!” Almost every single mercenary group leader put out the same kind of reward.

And hence, chaos and disorder exploded once again.

The mercenaries that were as numerous as a swarm of ants all climbed towards the mountain.

A lot of people fell halfway through the mountain into mid-air as they were either killed by a sword or shot by an arrow...

The few mercenaries who managed to climb up didn't even bother to find the Golden Ant Eggs, they first attacked the mercenaries nearest to them.

Hui Tai Lang didn't bother with the mercenaries who started to kill each other the moment they climbed up. Instead, it moved Ye Kong and the Li Clan brothers to Yue Bing's side. After it arranged them in a line, it miserably howled out with sadness, as its blood and tears dropped to the ground. It then bit at Yue Bing's collars and fling her body to its back. And then, it reached out to Ye Kong's throat.

Before it carried its mistress and leapt towards the deep abyss, it wanted to free its comrades from their suffering and prevent them from becoming prisoners of wars.

Just as it was baring its fangs and was preparing to open its mouth, from the canyon far away, a purple coloured meteor shot through the sky, flying towards them furiously...

Chapter 155 – Extreme Berserk

When Yue Yang arrived, he realized that there were hundreds of mercenaries that were surrounding a mountain cliff in front of the Ant Hole.

On the ground, blood was flowing like a river and corpses were strewn everywhere.

With one simple glance, he could already estimate that there were at least several thousand corpses. As for summoned beasts' corpses, their were piled up like mountains.

Black-coloured and dark red blood flowed together forming small ponds everywhere, and several creeks had also formed from the continues flow of blood... The desperation of this battle had gone to an extreme point. This didn't seem like they were only fighting for a few Golden Ant Eggs, this seemed like a great war between two countries fighting for a city! Yue Yang simply couldn't understand how things could get this far. It was merely a few Golden Ant Eggs, was there a need to slaughter everyone like this?

Yue Yang felt that he understood mercenaries quite well. Other than those newbies who just joined in, the older mercenaries who could survive so far were mostly sly, cunning old geezers.

They bully the weak and fear the strong, and they especially cherish their own life the most.

Death was something they would avoid entirely.

As for these mercenaries, they liked to enjoy their lives all the time... With this kind of attitude, how could more than a thousand mercenaries act like those military soldiers who were trained to fight to their deaths without protecting themselves at all. How could they have done this just to snatch three Golden Ant Eggs?

Although Golden Ant Eggs were good, could they be more important than their own lives?

Could it be that they were completely brain damaged?

Yue Yang really couldn't understand why. However, he immediately saw Hui Tai Lang, whose body was fully covered with wounds and was carrying the unconscious Yue Bing on its back. When Hui Tai Lang gave a loud miserable howl to him, Yue Yang instantly became furious, as if it had lighted the wick that lead to an explosion in his heart! Yue Yang felt like there was lava flowing underneath his feet and whirlwind in his head. Inside his body, right at that moment, he felt like something had exploded. He turned into a mad, violent and bloodthirsty force that couldn't be restrained anymore, his power rose up by a hundredfold. Furthermore, his muscles and blood all felt like they had become 'excited'. His body's senses felt sharper than before, he could even feel blood flowing through his blood channels and his heart beating... At this time, Yue Yang didn't think of anything other than 'destroy' in his heart.

The mysterious thing was that Yue Yang felt that his awareness still remained completely clear.

This kind of fury, although it was difficult to restrain, it was a

conscious action. It was contradictory just like flames that had ignited on ice.

He knew that his massacre would cause countless of people to die, but at the same time, he also felt the impulse, the hunger and thirst to slaughter every single living being bubbling up in his heart.

These people in front of him weren't human beings anymore in Yue Yang's eyes... Yue Yang who was in a berserk mode felt like they were just as puny and as low as little ants... With regards to their actions of violating his own family, Yue Yang felt like he couldn't forgive these people no matter what.

Since these ants had tried to bite people, then he should use his foot to stamp them to death.

This was Yue Yang's berserk mode perspective.

"All of you, die!" Yue Yang raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade and Crescent Blade on both of his hands as he furiously roared.

Purple flames soared up to the sky as Yue Yang's aura exploded greatly.

BOOM!

Like a Shock Wave Blast, Yue Yang quickly sped through!

Yue Yang who was in berserk mode was completely different from his usual appearance. His eyes glinted with a golden light as his clothes and hair moved with the wind.

A faint golden light appeared on the surrounding of his body.

A mysterious and strange ring of light appeared right below his feet!

Yue Yang completely didn't have the time to notice the change in appearance after he went berserk. He only wished for bloodbath and slaughter right now. Only that would appease the deep hatred he felt in his heart!

The mercenaries didn't even have any time to react. Even the strong warriors hidden amongst them could only see a golden person-like figure charging forward like a Demon God. Yue Yang was even fiercer than a tiger who entered a flock of sheep. In an instant, he started his violent, mad manslaughter. Only after countless heads and limbs flying off and a sea of blood spurting out from necks... did they finally hear Yue Yang's roar that he had shouted earlier!

Yue Yang's movement speed was even faster than his roar.

When his thunder-like furious roar finally shook and resounded throughout the mountains, Yue Yang had already killed at least a hundred people.

It didn't matter if they were high-levelled or low-levelled, it didn't matter if their beasts were big or small, every single mercenary guarding below the mountain cliff that Yue Bing was in had all been instantly killed by Yue Yang.

The mercenaries were like wheat that was being harvested with a sickle, cut to the ground one after another.

When Yue Yang rushed through them like the wind, even their torn limbs would fly from the force of the wind, dispersing in all direction. They could neither react nor escape in time, they could not even cried out in time. Just like that, they were immediately killed by Yue Yang who were like a berserk Demon God.

“Ding!”

As Yue Yang charged through, killing all mercenaries on his sight, suddenly, to his surprise, when he was slashing his blade towards an ordinary-looking mercenary, he realized that he could actually block his thunder-like attack.

There was a strange feeling coming off from this person's body. Yue Yang couldn't help but to feel that he was different from the rest.

If Yue Yang had completely lost his reason, he might have just rushed through without thinking about all these.

Furthermore, this person immediately hid himself within the crowd, as if he didn't want to show his true capabilities. Just now, he only revealed himself because he was forced to defend himself from Yue Yang's deathly attack. Yue Yang shouted loudly as he furiously charged over, sending all the surrounding mercenaries flying away as if he was a hurricane passing by. Then, he used his Level 3 [Divine Vision] and looked towards the weird man who was the only who could withstand his furious attack. When he saw through him, Yue Yang suddenly had an enlightening realization. Turned out that there was really something wrong with this person! Turned out that amongst the ordinary mercenaries, two Level 6 [Elders] and eight Level 5 [Grandmasters] were hiding secretly...

Amongst the mercenaries in Soaring Dragon Continent, it's not as if there weren't Rankers, but there was definitely no mercenary with the ability of a Level 6 [Elder]!

A Level 6 [Elder] would normally be conferred the title of City Master or Mistress by the Kingdom.

Even if they refused to be a City Master or Mistress, they would also become the Kingdom's generals.

Even if there were strong Rankers that were willing to become a lowly mercenary, a Ranker that had reached the level of a Level 6 Elder would probably go up the Tong Tian Tower to train, they probably wouldn't stay at the Soaring Dragon Continent and become an ordinary mercenary soldier.

If such a person exist, then they were definitely suspicious. They

must have a hidden intention that couldn't be discussed with anyone else. Just like this time.

“Kill!”

Yue Yang didn't care who these [Elders] were, he also didn't care if they had any secret plot.

As long as they had dared to injure his sister, even if they were Princes, Yue Yang must definitely kill them without mistake! Almost in that moment he had realized his opponents strength, Yue Yang immediately flew towards that person's head and slashed his Hui Jin Magic Blade down with a speed and sharpness that could tear heavens apart. However, that person's speed was extremely quick. He didn't receive the blow head on, and instead, he slipped through the sea of mercenaries like a mudskipper, walking in a zig-zag, unclear line. The thing that angered Yue Yang the most was that this person could even change his disguise as he escaped, becoming another mercenary to fool Yue Yang.

If Yue Yang had lost his reason, then that person's disguise might have worked.

But right now, he was just a joke!

Yue Yang waved his Crescent Blade and suddenly created a perfect [Spherical Beheader].

When that person turned back to look, he was immediately

surprised as he shouted loudly, “This is bad! This brat could still act with reason as is really high-levelled. He even knew a powerful martial art skill...”

He thought that Yue Yang would attack him like a wild cat, pouncing and slipping quickly through the crowd towards him.

But Yue Yang did not pursue him.

Instead, suddenly, Yue Yang disappeared right under their eyes, disappearing right into thin air.

In the next moment, he had mysteriously teleported to an ordinary mercenary who was secretly climbing a mountain cliff. He took out his Crescent Blade full of bloodthirst and pressed it to that person’s neck, shouting loudly, “You annoying idiot, turn back now. Let me tell you whichever fool who dared to attack my family will not have a good ending!” That ordinary mercenary started to tremble all over. He completely didn’t think that at a distance of more than ten meters apart, this frightening killing machine could appear at his back out of thin air.

When that person turned back naturally as he heard Yue Yang’s words, Yue Yang had already abandoned the two blades in his hands, and started to twist that ordinary mercenary’s neck.

Slowly.

Very slowly, he twisted the ordinary mercenary’s head off.

In his last moments, that ordinary mercenary let out an extremely miserable, painful cry that resounded throughout the whole mountains unceasingly.

Yue Yang twisted that ordinary mercenary's neck off then raised it high up before smashing it towards the mountain cliff, splitting it up like a watermelon. Then he kicked it towards the mountain side, turning the head into a ball of bloodied flesh and broken bones that no one could clearly make out its original appearance anymore.

“Hui Tai Lang, you idiot of a dog. Why are you so useless? You can't even protect a single person!” Yue Yang carried Yue Bing's body before angrily raising his foot and kicked Hui Tai Lang madly. Although it was beaten up, Yue Yang channeled a lot of his Innate Qi into its body. Hui Tai Lang's wounds immediately healed, its demonic energy started to burst out once again. It howled loudly towards the sky and ignited the dark flame on its body. It leapt up from the ground and roared majestically at the beasts on the mountain cliff, announcing its resurrection!

As long as its master was here, it would forever be a wolf-cockroach that would never die!

Yue Yang immediately rescued his sister. He placed her on a clean stone and pinched off a Healing Stone, allowing a white light of recovery to envelope her body.

However, at the moment he saw Yue Bing's pale-white face and

the numerous wounds covering her body, Yue Yang was extremely furious and became berserk again immediately.

“All of you wretched ants, I’m going to kill every single one of you. I’m going to destroy every single one of you!” Yue Yang who experienced the second outburst felt that his strength and power could still increase by hundreds folds. This time, he didn’t even pick up his Crescent Blade and Hui Jin Magic Blade. Instead, he took out the blood scythe that the Blood Scythe Demon left behind and ignited it in flames. He leapt down the mountain cliff and swept the blood scythe towards the crowd of mercenaries.

A level 5 [Grandmaster] had summoned a strengthening-type Bronze-ranked Level 4 Steel-armoured Armadillo. Not even blades could injure his body.

However, under Yue Yang’s furious slash, his whole body was immediately cut into two.

The effects from the strengthening was completely useless in front of Yue Yang who had gone berserk... His other comrade, who was also a Level 5 [Grandmaster], wanted to escape. However, he had not even ran for more than 5 meters before he was whipped with a Demon Whip that was ignited in dark flames. His whole body was immediately beaten down on the ground.

The whip was like a living snake as it crackled noisily.

A person’s head was thrown into the air.

The Level 6 [Elder] who was the first person that blocked Yue Yang's attacks and was continuously running away and changing his disguise, that Level 6 [Elder] who dressed like an ordinary mercenary on the outside and liked to hide in the crowd, had secretly summoned a smoke-like beast that could turn his body invisible.

Under Yue Yang's bloody, violent and insane slaughter, this fellow was even more cunning than a mouse. He hid his body and quickly escaped through a crack on the mountain walls.

Even if he was a Level 6 [Elder], he still wanted to avoid this battle.

When he had ran around 50 meters away, he went through a crack on the wall.

Turning back, he realized that the bloody manslaughter outside was still ongoing, nobody had realized his presence. He couldn't help but to heave a sigh of relief secretly as he took out a teleportation scroll, preparing to escape.

Suddenly, a Demon King Trident pierced into his butt deeply, and penetrated out through his legs.

He had already strengthened his body with a strengthening-type beast, Golden Bull. However, even that unbelievably strong defense was useless. His body which couldn't be penetrated by swords was pierced like paper with the Demon King Trident. Without waiting for that person to even struggle, Yue Yang had

already pulled his trident and flew into the air with that person still impaled on his weapon, before smashing him ruthlessly to the ground. That Level 6 [Elder] supported his body painfully with his hands, but before he could even cried out, Yue Yang's leg had arrived right onto his face, causing his teeth and blood to fly out. At the same time he kicked that person's body flying away, Yue Yang shot out his Demon King Trident as quick as lightning, impaling his body right on the mountain's wall before ridiculing him furiously, "Dear fellow-who-have-hidden-his-head-but-forget-his-tails, since you wanted to become a cuckold so much, I shall allow you to pretend your fill!"

At the moment of his death, the Level 6 [Elder]'s strength immediately changed. He mumbled a summoning incantation in his heart and his body started to glow with a crimson light.

He then punched at the mountain's wall with a powerful force.

The mountain's wall immediately burst into pieces.

His whole body started to twist like a snake. Even his body which was impaled by the trident could unexpectedly be freed on his own. He then ran away from Yue Yang's Demon King Trident. Although he was heavily injured, he was still a Level 6 [Elder]. Even at this time, he still had the ability to escape.

"If you guys still stay frozen like this instead of attacking him, we will all die in this place!" That [Elder] summoned a Jungle Boa that was thicker than a bucket and commanded it to restrict Yue Yang.

As for himself, he climbed the mountain and quickly escaped towards his comrade, anxiously shouting, “Summon Meteor quickly and crush him to death with the Meteor. This brat’s barbaric power is crazy. Beasts wouldn’t have any effect on him! We must use the Meteor. Don’t hide yourselves anymore, help me quickly and kill this brat!”

The two Level 5 [Grandmaster] who were nearest to him immediately helped him, summoning a Bronze-skinned Lion and Metal-bone Leopard to support that heavily injured Level 6 [Elder]. However, in front of the berserk Yue Yang, these two Bronze-ranked Level 4 beasts were simply as weak as a sheet of paper. Not even the Level 6 [Elder]’s Bronze-ranked Level 6 strengthening-type beast, Golden Bull, could defend against the Demon King Trident’s frightening physical attack power. Let alone these two Bronze-ranked Level 4 beasts.

The Jungle Boa had been beheaded by Yue Yang with a single slash of his trident.

The Bronze-skinned Lion was immediately pierced through from its mouth to the back of its head with the trident.

As for the Metal Bone Leopard with the fastest speed, it had long since abandoned the battle and ran away in fear when it saw Yue Yang. However, it was unfortunately pierced through from its anus right to its abdomen by Yue Yang’s trident.

“Stop him, I need at least a minute to fully summon the Meteor!” The other Level 6 [Elder] who was hiding in the crowd and was an element-type Ranker immediately shouted, his expression

extremely unsightly. Yue Yang's unexpected appearance and his incomparably strong powers had completely foiled his plans, and was even endangering his life. But this was not the main point. If their plans were to be exposed, then he really couldn't think of the consequences. Not only themselves, but a lot of other people involved would definitely be sentenced to capital punishment...

Hence, he must kill him to protect their secret.

They would not hesitate to use every single method to kill this brat and his other comrades. It was better late than never.

As long as they could quickly kill every single person here, then their plans would be completed successfully.

It's just that, would Yue Yang give him that kind of time?

Yue Yang, whose whole body was covered with fresh blood from both mercenaries and beasts, making him look like a Demon God, held his Demon King Trident on his hands as he swept the beasts blocking his path away easily, cutting them into chunks of meat before he walked forward step by step towards him.

In the whole area, other than the six Level 5 [Grandmasters] and two Level 6 [Elders] who survived, other mercenaries had fallen to the ground. Even those who were not injured had trembled so wildly and paralyzed on the ground by this time. Every single person was trembling at the sight of Yue Yang, whose fury could even reach the heavens. Every step that he took was like a stomp to their spirits, shaking their hearts and making them feel as if the

whole mountains was quaking.

He was the Demon God who had descended, each step he took was like thunder and lightning!

“Die!” Yue Yang said it easily with just one word. However, the moment this word came out from his mouth, every single person there was immediately trapped within the cage of death.

Chapter 156 – Destruction

That Level 6 [Elder] who was seriously injured supported himself on the mountain walls as he took out a summoning crystal stone and summoned his last beast.

A Bronze-ranked Level 5 Giant Mammoth appeared in front of Yue Yang.

It had long tusks and a body like a giant mountain.

Such a beast would definitely be able to sweep through the whole area easily. However, although it was gigantic in size, it was deeply frightened by the berserk Yue Yang. When the others watched it, they realized that the Giant Mammoth's gigantic body was even slightly trembling. Its small eyes revealed a shocked expression.

When Yue Yang took one step forward, this Giant Mammoth couldn't help itself but to take one step backwards.

Seeing that the situation was not good, the Level 6 [Elder] immediately concentrated his mind and commanded the Giant Mammoth to charge towards Yue Yang and use its legs that were as thick as pillars to stomp on him.

Its master's command and the fear in its heart collided with each other.

The Giant Mammoth struggled with its steps.

It lift its legs up at one time as if it wanted to move and charge forward, crushing its enemies with its stomps; but it also seemed like it wanted to move backwards and flee from the battlefield. Its legs were raised up high, yet it was also extremely hesitant, moving forward and moving backward at times. Hence, it could only helplessly stay on its original place, shaking the ground with its steps.

The Level 6 element-type [Elder] behind him urgently summoned his Meteor.

A red light flashed.

A creature that looked like a Fire Crow was summoned out.

It immediately flew to the sky, spreading out soundlessly and turned into a ball of fiery light.

When the ball of fiery light exploded, the whole sky turned crimson red. Even the clouds seemed to shed drops of blood. There seemed to be ripples forming in the sky, like the ripples formed when wind blew through a lake. The crimson red undulations in the space grew bigger and bigger, rotating from internally to the outside, getting faster and faster. In the end, a few meteors ignited in flames appeared in the sky, rumbling with a loud sound. Two of the biggest meteors aimed towards the top of the mountain cliff where Yue Bing and the others were present, another two aimed at Yue Yang, while the last one aimed at the mercenaries.

That kind of rumbling sound sounded like the end of the world...

Every single mercenaries thought that it was the end for them. How could they still be alive if the Meteors rained down upon them?

What made the others wonder was that Yue Yang didn't try to stop it at all, as if he was purposely letting that Level 6 element-type [Elder] summon his Meteor.

All of the ordinary mercenaries were all concerned about their imminent deaths, so nobody tried to guess Yue Yang's thoughts. However, the six [Grandmasters] and two [Elders] all felt that something was wrong. Why would this fellow who had gone berserk did not even try to stop them at all?

When they were about to retreat altogether into a cave on the mountain walls and wait for Yue Yang to fail at saving his comrades and be crushed into meat paste by the meteors, the Giant Mammoth suddenly ran away. Its body that looked dumb and heavy was actually extremely spirited. It had immediately run towards the cave to hide its body and only left its big butt outside. The thing that made them even more dumbstruck was that there was a Gold-ranked Bloody Queen flying in the air right in front of them the moment the Giant Mammoth had stepped aside... Then, just as the few [Grandmasters] and [Elders] were about to raise their weapons, with a speed even faster than lightning, no one managed to stop the Bloody Queen before she let out a shrilling [Banshee Scream] that exploded in their ears.

The six [Grandmasters] immediately fainted to the ground.

That [Elder] that was seriously injured from Yue Yang's blows was even more heavily injured by the scream, so much that his eardrums had ruptured. His hands couldn't even prop his body up as he immediately fell to the ground.

However, the person who was injured the most by the Bloody Queen's [Banshee Scream] was definitely not him. It was the other element-type Level 6 [Elder] who was concentrating on commanding the meteors to fall to the ground...

If Yue Yang had never studied in school before and had never listened to Grandma Wu Teng's lectures, then he would have long since charged forward, solve his problems with his barbaric fists and stop the element-type Meteor attack to be released.

The current him, however, had learnt a simple method from Grandma Wu Teng, and that was "Interruption". When one was summoning an element-type beast, he must control it with his mind. The stronger the element-type beast was, the greater the mind-control it would require. If they lose their mental control, they would instead suffer from the element-type beast' recoil. This was equivalent to when strengthening-type beasts left its master's body, or when a fighting beast-type beast abandoned a battle and run away. This was all caused by the master's lost of control over their beasts... Furthermore, amongst all of recoils, the element-type recoil was the scariest one.

The element-type beasts possessed a destructive power. However, the moment it recoiled, the one destroyed would be its master.

Yue Yang could have killed the Fire Crow before it flew up to the sky and summoned the Meteors, but that would only count as an initial stage ‘Interruption’. The Fire Crow’s death would only cause its master to have a terrible headache.

When it had successfully summoned the Meteors, if its master’s mental control weakened and Yue Yang carried out ‘Interruption’ in this moment, the consequences would be...

The five Meteors suddenly turned in direction, flew in a bended arc and fell straight towards the element-type Level 6 [Elder] immediately.

“Ah, no!”

When that [Elder] awakened from his dizziness, he realized that the Meteors was falling towards them. He shouted miserably.

Yue Yang threw the unconscious Behemoth monster on top of Ye Kong and Li brothers to cover them, then stood on top of the Behemoth monster holding Yue Bing tight in his hands as he erected his [Halo Shield]. The Bloody Queen flew fast like an arrow into the shield and hugged Yue Yang tightly. Seeing that there was no space for him inside the shield, Hui Tai Lang immediately buried his head and went underneath the Behemoth monster’s stomach. Unfortunately, its tail was still outside when the huge explosion exploded down to the ground.

The five Meteors which were burning brightly with fire rained

upon the valley almost simultaneously.

The whole mountain shook as blazing fire soared up to the sky.

The shock wave blast and the raging flames even decimated the creatures underneath the Ant Hole completely.

The loud explosion and the great earthquake was as if the whole earth had split. The explosion caused the whole mountain cliff to rumble, burst, collapse, as chunks of boulders flew about everywhere. Even that Giant Mammoth who was hiding inside a cave was thrown into the sky. Subsequently, a mushroom like smoke rose up to the sky following the explosion.

Suddenly, a mountain peak snapped and collapsed.

Following that, half of the mountain then collapsed, breaking into countless chunks of boulders and slowly fell to the ground.

In the end, increasing in momentum, the boulders fell into the valley with loud rumbling sound. The mountain peak fell not more than 20 meters away in front of Yue Yang, before breaking apart and falling into the valley.

The whole earth shook once again.

Yue Yang was secretly relieved. He had taken the Meteor falling into his consideration, but this piece of mountain peak was beyond his calculations. Luckily it had not fallen and smashed at the

mountain cliff. Otherwise he could only kick Ye Kong and the others into the deep abyss beside them and commanded the Bloody Queen to save them before they were smashed into meat paste... That was already difficult on its own. Let alone their numbers, Fatty Hai had even turned himself into a monster. This ability of his...

The mercenaries underneath the mountain cliff were definitely finished. Let alone them, even those six [Grandmasters] and two [Elders] must certainly be dead.

They were first smashed by meteors, before being smashed by a huge mountain peak to boot.

Even if their ancestors were cockroaches, they would definitely not be able to live.

After experiencing two great earthquakes, the flat mountain cliff that Yue Yang and the others was on had become slanted from its level position. Luckily it was still strong enough to withstand the explosion and did not crumble.

Hui Tai Lang wriggled out disorderedly from within the Behemoths body and climbed towards the flat mountain cliff side to look down. It realized that the meat below had all disappeared, they were all buried under the rain of rocks and boulders.

After the earthquake, Ye Kong, who had collapsed from exhaustion, also wriggled out from underneath the Behemoth Monster's stomach with great difficulty. He shook his buzzing

head and rubbed away the bloodstain on his nose and his mouth with his sand-covered hands. He then asked Yue Yang weakly, “What had happened? I seem to see people lighting up fireworks in my dream...”

“That’s more or less what had happened.” Yue Yang’s berserk mode had slowly calmed down, and he also felt a little tired.

“What is this monster that is squashing me?” Ye Kong asked as he realized that there was an extremely ugly monster that was snoring very loudly lying on the ground. It had squashed him to the point that he couldn’t breathe.

“Don’t you think his snores are familiar?” Yue Yang felt that as long as someone had heard Fatty Hai snored before, they would definitely recognize his snores.

“Is this monster that damned fatty?” Ye Kong was so shocked that his chin dropped to the ground.

“Who else do you think in this world could still sleep so soundly after suffering such grave injuries, other than Fatty Hai himself?” Yue Yang felt that Fatty Hai’s sleeping skill was definitely one of his Inherent Skills. It was an extremely powerful Inherent Skill that would allow him to sleep soundly anywhere and anytime.

This point had really made him respect Fatty Hai deeply.

Ye Kong was dumbstruck for a very long time before he finally

noded his head, certain that this ugly monster was Fatty Hai's transformation.

It's just that it was extremely strange. This was not strengthening-type, element-type and most definitely not a fighting beast-type beast. So what kind of beast had Fatty Hai summoned? Why would it even transform his whole body into a monster?

In Fatty Hai's bronze-ranked grimoire, there wasn't the existence of this beast.

With regards to all these thing, Ye Kong couldn't figure it out no matter how long he thought about it.

Yue Yang had already realized that Fatty Hai was different from the rest and had a potential in him before. However, Fatty Hai had never told them about this before, so he had respected Fatty Hai's secret and did not ask him about it too.

It was only after using Healing Stones for quite a while that Fatty Hai's monster body slowly turned back to his original appearance. However, before his monster appearance disappeared, he gave out an extremely smelly fart that took form in a yellow cloud of fog that lingered on his body for quite a while. The smelly fart shocked the Bloody Queen and Hui Tai Lang so much that they immediately ran away. As for Yue Yang, he had already carried Yue Bing as he teleported a hundred meters away.

The mysterious thing was that when Yue Yang was on berserk

mode, his teleportation ability had become extremely accurate.

The current him who had calmed down, on the other hand, had missed his teleportation target very far away. His head had almost knocked into the mountain walls on the opposite side of his teleportation target. Had it not for his extremely quick reactions, he would have fallen into the valley.

Ye Kong had wanted to check on Fatty Hai with good intentions. Who would have known that he would have to bear his smelly fart head on?

He choked and fell to the ground in the midst of the giant yellowish fog of a fart, his mouth frothing with bubbles. His two legs twitched uncontrollably, just like an insect that had been sprayed with insecticide.

Luckily there were a lot of strong winds in the Despair Abyss that blew this yellow, dense, mysteriously huge fog of a fart away in a few moments. Then, a naked Fatty Hai slowly woke up from his sleep and mumbled, “I think I smelled the smell of barbequed meat...”

“Get down immediately or I will kill you!” Ye Kong, who was still squashed beneath Fatty Hai’s butt, gritted his teeth as he struggled to grab his weapon on the ground.

“Eh? You are still alive, monkey? Didn’t you die already? Then I have been sad for nothing!” Fatty Hai looked at Ye Kong very innocently, as if he didn’t realize that his big butt was actually

becoming the main culprit for killing Ye Kong.

“I am not dead yet, but I’m going to die soon from being squashed by your butt!” Ye Kong’s spine was groaning. He, who had collapsed from exhaustion, didn’t have the strength at all to move Fatty Hai away. He could only howl madly.

“Brother...” The weakened Yue Bing woke up, and the first person she saw was Yue Yang.

She hugged Yue Yang emotionally. She, who had forced herself to be strong all this while, finally shed her happy tears, “I knew that you will definitely return safely...”

Yue Yang consoled her with a gentle voice and patted her head that was covered with lustrous black hair slowly. He also helped to wipe her tears away.

In the skies far away, there were still quite a few large flying beasts carrying a few men that were dressed as mercenaries, quietly observing everything that had happened in the valley.

In the end, a middle-aged man that looked like their commander gestured with his hands, and those flying beasts immediately followed his orders and left this place quietly, as if they had never appeared before. Before he departed, that middle-aged man who seemed to be the commander glanced at Yue Yang, his expression seemed to be extremely complicated, as if there were hatred, surprise and fear mixed together into one.

He then looked at the Gold-ranked Level 5 Bloody Queen before quickly urging his flying beast to move, catching up to his comrades in front.

Very quickly, they left the valley.

“This matter... It’s definitely not that simple!” Yue Yang had also used his [Divine Vision] to deeply remember that middle-aged man’s look. He would ask the Luo Hua City Mistress when she arrived here. If this matter was indeed related to him, then he would need to investigate till the end. No matter who was behind all these, he would investigate it to the end and track all of the clues. He would definitely catch the main culprit behind this matter.

“Brother, there are a lot of Fire Red Ants climbing out from that place!” Yue Bing was lying weakly in Yue Yang’s arms when she suddenly saw movements from the valley below.

“Could it be that the Golden Ant Eggs are over there?” Seeing that, Yue Yang’s heart immediately twitched.

Chapter 157 – Great Kindness Cannot Be Reciprocated With Words

After half of the Ant Hole had collapsed, the Fire Red Ants poured out without end.

They did not even care about the human flesh that they usually loved to feast upon. They only moved piles and piles of crushed rocks without cease. Many Giant Ant Soldiers had come out, patrolling everywhere, and some of them even crawled towards Yue Yang. However, before Yue Yang could do anything, they had already been thrown off the hill by Hui Tai Lang, who hated the Fire Red Ants to the core... Hui Tai Lang spewed its raging black flames of hell onto their antennae, causing a few Ant Soldiers to roll down the hill in pain.

When it was inside the Ant Nest where it were surrounded by more than ten thousand restless ants, no matter how strong Hui Tai Lang was, it could not take advantage of them.

However, it was only facing a few Ant Soldiers now. It could now easily beat up these huge fellows whose bodies were a few metres long until they didn't know which way was north.

The anger and pent-up frustration that it had bottled up when it was surrounded by the Ant Colony could now be vented out. Hui Tai Lang was pleased. As long as the Fire Red Ants left their colony, it would go up and beat them up as much as it could.

After all the crushed rocks were moved away, the Fire Red Ants

found a few bags hidden within the cracks of the rocks.

Yue Yang and the others observed what was going on and found out that there really were Golden Ant Eggs.

Three Golden Ant Eggs were being carefully transported by a group of Fire Red Ants who were preparing to deliver them back into their nest. Yue Yang's heart twitched. Although they were useless to him, but these Gold Beast Eggs weren't bad either. Ye Kong and the others might be able to use them. Yue Yang let his intentions be known to Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others. "Who wants them? There are two Gold-ranked Ant Soldier beasts, and one of them is a Female Golden Ant, which would be the future Ant Queen..."

"I don't want them!" Ye Kong hurriedly waved his hands. The Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle had been contracted by him last time. This time, the opportunity should be given to the other companions. "Give it to Fatty Hai and the others!"

"What? I don't want it either!" The naked Fatty Hai covered his lower body with both hands and shouted, "Your Boss truly only wants to contract with beautiful female summons. I don't like ants! Give it to Li Qie and Li Ge. I won't value them at all!"

Although he said it so naturally on the surface, but in reality, his heart was aching so much that the fat on his face was trembling.

If it were under normal circumstances, he might have gladly accepted it.

However, ever since Yue Yang had helped him to regain his dignity last time, he became determined to turn over a new leaf. After drawing up a special plan with Yue Yang, Fatty Hai knew the direction that he was going to develop, which would be to train his Iron Rhinoceros... The Iron Rhinoceros was a Guardian Beast. Although it was still a little weak now, once it turned into Silver-ranked, and then Gold-ranked, the value of cultivating it would be much higher than cultivating a non-Guardian Beast Golden Ant Soldier. At the very least, the Iron Rhinoceros would never die, nor would it ever betray him. It would be his most trustworthy companion through his lifetime.

Although the Golden Ant Soldier was good, once it died, he would have nothing again.

And furthermore, Ant Soldiers did not have intelligence, only instinct. There was not much practical use for deploying them on the battlefield.

Thank goodness this was a strengthening-type beast. If it were a fighting beast-type Golden Ant Soldier, then it might not even be able to square off evenly against a Silver-ranked Demon Wolf!

“Leave the Female Golden Ant to the ant colony. It’s the future Ant Queen after all, all we need are those two Golden Ant Soldiers!” Li Qie and Li Ge felt that it would not do if they did not hurry up and improve their strength. With the Golden Ant Soldiers, their strength could be increased tenfold. In that case, they believed that they would not be burdens that pulled everyone down.

They knew themselves very well. Being able to contract with a Gold-ranked beast like the Golden Ant Soldiers was already more luck than they had dared to yearn for in their lifetime.

Not only that, these Golden Ant Soldiers were still eggs, still larvae. They could take their time to cultivate them.

If not for Yue Yang, they would have never been able to obtain these Golden Ant Soldier Eggs. They could only watch such precious objects and drool.

Under Yue Yang's instructions, the Bloody Queen swept down from the skies.

With a move, she snatched both Golden Ant Soldier Eggs into her hands... An uproar immediately began in the Ant Colony, but the Fire Red Ants were instinctively fearful of the Gold-ranked Bloody Queen. They were also unable to fly and thus, could not pursue her further. The only thing they could do was to increase their protection on the Female Golden Ant Egg. Dozens of Fire Red Ants crawled on top of the bodies of their companions, forming a densely-packed ant wall as the Female Golden Ant Egg was swiftly transported back into the ant tunnel. Even when the Female Golden Ant Egg was already transported so deep within the Ant Hole that it could not be seen anymore, the Fire Red Ants stacked up rocks and sealed the Ant Hole tightly behind them. It was as if they were still afraid of the Bloody Queen pursuing them again.

They had the inborn instinct to protect the Ant Queen.

Compared to the Golden Ant Soldier, the Ant Queen was everything to them.

Even if it was a Golden Female Ant Egg that had not been incubated, that egg which was birthed by the previous generation's Ant Queen was already destined to become the next Ant Queen.

“These Ant Eggs are really sturdy!” Yue Yang discovered that even after going through two great shocks, the two Golden Ant Eggs remained completely undamaged.

“If it were me, I would fuse a chaos egg with it like that monkey! Although the King Kong Demon Ape is still trash after fusion, but it's still much better compared to the strength it had before!” Seeing that the Bloody Queen and Yue Bing were there, Fatty Hai who was nude, quickly hid behind a rock. Although he did not dare to come out, his voice showed that he did not want to be left out, giving a rotten idea for the Li brothers.

“No, we don't want to try fusing a chaos egg!” Li Qie and Li Ge rejected the proposition in concert.

The 0.01% success of fusion already made people despair.

Not only that, this was already a Gold-ranked beast from the start. Why risk the danger?

Yue Yang also felt that using Gold-ranked beast eggs to fuse with chaos eggs would be painful... The higher the grade of the beasts,

the harder it was to find a suitable chaos egg for fusion. Fatty Hai's train of thought was really like a snake trying to swallow an elephant.

Although they were Ant Soldiers, they were still Gold-ranked beasts. This was already not bad. It wouldn't do to be too greedy.

Although they were surrounded by danger, they had been able to gather a good amount of rewards. Not mentioning Yue Yang, Yue Bing and Fatty Hai's summoning grimoires had both risen in grade. Yue Bing's Advanced Bronze grimoire had officially turned into a Silver grimoire. At the same time, other than gaining an extra blank page on her grimoire, her Inherent Skill [Intense Poison] had increased in grade too. Yue Yang also found that her Hundred Year Old Treant Defender was showing faint signs of levelling up. Most likely, with the help of an external force, it could successfully become Silver-ranked.

Fatty Hai's Bronze Grimoire evolved from Beginner-ranked to Intermediate-ranked. The Ancient Code had also gifted him a young Female Hippopotamus beast.

Although this little hippo looked like it was an idiot, but this was a gift from the Ancient Code. Fatty Hai did not dare to abandon it. If a beast granted by the Code was abandoned, one would never again be able to get the gift of a beast. When the summoning grimoire rose in rank again, the most they would get would only be a blank page.

Seeing Fatty Hai's gloomy expression, Ye Kong laughed until tears formed in his eyes.

“This thing is a Bronze-ranked beast, cultivate it well! Maybe after the rhinoceros becomes a beauty, you can also cultivate a hippo beauty!” Ye Kong rolled on the floor laughing.

“I am an open-minded and calm person. My heart is as still as water and I am kind-hearted. My Intelligence is not the same as your level, monkey.” Fatty Hai tried his best to act like a refined gentleman in front of the Bloody Queen. However, trying to blow his own trumpet was a waste of effort, as the Bloody Queen did not even glance at him once. Seeing that Fatty Hai’s courting had failed, Ye Kong patted Fatty Hai’s shoulder, acting sympathetic. Just as Fatty Hai thought that he would console him with a few sentences, Ye Kong threw him down with a single phrase. “Fatty, I can’t say that you’re kind hearted. However, I can just barely call you contented and easy going (心宽体胖, big-hearted, and literal fat body). Look at the amount of fat you have on your body! It’s exactly the same as that little hippo. I daresay, you and your Iron Rhinoceros, along with the little hippo, are perfect matches for each other.”

“Heehee!” This sentence even made Yue Bing laugh.

“Ahhh! “ The Li brothers, who had meanwhile contracted with the Golden Ant Soldiers, let loose a loud howl simultaneously.

On their bodies, a faint golden-coloured carapace appeared like armour which was draped over their bodies, covering almost half of their entire body surface.

Ye Kong raised his fist and punched Li Qie as hard as he could.

Li Qie's body wobbled slightly, but his feet did not move a single inch.

If he had been punched by Ye Kong full force before this, he would at least be thrown tens of metres away. His ribs might have been fractured too.

Now, he could fully withstand Ye Kong's full power, completely fine from the attack. This was just the defensive ability that the Golden Ant Soldier had when they hatched. They were still larvae; if they were cultivated to become mature Golden Ant Soldiers, their defensive ability could probably be increased manyfold. Not only that, the area of their armor covering Li Brothers' body would also increase, until they had completely covered the Li Brothers' entire body.

“So strong, as expected from a Gold-ranked beast!” Ye Kong cried in surprise.

“Actually, it hurts a little too... If you summon your King Kong Demon Ape and punch me again, I might not be able to withstand it!” Li Qie nodded his head, unexpectedly happy.

“Your Golden Ant Soldier is still a larvae, there will be a lot of room for it to grow in the future. Furthermore, after I contracted with the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, I received a boost in power and have grown to have at least ten times the power I had before. Even if I didn't summon the King Kong Demon Ape to strengthen

my body, I can probably send the fatty flying with one punch. Your Golden Ant Soldier is really strong!” Ye Kong confirmed the value of the Golden Ant Soldier. However, it was now Fatty Hai’s turn to oppose his opinion. “Oi, don’t use me, Master Hai as comparison! I’m not a punching bag!”

“The defensive capability isn’t bad, and its other aspects are decent too. Their only flaw would be their lack of wisdom. Looks like it’ll be difficult to raise them beyond Gold-rank.” Yue Yang sighed. Although the Golden Ant Soldiers were Gold-ranked beasts, they had limited potential. They were not the most ideal beasts to have.

“Being able to own a Golden Beast is already the greatest honour that we, the Li brothers, have ever had in our lifetimes. We will treasure it!” Li Ge nodded solemnly towards Yue Yang.

Li Ge and Li Qie were the kind of people who did not speak a lot. They knew that they were not talented enough and would require a million times more effort in order to obtain a little progress.

Even though the Golden Ant Soldiers were not the best Gold-ranked beasts out there, how many warriors in this world would have a Gold-ranked beast?

Even though they neither had outstanding talents nor the backing of great families, these two ordinary young men now had beasts that most people could only yearn for in their dreams. What was there to not be satisfied with? In comparison, even Ye Kong, who had the greatest potential amongst the three of them and Fatty Hai, who owned a grimoire, did not have a Gold-ranked

beast. How could they not know how to be satisfied? If not for meeting Yue Yang, they would have starved to death in Tong Tian Tower's floors. Even if they had not, they were just the two idle bodyguards, destined to die who knows when as food for beasts.

If not for Yue Yang, would they still be around today?

Thus, Li Qie and Li Ge especially cherished and were extremely thankful for everything Yue Yang had given them.

They did not thank him in words, because great kindness could not be reciprocated with mere words. They had already decided to use their entire lifetime to pay back this strange guy who had completely changed their lives and fates.

“Oh no, if Sister Yi Nan... Ah, Brother Yi Nan has already arrived at Hope Town and met the mercenaries in their skirmish, she might be in danger!” Yue Bing thought of something and immediately cried out. Thinking about what she said, Ye Kong and the others sweated profusely. If Yi Nan had coincidentally just arrived at Hope Town, then the situation would be extremely dire. Ye Kong and the others looked at Yue Yang, hoping that he had some plan.

“Yi Nan has a grimoire, he should be fine.” Yue Yang consoled Yue Bing, but felt that it would be better if he went back to look around. Therefore, he nodded his head, saying, “Let's go back to Hope Town and see what's really going on. I really felt that it was really strange for the mercenaries to go crazy killing each other so chaotically. Someone must be pulling the strings from behind.”

“Then, let’s go back quickly...” For Yue Bing, Sister Yi Nan was her future sister-in-law whom she could not bear to see getting into trouble to.

Chapter 158 – When A Wave Settles, Another One Rises Again

When they returned to Hope Town, it was already midnight.

Before they had even arrived at the town, Yue Yang could smell a dense smell of blood.

In the darkness, a large group of low leveled flesh-eating beasts came out upon smelling the blood in the air. Under the light of the fire, the eyes of these beasts flashed with a faint green colour. From time to time, sounds of quarrels and conflicts burst out. The distinct sound of laughter from hyenas were heard one after another echoing through the town. It was a horrific and strange atmosphere, causing people's hairs to stand on end hearing it. The town was ablaze. Aside from some houses that were burning, there were countless foot soldiers who were patrolling the area with torches.

All of the mercenaries and civilians who had survived were sitting on the floor, being surrounded by foot soldiers in a circle.

“Are you survivors?” A burly Platoon Leader from the patrol came out from the line and asked Yue Yang and the others warily. “Are there any other survivors on the valley floor? What's the situation below?”

“We're all Ivy Academy's students, we are here to train.” Yue Yang gave the academy-approved Training Application Records and academy badge to the Platoon Leader.

“A student from the Da Xia Empire?” The Platoon Leader furrowed his eyebrows. If he did not manage these students from Da Xia Empire well, this situation might escalate into a dispute between countries as a serious diplomatic incident. After confirming again that there was no mistake, he quickly nodded his head and inquired, “Are there any casualties in your group? No? Then, that’s really good, you’re really lucky! Please come over here to rest. Don’t worry, after you’ve rested up, we’ll send you as quickly as possible back to your country. Before that, we hope that you could help us. Could you tell us about the situation at the Settlement Camp at the valley floor? Are there any survivors below?”

(Shiro: This was previously translated as Camp, Army Camp, Gathering Camp, Mercenary Camp because I lack the better name to translate it and felt one name sounded better with each chapter (apologies :X). But Sephillia managed to find the perfect translation – Settlement Camp. I’ll change the previous chapters to this)

“I don’t know, they’ve probably all died. We escaped the chaos by hiding inside the Ant Hole. After we came out, everyone had died, and there were even meteors falling from the sky! The whole valley floor was in ruins, we were almost buried!” Yue Yang spoke a few sentences in a fleeting manner.

“This situation seemed to be caused by the Golden Ant Eggs.” Ye Kong chipped in.

“Those mercenaries have gone crazy!” Fatty Hai acted as if the incident was haunting him.

“We’ve came back to search for our companion. Her name is Yi Nan (Sephillia: He/She in Chinese sounds the same, Yue Yang can’t differentiate between gender with this phrase). She departed two days after we did. Please help us to check if she’s already here.” What Yue Bing was most worried of was still Sister Yi Nan’s safety.

“Alright, I thank you for the information that you have provided. We will record it in your training Training Records to score a few points for you! As for your companion, we will follow up on it. If your companion is still in Hope Town, we will bring the person back as fast as we can!” The Platoon Leader brought Yue Yang and the others into an intact house. Then, he ordered some people to bring hot water and steamed buns for them. After recording the names of Yue Yang and the others, the Platoon Leader hurriedly went out.

After around half an hour, a male dressed up as a general came in.

The Platoon Leader was following behind him respectfully. Seeing the wary expressions on Yue Yang and the others, the Platoon Leader hurriedly waved. “Students, it’s fine! Our general just wanted to understand the situation on the valley floor better. This situation may not be that simple. We need you, Da Xia Empire students, to help us. Everything’s fine. Let’s all sit down and discuss!”

The general whose face was completely stern with his eyebrows furrowed also tried his best to show a smile. “Students, I’m Ma Xing Kong, you may call me Old Ma.” (Sephillia: Ma = Old Horse, Ma Xing Kong = Flying Horse)

“Old General Ma!” Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were in perfect sync as they called him with this name.

“We do not have any records of your companion. Your companion should be as lucky as you and averted this disaster. Perhaps she have not even arrived at all. Students, could you tell us what happened?” That Old General Ma extended his hand and patted the Fatty Hai’s shoulder. Then, leisurely sat opposite of Yue Yang. He could see that within this team, this low-profile masked guy was the core of the party.

Old General Ma did not doubt this boy’s ability to survive, having a Silver-ranked Level 4 Twin-headed Demon Wolf as his pet.

With him around, it was normal for this party to arrive here safe and sound.

Even if this young lad was laying low and acting normally, but the crescent blade on his back imperceptibly exposed the fact that he was a strong person. This was, after all, a weapon usually used by Demon Generals. Within the weapon shops of the Soaring Dragon Continent, not a single store sold this kind of magic weapon...

Old General Ma knew that if he wanted to learn more about the circumstances leading to this event, this young man would perhaps offer him the best answer.

Ye Kong sipped his hot tea and acted as if he was trying his

utmost to cooperate. He started to describe the situation passionately. “Originally, we wanted to cultivate and improve within the Ant Hole. But suddenly, we heard a cry for help deep within the Ant Hole sounded out by an SOS Scroll. We wanted to delve in and save them, but the Ant Hole was in chaos. There were countless Fire Red Ants around and we were instead trapped there.”

“I’m their boss, so I’m most clear on this. It was a desperate situation then, so I decided to get out of the Ant Hole and return to the surface.” Fatty Hai acted as if he was the boss.

“When we came out, we found out that the mercenaries had all gone crazy. They were killing every single person within their sight!” Li Qie talked about the horrific scene that unfolded that time.

“After that, we were embroiled in battle as well. But luckily, we found a crevice and hid in there.” Li Ge nodded his head.

“After that, what happened?” It was not that the Old General Ma did not trust what they said, but he felt that they were only scratching the surface. The one person who knew the truth would probably still be this masked lad who had not spoken a single word. He believed that he was the leader and the true boss of this party.

“I didn’t leave the Ant Hole, so I was not clear on how the battle outside happened.” Yue Yang felt that if he did not say anything, he would be unable to hide the truth from this Old General Ma, who seemed rough on the surface but had an extremely cautious

mind. Obviously, Yue Yang would not speak of the battle between him and the Marquis of Zi Jin. However, he told him what happened in the Ant Hole that time. “I entered the Ant Nest and found that the thousands of ants were in chaos. On the second floor of the Ant Nest, countless mercenaries and Fire Red Ants were fighting each other. Some of the mercenaries even killed their own kind... Those mercenaries who had the Golden Ant Eggs were trapped on top of a platform. The situation was really desperate. Being an upright human, I went forward to assist them and gave them teleportation scrolls. Not only that, I opened a path for them and escorted those mercenaries into the Ant Tunnel... Their leader was called Zhong Hao. If you find him, then you will be able to prove that what I said was the truth.”

Yue Yang tried to probe and see if that mercenary group's Zhong Hao was still alive.

He was 90% sure that Zhong Hao had died.

This was because if Zhong Hao was still alive, then the Old General Ma would know that he had obtained the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruits. He wouldn't ask about the matter of the Golden Ant Eggs, much less of not being clear on why the mercenaries went crazy.

Old General Ma confirmed it. “There was indeed someone called Zhong Hao before. He had managed to escaped to Hope Town and sought refuge from our garrison. But, there was an attack carried out by some thugs shortly after. All of the soldier from the garrison died in battle. Zhong Hao and his companions were captured as prisoners by the enemy. Following that, a battle broke out between

them. All of the mercenaries seemed to know about the matter regarding the Golden Ant Eggs, and started to kill everyone on sight... However, I suspect that the enemy released some kind of poison that would make people crazy. Otherwise, the mercenaries would not completely lose their sanity just for the Golden Ant Eggs. Something more suspicious was that the space of Hope Town and the Settlement Camp seemed to be disturbed by some kind of Artifact*, and so people were unable to teleport out. There were very few people who managed to flee... Little student, could you talk about the meteor explosions?”

(Shiro: *Artifact was translated as Sacred Item before because lack of better words)

He felt that Yue Yang’s party was definitely related to the meteor explosions. Perhaps the enemy had found a few more survivors who had great power, and so they decided to summon meteors to rain down upon them.

In order to cover up for the matters regarding the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit, the Marquis of Zi Jin, Grandma Chi and the Medicine Encyclopedia, he decided to tell Old General Ma about the last battle to divert his attention.

(Shiro: I think I forgot to explain this in previous chapters. Grandma Chi = Lake Grandma. Not sure if that is her name or her nickname. I’m gonna leave it as Grandma Chi for now.)

Using a calm tone, he described the battle. “At that time, I had killed my way out of the Ant Nest that was packed with thousands of ants. When I was outside, I realised that my companions had been surrounded by the enemies. There were even two Level 5 [Grandmasters] and a Level 6 [Elder] amongst the enemies. They

hid themselves in the group and rallied the mercenaries to surround and attack my companions. After that, when I came back, I found out that they had summoned a Jungle Boa, a Bronze-skinned Lion and a Metal-bone Leopard. Not only that, they summoned a Gargantuan Mammoth to attack us as well. After a bitter fight, the Level 6 [Elder] hidden within the crowd even summoned five meteors. I took risks and dispelled his summons. Finally, the meteors backfired and were directed towards him. As a result, even the mountain peak was destroyed, and we got knocked out from the impact. When we came to afterwards, the enemies had already been rescued by their companions in the air... There were many flying beasts in the sky, at least two hundred people, who left after the meteors struck the valley.”

“Could you tell us how that [Elder] who summoned the meteors looked like?” Old General Ma furrowed his eyebrows.

He could hear that although this young lad had described everything quite simply, it did not seem like he was lying.

If there was a Level 6 [Elder] involved in this who even summoned meteors to kill everyone, then things would become complicated.

This situation would be ten times as bad as what he had imagined it to be.

Yue Yang sighed in relief inside. He knew that the Old General Ma would not doubt or notice what happened to him in the Ant Hole for now, but rather focus all of his attention on that Level 6 [Elder].

This was precisely the sideroad that Yue Yang led Old General Ma to take. He borrowed it to divert his attention.

It seemed like this matter was not just as simple as enemies trying to kill him.

Since it was unrelated to him, Yue Yang decided to stay out of this matter. He was too lazy to bother with the matters of the nation and conspiracies. It would be better for him to devote himself towards developing relationships with women.

Since the Old General Ma wanted to know how that Level 6 [Elder] looked like, Yue Yang was extremely generous. He completely described that Level 6 [Elder]'s, along with the two Level 5 [Grandmasters]' looks. Yue Yang had even pretended that he did not know that there were two Level 6 [Elders]. He only spoke of the little Level 6 Beginner-ranked [Elder] who summoned the meteor. All of the mercenaries called that man "Master".

When he spoke of this, the Old General Ma's expression changed.

Evidently, the Old General Ma knew of those two [Elders]. Not only that, he was extremely familiar with them.

"I must thank you very much. You have uncovered a terrifying plot for our Tian Luo Kingdom. We will definitely report this to His Majesty and request him to specially award you. Now, We suspect that the enemies are still trying to cover up and blot out this matter. Please don't leave for now. We will gather more

experts and notify your academy's teachers to come and fetch you back. Of course, you can relax. We will definitely keep you safe. We are an army, we have the strength to do it!" Before Old General Ma could finish, an explosion could be heard from outside. The giant shockwave from the explosion blasted the wooden door open. The entire floor was shaking and the dust on top of the ceiling pillars constantly fell down.

A sharp alarm blared out.

Old General Ma's eyes burned with anger as if they were volcanoes on the verge of eruption.

He stood up resolutely. Before he left, he did not forget to appease Yue Yang and the others. "Don't be afraid. No matter what happens, we guarantee that we have the ability to protect you. For now, stay in the house and don't come out of it. I'll go out and see what's happening!"

Yue Yang felt that this turn of events was a little unimaginable. The Tian Luo Kingdom had even already mobilised their army. How could those thugs still have the guts to launch another attack?

Who were these desperate criminals?

What great secret did the Despair Abyss hold, causing them to do this at all costs?

For a period of time, Yue Yang was extremely curious... Could it

be that there was still something even more valuable than the Golden Ant Eggs and the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruits here?

Chapter 159 – The Most Epic Rescue Of The Beauty!

A scream tore through the sky. The sharpness of the sound sounded like an awl piercing through the night.

The sound was a little familiar to Yue Yang. It sounded like the [Banshee Scream] of the Bloody Queen, but it neither had its distinctive mournfulness nor its soul-piercing reverberation. Instead, there was an agitative, raucous quality. Such a sound did not have as much killing power as the Bloody Queen's [Banshee Scream], but it was unnerving and hateful for those who heard it, making them feel frustrated and irritated.

“That's, that's a harpy! Oh god, those are monsters from the Falling Cangue Mountain!” When the platoon leader saw the harpies outside the door, he started to shake in fear.

At that moment, countless flying-type beasts flew across the sky.

A few of them could be seen clearly in the flames, but most of them hid in the darkness higher up in the sky. One could only deduce that there were groups of flying-type beasts flying over their heads by the ripples in the air and the sound of the flapping of wings. Yue Yang's eyes, with the shared power of [Night Vision] from Empress Fei Wen Li, could clearly see even in a black cave without any light at all, let alone now.

Within the span of Yue Yang's vision, he discovered that there were at least tens of thousands of different flying-type beasts that

were circling about in the sky.

Flying about at the highest altitude were giant eagles and dragons.

In the middle were harpies that had entirely black bodies.

These harpies were different from the harpies at the Bloody Queen's Pavilion in Tong Tian Tower's pavillon. These harpies looked exceedingly ugly and evil, with wrinkles all over their bodies, looking very disgusting as a whole. At the lowest level, there were some Flesh-eating Crows, Drummed Wing Lizards, Fur Membrane Mice, Flat Snakes and a large number of Giant Bats that were flying together. While making all sorts of noises, they searched for their targets, swooping down in various parts of the small towns and attacking the people. The screams that Yue Yang had previously heard were the sharp hisses made when the harpies swooped down towards the soldiers on the ground.

"Falling Cangue Mountain?" Ye Kong had never heard of this place before.

"Falling, Falling Cangue Mountain?" In contrast, Fatty Hai started to squirm in fear, looking like he had just seen a ghost.

"What is going on? Master Hai, quickly tell us what you mean!" Yue Bing had also never heard of this place before. Falling Cangue Mountain, was there such a place in Soaring Dragon Continent?

Yue Yang also started to keenly observe Fatty Hai's reaction. However, suddenly, his ears picked up the sound made by another type of animal. It was very faint, but in Yue Yang's ears, it was extremely distinct.

It made all the hairs stand up on his body.

That was the sound of crawling made by Giant Spiders, one of the Despair Abyss's Three Greatest Killers. The low-level flesh-eating monsters that were previously lingering outside the town scurried about in fear as they tried to escape. However, other than the jackals and hyenas which moved the fastest, most of them could not escape from the Giant Spiders' attack. Yue Yang went out of the door and leapt onto the roof, scanning the slope halfway down the mountain. His heart suddenly pounded...There were countless... thousands, or maybe ten thousands of Giant Spiders thickly dotting the entire expanse of the halfway slope, converging on Hope Town.

These Giant Spiders which had never left Despair Abyss had all strangely left their nest in full force, and were attacking Hope Town.

Yue Yang frowned.

If not due to deliberate temptation, it was impossible for so many Giant Spiders to leave the Despair Abyss, and it was even more impossible for all of them to hunt for food in Hope Town.

Under the roof, Fatty Hai was as white as a sheet. Wiping his cold

sweat, his voice shivered as he spoke. “Falling Cangue Mountain is a scary place that is situated somewhere on a giant island in the middle of the sea. It’s very far from Soaring Dragon Continent and there are many scary monsters living there. It’s also called the Land Abandoned by the Gods, meaning that it is such a desolated place that it was even abandoned by the gods ... In Soaring Dragon Continent, there are some extremely evil warriors who have committed the most heinous crimes that have escaped to it, forming a Demonic Palace, whose motto is exclusively to destroy peace and wreak havoc in Soaring Dragon Continent, with the destruction of humanity as its main mission. According to legend, Falling Cangue Mountain is a place that is even scarier than the Demon Abyss. All living things there are corrupted creatures ... If anybody were to enter Falling Cangue Mountain, they would be assimilated into the evil spirits there and become unrestrained and corrupted beings!”

“Demonic Palace?” Ye Kong was speechless. He was shocked that Fatty Hai, whose knowledge could not normally measure up to even half of his, actually knew of these secrets which were practically unheard by Ye Kong himself.

“Is there really such a place? How come I have never heard of it?” Yue Bing was still somewhat in disbelief.

“There should be!” Li Qie and Li Ge confirmed this in unison.

When they thought of the madness of the mercenary soldiers, they came to the conclusion that what Fatty Hai said made sense.

Didn’t the mercenary soldiers who looked as if they were on a

mad killing spree look a lot like corrupted beings who were assimilated by the evil spirits? For the Golden Ant Eggs, they indiscriminately killed anyone in their sight, no matter whether they were friends, family or close brothers. If it was not due to the influence of the corrupted beings of this Falling Cangue Mountain's Demonic Palace, the mercenary soldiers would not behave so abnormally.

As for the existence of this Falling Cangue Mountain's Demonic Palace, Yue Yang was not in the least bit surprised.

For thousands of years, there were numerous kingdoms in the Soaring Dragon Continent which had lost in the war for power, the ones who emerged victorious became kings and the ones who lost became bandits, with numerous adherent elderly persons and youngsters fleeing overseas. It was not surprising that they would form such an organisation to resist the Soaring Dragon Continent. However, that they had such immense power made Yue Yang a little suspicious. If they did not have [Innate] Rankers at their back supporting them, would a bunch of runaways who were defeated by their opponents have such immense strength that could pose a threat to the country of Tian Luo?

Everybody knew that the Tian Luo Kingdom was officially recognised as the strongest empire and its combined might was even above that of Da Xia and Zi Jin Kingdom.

Even compared to Zi Jin Empire whose citizens were war-crazed and revered military strength, Tian Luo was still a level higher.

Yue Yang thought back to their previous encounter with Elder

Tian Suo in Da Xia Empire's clinic and the mercenary soldiers' mad spree today and became even more sure that there were turbulent undercurrents underlying the current Soaring Dragon Continent.

The poisoned soldiers of Da Xia Empire were the first to be targeted, in order to incite disharmony between the relations of Da Xia Empire and the Floating Mist Sect; Now, there is the incident of the Golden Ant Eggs, triggering the mercenary soldiers' mad spree, even leading to the ten thousand monsters surrounding the town tonight

It looked like there was definitely a powerful manipulator behind all these incidents who was pulling the strings.

Without the support of [Innate] Rankers or some powerful sect it was practically impossible to take on empires like Da Xia and Tian Luo!

To extend that thought a little, could it be that the tragic guy's father, Yue Qiu, who was the Yue Clan's most promising genius ranker, was actually killed by the Demonic Palace? Could the tragic guy's rejection of marriage and his suicide by jumping into the river be related to the Demonic Palace as well?

Also, Yi Nan seemed to bear hostility towards the Demonic Palace. It Looked like Wu Yi, Xie Huo and company were people from the Demonic Palace.

Especially Xie Huo who was able to summon forth the Demon

King Ha Xin through the blood ritual. If he wasn't a corrupted being of the Demonic Palace, how would he have so much power?

Basically, there were a lot of issues that were still unclear. There was no truth and there was no answer.

Unless he went to search for and exposed the truth behind these matters

“General, the teleportation spell has been interrupted!” A loud gasp of surprise came from the teleportation circle. The flow of people who were continuously appearing from teleportation suddenly came to a halt. A black light pillar mysteriously floated above the teleportation circle, and the teleportation circle had temporarily broken down.

“What happened?” Chaos started to erupt amongst the people who had just teleported out.

“Hurricane Expel Noble Team, immediately return to the capital to request for help.” Old General Ma's bushy eyebrows locked together even more profoundly as he urgently waved his arm to give his command.

Some of the guards behind him immediately dispersed. All of them raced to about a hundred meters away and opened up their Teleportation Scrolls. On seeing white light emerging prominently below them, the flying-type beasts in the sky immediately swooped downwards. Some of the corrupted beings who rode on the flying-type beasts continued to hide within the darkness and used their

crossbows or longbows to shoot a torrent of arrows at these soldiers who were trying to return and ask for help.

Old General Ma swiped his arm and countless soldiers immediately raised their giant shields in a well-trained manner, defending their comrades against the arrows.

There were also archers who simultaneously raised their bows and shot arrows into the sky in the direction of their enemies.

The disperse-and-teleportat tactic that the Hurricane Team deployed successfully scattered the concentrated power of the enemy's attacks... At the same time, twenty teleportation pillars of light appeared in Hope Town.

There seemed to be quite a few soldiers, who had attempted to escape and to ask for reinforcements, that were shot by the strong enemies in the sky. Only a few soldiers managed to escape into the teleportation portal in time.

“The teleportation has failed, the space has been warped by the enemy.” The official in charge of the Teleportation Circle had extremely abundant experience in his field. At one glance, he knew that the teleportation strategy did not entirely succeed. Even if there were some soldiers who successfully teleported away, the enemy had warped the space with certain Artifacts. The teleportation distance was perhaps at least a thousand li away from their intended destination. It was impossible to achieve their purpose of asking for reinforcements.

“.....” When Old General Ma heard this, his face changed a little. But he remained calm and executed another command. “All soldiers defend, Hurricane Elites follow me to the frontlines!”

“Yes!” Hundreds of elite soldiers answered loudly, and gathered behind Old General Ma.

“Hurry retreat back to the house, a great war is about to erupt! Don’t worry. I, I will protect all of you!” Even if the platoon leader was shivering in fear, but he still forced himself to remain calm, ushering Yue Yang and company back into the house. With a tall and sturdy body, he blocked the entrance of the house. Even the hand that was holding on to his weapon was shaking uncontrollably. When Yue Yang saw this, he did not know whether to laugh or be angry. How could he dare to say that he wanted to protect him with such lousy martial arts skills?

“Yue Yang, Yue Bing Ye Kong, Master Hai, are you all here?” Shouts suddenly travelled over from afar in the midst of all the noise and clamour.

“It’s sister Yi Nan, ah, no, it’s brother Yi Nan!” Fatty Hai had the fastest reaction to beauties’ voices. When he heard her, he immediately started to leap up. His speed was extremely fast, barrelling into the platoon leader and knocking him down, even stepping on his body to rush out of the entrance, all the while shouting “We are here, we are here! Yi Nan, where are you?”

“Over there!” Yue Bing’s sharp eyes immediately discovered Yi Nan, clad in a thief’s attire, standing at the core of the side of the Teleportation Circle. She hurriedly waved her hand in the air. “I

am over here, it's dangerous over there, come over quickly!"

A flying dragon in the sky was flapping its giant wings spiralled downwards.

Its sharp gigantic claws extended, preparing to grab at Yi Nan who was currently anxiously shouting for her comrades.

Fatty Hai hated that he could not immediately grow eight legs to fly over. But his speed was as slow as a tortoise's crawl as compared to the flying dragon.

Ye Kong's speed was a little faster than him, but he also could not rush over in time to save her. What made things worse was that Yi Nan had just teleported over and had yet to fully understand the dire situation. She only knew that the entire situation was in a mess and was hence hurriedly shouting for her comrades. She did not discover the thousands or even ten thousands of flying-type beasts circling in mid-air above her in the sky, let alone the fact that there was one flying dragon that was swooping down towards her direction.

"Dodge it! Dodge" Yue Bing's shouts were drowned by the noisy and raucous environment, and were unable to clearly reach Yi Nan's ears.

Just as blood thirst flashed in the eyes of the flying dragon and as it extended its claws towards Yi Nan's body, a wisp of purple flames spiralled upwards into the sky.

Yi Nan turned her head and was shocked.

Yue Yang was brandishing his Demonic Dagger that was emitting purple flames and chopped downwards towards her head like a demonic spirit Her eyes immediately turned round in shock. Why was he brandishing his dagger as if he wanted to chop her to death when they are seeing each other after such a long period of separation?

The light of the dagger flashed past.

Just as Yi Nan was sure that she was dead meat, she suddenly discovered that the blade had slashed across the top of the head, and had miraculously missed her.

Rumble!

There was a loud sound.

She only felt a splash of blood, that sprinkled down like raindrops. A loud howl of despair by beasts immediately sounded in the air. Then she felt a large shadow growing larger as it smashed directly to the ground before her, its large tail still sweeping maniacally and gigantic wings still flapping. On top of it, Yi Nan discovered that Yue Yang looked like an awe-inspiring battle god as he brandished his two daggers and hacked wildly at the beast. His moves were like the sound of thunder and the streak of lightning. Every hit produced a splash of blood from the beast as it continuously howled in pain.

The beast had suffered fatal wounds. Desperately flapping its wings, it looked as if it wanted to escape back into the sky.

Yi Nan then saw that Yue Yang, whom she had yearned for day and night and could not simply forget, had actually discarded his Crescent Blade and was roughly pulling at the flying dragon's giant tail, ruthlessly smashing it down to the ground.

Those tyrannical movements and behaviour looked as if he practically wanted to pound the dragon to its death in hate!

Boom!

The earth vibrated.

The flying dragon smashed onto the ground with a heavy thud. Its wings were broken, , its neck was twisted , and its head was smashed in. Blood poured out in all directions. It only struggled a little before falling dead in front of him.

In the middle of the flames, his back looked as strong and powerful as a God of War, with unsurpassable and unrivaled bravery.

This was the man whom she had fallen for!

Agitated, Yi Nan could not help rushing forward, encircling his waist from behind and hugging him tightly. Even though she was extremely happy, tears had started to form in her eyes These

were not tears of sorrow, but tears of joy. Part of it was the excitement of meeting again after a long period of separation, part of it was the pleasant surprise of his sudden appearance, but part of it was also the emotions stirred up at his rescue of her like a knight in shining armour and also the longing for him that she could not put in words...

Chapter 160 – Reunion Of The Lovers, Blissful Embrace!

Arrows suddenly poured down from the sky like a torrent of rain.

Unleashing his [Spherical Beheader], Yue Yang repelled all the arrows back towards the sky. Yue Yang's move scared all the attackers so much that they shivered uncontrollably.

Unfortunately, Yue Yang had yet to successfully execute the combined use of both Level Two Yin Yang and [Space Teleportation] skills masterfully. Otherwise, this combo attack would probably decimate these fellows who liked shooting arrows so much. Yang ha just experimented with combining the use of Level Two [Spherical Beheader] and Teleportation in a single slash. After executing that attack just now, Yue Yang came to a completely new realisation. He had always thought that after the countless great battles he had been through, especially the one with the Marquis of Zi Jin, he should have been able to level up even further. The time of his breakthrough should not be too far from him now. It was just that he still had not reached the tipping point for the breakthrough to happen. The flurry of arrows just now had provided an opportunity for breakthrough for him, but unfortunately, he had not prepared himself sufficiently for it. Otherwise, he would have successfully broken through his current state and levelled up.

Yue Yang's attack did not actually bounce the arrows back up high enough. All of them had fell back down onto the ground in a parabola-shaped arc, hence they did not pose much threat to most of the flying-type beasts.

However, some of the Flesh-eating Crows, Drummed Wing Lizards and Giant Bats were unlucky instead, running into the rain of arrows when they swooped down to attack the soldiers and eat their flesh. They were immediately shot by the arrows, falling to the ground.

“Look out, maintain the circle!” The Mercenary Commander in the valley who had noticed Yue Yang since back then immediately commanded his subordinates not to create any form of disturbance or attack Yue Yang.

He discovered that arrows were useless against Yue Yang.

It was simply a joke to use normal attack methods against such a Ranker.

One must use the battle strategy of pitting soldiers against soldiers and rankers against rankers. They could only execute their plan of besieging the town tonight successfully if their greatest threat was removed.

Old General Ma took in everything that was happening.

Even though he did not make a sound, he was secretly pleased.

Before this, he had already knew that the masked brat was unusually powerful. However, because of his identity as a student of Da Xia Empire, he could not ask for his help to serve Tian Luo

Kingdom. Now that he had taken the initiative to stand up and attack the enemies to rescue his comrades himself, even effectively deterring the enemies in the sky in the process, he had taken a large burden off him. It was their best glimmer of hope in such a nasty situation.

For Hope Town's current situation, every extra ounce of military strength was an extra helping hand.

Especially with the immense strength that this masked brat had that was definitely not lesser than his. This was practically God's blessings for the soldiers, mercenary soldiers and citizens of Hope Town.

Yue Yang may not use his full effort to help Hope Town, but he would at least protect his comrades.

To the enemies who had secretly planned to besiege Hope Town, Yue Yang would also become a large threat and an unpleasant shock to them.

These enemies would never have thought that such a powerful opponent would unexpectedly appear in Hope Town. Their miscalculation on Yue Yang's presence might perhaps be the start of the collapse and failure of their entire plan...

Hence, Old General Ma was secretly extremely pleased by Yue Yang's decision to help attack the enemies.

In such a dangerous situation, he was unable at present to come over and express his gratitude to Yue Yang. He quickly led his elite soldiers to counterattack against the Giant Spiders that had invaded the town.

“Use fire, spiders are afraid of fire!” Old General Ma had plenty of battle experience. With a wave of his hand, the soldiers behind him immediately shot out flame arrows. Subsequently, many soldiers threw out petroleum and lighted torches, burning the Giant Spiders which had just crawled through the walls of the town, making them squeak in panic.

“Are you alright?” Yue Yang was enjoying the wonderful sensation of Yi Nan’s fragrant, soft and lovely body that was hugging against him. It was simply so comfortable that he could not help but extend his wolfish, sinister hands to caress her back.

“I’m, I’m fine!” Yi Nan discovered that his burning big hands were caressing her back. Pleasant shivers reverberated throughout her skin. Discovering that this bastard’s hand were creeping down her back and had almost reached her butt, she hurriedly pulled his hand back up and placed it firmly on her lower back. She could not bear to release him for now. Instead, she thought that the feeling of him hugging her to him was an extremely comfortable one. It gave her a sense of security in her heart, and at the same time, the sensation of their skin pressing tightly to each other, their bodies and hearts becoming one, made her feel blissful. As for his concern for her, Yi Nan was afraid that he would see the streaks of tears on her face. She hurriedly lowered her head and secretly wiped them away.

“Sister Yi Nan-I mean, Brother Yi Nan!” Yue Bing was still little and not very aware of things related to love and whatnot. Not knowing that she was interrupting the blissful moment that her older brother and future sister-in-law were currently sharing, she flew over in excitement when she saw that Yi Nan was safe, opening her arms and hugging both Yue Yang and Yi Nan tightly.

“Brother Yi Nan, it’s great that you’re okay!” Fatty Hai also wanted to pretend that he was idiotic and opened his arms, but Ye Kong stuck out his leg and kicked him into the mud like a dog.

With the crowd gathering near her, Yi Nan immediately felt embarrassed.

It was fine if it was just Fatty Hai and Ye Kong. Yi Nan already knew that they could tell that she was a girl.

But she still wanted to maintain her identity of ‘Brother Yi Nan’ in front of Yue Yang so that he would tell her more of his true feelings and talk about things that she would never hear if he knew that she was female.

To prevent Yue Yang from being suspicious or misunderstanding, Yi Nan explained a little vaguely. “Ah, this is a custom in my hometown. When people meet again after a long period of separation, we would mostly hug each other to express familiarity and well wishes to each other. Just like this!” As Yi Nan explained herself, she hugged Yue Bing. Yue Yang inwardly laughed, but he pretended to not know anything. He sighed deliberately. “This custom is really not particularly pleasing. It’s fine if one were to hug a beauty, that would be good fortune. But to

hug a guy, it really does not feel good!”

Yue Yang even pretended that goose bumps had arisen on his body, to express his discomfort of hugging Yi Nan.

Yi Nan almost wanted to kick him. She had never seen such an idiot like him!

When Fatty Hai heard this, he immediately pretended to be excited. “I like Yi Nan’s hometown custom. Come, let’s have a hug too.”

Ye Kong and the Li Clan brothers immediately hit him to the ground simultaneously. Ye Kong then pounced on him and started to beat him up. “My hometown’s custom is that once we see somebody irritating, we will beat him up, just like now!”

Seizing this opportunity, the Li Clan brothers started to stomp on Fatty Hai’s meaty butt, nodding matter-of-factly. “How coincidental, our hometown also has the same custom!”

Yi Nan inwardly laughed. Recalling that this state of affairs was caused by her, she felt sorry for Fatty Hai. She hurriedly pulled Yue Yang and Yue Bing away, in case Fatty Hai said even more wrong things that would caused him misfortune. She firstly said a few pleasantries to Yue Bing, before asking Yue Yang. “How is it? You attended a few days of classes in the academy, did you see any beauties or campus belles?”

Yue Bing was afraid that her future sister-in-law would feel jealous, so she immediately shot Yue Yang a pointed look, trying to indicate to him to not make any irresponsible remarks.

But Yue Yang pretended not to see them. With one hand over Yi Nan's lovely shoulders, he said. "I didn't see any beauties or campus belles. My main objective is still to attend the academy. But on the first day, I happened to pick up a sexy Drunk Cat Oneesan downstairs. Tsk tsk, her figure was really hot! I'll describe it to you in detail when we had the opportunity. I guarantee that you will salivate in lust."

"....." Yue Bing put her hand to her forehead. What a headache, this future sister-in-law would now be jealous enough to fill three big bowls of vinegar.

(Shiro: jealous in Chinese is 吃醋 – which literally meant eat vinegar)

"Really? What happened to the Drunk Cat Oneesan after that?" It would be a lie if Yi Nan was not at the least bit jealous, but she believed that Yue Yang would not immediately sleep with a Drunk Cat Oneesan that he had just picked up. At most, he would just gallantly rescue the beauty and revive the Drunk Cat Oneesan from her sleep.

"After that, I brought her back to the dorm. If not for her Golden-ranked Little Panda Niu Niu protecting her... hehe!" Yue Yang grinned conspiratorially as he patted Yi Nan's lovely shoulder. His underlying meaning was "We are both guys, you know about this stuff". His lustful expression made Yi Nan roll her eyes secretly. With such a beauty in front of him that he could not even tell, he

was still telling her about pushing down the Drunk Cat Oneesan. He was practically an idiot that made her at a loss of whether to laugh or be angry at him!

“Brother was actually very well-behaved. When he brought her back to the dorm, he just laid her on the bed and went away to study. When the Drunk Cat Oneesan woke up, she started to beat Ye Kong, Master Hai and company up. On the other hand, Brother was studying and researching on beasts with me outside. Because Brother was a good student, he didn’t get beaten up...” Yue Bing hurriedly spoke words of praises about her brother.

“I don’t think I’m that good... Did you know that she even left a note for me? This proves that she kept me in her mind constantly and can’t forget about me.” Yue Yang was immensely pleased with himself, bragging about how overly handsome he was that beauties left love letters for him!

“What note?” Sure enough, upon hearing this, Yi Nan become tense.

“Isn’t this one?” Yue Yang took out a note from his robe. Yi Nan immediately snatched it over. Seeing that it was an adorable little paw print, she was puzzled. What did this mean? A secret sign for a date? A secret love letter?

“Yi Nan Brother Yi Nan, this was left for him by the Little Panda Niu Niu, she likes to eat sweets.” Yue Bing started to giggle.

“I see. Congratulations, Yue Yang, you successfully captured a

little girl's heart." Upon seeing Yue Bing's gestures to describe the Little Panda Niu Niu, she realised that the girl was just a little kid, and was immediately humoured inwardly. She also felt ashamed for her own nervousness. Why was she even jealous of a kid! This fellow may be good-looking, but he was actually a big idiot. He had been cooped up in his home so much that he did not even know how to win favour with girls. Also, he always wore his mask. No wonder no beauties had fallen for him!

Her fate was intertwined with him. Even though he appeared to be a little lustful, he still ultimately belonged to her. No one could snatch him away from her!

Thinking about this, Yi Nan was elated. She did not mind Yue Yang's hand that was hugging her shoulders, and even pressed her body closer to him. She did not need to care about her actions in front of Yue Bing, since she was already treating her as her future sister-in-law. She also did not need to hide what she was saying from her. With a hint of bashfulness, she said in a low voice. "I have an easy method for you to see beauties. Next time, I'll introduce you to my little sister, I guarantee that you will salivate in lust with one look at her! If you want to see her, I'll make the arrangements. Do you want to?"

"Hmm, I'll think about it." Yue Yang pretended to be mindful of Yue Bing's presence beside him and hence looked as if it was inappropriate to express what he really thought. However, he seemed to be anxious and filled with anticipation at this suggestion. This made Yue Bing giggle secretly and Yi Nan extremely happy.

With the conclusion of their small reunion, when Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and company came over, everybody started to feel tense about the situation again.

The flying-type beasts in the sky were temporarily biding their time. They had landed on the rocks of the mountain summit, looking down at Hope Town.

Near the enclosed walls outside the town, countless Giant Spiders were trying to crawl in. There were poisonous fluids and spider webs all over. From time to time, there were soldiers caught by the spider webs. Luckily, there were enough soldiers defending the town. There were elite soldiers guarding within every few meters of distance. When they saw the spider webs, they immediately torched them with fire.

The spider webs, which were immune to blades and spears, were extremely vulnerable to fire instead, melting immediately upon burning. Currently, there were not a lot of casualties amongst the soldiers. The soldiers which were injured or poisoned were also bitten by the smaller spiders.

As long as they took the requisite antidote, the soldiers' vital organs were not bitten and treatment was rendered in time, their lives were generally safe.

But it was merely the start of their attacks now.

The Giant Spiders which the soldiers killed was not even one-thousandth of the total number. Also, there were still numerous

spiders crawling out in dense packs from the Despair Abyss, spreading across the mountain slopes, forming a ghastly sight. Old General Ma furrowed his brows tightly together. He could tell that his soldiers' strength was exhausted quickly and that their beasts were starting to suffer from more injuries. Now that there were no reinforcements, they might not even be able to kill all these spiders in one whole day and night ... There were still thousands of flying-type beasts and Corrupted Beings on the mountaintop that were eyeing the town covetously, merely waiting for the best chance to attack.

This battle's initiative was entirely controlled by the enemy. It was practically a fight to the death.

If the masked lad was willing to lend a helping hand, they could perhaps last till dawn. Otherwise, just with these two thousand soldiers under himself, they would definitely not be able to last beyond tonight.

Old General Ma immediately turned to look at Yue Yang's direction. However, he suddenly discovered that there was a ranker riding on a Black Steel Winged Griffin in mid air that ignored the ranged attacks of the soldiers, loftily hovering in the air. He suddenly spoke out to Yue Yang and posed a proposal, "You guys are not soldiers, and also aren't our targets. We have decided to let you go. Go now and leave this place immediately!"

Everybody was looking at Yue Yang. Some were worried that he would accept the proposal, some were envious that he got a chance to leave, some resented his good luck, some others wished that he would stay and fight together with them, some shook their heads

in despair, while some people pleaded with their eyes ...

Ye Kong and company's eyes only revealed one piece of information. That was, they were resolute to follow Yue Yang's decision.

They were not willing to fight against strong enemies, but they could not bear to abandon so many soldiers and leave just by themselves.

Hence, they chose to listen to his decision.

As for Yi Nan and Yue Bing, both of them would definitely support Yue Yang's decisions.

“When I was three, my father taught me not to believe what the enemies say. Did you think that everybody are as dumb as you are? Save your cheap tricks and saliva, nobody will fall into your trap to lure us away.” When Yue Yang said this, the surrounding soldiers immediately heaved a sigh of relief, and started to break out in cheers.

Even Old General Ma who was a distance away also nodded his head resolutely. As predicted, he did not make an error of judgment of this person. He did not fall into the enemy's' trap nor abandon the soldiers and leave alone by himself.

A good man should be like this.

Old General Ma looked at Yue Yang. Suddenly, an air of confidence and heroic spirit lifted his heart. With this man here, the situation did not look as bleak now.

The expression of the ranker riding on the Black Steel Winged Griffin immediately changed.

With regards to Yue Yang's answer, he seemed to feel that he had suffered great humiliation. He immediately somersaulted and jumped down from the Griffin's back, pointed at Yue Yang and coldly snorted. "Since you want to die, I'll send you on your way! Don't think that you can be cocky with some lousy martial arts skills. We only treasure talents. With that arrogance of yours, don't blame us from not holding back. You egoistical young fellow, die!"

Yue Yang's Level Three [Divine Vision] could see the enemy's real power that he had hidden. This masked ranker was even stronger than the two that he had met in the Ant Hole.

He should be an Advanced [Senior Elder] who owned strengthening-type beasts and was an expert in martial arts. His power was probably not below Old General Ma's.

This fellow was also the strongest one amongst all the Corrupted Rankers that Yue Yang had met.

With just one sub-rank difference, he was still two times stronger than the two [Elder]s that he met at the entrance of the Ant Hole added together. However, Yue Yang, who had defeated the

Marquis of Zi Jin, was of course not afraid of him. But in this situation where it was inappropriate to expose Xiao Wen Li and the rest under the scrutiny of many public eyes, Yue Yang could not use them in battle. Yue Yang thought that it would not be easy to defeat him just by relying on his strength alone.

What made Yue Yang vigilant secretly was that there was a Ranker who was multiple times stronger than this fellow hiding someplace in the darkness, observing the battlefield.

That person must be the true leader of all these attackers!

Faced with the enemy's arrogant challenge, Yue Yang's reaction was to yawn lazily. "If you want to fight, just start. Stop saying so much rubbish. This young master is about to fall asleep with your yap!"

"Roar!" With this, the soldiers' emotions were stirred up. All of them raised their arms and cheered loudly.

"Yah! Yah! Yah!" They shouted loudly in unison as if to make Yue Yang even more awe-inspiring. The shouts reverberated throughout the skies and earth as the soldiers' morale soared up high!

Chapter 161 – Don't Show Off Too Much, Or You'll Be Struck By Lightning!

“Black Winged Tan Wu Fang, your opponent is me!” Old General Ma received the blade that was coming towards him, charging forward with big steps.

In his heart, he felt that they must not lose Yue Yang, this young one.

It didn't matter if they were in a dangerous situation and had to force themselves to be strong, or if they have to be diplomatic with other countries. The best way to threaten their enemies was to keep and train the strong Rankers in their midst in the best way possible. Old General Ma knew what kind of person the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang was. He was the 'Black Winged Human Demon', one of the Demonic Palaces' Sky, Earth and Humanity three different Demons. His name was renowned as the 108th rank in the Falling Cangue Mountain's Demonic Palace. On the surface, it seemed like he was weak because he couldn't manage to enter the top 100. However, this was definitely not because his abilities was lacking, it was because his achievement points weren't enough yet. If one took into consideration how he managed to climb up from over 3000th rank to 108th rank in 10 years by fighting countless battles, one would be able to imagine how strong he was.

Old General Ma reckoned that the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang would definitely be within the top 100 amongst the Demonic Palace's ranking in terms of abilities, or maybe even the top 50.

With regards to the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang, Old General Ma

was extremely familiar.

He was one of the rebels from the Tian Luo Kingdom, who had escaped to the Falling Cangue Mountain. He was once the audacious, disguised robber who attacked the Princess of Da Xia who had come to Tian Luo Kingdom for a marriage

When his plot had failed, he became a wanted man and was hunted after by strong Rankers from both Tian Luo and Da Xia Kingdom.

He was heavily injured a lot of times and had almost died, but he managed to escape from dangerous situations every time.

His streak continued until the Tian Luo Kingdom finally dispatched one of their Five Enshrined Elders, Wan Li Sha, also known as “Sandstorm”, who finally managed to capture him and upheld justice for all.

(Shiro: Wan Li Sha also meant Thousand Miles Sand)

However, right at the day of his capital punishment, the strong Sky Demons from the Demonic Palace, “Sky Pearl”, “Sky Law” and “Sky Wrath” created diversions and saved him with a crafty escape plan. Throughout history, the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang was the only offender who had managed to move the Three Major Sky Demons into action to save him. It could be clearly seen from this how greatly the Demonic Palace had thought of him.

After recovering from his deadly injuries, Tan Wu Fang, who was almost like a disabled person initially, recovered his previous

battle power, and even improved his strength.

In a few years, his rank continued to increase unceasingly from countless battles, defeating hundreds of demons. He rose from 3000th plus to the 108th rank. Finally, he rose to become one of the Sky, Earth and Human Demons, the “Human Demon”. His promotion speed almost rivalled the Falling Cangue Mountain’s fastest promotion record. The holder of this record rose to the top 10 from the 5000th rank in just two years, finally ranking just below the extremely strong Sky Demon Ranker, “Sky Calamity”.

Although Old General Ma had never fought with the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang before, he knew that this renegade Tian Luo rebel, who killed people easily as if they were flies, was definitely not any weaker than him.

He was worried that Yue Yang was too young, did not have enough experience and would fall for Black Winged Tan Wu Fang’s tricks easily.

Hence, he decided to step forward bravely and meet the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang head-on.

“Ma Xing Kong, I don’t want to fight you, you are too old for me!” Black Winged Tan Wu Fang didn’t even take the Old General Ma into consideration. In reality, the Old General Ma wasn’t really old, it was just that his expression was a little strict and his brows were always tied up in a knot. He was also experienced and knowledgeable, and furthermore, he loved his soldiers as if he loved his own children. Hence, he was nicknamed Old General Ma.

“It’s useless to try provoking me.” Old General Ma wasn’t affected at all. He walked over with grand steps as he summoned his strengthening-type beast, Burst Giant Bear, to add extra strength to his body. His arms started to transform into a bear’s arms.

“You are still as foolish as before...”

Black Winged Tan Wu Fang suddenly took out a Crystal Stone and summoned a cloud of strange, grey-coloured fog.

When the strong mountain winds blew, that cloud of grey-coloured fog dispersed in all directions.

Everyone immediately smelled a kind of potent and extremely fragrant smell, but nobody felt unwell. Instead, they felt their salivas building up in their mouth as they quickly gulped it down. Fatty Hai, especially, was drooling so much that he had created a waterfall of drool.

Old General Ma, who was walking so determinedly and domineeringly like a huge mountain, suddenly waved his sword in pain and stabbed it into the ground.

He tried to prop himself with the sword, but that hard metal sword bent and broke under his weight.

Under the public’s gazes, Old General Ma dug his bear-

transformed arms deep into a rock.

Although there wasn't much difference in his expression, only a deeper frown on his thick eyebrows, an observant soldier would be able to notice that at this time, the Old General Ma's back was already drenched with his sweat. His arms and legs that had dug deep into the ground were also slightly trembling. It was extremely obvious that he had suffered from the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang's secret attack. His body was in serious pain. However, Old General Ma had a willpower made of steel. He was still enduring and persisting with all of his efforts.

Suddenly, the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang appeared right in front of Old General Ma.

He raised his legs and landed heavy kicks on Old General Ma's body, kicking his body right and left repeatedly. He also stomped on the Old General Ma's bloodied face, laughing disdainfully, "Ma Xing Kong, one of the top ten generals in the Tian Luo Kingdom! Aren't you strong? Come and get up then, come and beat me up! I have even already stepped on your face, aren't you angry? Go on, get angry and let out your fury! Raise your bear palms, make me afraid of you!"

"I'm definitely not angry. Don't even think of [Enraging] me!" Old General Ma's face was swollen from the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang's stomps, but his glare was still as sharp as a knife and as cold as ice.

"Traitor, you dare to hurt the General! I'm going to kill you!" Two [Grandmasters]-ranked Deputy Generals immediately charged

forward bravely without caring about their lack in power against the powerful enemy. They simply couldn't stop themselves when they saw that their Old General Ma had been humiliated and stepped on the face by the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang.

“Annoying trashes, begone!” The Black Winged Tan Wu Fang waved his hands and immediately summoned a strong wind. The two Deputy Generals were flown ten meters away, coughing up blood when they hit the ground.

Old General Ma suddenly howled loudly as his eyes turned bloody red. His whole body slowly turned into a bear, but he quickly squashed his fury down and returned to his original appearance. “Everyone, stand back. I can defeat this traitor.” He then commanded his subordinates to retreat.

“So turns out that he had used the Mad Bees Fog to [Enrage] Old General Ma... Isn't that mere child's play!” Yue Yang had used his Level 3 [Divine Eyes] to see through the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang's trickeries.

This fellow had actually summoned a rare kind of special-type [Mad Bees Fog] beast. The fog that he emitted just now was actually the fine honey powders that the bees had produced. Normal beasts would not be affected when they smelled it, but bear-type beasts would immediately lose control and go insane. This Black Winged Tan Wu Fang had purposely summoned a beast that was the Old General Ma's Burst Giant Bear's arch-nemesis. He wanted to provoke the Old General Ma and make him go insane with anger, turning into a killing machine who would kill anyone within his sight, just like those mercenaries who had slaughtered

each other like madmans. He wanted him to destroy the whole of Hope Town.

As for Old General Ma, he'd rather be beaten than be angered as he gritted his teeth and endured his humiliation. He continued to resist the Mad Bees Fog's smell until it had completely dispersed away.

His strengthening-type beast Burst Giant Bear had an unparalleled defense and strength, so he wouldn't be injured by the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang's kicks. This was only humiliation by words designed to make him lose control and be angry.

"Ma Xing Kong, look at yourself. Do you even still look like the reputable Great Ten Generals? Why don't you change your name to Miserable Worm instead?" The Black Winged Tan Wu Fang raised his large leg and bashed it furiously on the Old General Ma's face. He humiliated him as much as he liked, his words sharp and unkind. He continued to provoke him, hoping that the Old General Ma would go into rage and lose control, becoming an insane violent Giant Bear who would kill people blindly.

"I think the Miserable Worm nickname is more suitable for you!" Suddenly, Yue Yang appeared right behind the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang's back, without him even knowing when.

"What?" The Black Winged Tan Wu Fang froze. Someone had actually sneaked right behind him without any indication at all.

Yue Yang was extremely shameless. Normally, people would

Speak first before launching their attacks. However, he was different. He would attack first and warn the enemy later. He had kicked the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang squarely on his butt and sent him flying away before leisurely spoke out his sentence of warning, “Let me demonstrate how people usually stomp miserable worms to death!”

The Black Winged Tan Wu Fang was furious. He break the impact of Yue Yang attack in mid air and prepared to flew down to counter-attack Yue Yang.

However, suddenly, Yue Yang had re-appeared once again at his back.

Clasping his fists together, Yue Yang swung them down hard right at the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang’s back.

When his opponent crashed down to the ground like a meteor, Yue Yang had even managed to do a roundhouse kick at the exact place on the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang’s back that he had knocked earlier.

“Despicable!” The Black Winged Tan Wu Fang broke his fall with his hands as he crashed to the ground, but he still sunk deep into the ground from the large impact of Yue Yang’s force. Without waiting for the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang to struggle free from the earth, Yue Yang had already floated down to the ground right in front of him. The Black Winged Tan Wu Fang’s expressions immediately became frozen. Wasn’t this brat’s movement speed too fast to be possible? He had came crashing down, yet Yue Yang had managed to float down before him. What kind of beast had

this brat actually summoned that made his speed even faster than himself?

“You haven’t seen despicable yet!” Yue Yang revealed a smile that would even make demons shiver as he coolly raised his legs and kicked at the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang’s chin hard. Yue Yang kicked him out of the earth like a soccer ball.

The Black Winged Tan Wu Fang flew ten metres away, but he immediately bounced back and roared furiously as he returned back with a speed even faster than a hurricane to attack Yue Yang.

Boom!

His fist punched into empty air. Yue Yang had already disappeared from his original location.

Unbeknownst to the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang, Yue Yang had already soundlessly appeared right behind his back.

As the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang revealed a disbelieving expression on his face, Yue Yang’s right hand had already pressed onto the back of his head as he smashed the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang’s whole body down to the ground. Yue Yang then pushed his face forward, drawing a trail of pit on the ground with Black Winged Tan Wu Fang’s face, before finally smashing his face against a wall. As the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang tried to struggle free, Yue Yang used his other hand to grab onto the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang’s left leg and lifted him off the ground, before smashing his whole body onto the wall.

“Boom!” A deafening sound resounded.

The mountain wall crumbled to dust, burying the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang deep inside.

The previously overbearing and arrogant Black Winged Human Demon Tan Wu Fang had practically been beaten up by Yue Yang to the point he didn't recognise which way was north. Watching this, the soldiers couldn't help but to burst out in a loud cheer!

The declining soldier's morale had once again rose a hundredfold higher.

“Ahhh, this is too refreshing! Good job in beating him up. Beat this son of a bitch even more!” Fatty Hai was so excited that his face was red. Realizing that Yi Nan and Yue Bing were looking towards him, he immediately corrected his speech, “Uhm, actually, I am a gentleman. That sentence just now, I was merely helping to shout what Ye Kong and the other monkeys who did not have a good upbringing would say. I take extra attention on elegant demeanours and bearing. You guys could see this immediately in the refined manner I usually carried myself. I speak politely, have a kind heart, am enthusiastic and concerned about other's welfare. Such a low-profiled gentleman like me would definitely not tell you that I had once donated all my pocket money to victims of natural disasters as a kind act. I was only six years old at that time... Ah? Who hit me?”

He had not even finished speaking before Ye Kong and the Li

Clan Brothers started to administer his daily fix of beatings.

In the darkness, there was suddenly a sharp and cold voice calling out, “Fool! He had already seen through all of your weaknesses from the start. I have already said before. Don’t summon the Mad Bees Fog in front of a strong Ranker, you would only decrease your battle power greatly that way!”

“Give me more time and I will personally kill him!” The utterly miserable Black Winged Tan Wu Fang pulled his body out of the rocks and calmed his fury as he glared at Yue Yang.

“Don’t make me wait too long.” That sharp, intense voice that was as sharp as needles harrumphed before disappearing into the darkness.

“That scared me... Hey, mysterious expert, don’t show off too much or you’ll be struck by lightning*!” Yue Yang ridiculed the voice and took out his Crescent Blade at the same time. He then charged forward together with Hui Tai Lang from the left and the right of the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang respectively. His expression seemed to say, “This young master had only just started to reveal his true strength.”

(Shiro: Uhh for those who can read Chinese, this is the raws for added humor – 不要太装逼, 装逼被雷劈!)

The Black Winged Tan Wu Fang froze as he hurriedly called for the Black Steel Wing Griffin in the sky to come down, fusing together with it.

His body became more sturdy and more masculine as his muscles rippled.

A pair of Black Steel Wing appeared on his back, and his fingers turned into terrifying claws that could even split metals apart. In an instant, his battle power had burst up to more than dozens of times.

Right now, this was his most powerful state. He had finally become the true 'Black Winged Human Demon' Tan Wu Fang now.

Just as the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang flew upwards with confidence and was about to tear Yue Yang into shreds, that sharp voice that was as sharp as needles suddenly shouted out anxiously again, "Cancel your summon quickly, cancel your strengthening fusion! Fool! You have fallen into his trap! In that brat's body, he had some..."

"Spores." Yue Yang smiled brilliantly like the sun as he helped the voice to complete his sentence.

When everyone present was all baffled by this, the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang who was flying in the air suddenly shouted "AHH!" and fell to the ground like a piece of log.

Chapter 162 – Mastering Fire Ability

Hui Tai Lang saw an opportunity and immediately pounced over to bite.

The Black Winged Tan Wu Fang had only lost control of a part of his body. He did not completely lose his ability to battle. He tried his best to struggle and raised his hands to counterattack. The people watched the whole scene in astonishment. When Hui Tai Lang had bitten the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang's shoulder maniacally, he started to roll away and kick in the air. However, when Hui Tai Lang jumped to the side and bit hard on his leg, this Black Winged Tan Wu Fang started to raise both his hands and flailed wildly instead... He seemed to have jumbled up the control of his hands and feet.

However, his power was still there.

Even a casual sweep of his flailing arms or legs across a hard rock surface would leave a deep crack.

The wings on Tan Wu Fang's back flapped as he rushed up towards the sky.

However, he had completely lost his sense of direction, crashing everywhere like a blind fly. he would suddenly change altitude, and fly upside-down at times, crashing into the wall. At other times, he would fly at dizzying speeds towards the floor... The more Black Winged Tan Wu Fang wanted to control his body, the weirder his actions were.

Everyone's eyes were on Yue Yang.

Everyone knew that this was his doing. The only thing they didn't know was what he meant when he said 'Spores'.

"What a fool!" From the darkness, a mysterious cloaked person slowly appeared. His eyes were faintly green like a firefly's glow. There were some luminous decorations on the face of that cloaked man. With a flick of his giant sleeve, he swept the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang onto the ground, and pressed his right hand against his head. Tan Wu Fang who was originally rampaging violently around, became like a little worm in his hands, completely unable to struggle.

A surge of towering flames burst out from the palm of the mysterious man.

At the same time, everyone felt a wave of heat pouncing towards them. Following that, they smelt something weird, like the smell of charred flesh. Then, they heard Tan Wu Fang let out an extremely painful cry.

Tan Wu Fang fell onto the ground, his entire body as black as charcoal.

The soldiers could not help but hold their breaths at the hooded fellow's actions.

Not only them, even Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were scared. Did he just kill the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang with a single move? Before that, Yue Yang had beaten Tan Wu Fang black and blue, but although he had been beaten up so much, Tan Wu Fang did not even suffer any serious injuries and still possessed extremely strong combat abilities. But now, this cloaked guy had actually killed Tan Wu Fang instantly with a single move.

With this as the basis, wouldn't this cloaked guy's strength be much stronger compared to Yue Yang?

Everyone's hearts beat in unison like drums, pounding heavily.

Yue Yang slightly furrowed his eyebrows as he looked towards the mysterious cloaked man.

He noticed that this mysterious cloaked man had used a special-type Fire Spirit to completely incinerate Black Winged Tan Wu Fang's body inside out, causing the spores that he had implanted into Tan Wu Fang to be burnt totally.

Originally, the implanted spores had fused with the strengthening-type beast, fusing into Tan Wu Fang's body. Unless his beast was taken out, it was impossible to eliminate the effects of the spores.

However, this mysterious cloaked man could use his Fire Spirit to incinerate the spores. He only incinerated the spores, without going overboard and killing the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang. This level of control was really ingenious. This mysterious cloaked man

was definitely an expert who was well versed in using fire. Regardless of whether it was his beasts, techniques or body composition, all of them would definitely be the perfect combination to make full use of fire energy. This fellow was definitely the second strongest enemy he had encountered after the Marquis of Zi Jin. If he wasn't careful, he would easily be defeated.

Facing a strong enemy, there was no fear in Yue Yang's heart. On the contrary, his thirst for battle became stronger.

His blood boiled.

Enemies like this were exactly the kind of targets for battle he was looking for.

Every time he defeated an enemy like this, it would be another round of upgrades, another leap in strength...

"Be careful, he's the 'Luminous Demon', Ding Zang! He's a Demon with extreme proficiency in controlling fire! In the Demonic Hall, his strength is ranked 38th. He's the Demon with the most hope of becoming a Sky Demon." Old General Ma stood up shakily from the ground. Although the scent of honey did not completely disappear, but because Black Winged Tan Wu Fang fainted, the Mad Bees Fog had dissipated, causing it to lose most of its ability to affect Old General Ma's mind while he had transformed into a bear.

"It's 36th. I had just took out the 36th-ranked 'Ghost Face' earlier

on.” The mysterious cloaked man rebuked using his sharp voice.

“He seems to be the leader of the corrupted attackers. We’ll fight this strong enemy together.” Old General Ma knew that although he was adept at fighting wars, there was a huge gap between his strength compared to the Luminous Demon Ding Zang. He had to fight him alongside Yue Yang, otherwise this battle would be dangerous.

“You’re not fit to be my opponent. Only he might be able to take one or two of my hits.” The Luminous Demon Ding Zang completely ignored Old General Ma.

The Old General Ma rushed at him in a fit of rage. A pair of huge hands crashed down blocking the heavens and the sky.

The Luminous Demon Ding Zang waved his huge sleeves. Blazes of flame swept across the sky.

Old General Ma hurriedly protected his eyes using both of his arms, and was forcefully pushed back by the Fire Spirit that pounced on him head on. He tried his utmost to stand firm. However, the terrifying Fire Spirit could not be resisted and pushed him away. On the floor, a deep pit was formed that stretched for many metres.

As the crowd looked on, they were all overcome with shock.

Just with a single Fire Spirit, he could push Old General Ma that

possessed an unmatched power back. Just how strong was this fellow?!

The next thing they knew, another terrifying event had happened. As Old General Ma slowly put down his bearified arms, the soldiers discovered that his face was still burnt black although he had blocked the flames with his arms. Under the gazes of thousands of men, Old General Ma fell... Just with a single move, without even touching the body, he was defeated by the Luminous Demon Ding Zang. The two Deputy Generals hurriedly went forward, thinking of saving Old General Ma. Suddenly, they cried out “Ouch!”. As it turned out, when they grabbed onto the Old General Ma’s shoulderplates with their hands, they found that the steel shoulderplates were glowing red from the fire.

Terrifying.

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others swallowed nervously at the same time.

Yue Bing and Yi Nan however looked nervously towards Yue Yang. They were both worried for him.

With regard to the flames of the Luminous Demon Ding Zang, although Yue Yang had a little headache over it, he was not afraid of it. No matter how overpowered this fellow was, compared to the Marquis of Zi Jin, their strengths were still significantly far apart. After fighting with Grandma Chi and exhausting a great amount of energy, the Marquis of Zi Jin still had enough power remaining to be able to kill him instantly. In the end, he even let himself be defeated by Yue Yang.

Why would he need to be fearful of a Luminous Demon Ding Zang!?

The only problem was that after fighting a bitter battle against the Marquis of Zi Jin, getting berserk twice at the bottom of the valley, the amount of Innate Qi in his body had been heavily used up.

This, was what Yue Yang really had a headache over...

However, only in this kind of extreme challenges and dangerous situation could Yue Yang temper himself, improve, and make breakthroughs.

Yue Yang had a slight grin at the corner of his mouth. He waved towards Yue Bing and Yi Nan, signalling to them not to be worried. At the same time, he took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade, then walked with big strides towards the Luminous Demon Ding Zang.

“This is my Hellfire, it is absolutely impossible for you to defend against it.” Ding Zang had great self-confidence.

His elemental-type beast was Hellfire. Unless it was a beast that was its direct weakness, anyone who went up against him would be at a severe disadvantage.

Most importantly, this elemental-type beast Hellfire was a Guardian Beast. It would never die, nor would it betray its master.

Not only that, it belonged to the Flame of Hells Category. It was one of the best beasts in the world. Possessing a Gold-ranked Level 6 Hellfire at his side, Ding Zang did not believe that any opponent who was a Level 6 Advanced [Senior Elder] or weaker would be able to withstand his attacks. Even if it was a Level 6 Advanced [Senior Elder], without possessing a beast that could directly counter his beast's element, they would probably lose to him.

The “Ghost Face” who was ranked 36th was actually a little stronger than him.

However, he eventually died to his Hellfire too.

Hellfire was practically an invincible existence!

Ding Zang was very confident in himself. He did not believe that this lad could take his next attack. No matter whether he had a strengthening-type or battle-type beast, there was only one conclusion when he chose to fight against his elemental-type Hellfire – being charred to death!

Yue Yang continued to walk forward step by step.

He too had the faith that he would be able to obtain the final victory... His method was to break through those flames!

The Luminous Demon Ding Zang flicked his giant sleeves, conjuring a great blaze of flames. Those flames seemed to have life, riding the hot air currents and pouncing fiercely towards Yue

Yang.

Some of the soldiers could not bear to watch any further. Under these flames that soared through the sky, they were afraid that the result would be the same as Old General Ma – falling in a single blow.

“God, please protect him!” Yue Bing and Yi Nan both closed their eyes and prayed for Yue Yang.

“Ah...” Fatty Hai let out a cry of fear.

“Heavens!” Ye Kong and the Li brothers both cried out involuntarily as well. This scared Yue Bing and Yi Nan until their faces had turned white, almost fainting onto the ground. When they opened their tear-filled eyes, they found out that Yue Yang had been pushed back ten metres, just like Old General Ma. They could not help but cry out. They were afraid that Yue Yang would end up like Old General Ma, falling with a wave of Ding Zang’s hand.

However, a miracle occurred.

Yue Yang put down the blade he used to shield his front. He did not fall like Old General Ma, and was even continuing to walk towards Ding Zang.

Ding Zang could not believe his own eyes. This lad had received his attack, but why was he still standing?

Anger swelled inside him. A cloud of raging flames that was a few times larger than before rumbled loudly. In his hands, it formed into a giant blazing ball that looked like the sun, as he angrily threw it towards Yue Yang...

Boom!

Under the gaze of the crowd, Yue Yang took it head-on without dodging it, using the Hui Jin Magic Blade to intercept it.

An explosion resounded in the air and everyone fell to the ground from the impact. Some roofs and walls of houses cracked, while some houses were even overturned from the hot blast of wind.

In the hot blast of wind, Ye Kong and the others struggled hard to hold on. Trying their utmost to breathe in the suffocating burning air, they tried to find Yue Yang's figure in the darkness. Yue Bing and Yi Nan was already crying until tears were streaming down their faces. They did not know Yue Yang's true strength, hence they were extremely worried for his safety.

At a distance 30 metres away from Ding Zang, there was a single figure standing.

It was Yue Yang.

He was still standing, holding his blades with both of his hands, not moving even a single inch.

Just when others were worried that he would fall to the ground like Old General Ma, suddenly, Yue Yang moved his body forward and continued to walk towards the Luminous Demon Ding Zang.

“This, this is impossible!” Ding Zang was dumbstruck. This brat’s strength was clearly more or less the same as Ma Xing Kong’s, but why was he able to withstand his fivefold Hellfire?

“Are you okay?” Ye Kong couldn’t help but to shout out. However, before he blurted it out, he thought to leave out Yue Yang’s name. He must not let the enemies know Yue Yang’s name! Not even considering what the outcome of this battle will be, the Demonic Palace in itself was already so terrifying. It wouldn’t be good if they tried to find him afterwards.

“This is just child’s play! Playing with fire is also my speciality!” Yue Yang suddenly revealed a shining smile and waved towards Yue Bing and Yi Nan, gesturing to them not to worry about him.

“Tenfold Hellfire!” The Luminous Demon Ding Zang was extremely furious. His whole body suddenly ignited in fire. His cloak turned into ashes as he turned into a blazing man. A pillar of dark red fire soared up to the sky ten meters tall, then it slowly coagulated and become a giant flame that looked like a Fire Dragon. There was a dragon’s head, body, wings and tail, and every single part of the Fire Dragon’s body was equipped with raging flames. The Fire Dragon then tore the air apart as it rushed towards Yue Yang.

At this time, Fatty Hai and Yue Bing had already summoned their grimoires and erected their shields.

Only those who had shields to protect themselves ended up safe in the battlefield. Every single soldier had been sent flying by the blazing firestorm, and houses had all collapsed one after another, the house's woods raging in flames. The whole of Hope Town had turned into sandstorm and fallen into darkness. Only a single Dragon could be seen in the middle, trying to swallow a black figure.

Ye Kong and the others cried in their hearts, "It's the end!"

At this time, they didn't even hope for Yue Yang to be able to continue fighting, they only hoped that he had summoned his grimoire and erected his shield as defense on time. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to escape unscathed.

He must never face the flames head on. That was not a hellfire that a person could defend against alone!

But Yue Yang's actions and moves were still stubborn as ever.

Instead of erecting his shield, he drew a circle of light leisurely with the Hui Jin Magic Blade in his hands. It resembled a rainbow, gently flowing like water. The Fire Dragon devoured the earth and the sky, meeting with the flowing water-like slash that Yue Yang had unleashed head-on. Ding Zang thought that this brat would definitely be finished this time. In the next second, he would definitely be burnt into ashes by his Fire Dragon. That brat should

stop dreaming about extinguishing his tenfold Hellfire with that kind of small and powerless slash!

A cold smile appeared at the corner of Ding Zang's lips.

This brat was practically seeking death!

In the next second, as Yue Bing and Yi Nan watched nervously that they almost fainted from the tension, Yue Yang had actually not been swallowed by the Fire Dragon. Instead, he had slowly revolved himself around that Fire Dragon whose body was a hundred times larger than himself... With every revolution that he made, that Fire Dragon lost a part of its body. In the sky, a mysterious ring of fire would appear with every turn he made. After Yue Yang turned 9 times, there were 9 rings of fire in the sky surrounding his body and mysteriously revolving. Under his controls, these rings of fire looked extremely calm and docile, as if it was not going to explode at all...

“Wahhh!” Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were extremely shocked when they saw this and jumped a few meters back.

“This, this is impossible...” Ding Zang was filled with fear as he saw the scene in front of him. He completely couldn't believe his own eyes.

Although Yue Yang's gentle blade couldn't extinguish his Hellfire, Yue Yang had easily separated the Fire Dragon into nine stable rings of fire. After realizing Level 2 of [Yin Yang] and after learning from his two failures and lost of controls previously, Yue

Yang had finally truly grasped the actual method to control his fire ability.

Mastering the Level 2 [Yin Yang] had been Yue Yang's goal of a breakthrough for a long time.

Right now, Yue Yang finally mastered the fire ability from the [Yang] pole of his [Yin Yang]!

When he finally mastered the fire ability, Yue Yang felt that his abilities had expanded greatly. It was as if he could grasp the whole world in his palms. In that moment, he had caught a glimpse to his Innate Realm's Fourth Stage. He believed that when he had his next breakthrough, he should be able to step into his Innate Realm's Fourth Stage.

As long as he had entered into the Fourth Stage of Innate Realm, let alone this Luminous Demon Ding Zang, even if he fought against the Marquis of Zi Jin again, he believed that it wouldn't be that difficult anymore.

The feeling of finally mastering his skills made Yue Yang extremely moved!

From the moment he created his [Spherical Beheader], he had only spent less than a month to master this fire ability now.

Yue Yang sighed. He had only just started his Ranker's path to become the strongest. In the future, he didn't even know how

many more mysterious things that awaited him... Even that Sword Goddess oneesan's heaven and earth destructing kind of ability would not be an impossible feat to achieve.

It was just that he did not have enough time to train. His martial arts skills were still lacking.

One day, he believed that he would also be able to climb up onto that stage, as long as he continued to improve and open new breakthroughs.

“...” The Luminous Demon Ding Zang looked at Yue Yang with a complex expression. Suddenly, he took out a teleportation scroll. Not caring about how the disturbance in the dimension would cause a faulty teleportation, he immediately tried to escape.

“Eh?”

It was the first time for Yue Yang to meet such a life-preserving fellow. They had only fought halfway and he actually thought of abandoning his comrades and escape?

The Corrupted Warriors standing by on the peak of the mountains started to create a disturbance. However, they were immediately hushed by the other commander in charge.

They continued to stand on guard. It was obvious that they had decided to continue to besiege the town.

Old General Ma who was heavily injured previously suddenly struggled to stand up, then rushed towards Yue Yang while nodding his head and said, “Seems like Ding Zang had retreated to the Demonic Palace to report back. Could you help me kill the surrounding enemies and go to the Tian Luo Kingdom Capital and ask for reinforcement? Please ask His Majesty to send at least one member of the Heavenly Imperial Guardians. Only then would we be able to come out safely. Otherwise, when the powerful Rankers from the Demonic Palace came here, we would all be in danger.”

Yue Yang frowned a little and said, “I am just a student from the Da Xia Kingdom, would His Majesty believe my words?”

Chapter 163 – Mirage?

“My General’s Tiger Seal would be able to prove your identity.” Old General Ma handed Yue Yang a seal carved with a tiger pattern and advised, “You must accurately teleport to the capital. We can only hold on for an hour at most. I hope that you can use your fastest speed to arrive at the Imperial Palace and seek for an audience with His Majesty. Ask His Majesty to dispatch the Enshrined Elders or the Heavenly Imperial Guardians, otherwise our whole army will be annihilated... We only have three teleportation scrolls left, it’s not enough for your whole team to escape. If you have teleportation scrolls with you, then leave quickly and return to Da Xia Kingdom!”

Old General Ma’s words implied that Ye Kong’s, Fatty Hai’s and the others’ abilities weren’t strong enough and would not be able to help his army at the current state. They would only endanger their lives staying here, so it would be better for them to leave.

Yue Yang nodded and received the Tiger Seal from Old General Ma.

The two Deputy Generals had already taken the next step in their army formation. The injured soldiers were moved to the middle, while the other elite soldiers surrounded and protected them.

Almost all the houses in the vicinity had been ignited in flames. Blazing flames rose up into the sky. The Giant Spiders who were afraid of fire didn’t dare approach, so the soldiers could still preserve their lives for now.

As for the flying beasts in the sky, they continued to simply observe the situation. It still wasn't the best time to attack right now. The soldiers were still united and had battle power. especially Old General Ma's Hurricane Elite Troops, had minimal casualties. Every single one of them was burning with fighting intent, their morale high and confident. The Corrupted Warriors' Commander had an even calmer and a more cautious disposition than Old General Ma. He neither commenced his attack nor retreated easily.

Although the Luminous Demon Ding Zang had been defeated by Yue Yang, escaped, and the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang had been captured, the Corrupted Warriors' Commander still didn't move.

"If you take more than an hour, you don't have to come back." Old General Ma's underlying meaning was extremely clear. If reinforcements didn't come after an hour, then all of them should have already been killed. At that time, even if reinforcements come, it would all be useless. On the contrary, they might even fall to the enemy's trap.

"Yue Bing, let's go!" Yue Yang grabbed the unconscious Tan Wu Fang and shouted towards Yue Bing and Yi Nan.

"We'll return back to Da Xia." Ye Kong patted the shoulders of the Platoon Leader, who was supposed to protect them, and looked towards the trembling fellow. He then suddenly suggested, "Do you want to come with us? We'll first return to Da Xia, but Yue Yang will teleport to the Tian Luo Kingdom Capital afterwards. He would not be familiar with that place and will probably need a guide. Why don't you leave together with him?"

“I, I think I will stay behind with General... Long live His Majesty! Long Live Tian Luo!” That Platoon Leader’s ashen face did not reveal any kind of emotion, but his whole body was shaking violently. He had forced himself to hold on and cheered loudly.

Anyone could clearly see that he was extremely afraid, but he wasn’t a coward.

Yue Yang thought that this soldier must come from a family with status; he could even be one of the descendants of Great Clans and was participating in his first battle. It was really rare to see someone like him. He was able to endure so much even when he was confronted with such a dangerous situation. If it was another person that was given such a chance to live, they might even fight for that chance even if they have to kill another. But he had actually rejected the offer and chosen to stay.

Encountering a desperate situation, although he was afraid, he didn’t choose a path to survive. He had instead chosen to stay and fight the battle together with his comrades.

Seemed like this Old General Ma really had a way to lead his soldiers.

Old General Ma patted the Platoon Leader’s shoulders. He didn’t say anything, but his eyes revealed all the praises and pride he had in his heart for this subordinate of his.

“Wait for me to return. I will definitely return!” Yue Yang

promised the soldiers in Hope Town whose lives had now become dependent on him. He might not be able to get reinforcements within an hour, but Yue Yang would definitely return and fight with this soldiers until the last moment.

Hui Tai Lang charged in front and opened up a path for them while Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Li Clan Brothers followed closely behind.

Yue Yang carried the unconscious Black Winged Tan Wu Fang, who had been tied up by the two Deputy Generals. He tied Tan Wu Fang on his back as he pulled Yi Nan and Yue Bing along with both of his hands. Behind him, the Old General Ma, who was determined to accompany the small team to depart, followed closely. Although he was filled with serious injuries all over his body, he still had some battle power left in him. His bearification ability was shockingly powerful. He carried a giant burning pillar as he swept away the Giant Spiders that swarmed towards them.

They rushed outside town. Yue Yang then asked Yi Nan to summon her grimoire and stay on her place.

Yue Yang himself, on the other hand, waved his Hui Jin Magic Blade and made use of his newly mastered fire ability to create violently revolving rings of fire with his purple flames and then sent them flying towards the swarm of Giant Spiders.

The Giant Spiders all cried out miserably as they were cut to half by the purple flames and burnt alive.

In the sky, that Commander who was riding on a Giant Eagle led a few Wyverns and a few dozens Corrupted Warriors and continued to encircle the town, waiting for a chance to launch a sneak attack.

He was terrified of Yue Yang's power in his heart, hence he didn't dare to rush over. Instead, he ordered his Corrupted Warriors to attack using crossbows and rain arrows down on them. Ye Kong and the others continued to throw ignited torches unceasingly towards the countless Giant Spiders. With this method of defending and attacking, the team slowly made their way forward.

“Go, go!” Old General Ma knew that the longer they delayed, the more dangerous the situation would become.

If they still delayed, these students might not even be able to escape.

Ye Kong and the others whined secretly. They had killed their way almost two kilometers in distance, but they were still within the vicinity of the dimension disturbance caused by the Artifact. If they continued this way, they would probably reach the Despair Abyss soon... Old General Ma continued to wave his giant burning pillar as he roared towards the slowest moving Fatty Hai, “Go and teleport away from here. Normally you wouldn't end up in some cliff and fall to your death with your teleportation. Try to use your teleportation scrolls again and return to the places you belong... Then, quickly try to find the strongest teachers to protect you and don't move around as you please. Also, don't put up the news of this attack in the Warrior's Guild. The powerful Rankers from the Demonic Palace should be arriving soon. Go quickly!”

Fatty Hai and the others were extremely nervous, but Yue Yang did not nod his head, so they did not dare to open their scrolls and leave.

Yue Yang thought that his whole team must stay together. Otherwise, if the enemy captured one of them, it would be really troublesome. No matter what, he must bring the whole team back to the Ivy Academy first.

Old General Ma suddenly roared to the sky. His bearification intensified as he almost turned into a Giant Steel Bear completely.

He charged madly towards the Giant Spiders as if he had lost control, killing those Giant Spiders wildly.

He charged forward and killed unceasingly, carving a way out for Yue Yang and the others. However, when Yue Yang went closer to him, he, whose eyes had turned bloody red, had actually aimed an attack on Yue Yang's chest.

When Yue Yang avoided the attack cleverly, the red glow in Old General Ma's eyes dissipated a little as he howled out, "Go quickly! I wouldn't be able to hold on for long. You are different from us; you are only students. Don't sacrifice your lives easily, you guys are the future of Soaring Dragon Continent... We are soldiers, dying in a battle is our greatest honour! Go, go! I am going to lose control soon, hurry and leave this place!"

The bearified Old General Ma continued to kill the Giant Spiders

and created another bout of disturbance amongst the swarms of monsters.

Turning to a corner halfway, he lured countless Giant Spiders and went towards the direction of Hope Town to return.

Ye Kong's hands were thoroughly drenched with sweat. He was pinching his teleportation scroll so hard that water was almost wringed out. Seeing that there was no more dark energy influencing the crystal gem inside the teleportation scroll, he immediately opened the teleportation scroll and shouted, "We can teleport now! We have escaped the range of the dimension disturbance. Everyone, move quickly!"

In the sky, the Corrupted Beings that was riding on Giant Eagles and a flight of wyverns immediately swooped down in order to create a disturbance on Yue Yang and the others' teleportations.

As long as they could successfully cause a disturbance, the soldiers would not get reinforcements and they would all probably die at Hope Town...

Yue Yang raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade and leapt high to the sky, immediately killing one of the Giant Eagles that swooped down the fastest. Blood splashed all over and eagles' feathers flew all over the place. At the same time, seeing that the situation was not good, those swooping Giant Eagles and Wyverns immediately scattered away and retreated. That Corrupted Warriors Commander's expressions changed. He had actually wanted to take out a golden crossbow from his robes to shoot at Yue Yang and the others, but he kept it back again.

A Corrupted Warrior who didn't manage to escape in time was scared to death by Yue Yang's sudden appearance at his back.

His struggles and attempts to escape was futile.

Yue Yang's blade flashed across him, before he slowly jumped back down to the ground. By this time, Ye Kong and the others had already successfully teleported away. In the sky, the Corrupted Warrior and his Giant Eagle who had lost their heads fell down to the group of Giant Spiders below. They were immediately engulfed by the bloodthirsty Spiders, disappearing into the darkness in an instant.

On the ground, only Yi Nan and Yue Yang was left.

With Hui Tai Lang's protection, Yi Nan was not in a danger when she summoned the teleportation gate. However, she was waiting for Yue Yang to go with her.

Yue Yang quickly opened his teleportation scroll. He first kicked Hui Tai Lang into the teleportation gate that appeared, then entered their respective teleportation gates together with Yi Nan and teleported away.

Their teleportation target was originally the Square at Ivy Academy.

The old cunning fox was researching on his Teleportation Circles

when he suddenly found a slight ripple in the dimension. When he looked up, he found Fatty Hai who was crying “Wahh...Wahh...” loudly come crashing down, hence he immediately avoided him and ran to another side. He watched as Fatty Hai crashed loudly on the ground, before asking him in astonishment, “What happened? Fatty, are you still alive?” Before he even finished his questions, Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers suddenly appeared in the sky too. The old cunning fox was so shocked that he immediately scurried away, avoiding being squashed by their fall.

Just as he was in a complete puzzlement, a pair of legs had suddenly squashed his body down. He only managed to hear Yue Yang’s voice asking from the top of his head, “Is everyone alright?”

“They are all alright, but as for myself, the Vice Principal, I am very curious about one thing and would like to ask you, student. Where did you set your teleportation target to and why would you set it to right on top of my head?” The old cunning fox felt that Yue Yang was extremely heavy for a brat. When he looked up, he realized that Yue yang was holding onto Yue Bing, hugging a female thief at one of his side, and was even carrying a burnt person who was charred completely black. He immediately realized why this brat felt even heavier than Fatty Hai. Turns out it was the weight of 3 people and a captured enemy...

“There was still a slight disturbance in the teleportation space, but we finally managed to return safely. Vice Principal, I don’t have time to talk to you now. I leave these people to your protection. For every strand of hair they lose in the time I have yet to return, I will demand your full explanation!” Yue Yang was rushing for time, hence he said that when he was still standing on top of the old cunning fox’ back. He then hurriedly placed Yi Nan

and Yue Bing down, before opening the scroll that Old General Ma had given him. Carrying Tan Wu Fang, he immediately teleported to the Tian Luo Kingdom's capital to seek for reinforcements.

“What is actually happening here? Who is that charcoal of a person that that brat had carried just now?” The old cunning fox was extremely confused as he scratched his head.

“It's nothing. He is just some person from the Demonic Palace who came to attack us at Hope Town. The charred, barbecued person that Yue Yang was carrying is the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang.” Ye Kong had purposely downplayed the facts.

“What kind of jokes are you spouting? Why would the Demonic Palace try to attack you guys, a bunch of kids?” The old cunning fox jumped in shock.

“I don't quite understand it either,” Ye Kong humbly spread out his hands, looking helpless.

“Is that person really the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang?” The old cunning fox could feel that this matter was not that simple. The Black Winged Tan Wu Fang was a Tian Luo rebel, so he had naturally heard of him before.

“He wasn't that strong though. Yue Yang managed to beat him black and blue in an instant. The strong one was a fellow called the Luminous Demon Ding Zang. He almost turned us all into roasted duck! I have initially thought that one of the top ten generals, Old General Ma, is already strong enough, but he actually lost

completely to the Luminous Demon Ding Zang in an instant. Luckily Old General Ma has a strong fate and managed to stay alive!” Fatty Hai reported with a brilliant smile. If the old cunning fox was willing to listen to him, he had even prepared to reiterate the whole events that had unfolded until now.

“You could even fight against the Luminous Demon Ding Zang?” The old cunning fox cried out in shock. “Did that Yue Yang beat him down? This is impossible. Even I would need to spend a lot of effort to defeat the Luminous Demon Ding Zang. That fellow’s Hellfire is an extremely troublesome beast, if you don’t own its arch-nemesis beast... How long did Yue Yang, that brat, take to fight him?”

“Three moves!” Yue Bing nodded with an indescribable pride in her expression.

“Impossible, I wouldn’t even be able to defeat the Luminous Demon Ding Zang in three moves!” The old cunning fox was thoroughly distressed.

“He didn’t beat him, he only used his Magic Blade to cut the Luminous Demon Ding Zang’s tenfold Hellfire and scared him away.” Yi Nan replied.

“That is also impossible. It’s a tenfold Hellfire! It might still be believable if I was the one who withstood that attack. Is that Yue Yang brat that powerful?” The old cunning fox felt that he needed to re-evaluate Yue Yang’s battle power.

“Vice Principal, forgive me for speaking bluntly. Aren’t you the worst teacher in the Ivy Academy? Who would know that you are even more proficient at talking big than me, Master Hai!” Fatty Hai hugged the old cunning fox’s shoulders. He then shook his head emotionally, “I say, Vice Principal, it’s normal to dream, but it’s not normal to brag. Everyone would do it at some point of time, but dreams are dreams and brags are brags. You must not exaggerate so much! With just your Level 5 [Grandmaster]’s ability, you wouldn’t even be able to fight against that Luminous Demon Ding Zang’s single toe. It’s fine if you simply say these words to us, but please make sure not to say it to others. Otherwise you would probably be laughed at by everyone. Furthermore, speaking from the perspective of students from the Ivy Academy, you will also tarnish our reputation if you bragged so much!”

“.... “ The old cunning fox was lectured by Fatty Hai and felt really gloomy in his heart.

He almost wanted to show off his whole skills and frightened this Fatty Hai to death.

However, he still kept this thought away instead. He had only managed to hide his abilities after going through great difficulties. If Fatty Hai really knew his capabilities, he would definitely not hear the end of it.

In the end, the old cunning fox could only look down helplessly and replied extremely gloomily, “Alright, Fatty, what you said is right. I admit I have said the wrong thing just now... Demonic Palace is not an organization that you can offend easily. There may even be the possibility that they tailed you guys here. But

everyone, don't be afraid, I will definitely protect you all... Ah, I mean, I will find a strong person to protect you all!"

Yue Yang didn't know about the very exciting exchange between the old cunning fox and Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others.

He immediately found something was wrong when he entered the teleportation gate.

It might be because he had carried the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang in his hands; The teleportation had deviated and they did not arrive at the Teleportation Circle outside the Imperial Palace.

Instead, when Yue Yang re-appeared, he realized there was a roof in front of him.

He immediately sucked in his breath and tried to make himself lighter, inching the tip of his toes towards those fragile glazed roof tiles.

Who would know that even though he hadn't put much weight on his foot, his whole body had immediately fallen through the tiles, passing through it as if he was a ghost.

However, the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang, whom Yue Yang had been tightly clutching onto the whole time, had actually crashed into the roof with a 'bang' and was stuck there. He was then tossed a dozen meters away, ending up who knew where. Yue Yang had even heard the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang cry out in extreme pain

despite being unconscious. As for Yue Yang himself, he hadn't been able to grasp any supporting beams or anything else as he fell through the roof. In the end, he fell straight down onto the ground.

Yue Yang looked around and sighed in relief when he found that he had fallen onto a ground.

If he had fallen to a thousand miles deep abyss or some other dimensional space, then he would definitely be doomed.

Once again, he sucked in his breath and tried to put as little weight on his foot as much as possible. Yue Yang hoped that the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang had also fallen to the ground and did not trigger a trap. He prayed that he wouldn't trigger a trap that would release thousands of arrows...

However, another weirder thing had happened in the next instant.

Yue Yang's foot lost its footing once again. It seemed like the ground was fake and was actually an empty space.

Yue Yang was extremely astonished as he fell through the ground again. The next thing he knew, the illusion of the ground had shattered and a pond of clear water appeared instead. Yue Yang's whole body fell into the water with a loud splash. Only now did he realize that the whole house, beams, pillars, ground and others were all an illusion. The real object was a body of water, and it was an extremely huge lake at that. Yue Yang was extremely confused.

He had obviously teleported to the Imperial Palace Teleportation Circle, so why would he arrive at this place?

Furthermore, why did he manage to fall into the lake, but the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang couldn't?

How could he get out from this place?

Just as Yue Yang was at a loss with this matter, suddenly, he heard two people's extremely soft voices talking about himself. He hurriedly looked around the whole place nervously, but he didn't see anyone at all.

"How could this brat fall into our Mirage?" A voice that carried an imposing presence asked with a leisured tone, as if he was speaking right into Yue Yang's ears.

"Capture him and interrogate him properly!" Another voice that sounded mischievous, as if she was very young, resounded. Her voice sounded soft and delicate.

Yue Yang sweated profusely. Mirage?

Who were these two people? And what was this Mirage place exactly?

Chapter 164 – Night Empress

If he didn't have a mission to save people, Yue Yang would have pretended not to hear anything. He would first try to listen to find out what was going on.

Right now, however, even a minute of delay might result in the annihilation of Old General Ma and his army.

Yue Yang hurriedly yelled out his story, "Dear owners, I have no intention to barge into your Mirage unannounced. My teleportation target was actually the Teleportation Circle in front of the Imperial Palace. However, because I was carrying someone with me, there was a slight disturbance in the dimension. Please release me first... I have a mission that is related to the life and death of many people, I need to enter the Imperial Palace and seek an audience with the Tian Luo Emperor Hua Xu Ri as soon as impossible. If the two of you wanted to punish me for barging in, please punish me after I meet the Tian Luo Emperor!"

Although he didn't understand if this 'Mirage' was a beast or a dimensional space, Yue Yang felt that these two people must be extremely powerful to be able to possess such an entity.

By chance, maybe the two of them were close to the Emperor Xu Ri. Maybe they would not try to make things difficult for him when they see him trying to seek for help.

Indeed, the two voices immediately become silent the moment Yue Yang spoke.

After a while, the voice that sounded like a girl's soft and delicate voice resounded, "Brat, who are you? How could you still hear us talking even inside the Mirage?"

Yue Yang sweated inwardly. His Level 3 [Divine Vision] was not working at all, yet he could listen very clearly with his ears. This 'Mirage' thing was really weird.

Although he was thinking of this in his heart, he hurriedly replied, "I am a student from Da Xia Kingdom Ivy Academy, my name is Titan. A few days ago I went to Despair Abyss to train, but who would have guessed that I would be surrounded by the Corrupted Beings from the Demonic Palace that had come to besiege the Hope Town today? Hope Town is in grave danger. There are countless Giant Spiders surrounding the whole ground and thousands of flying beasts eyeing the soldiers and citizens in Hope Town viciously from the sky. Old General Ma had personally sent me out of the besieging beasts and told me to seek for help from the Tian Luo Emperor Hua Xu Ri. He wanted me to ask His Majesty to at least dispatch a Heavenly Imperial Guardian over... The battle situation is extremely urgent right now, I urge the two of you to release me quickly. I really need to find His Majesty the Tian Luo Kingdom Emperor, Hua Xu Ri, as fast as possible."

"Brat, aren't you afraid that we are actually members of the Demonic Palace?" That younger, delicate voice asked again with a little of mischief in her tone.

"If the two of you really belonged to the Demonic Palace, then you would have definitely recognised the Tian Luo rebel, Black

Winged Tan Wu Fang, that I was carrying just now. And you wouldn't be asking me any other things now, you would probably have killed me on the spot." Yue Yang was certain that these two people was not from the Demonic Palace. At a place close to the Imperial Palace where they were right under the Emperor's nose, how would it be possible that there were people from the Demonic Palace? Furthermore, if they were really people from the Demonic Palace, why would they say these useless words to him? They could just kill him straight away.

"Aren't these words of yours too confident? Maybe Demonic Palace members will even like such a foolish brat like you and think that you have a high potential, so they didn't kill you! What does the Black Winged Tan Wu Fang even count as? He was just a pawn created purposely by the Three Major Sky Demons. The Three Major Sky Demons had purposely joined hands together to save him, this is tantamount to a propaganda from the Demonic Palace. Do you think just a mere weak Black Winged Tan Wu Fang was worth it for the Three Major Sky Demons to come personally and save? Do you think he could be useful to the Demonic Palace at all? You, on the other hand, are different from him. You, brat, seemed to have quite a lot of potential in you. Of course they would choose you over him..." The soft female voice rebuked Yue Yang's words. However, with the words that she said, she had actually proven that she did not belong to the Demonic Palace.

"The battle situation is really very urgent. Please release me quickly now. When I have met the Tian Luo Emperor Xu Ri, I will come here again to receive my punishment." Yue Yang hurriedly asked the other side to release him.

He felt that this place was a different dimensional space. It was as

if it was a boundless space; there was only this limitless lake no matter how far the eyes see.

Teleportation Scrolls were of no use here.

Yue Yang knew that it didn't matter if this was a beast's ability or a dimensional space created by someone, other than getting the owner's permission, he would never be able to escape from this place.

He thought that he should get out first, and immediately run away after meeting with the Tian Luo Emperor Hua Xu Ri. Only fools would come back here to receive punishments... Yue Yang also had this weird feeling in his heart. Maybe this place was actually the Tian Luo Imperial Palace, and these two people were the Tian Luo Emperor's relatives or people with powerful connections to the Emperor. Otherwise, why didn't the two of them show any signs of surprise even when he kept saying that he was going to meet His Majesty?

The girl's delicate voice laughed out, "Do you think you can meet with the Tian Luo Emperor Hua Xu Ri as and when you please? Saying that you will return here again to receive your punishment, it would be strange if you didn't run away as soon as I released you! I'm never going to release you! My punishment for you is lifetime imprisonment in this water prison!"

"... " Yue Yang started sweating profusely. He was really speechless to have met with such a person.

“Two Heavenly Imperial Guardians and three Enshrined Elders of Tian Luo Kingdom have already been dispatched by His Majesty’s orders. Before you came, a few soldiers from the Hurricane Chi Hou team* had already came to ask for reinforcements.” The other voice that carried an imposing presence slowly said. “Please don’t mind my younger sister’s rudeness. However, anyone who intruded into the Mirage must stay for 1 full hour before they can leave. This is outside our control. After an hour, you will be able to leave this place on your own.”

(*Shiro: Previously translated as Hurricane Expel Noble Team, changing it to Hurricane Chi Hou)

“...” Yue Yang sweated even more profusely when he heard this. He really thought that perhaps this fellow was actually the Tian Luo Emperor Hua Xu Ri. However, if he really was the Emperor, Yue Yang could let it go if he didn’t reward himself for coming here to report after facing many difficulties, but the Emperor didn’t even offer him his thanks. Wouldn’t that be too inhospitable for an Emperor?

“Haha, this brat is really interesting! He didn’t even know what Mirage is, what a fool! Hahaha!” The girl’s delicate voice started laughing out loud without stopping.

“Wait there quietly then!” The imposing voice didn’t wait for Yue Yang to reply and immediately disappeared after saying that.

Yue Yang never thought that he would meet with such a disaster coming here to seek reinforcements.

Fortunately the Tian Luo Heavenly Imperial Guardians had already been sent on their way.

He floated on the water for quite a long while as thousands of questions surfaced in his heart.

He had obviously teleported to the Imperial Palace, so why would he fall into this Mirage instead? Why would this place be filled with so much water? Yue Yang then decided to swim to the bottom of the body of water. He felt that maybe there was something he could find at the bottom of the water.

However, after searching for a long time, this Mirage thing made Yue Yang even more confused than ever.

Beneath, other than water, there was completely nothing else.

There wasn't even a single fish.

In the end, Yue Yang floated back to the surface of the water with nothing to do.

The delicate girl's voice resounded again in his ears. Her voice, that seemed to be whispering to his ear, asked naughtily, "How is it? Did you find anything?"

"There's completely nothing." When Yue Yang replied, the girl started laughing non-stop.

“When you come out of this Mirage, would you go and ask for a reward for your battle accomplishment from the Tian Luo Emperor, and then quickly leave this place with a teleportation scroll?” Although the girl was extremely mischievous, she could see through other people’s hearts. She had even correctly guessed Yue Yang’s next plan of action when he come out.

“I don’t have teleportation scrolls in my body, I can’t go even if I want to.” However, Yue Yang would definitely not admit it in the open. He was afraid that this girl would do something and trick him again.

“Hahah, silly liar! Do you think I’m a three-year-old kid? If you don’t have teleportation scrolls inside your Lich Ring, would you be so calm when you are talking to me? I can still recognize a Lich Ring when I see one. I also know about that little thing on your wrist. The funny thing is that it is a fighting-type beast, but you actually turned it into a wrist guard. Who is your master? How could he manage to teach you into a fool?” The delicate girl’s voice’s words made Yue Yang’s heart twitched a little. He never thought that she would know about the mysterious little Golden Beast that he couldn’t see through with his [Divine Eyes].

Was the mysterious Golden Beast a fighting-type beast?

Yue Yang thought about it again. It seemed that whenever this little thing see a dragon crystal, it would become extremely powerful. As for defense, he had never seen it defending him before.

As for turning its appearance into a wrist guard, it had done it on its own. It was the one who transformed itself into a wrist guard...

“I don’t have a master!” Yue Yang immediately started to act pitiful. He actually do have a master, that was the Sword Goddess Oneesan. However, this secret Master must never be mentioned to anyone.

“If you don’t have a Master, how would you be able to master all these skills at such a young age? You won’t be able to trick me, I am a hundred percent sure that you have one! You really don’t? You really don’t have a Master? That’s impossible. Someone must have taught you secretly!” The delicate girl voice seemed to be a Master herself. She suddenly say out, “Seems like your Master only teach you martial art skills secretly, but didn’t teach you any knowledge with regards to the use of beasts... How about this, I can become your true Master. As long as you can sincerely call me Master and listen to me obediently in the future, I will teach you and turn you into a great disciple our institution!”

“I can acknowledge you as my Master, but you must be a beautiful girl!” Yue Yang had his own conditions.

“Don’t worry, I am more good looking than what you imagine me to be. Having a person like me as your Master is worth your luck in three lifetimes,” The delicate girl’s voice was extremely confident with her appearance.

“If I were to have a Master, other than being good looking, she must be full of wisdom too. I don’t want to acknowledge a wallflower as my Master. Say, what abilities do you have?” Yue

Yang was actually holding a Miss Universe pageant.

“My abilities? There’s a lot. I know more than 200 different languages and I could write in more than 100 different languages. I can also read Summoning Seals and different kinds of rare, treasure books. I can identify more than 100,000 different kinds of beasts, including that beast on your wrist which is probably the last surviving ‘Tong Tian Beast’ in this world and in the Tong Tian Tower. I can break different kinds of Enchantment Seals, and even if it is an ancient equipment that is already covered in dust, I can restore them to their original appearance...” The delicate girl’s voice then continued her list of accomplishments for around ten more minutes non-stop. Yue Yang’s chin had almost dropped to the ground.

Who was this girl?

She, wasn’t she too powerful?

Yue Yang’s heart twitched. There are quite a lot of things he wanted to learn from her quickly, for example, this mysterious Golden Beast which was the only living ‘Tong Tian Beast’, Summoning Seals, how to break Enchantment Seals, ancient equipments and so on...

In the future, if he wanted to enter the God’s Ruins, he must be proficient in all these, otherwise he would leave empty-handed from a mountain of treasures.

(Shiro: God’s Ruins – chapter 74)

The shameless guy from another world immediately revealed his sincerest smile when he realized the advantageous situation.

His smile was as bright as the sun, revealing his shiny teeth...

“Master is indeed powerful. May I know Exalted Master’s reputable name?” In order to gain knowledge, Yue Yang had shamelessly started calling her Master.

“Too late, I have regretted offering you to be my Disciple. I suddenly feel like I can eat any food at random, but I shouldn’t acknowledge a disciple at random. You should find another person to acknowledge as your Master!” The delicate girl’s voice started laughing non-stop in a boastful tone. Just when Yue Yang wanted to faint, she stated her condition, “You can come to me again when you have reached the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and obtained the ‘Source of Life’ and ‘Dream Jade’. Only then would I consider taking you as my disciple!”

“Nonsense. If I can reach the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, why would I still want to acknowledge you as my Master?” Yue Yang almost wanted to explode, how could she put out such a condition?

“Even if you managed to reach Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, you are still a kid in my eyes. You may have a lot of confidence in yourself, but let me tell you a secret to bruise your confidence a little. In your current level, I can probably defeat you with my one single finger.” The words said by the delicate girl’s voice made Yue Yang jump in fright.

He had initially thought of her as a naughty princess or a princess consort. Who would know that she was this strong... Fortunately he had his [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill, otherwise he might not be able to hide his [Innate] status!

Who was this girl exactly?

“Who are you exactly?” Yue Yang felt that this girl was not that simple. His heart started thumping quickly as he prayed so that she wouldn’t recognise him as the newly crowned young Innate Ranker.

“I won’t tell you my name, because you are not my disciple. But if you want to show your respect to me, you can call me like how the other warriors call me usually. My title is ‘Night Empress*’!” When this delicate girl’s voice said this, Yue Yang felt like lightning had struck in a clear sky and exploded right on his head. He immediately cried out, “You are one of the Tian Luo’s Three Great Heavenly Imperial Guardian, ‘Night Empress’? The ‘Night Empress’ that had caused the Marquis of Zi Jin to be gravely injured with just one move?”

(*Shiro: Night Empress was previously translated as Ye Hou in chapter 145. I thought Ye Hou is a name...)

“Two moves. I have actually used two moves when I defeated the Marquis of Zi Jin.” The delicate girl’s voice corrected him.

“My Heavens!” Yue Yang immediately jumped in fright. The Marquis of Zi Jin was so powerful, yet she had defeated him with

just two moves. Wasn't this girl's power too frightening to behold?

Chapter 165 – Eternal Youth Springwater

“When you reach Tong Tian Tower’s sixth floor, if nobody is willing to be your Escort, then you can find me. Right, who was your Tong Tian Introducer?” The Night Empress’ sweet voice resounded, suddenly asking a question that Yue Yang could not figure out for a long time.

“I don’t know.” When Yue Yang entered Tong Tian Tower, the person who introduced him was a big-breasted oneesan that he had never seen before.

He had only seen her before once. From then on, there was no longer a trace of her.

It was said that Shang Wu Camp was normally managed by Elder Gui Wu and definitely not that big-breasted oneesan who had a lazy yet extremely enchanting face. Yue Yang could not understand how it would be that coincidental. He just happened to go to Tong Tian Tower to find Yue Bing and she was already there, prepared to receive him. What was even stranger was that when Yue Yang returned to Shang Wu Camp again. He even tried to obtain information secretly, but nobody knew who the big-breasted oneesan was. Not only that, nobody dared to bring her up in a conversation. It was as if that big-breasted oneesan was an extremely terrifying monster.

Yue Yang remembered that initially, when there was a middle-aged man who asked him this question at Tong Tian Tower’s gate, he was extremely terrified when he heard that it was her.

Normally, the warriors with sufficient ability to guard the gates of Tong Tian Tower wouldn't be this timid.

Could it be that the big-breasted oneesan was an even more terrifying existence than a Demon King?

Towards what Yue Yang had said, the Night Empress expressed her disbelief.

Yue Yang's heart moved. He described the looks of the big-breasted oneesan a little. Then, acting as if he did not mind, he said, "Certainly, I don't know who introduced me to Tong Tian Tower. Listening to the fatty, it's normally Elder Lu who receives warriors at Shang Wu Camp, however, I was an exception that day."

When the Night Empress heard this, she was silent for some time.

As Yue Yang started to have doubts in his mind whether he had said something wrong, the Night Empress suddenly groaned jealously, "I knew it was her! With her Inherent Skill, of course it would be more convenient for her to find people... Hmph, I hate her the most, she grabs everything before I do! What card did she give you? A crystal card? Hmph, she's really generous... What kind of conditions did she asks from you? A Wisdom Fruit every year? That's too easy, this is obviously grabbing a disciple before me! It's not fair, she had really disregarded the agreement between rankers. You idiot, how could you agree to let her be your Tong Tian Tower Introducer? Having her as your Introducer wouldn't give you any advantage at all, you've lost big now!"

(Shiro: refer to Chapter 41)

“It’s fine, as the wise men say, being disadvantaged is a blessing.” Yue Yang took this opportunity to make the situation worse.

“Yeah, right, a blessing!” The Night Empress was angry, and did not speak for a long while.

After a while, she suddenly continued. “I’ll give you a mission too. If you complete it, then I’ll consider teaching you stupid little kid who doesn’t know anything. It’s a simple mission. In the heart of the Despair Abyss, thousands of metres underground, there is a [Black Turtle](#)’s pond. There, a wounded Dragon Turtle resides. Cure it and get the Black Turtle Pearl then come back and find me.”

What she said seemed to be easier than eating a bean. However, thinking about it again, this matter was probably ten times harder than giving the big-breasted onesan, whom nobody knew where was, a Wisdom Fruit.

Who had ever gone to the heart of the Despair Abyss before?

Nobody!

Even if someone had gone there before, it would be rankers at the level of the Night Empress. They would all be the war gods that protected the countries. Normal warriors would never be able to imagine the level that they had attained.

Running to the heart of the Despair Abyss alone, first curing the Dragon Turtle, then obtaining the Black Turtle Pearl?

It seemed ridiculous enough!

Finding the Hard-Shelled Dragon Fruit at the bottom of the Ant Hole and meeting with the Marquis of Zi Jin almost cost him his life. If he met someone even more overpowered than the Marquis of Zi Jin while going into the heart of the Despair Abyss, then it would be over. He wasn't a cat with nine lives after all, if he died, he would really die!

Furthermore, He still had the mission to collect Starlight Serene Indigo Grass from Grandma Wu Teng... If he had the ability to complete the mission to collect the Black Turtle Pearl, he believed that Grandma Wu Teng would not give him the mission to collect Starlight Serene Indigo Grass. Since Grandma Wu Teng did not give this mission to him, it would mean that he could not do it right now! Thinking along these lines, Yue Yang inquired. "What level of beast is that Dragon Turtle?"

"Platinum-ranked Level 6. Originally it was Platinum-ranked Level 10, but it was injured by someone." The words of the Night Empress nearly made Yue Yang cramp and drown in the lake.

"Even a Platinum-ranked Level 10 beast can be injured?" Yue Yang could not imagine what kind of ranker could do this.

"You can do it too in the future." The Night Empress giggled.

“Then, what’s the Black Turtle Pearl?” Yue Yang had heard of the White Dragon Pearl before. When the entire band of soldiers had been poisoned, Jun Wu You gave Floating Mist Sect a national treasure, the White Dragon Pearl. Only then did the Floating Mist Sect deploy Elder Tian Suo to heal them. However, in the end it had caused the Elder Tian Suo’s Impostor’s Case to happen instead.

“I’ll tell you what the Black Turtle Pearl’s uses are later on. However, it’s a necessity. Only when you collect the Azure Dragon Pearl, the White Tiger Pearl, the Vermillion Bird Pearl and the Black Turtle Pearl, will you truly be recognised as a ranker. Lad, don’t you know that at the highest floors of Tong Tian Tower are extremely vast? Any small island there is greater in size than the Soaring Dragon Continent, or even the Demonic Abyss. We come from the Soaring Dragon Continent, but there are also rankers who come from other places. Everyone is competing against each other, striving to climb even higher. The kind of competition there is something you can’t imagine right now. In comparison, the Soaring Dragon Continent is like a little village. With the Soaring Dragon as our starting point, we cultivate to ever greater heights. When you finally reach the extremely high realms and look back, the lives of normal people are really funny, just like seeing you being as busy as an ant right now... There are fewer rankers from the Soaring Dragon Continent, but we are also more united. Our standard is having the ability to gather the four pearls. Only then will you be recognised as a ranker and become a part of our team. As the Dragon Turtle is wounded right now, it’s the easiest to get. So, I recommend you to finish it first. Don’t let others finish it ahead of you, because once the Dragon Turtle is successfully cured by others, then it will recover its original battle ability and leave the Despair Abyss. It will then re-enter Tong Tian Tower. It can’t stay in the Despair Abyss forever!” The Night Empress’ words

made Yue Yang feel anxious.

It was not a mission made solely for him if other people were able to cure it as well.

But, even if Yue Yang took it, he did not know how to cure beasts at all. This matter was probably ridiculous enough, only heavens knew how to cure the Dragon Turtle.

The Night Empress did not tell him how to either.

She did not give any hints.

It seemed like this secret could not be told to others. It was up to Yue Yang to find out himself.

With a glint of his [Divine Eyes], he asked, “What’s the relationship between the White Dragon Pearl and the four pearls of the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird and Black Turtle? Are they the same level, or is it of a higher level?”

“The White Dragon Pearl is a kind of dragon pearl that is needed for a Level 7 [Overlord] to level up to a Level 8 [Emperor]. It is a little bit different from the other pearls. White Dragon Pearl is quite alright, but we don’t recognize the Soaring Dragon Continent’s standard of Level 8 [Emperor] as a truly strong Ranker.” The Night Empress’ words thoroughly shocked Yue Yang.

A Level 8 [Emperor] was still not considered a true strong Ranker.

Then wouldn't a Level 7 [Overlord] and a Level 6 [Elder] be normal people? No wonder Innate Rankers saw any warriors below Level 5 as ants.

Yue Yang gulped his saliva down, then asked, "Then at what Level would you consider someone a true strong Ranker?"

Night Empress laughed gently.

After quite a while, she then answered, "I think it's okay to tell you earlier, because you, foolish brat, has quite the high potential. In Soaring Dragon Continent, to be a true ranker, you have to be an Innate. A Level 7 [Overlord] has only started to touch the Innate Realm while a Level 8 [Emperor] has only started training officially to become Innate, however, we do not recognise them as a true Innate. Only a Level 9 [Sage] and above would be called an Innate Ranker. Furthermore, Innate Realm is divided into Nine Levels. A Level 9 Beginner [Sage] in Soaring Dragon Continent is equivalent to an Innate Level 1, while a Level 9 Intermediate [Sage] is Innate Level 2, and Advanced [Sage] is Innate Level 3....."

(Shiro: Decided to change Level 9 [Saint] to [Sage].)

"I'm gonna faint." Yue Yang realized that he was only starting.

Yue Yang knew that although he had reached the Innate Realm, his power was still far behind.

He had only trained for half a year. In terms of skills and knowledge, he absolutely couldn't compare to those Innate Rankers who had trained themselves for a few hundred years. He was even still far behind Level 7 [Overlords] and Level 8 [Emperors].

Right now, if he really tried his utmost, he would probably be at the level of Level 6 Advanced [Senior Elder] and would only be able to defeat a Level 6 Intermediate [Elder] with all of his efforts.

As for a Ranker with the power of a Level 6 Beginner [Junior Elder], after the fight outside the Ant Hole, Yue Yang realized that he could actually defeat them easily.

Level 5 and below were all ants to him, he could kill them all very easily.

As for the defeating the Marquis of Zi Jin, other than due to his own capabilities, it was also because that fellow had underestimated him and had battled with Grandma Chi before, losing a lot of his battle power. That was why he had gotten away so easily. If the Marquis of Zi Jin had known his true strength and attacked him with all of his strength from the beginning, Yue Yang would have a headache. Had Marquis of Zi Jin fought him in his peak condition, he would probably have emerged as the victor in the end.

Yue Yang felt that would he would only be able to fight against the Marquis of Zi Jin if he could understand his [Yin] power and

master the ability to control water and ice, then master Level 4 of Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

The Marquis of Zi Jin still needed a year to recover before he could return to the Soaring Dragon Continent. Yue Yang, who had understood his [Yang] power and mastered the fire ability, was full of confidence right now.

When that fellow returned from the Demon Abyss, he would probably be able to completely defeat him.

This was because breaking through the Innate Invisible Sword Qi Level 4 was just a matter of time. Yue Yang reckoned that he would probably be able to breakthrough Level 4 in less than three months.

After his breakthrough, would he be able to open the Divine Grimoire?

Yue Yang was still hoping for this in his heart. If that was possible, then he would be able to turn the Marquis of Zi Jin into a miserable packed lunch, giving it to his Thorny Flower as a fertilizer!

“I have taken quite a liking to you and have thought to give you some pointers at first. But since you have already been snatched by her, based on the agreement between Rankers, it’s not convenient for me to get involved with you. If you want to learn from me, I must give you a mission first. Come and find me again when you have gotten that Black Turtle Pearl!” The Night Empress then

suddenly thought of something and asked, “By the way, what did you originally set out to do in Despair Abyss?”

“I wanted to pick Starlight Serene Indigo Grass. It was a mission given to me by Grandma Wu Teng.” Yue Yang tried to test the Night Empress’ reaction to Grandma Wu Teng.

“Is Big Sister Wu Teng your teacher? She’s quite good, it’s a pity that she was unable to recover after she was heavily injured by someone in the past...” The Night Empress’ reaction made Yue Yang feel even more respect towards Grandma Wu Teng. Even such a strong ranker such as the Tian Luo Kingdom Heavenly Imperial Guardian, the Night Empress, had addressed Grandma Wu Teng so respectfully. It was obvious that she was one of the peak rankers, or at least, she was once one of them!

In the end, the Night Empress had kindly pointed out to Yue Yang, “Actually, you won’t be able to pick the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass. That is not something that a guy could touch. Only pure, virgin girls would be able to pick it. I can introduce you to a girl who is extremely knowledgeable in this area. However, I cannot guarantee if she would be willing to help you. Her name is Luo Hua, and she usually stays at the Hanging Gardens in the Luo Hua City in the Fourth Floor of Tong Tian Tower... You can go to the Warrior’s Guild in Tong Tian Tower and leave her a letter. Say that I referred you to her, then maybe she will agree to help you.”

“I know Luo Hua City Mistress. We had even fought against Demon Generals before when she wanted to pick Beautiful Demonic Flowers. This time, we had also planned to pick the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass together!” Yue Yang was pleasantly

surprised and immediately tried to rely on his connections.

“You knew Luo Hua? Hahaha...” When the Night Empress heard him, she laughed out loud happily, even seeming like she was a little pleased with herself.

This made Yue Yang be at a loss. Was there something wrong with him knowing Luo Hua City Mistress?

Yue Yang’s mind started to spin quickly. Could it be that Luo Hua City Mistress wasn’t a Da Xia citizen, and was actually a Tian Luo Citizen? What kind of relationship did she have with the Night Empress?

“You can first pick the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass with Luo Hua and complete Big Sister Wu Teng’s mission. She is extremely knowledgeable, so you can learn a lot of medical related knowledge from her. Then, you can go to the Despair Abyss with Luo Hua to get that Black Turtle Pearl, she will definitely be of a great help to you. How about this, I’ll give you a year, no, half a year. When you have acquired that Black Turtle Pearl, I’ll tell you more secrets... It’s about time now, I shall give you some things before I send you out!” The Night Empress’ extremely soft and delicate voice resounded again.

In that moment, two things appeared on Yue Yang’s hands.

One was a map. Seemed like it was a map that leads to the heart of the Despair Abyss.

The other thing was a bottle.

It was made from white jade and decorated in extreme detail. The cork that was covering the bottle was made of a purple red wood. It felt warm to touch and emitted a nice, fragrant scent that seeped right into Yue Yang's heart.

There must be some kind of liquid inside. Yue Yang could feel the liquid shaking inside when he shook the bottle lightly. It's just that he didn't know what was inside.

"What's inside this bottle?" Yue Yang's curiosity could probably kill a cat.

"It's Eternal Youth Springwater. A normal person will look ten years younger when they drink this, while warriors will experience a huge increase in their spiritual qi. If you want to refine a Martial God Pill in the future, you will need this Eternal Youth Springwater. What? You have never heard of Martial God Pill? It's an even better pill than Martial Spirit Pill. Martial Spirit Pill helps to awaken the potential capacity of a person, but Martial God Pill, on the other hand, helps to increase the potential capacity of a person... Forget it. I'll tell you next time!" The Night Empress had not finished speaking when Yue Yang suddenly felt the sky spinning around. In an instant, he was flung out by an irresistible force.

(Shiro: Martial Spirit Pill was translated as Martial Arts Spirit Pill (Chapter 144) previously. Changing it to Martial Spirit Pill!)

When he returned to his senses, he was already standing in front

of a gigantic Imperial Palace.

Underneath his feet was the Imperial Palace Teleportation Circle.

Yue Yang didn't wait for the soldiers to start interrogating him and immediately opened a teleportation scroll to return back to the Ivy Academy. Of course, he first placed his Eternal Youth Springwater and the map to the heart of Despair Abyss inside his Lich Ring.

At the entrance of the Ivy Academy, the old cunning fox was waiting along with Yue Bing, Yi Nan, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Li Clan Brothers.

"Brother!" Yue Bing was the first to run towards him, throwing herself into his embrace.

"It's good that you are okay..." Yi Nan also really wanted to hug Yue Yang, but she found it a little embarrassing to do it in front of others. Hence, she tried to stop herself.

"Bing-er, don't cry. Tian Luo Kingdom had already sent two Heavenly Imperial Guardians over. Old General Ma and the others will be fine. I have promised Old General Ma that I will go back and greet him later." Yue Yang caressed Yue Bing's soft hair and smiled at Yi Nan before nodding towards Ye Kong and the others.

"Don't be afraid, with me looking after them, there wouldn't be any problem!" The old cunning fox immediately nodded when he

saw Yue Yang looking towards him at the end.

“Vice Principal, I realized that we actually shared the same Inherent Skill...” Fatty Hai felt that the old cunning fox was as thick-skinned as he was. He even dared to say that he would protect them when he was only a mere Level 5 [Grandmaster]. Wasn’t he afraid of being struck by lightning? Let alone Fatty Hai, even Ye Kong and the others all felt the same way. If the old cunning fox was really as strong as how he had boasted he was, then why would he brought them to find the Eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie to seek for his protection just now?

“Fatty, seems like you need a spanking.” The old cunning fox was almost driven mad. Fortunately there was still Yue Yang, the brat, who knew about his true strength. He knew to find him immediately when they returned to seek for his protection. Otherwise, he would probably die of depression.

Yue Yang laughed at the old cunning fox. He then opened his teleportation scroll and teleported to the wilderness a few kilometers away from Hope Town once again, together with Hui Tai Lang.

What was the situation in Hope Town currently exactly?

With two Heavenly Imperial Guardians dispatched, no matter how aggressive the Demonic Palace was, they would probably exercise some restraint, right?

Teleporting back, Yue Yang actually didn’t hope for the Demonic

Palace to escape and avoid to battle. Instead, he hoped that a huge battle had erupted between the two sides. Maybe he could even benefit as the third party and collect all the spoils of war... Even if he only managed to get a few Demonic Palace Rankers' corpses, they would already be very good fertilizers for his Thorny Flower!

Fertilizers, I'm coming!

Yue Yang impatiently rushed into the Teleportation Gate...

Chapter 166 – Meeting Girls Again!

What appeared in front of Yue Yang's eyes was a pile of Giant Spider corpses, towering high as if it was a small mountain.

Raging flames still continued to burn the ground.

The whole of Hope Town was already levelled by a frightening power. Even the mountain peak on top had been crushed to pieces. The mountain that had been split apart revealed cliffs and jagged edges. A gigantic meteor was embedded deep into the ground not far from where Yue Yang was standing, glowing in embers as thick, white smoke rose up to the sky.

It was obvious that a great battle that Yue Yang wouldn't be able to imagine had exploded in this place. It was definitely a fight between peak rankers.

Yue Yang was secretly glad.

Luckily he had been trapped inside the Mirage and was not able to come out. Otherwise, if he came back to Hope Town and encountered a battle at this scale, let alone reaping the loot from the battle as a third party, he might even lose his life if he wasn't careful. It was good if he could get a strong ranker's corpse as fertilizer, but it would be best if he didn't meet with a very strong enemy in the meantime, otherwise it would be very dangerous for him. Yue Yang realized that other than Giant Spiders, there were also various flying beasts' corpses lying on the ground, their corpses piling everywhere... At a place surrounded by torches,

there was some people who had set up a small camp. Outside the camp, Old General Ma, who was covered in blood, sat on top of a giant stone.

“You have come. Sit.” Old General Ma looked completely exhausted. Seeing Yue Yang coming over, a streak of happiness revealed on his face.

“I, I came back late...” Yue Yang wanted to explain that he had came back late because he had mistakenly entered the Mirage and was stuck inside for more than an hour. But the words were stuck in his throat, in the end, he decided not to explain it.

“It was actually my purpose for you to be caught by the Imperial Guards. The Teleportation Scroll I gave you had the Imperial Palace Back Garden recorded as the Teleportation Target, instead of the Teleportation Circle outside the Imperial Palace. I knew what kind of battle would unfold here. I couldn’t let such a young person like you return to such a dangerous place.” Old General Ma extended his hands and patted Yue Yang’s shoulders lightly, “I’m already very happy that you came back again... I really thank you for risking your life to seek help. If it weren’t for you, all of my soldiers would probably have been annihilated. I would also like to thank you for not abandoning us until the end. You really are a comrade that is worthy of being relied upon. In the future, if there is anything you need help with that this Old Ma can do, just say it and I will definitely come help you no matter how far I am.”

“ ... ”

Yue Yang realised that this Old General Ma was actually an old

cunning fox.

He had actually sent him off to ask for help because he wanted to protect him. Furthermore, he even purposely planned for him to break into the Imperial Palace's Back Garden, and be seized by the Imperial Guards. The only thing that was out of Old General Ma's expectations was that he had actually burst into the Mirage instead, and was trapped until now. Old General Ma had even thought that he had been caught by the Imperial Guards and was only released until now.

However, as for the matter of seeking reinforcements, Yue Yang didn't want to take credit for something he had not done.

He immediately shook his hands, "It was the Hurricane Chi Hou Team that delivered the report, not me. I have returned late. Here's your Tiger Seal!"

Old General Ma suddenly laughed, "Did you think a mere Hurricane Ci Hou Team soldier could make the Heavenly Imperial Guardians move? Furthermore, two Heavenly Imperial Guardians that came. This was not something a mere soldier could do. Actually, the Teleportation Scroll that I gave you was something that was bestowed to me by His Majesty. I can only use it during a dangerous situation. That scroll was not for me, these old bones, to use and save myself. Its purpose was to protect a young promising next generation like you... Normally, this Teleportation Scroll should only be used when the total annihilation of the whole army is imminent, right at the end of our lives. Although I didn't know what you said to His Majesty, it was definitely because of your words that His Majesty had sent out two Heavenly Imperial

Guardians to us. Heavenly Imperial Guardians wouldn't move easily. Even if we all die in battle, they already had an arrangement with the country that they wouldn't care about the country's matters. The Heavenly Imperial Guardians will only move when the country's safety or a the country's future is at risk, protecting the country... This time, the Heavenly Imperial Guardians moved because your life was at stake, threatened by the Demonic Palace. They would definitely not care about the life or death of some normal soldiers!"

"This..." Hearing this, towards Soaring Dragon Continent's culture of being fiercely protective of their future generations, Yue Yang felt happy and thought it was ridiculous at the same time.

They could ignore the lives of a few thousands soldiers, but they could actually cherish a younger generation with high potential and fight for them, even if they aren't a young warrior from their own country.

Yue Yang felt that this was simply too ridiculous.

However, as he thought back, he also felt that it was logical.

To an Innate Ranker, normal people were just as insignificant as a small ants. If they had to take care of all of these small things, they would be completely vexed. Would a normal person stand guard outside an Ant's Nest and help those ants kill their enemies and protect them from harm? That was obviously impossible. However, if it was a weak, small baby whose life was in danger, a normal person would definitely take care of that baby. They would probably not stay on the sidelines and simply watch without doing

anything... To Innate Rankers who fought on the Eighth or Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and the Demon Abyss, the Soaring Dragon Continent was just a small, tiny village. If something happened to the neighbour's child, although he is not their own, they would come help that child.

After thinking about it this way, Yue Yang felt that it was actually quite normal.

If it was him, he might also do the same.

A lot of people die in Mercenary Groups everyday, he couldn't bemoan the sad state of the world and stay by their side every single day, protecting them from being bitten to death by demons. Although he might have nothing to do, he would also not go that far. However, if he met a mercenary soldier that he was fond of and that mercenary soldier was attacked by beasts, he would probably help him...

Those rankers would probably have the same thinking and attitude as he did!

Yue Yang nodded. Now he realised, maybe the Night Empress had actually purposely trapped him inside the Mirage for an hour.

As for the other person whose voice carried an imposing presence, could he actually be the Tian Luo Kingdom Emperor, Hua Xu Ri?

However, why did the voice... why didn't the voice sound like a guy's? Could it be that the Tian Luo Emperor Hua Xu Ri was actually a woman... Yue Yang hurriedly abandoned that thought. It was because the Soaring Dragon Continent regarded men as superior to women. If Hua Xu Ri was a woman, she would definitely not become Emperor.

Furthermore, Hua Xu Ri's sister was also not the Night Empress.

Hua Xu Ri had two sisters, one was a blood-related sister and she became Jun Wu You's Consort, while the other was a step-sister and she married the Emperor of Zi Jin.

Maybe the other voice that carried an imposing presence was one of the three Heavenly Imperial Guardians. As that person didn't appear again afterwards, so maybe he/she had gone to Hope Town already.

"In the future, you must be careful of the people from the Demonic Palace. They might set you as their target." Old General Ma patted Yue Yang's shoulder. "I can't help you much. I can only say a few words, if you need help, this Old Ma and my three thousand Hurricane Elite Troops who owe our lives to you will help you anytime!"

Old General Ma jumped down from the rock, waved his hands then left without turning back.

At a far distance, Yue Yang could see thousands of Hurricane Elite Troops that uniformly bowed towards Yue Yang. Then, they

lifted their injured comrades and went inside the Teleportation Spell, leaving this place of death.

The next day.

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Clan brothers was sent away on a mission given by the eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie.

Yue Bing and Yi Nan, on the other hand, was brought by the old cunning fox to meet the Principal. It was said that they became transcribers, and had not returned yet. With nothing to do, Yue Yang learnt Space Teleportation related knowledge from the old cunning fox. This time, the old cunning fox could be as cocky as he pleased and say, “What? You can’t even do such a simple thing? Such a genius like you, how could you not be able to do a simple thing like this?” the moment he opened his mouth.

Yue Yang was so suffocated to the point he couldn’t even speak. He had sought for old cunning fox’s teachings because he didn’t know how to. If he knew how to, he would have kicked him to the ninth cloud!

After jeering at Yue Yang for a whole day, the old cunning fox felt really happy in his heart.

He gave Yue Yang a book named Comprehensive Collection of Space Theory to learn by the heart and whistled as he went away to attend an Imperial Banquet.

“I have never seen such a jerk of a teacher my whole life. I hope that old bastard will drop dead on the street!” Yue Yang didn’t know any Death Spirit Curses Techniques, otherwise he would have thrown a few curses on the old cunning fox’s head. Fortunately, Yue Yang’s bad mood didn’t last long and took a turn for the better instead. This was because a messenger had come from the Thief Guild, passing him a letter from Luo Hua City Mistress. She said that she had arrived at the ruins of Hope Town, and urged him to quickly come to her place.

Reading this, Yue Yang’s mood immediately turned good.

His beautiful sexual life had finally arrived. Since he had not had time to push Yi Nan down, pushing this Luo Hua City Mistress would also do.

As his wolfy intentions surfaced in his heart, he remembered the wonderful feeling on his back when he was carrying Luo Hua City Mistress previously. That kind of feeling... Yue Yang immediately felt a hot, tingling sensation, as if fire had started burning and electric currents had started rippling all over his body, making his throat feel dry and parched.

Seems like he would choke to death if he did not push that Luo Hua City Mistress down soon.

Yue Yang immediately opened a Teleportation Scroll that had the ruins of Hope Town as the Teleportation Target. He brought Hui Tai Lang along, and then disappeared like smoke, yelling, “Girl, I’m coming, come and smile for me!”

However, the one who appeared in front of Yue Yang was not only the smiling Luo Hua City Mistress who revealed her dimples, there was also the mysterious beauty who kept holding on to her Ancient Book.

Yue Yang was immediately petrified.

Originally, getting to see a girl again had made his heart thoroughly stirred up and excited.

But when he met up with the girl, there wasn't just one, instead, there were two. Yue Yang was simply too excited to the point his heart almost couldn't take it anymore!

The difficulty of pushing down a girl was already very high, so pushing down two girls, this difficulty... It was definitely more than a hundred times, no, a thousand times harder than pushing down one girl alone. Maybe, he would succeed in pushing down Luo Hua City Mistress if he had found a suitable time and place, wrote her a few romantic poems and gave her a nice surprise, in addition to violently stripping off her clothes and let loose his flirty wolfy paws. However, even a fool would know that this was impossible under the mysterious beauty's watch!

Could he push them down at the same time?

Could he have a threesome?

Yue Yang felt that the chances of that succeeding was even smaller than the chances of him killing two Marquises of Zi Jins instantly in a single move!

“You guys know each other?” Yue Yang had a feeling that the two girls knew each other and had purposely come to find him together so that he wouldn’t have his way with them. Fortunately he didn’t bring Yue Bing or Yi Nan along, otherwise, it would really be very crowded...

“No.” Luo Hua City Mistress and the mysterious beauty denied it at the same time.

“Who are you trying to deceive?” Yue Yang was almost driven mad. How could they be so coincidentally waiting for him here at the same time if they did not know each other?

“I really don’t know her. Yue Yang, who is she? Introduce her to me...” Luo Hua City Mistress laughed out. Her laughter hinted a little killing intent, her eyes sharp like a blade as if she really wanted to cut down Yue Yang’s flesh.

“I don’t know who she is.” Yue Yang couldn’t introduce her to Luo Hua City Mistress, because he had never even seen the mysterious beauty’s face underneath the veil before. He also didn’t know what her name was.

“Then what you meant was, she was just buying that... what was that again?” Luo Hua City Mistress heard Yue Yang use the phrase ‘buying soy sauce’ before, but she had forgotten.

(Shiro: buying soy sauce means someone who just passes by, no business at all. Used a few times in the story, but I always translated it as ‘someone who just passes by’)

“It’s buying soy sauce.” The mysterious beauty’s memory was very good, she had remembered it clearly.

“She even knew ‘buying soy sauce’, and you still dare to say that you don’t know her?” Luo Hua City Mistress suddenly grabbed Yue Yang’s collars, her actions quite similar to Princess Qian Qian who had the aim to be a Yan Zhi Hu. However, other than grabbing onto Yue Yang’s sleeves, the Imperial Swordswoman had also liked to stare at Yue Yang with her Yan Zhi Hu’s eyes, as if she wanted to see through his heart. It was a pity that after Yue Yang’s [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill had levelled up, Princess Qian Qian, the Imperial Swordswoman’s [Six Records] Inherent Skill had miserably become obsolete.

(Shiro: Yan Zhi Hu is a chinese folklore about a female tiger who turned herself into a woman, no english reference found, sorry)

“This...” Yue Yang felt that if he couldn’t handle the situation carefully and answer correctly, his blissful sexual life would definitely be doomed.

For his future blissful sexual life, Yue Yang gritted his teeth.

He had decided to: LIE!

Chapter 167 – When Three Women Meet, The World Will Be In Great Chaos

“Ah, actually, she’s my wife. She is already bearing my baby in her womb, I didn’t dare to tell you this before.” Yue Yang acted as if he was ungrateful.

“...” The mysterious beauty was blown away.

“Hahahahaha!” Luo Hua City’s Mistress was initially dumbstruck for a short while. However, immediately afterwards, she burst into a huge fit of laughter. She laughed until her shoulders were trembling wildly and finally even her tears came out. She patted Yue Yang and, resisting her urge to laugh, said, “She’s still a virgin, how could she bear a baby? Can your jokes be more hilarious?”

“City Mistress, how do you know she’s a virgin?” Yue Yang asked while acting dumb.

“Didn’t you realise that she has that nice virgin smell like me? I say, Yue Yang, you have to see who the other party is if you want to lie!” Luo Hua City’s Mistress laughed.

“There’s really a virgin smell? Let me smell it!” Yue Yang moved closer to the mysterious beauty.

“Go smell yourself!” The mysterious beauty beat Yue Yang down to the ground with a book.

“Now that I think about it, your skin really is thicker than the city walls.” Luo Hua City’s Mistress bent down and placed her slim finger on Yue Yang’s chin while grinning. Her lips were only a few centimetres away from kissing Yue Yang’s lips. Her breath was like a flower’s, and her actions were ambiguous. “Actually, you don’t have to be so nervous. No matter what kind of relationship you have with her, it’s fine! I’m just a little concerned over the lifetime happiness of my future Guard Captain. Don’t misunderstand!”

“I’ve already misunderstood... Ah, no. What I meant was, I wanted to misunderstand. No, I mean I said that the misunderstanding has already been cleared up, I’m not nervous!” Yue Yang was a little incoherent.

“Your heart seems to be beating really fast?” Luo Hua City’s Mistress’ eyes seemed to carry a mischievous glint while laughing.

“This, proves that I have great vitality.” In this posture, Yue Yang could see a bit of snow-white skin. Thankfully, he didn’t drown in that wonderful yet unfathomable sea of breasts. Under this situation, if his heartbeat did not quicken, then he was [Dongfang Bubai](#).

(Sephilia: a character in a famous novel of a guy who castrated himself in order to master a legendary martial arts skill)

“Your face seems to be a little red?” Luo Hua City’s Mistress asked again.

“It proves that I am healthy and my complexion is good!” Yue

Yang's answer was extremely fluent.

“Why are you sweating at the tip of your nose?” Luo Hua City's Mistress lightly blew on Yue Yang's face. She nearly melted Yue Yang's bones from her cuteness.

Flirting while they were in this kind of ambiguous posture, if his heart didn't quicken, his face didn't redden and he didn't sweat from the tip of his nose, then Yue Yang's name would have already been changed to be called [Liuxia Hui](#)*. The most terrible thing was that there was still a mysterious beauty watching them from the side. The double stimulation made him feel really bad. Many times, Yue Yang was on the verge of pushing either one of them down. After all, neither of the women were bad at all.

(*Sephilia: an Ancient Chinese politician with eminent virtue.)

However, he was also very greedy in his heart.

He felt that both of them were great women and he could not just give them to others so easily. He had to take the both of them for himself.

Of course, it would be even harder for him to take everything. Therefore, Yue Yang could not act too perverted. He had to act like an upright man and reduce their vigilance towards him.

Yue Yang said resolutely, “The tip of my nose is sweating because the weather is too hot!”

Just after saying this, a gust of cold wind blew and filled the sky with snow.

Snowflakes drifted down from the sky...

The mysterious beauty suddenly turned around, sneezing so lightly a mosquito wouldn't even be scared from it, and said to herself, "This weather is really too hot!"

"Don't worry, my clothes are Heattech™ !" Seeing that there was a chance for him to be gallant, he quickly sprung up and took off his leather coat, wrapping it over the mysterious beauty's body.

"Your movements are really well trained... " Luo Hua City's Mistress judged Yue Yang with her gaze and asked while grinning, "Can you take off another layer?"

"If I take off any more, I'll be naked. However, If you really want it, I can give it to you. I haven't washed my pants for half a month. Is it fine?" Yue Yang was preparing to take off his pants.

"Who would want it!" Luo Hua City's Mistress extended her hands and touched the leather coat draped over the mysterious beauty. She said this rather abruptly, causing Yue Yang's heart to nearly be scared out of his body. Luo Hua City's Mistress seemed to have said it accidentally. Surprised, she said, "This is wyvern skin? Was it the wyvern that we fought in Hanging Pavilion*? The quality of the skin isn't bad, I didn't think that you would be able to make this so quickly!"

(*Shiro: Previously translated as pavilion in the sky, etc. It's the

Bloody Queen's Pavilion, I'm going to call it Hanging Pavilion this chapter onwards)

“You fought a wyvern with her at the Hanging Pavilion?” This time, it was the mysterious beauty who looked at Yue Yang with eyes as sharp as knives.

“Definitely not! Because the two old men were too particular about detail, the wyverns that I fought with Luo Hua City's Mistress hasn't been done yet. This was the Poison Wyvern that I fought with Princess Qian Qian, that silly girl, when we went together to the Eagle's Cry Valley in Gui Jian Chou... “ Yue Yang hurriedly admitted while explaining the situation.

The two women heard it and immediately a look of understanding appeared on their faces. “Ah, so it was fought with Princess Qian Qian!”

Yue Yang immediately started sweating. It's over, how did he manage to drag Princess Qian Qian into this?

This time, he wouldn't be able to convince them of his innocence.

Seeing the sharp gazes of the two women, Yue Yang raised his hands in surrender. “Please don't misunderstand. Actually, I don't have any relationship with Princess Qian Qian. Although I went to Eagle's Cry Valley to fight monsters with her, but I didn't flirt with her before. I didn't touch her breasts either. I wouldn't even know of the fact that her breasts are a little larger than the both of yours,

neither would I know that her waist... Anyway, I was very obedient that time. I didn't do anything, I don't know anything!"

"Go on." Luo Hua City's Mistress started gathering light in her hand.

"Seems like I will believe your story soon!" The mysterious beauty was also prepared to summon a blizzard.

"God, I'm really innocent... Who can prove it for me? Hui Tai Lang, say that I'm innocent!" Yue Yang was really going to cry, why did it become worse the more he described it? Seeing his master say this, Hui Tai Lang immediately used its newly acquired foreign language, and "meowed". Afterwards, it nodded its head happily, proving that his master was innocent.

Yue Yang tumbled.

Luo Hua City's Mistress and the mysterious beauty clapped and sneered as they commended him. "Not bad, even the pet was trained to the extent where it can help with its master's lies."

Yue Yang almost fainted and tried to explain while sweating profusely, "I really didn't do anything to Princess Qian Qian. That silly girl would use her eyes with heavy makeup to stare at me. It's really terrifying! She'd take her sword to cut people down too. She's very fierce, unlike the two of you, who are gentle and soft. How would I dare to flirt with her? It's more like she's flirting with me. I really have no relationship with her at all, the heavens can testify for me!"

“I can testify for him too.” Behind Yue Yang, a clear-sounding voice rang out. It sincerely affirmed the fact. “He really didn’t do anything else to me, aside from ripping all of my clothes into shreds while pinning me down under him.”

Eh?

Turning his head, Yue Yang suddenly discovered that the swordswoman oneesan, Princess Qian Qian was standing behind him.

He thought that he had poor eyesight and rubbed his eyes.

Finally, he discovered that it was not an illusion. Instantly, his sweat fell down like rain.

Curious, Luo Hua City’s Mistress asked, “What happened after your clothes were torn into pieces?”

“His wolfish hands... “ Princess Qian Qian, who was wearing a suit of silver armour, nodded honestly and admitted the truth of being assaulted by Yue Yang’s wolfish hands.

“No, I was only trying to deceive a flesh-eating crow at that time, I assure you I didn’t touch it!” Yue Yang hurriedly explained himself.

“Yes, he didn’t touch it.” Princess Qian Qian affirmed Yue Yang’s explanation, and nodded. “His wolfish hands had actually grabbed them...”

“What happened after his wolfish hands grabbed them?” At this time, the mysterious beauty suddenly asked.

“After he grabbed them, nothing happened. I mean, he didn’t grab them and nothing happened afterwards. No, I mean, the enemy appeared, we were busy fighting the enemy, we didn’t have time to do anything else!” Yue Yang reminisced what happened that day. He was pushing Princess Qian Qian down, and he had reached his wolfish hands out, but did he really grab them? At that time, he was too nervous. He really seemed to have touched it a little from his memory. His memories weren’t too clear at that time. Did he grab them or not? Yue Yang was unable to confirm it. He felt that the entire process was muddled in his head.

“Mhm, the enemy came, after around two hours or so...” Princess Qian Qian’s words really made people misunderstand easily. The enemies came after two hours. Then, what should have been done should have been done. What shouldn’t have been done was probably done too!

“What did the both of you do in those two hours?” Luo Hua City’s Mistress asked.

“Nothing!” Yue Yang felt that what he just said, let alone the two of them, even he could not believe himself either.

“Are you feeling uncomfortable somewhere?” The mysterious beauty asked. It seemed that she suspected that Princess Qian Qian was carrying Yue Yang’s little baby.

“My body is still fine. It only hurt afterwards for a few days!” Princess Qian Qian’s words made Yue Yang plant his head on the ground. If Jun Wu You were to hear these words, he would probably chop off his head. These words were too ambiguous! It was hinting that Yue Yang had pushed her down forcefully, so it hurt for a few days afterwards... Yue Yang felt that even if he jumped into the [Yellow River](#), he wouldn’t be able to wash away his sins. Besides, there was no Yellow River for him to jump into in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

“Fine, I admit it. I wanted to do that, but I didn’t dare to do it...” Yue Yang felt that if he did not speak some truth, he would really have to prepare his will and epitaph.

“I feel like I can’t really trust the confession of this criminal.” Luo Hua City’s Mistress was just like a stern judge.

“Why did you not dare to really do it?” The mysterious beauty’s question sounded like a lawyer’s.

“I didn’t have the guts to.” Yue Yang answered like this.

“Mhm, I can testify that he has no guts. His guts is just a little higher than the sky after all.” The more this swordswoman Princess Qian Qian wanted to help, the more trouble she created. She was here to cause trouble for him.

“We can present his verdict now.” Luo Hua City’s Mistress seemed like she was preparing to sentence Yue Yang to his death.

“Wait, I want to say my last words.” Yue Yang lightly coughed and cleared his throat. “I’m very regretful that I didn’t manage to push three beauties down when they fainted in front of me. Now, I regret it far too much. If heaven gives me another three chances, I will sincerely tell the three women that I want to push them down. Not only that, I want to push each one down ten thousand times!”

The world quietened down.

Yue Yang heaved a sigh of relief. He should be fine now.

Although he wanted to push them down, but it had not become the truth yet. This should not cause him to be sentenced to death.

After a few seconds, the mysterious beauty suddenly opened her mouth, causing Yue Yang to have an impulse to commit seppuku. Only now did he find out that Luo Hua City’s Mistress and Princess Qian Qian were not his mortal enemies. The truly troublesome woman was this mysterious beauty whose name he didn’t even know!

Only she was his true nemesis!

“Aside from me and Luo Hua City’s Mistress, who’s the other girl that fainted in front of you?” The mysterious beauty asked a very

important question.

“I’ll cut down this evil siscon in front of me!” Princess Qian Qian realised. It was apparent that out of these three girls, she was not part of the group. She had never fainted in front of him before. Although she was pushed down before, but she was awake at that time. Then, the third girl that fainted in his embrace could only be Yue Bing... As Princess Qian Qian thought this, her temper flared up. She drew her greatsword, ready to chop him into pieces.

“Wait, I remember there was a female thief who was shorter than you by a head, but her body was really slender.” Luo Hua City’s Mistress pointed at the mysterious beauty and tried to recall.

“Ah, you mean Brother Yi Nan!” The mysterious beauty seemed to have a greater understanding towards Yue Yang than Luo Hua City’s Mistress and Princess Qian Qian.

Yue Yang fell onto the ground as he heard this.

She even knew of this. Was this girl stalking him everyday?

Seeing that the three girls looked at him with gazes as sharp as knives, Yue Yang hurriedly shook his head and waved his hands, saying, “It’s a misunderstanding! I didn’t know that Brother Yi Nan was a girl at all! My friendship with Yi Nan is completely pure...”

The mysterious beauty suddenly took out a piece of jade, handing

it over to Yue Yang. “This was what I picked up after we fought the Marquis of Zi Jin. Please explain your great and pure friendship with Brother Yi Nan using this engagement jade from the Hundred Flower Valley.” Yue Yang was about to vomit blood, how did this jade end up in her hands? No wonder he wasn’t successful when flirting these two days. He had lost this lucky jade pendant.

(Shiro: Refer to chapter 97, Brother Yi Nan gave Yue Yang ‘his sister’s’ token, a jade pendant necklace that will serve as a prove of identity if Yue Yang visited them in Hundred Flower Valley.)

The three women all looked at Yue Yang curiously, seeing what else he could say at this point of time.

Chapter 168 – Little Scoundrel, Don't Even Think About It!

“There's nothing to explain, Brother Yi Nan pitied me because no girls liked me before, so he was planning to introduce his sister to me.” Yue Yang hurriedly put on the jade pendant back on his neck. With his lucky pendant back, Yue Yang had gained back a little of his courage and confidence.

At least there was still Yi Nan, he wouldn't be afraid of not being able to find a wife.

As for the three girls in front of him, since the milk had already been spilt, he would not care about salvaging it any more. At least he still had one.

When his abilities grew stronger in the future, if he still couldn't pick up girls, then he should just force them instead. As long as he could push them down, he wouldn't be afraid of them slapping him. He could pamper them slowly after they had all become his. Picking girls up is a process of conquering their heart and body; it's best if he could conquer their hearts before conquering their bodies. If it was really impossible to do so, then he could do it the other way around too. Conquer their body first, then conquer their hearts... Of course, the latter method would require him to have a strong and powerful foundation.

Otherwise, the consequences of trying to force a girl when he was still very weak could only end in tragedy. There was even the possibility that the girl would cut off his little brother.

Yue Yang felt that they were colluding together to fight against him. On the surface, this alliance looked impossible to break. However, no matter how strong an alliance was, they wouldn't be able to compare with the expert way he divide his heart.

As long as he continued to sow discord amongst them, their sisterhood alliance would definitely crumble sooner or later.

As long as they were alone, he would be able to catch them when they were off their guard.

“So it turns out that Yue Yang already had an engagement to be married, congratulations!” Luo Hua City Mistress smiled as she reached her hands out and caressed Yue Yang's hair. On the surface, it looked like the City Mistress was caring for her subordinate, but the sour smell that she emitted could even be smelled five kilometers away. She might not have fallen in love with this foolish and audacious little thief yet, but any girl would feel a little jealous seeing the excellent man that they wanted to get close to be booked by another woman.

“That's a really good explanation. It perfectly explained the great and pure friendship between you and Brother Yi Nan. I think I can believe that Brother Yi Nan and you are innocent.” The mysterious beauty closed the Ancient Book in her hands, then disappeared in front of Yue Yang with the wind.

“Sorry, I'm just buying soy sauce.” Princess Qian Qian didn't know [Space Teleportation], but she had a Teleportation Scroll

with her.

“Hey, actually...” Yue Yang hurriedly called out to her.

“Actually you wanted to say that I am a silly girl who liked to glare at others with my Yan Zhi Hu eyes, right? You don’t have to repeat it again, I have heard it all just now.” Princess Qian Qian’s leg flew out and kicked hard at Yue Yang’s butt, sending him flying away. Then, she stomped her foot angrily as she entered the Teleportation Gate and left.

“It’s okay, Princess Qian Qian is an impetuous person. She gets angry easily but calms down easily too.” Luo Hua City Mistress laughed as she pulled Yue Yang up, patting dusts from his body. Her face was full of smiles as she said, “Furthermore, you are not at a disadvantage since whoever kicked you must become your wife as a compensation for your loss*. Princess Qian Qian had kicked you just now, so she wouldn’t be able to run away from her responsibilities. Congratulations, Yue Yang, in the future, you will gain a tigress...uhh, I mean, Princess Qian Qian, as your wife!”

(*Shiro: Chapter 152 right at the end)

“I’m going to faint!” Yue Yang realized that the three girls who said that they didn’t know each other were actually sharing information about him. No matter what words he had said before, the three girls all knew about it.

What was the relationship between them actually?

Or maybe they had formed a sisterhood alliance in order to fight

against him, sharing information between each other?

He had never heard them mentioning each other before... From the Night Empress words, he could deduce that Luo Hua City Mistress was actually a Tian Luo Kingdom's citizen. On the other hand, Princess Qian Qian was a Da Xia Princess. As for the remaining mysterious masked girl who liked to read and stalk him everyday, who exactly was she?

Could it be that she was a Princess from the Zi Jin Kingdom?

Impossible, Zi Jin Kingdom was full of burly and ferocious men, beauties were almost an extinct species in the Zi Jin Kingdom.

Truthfully, Yue Yang actually suspected that the mysterious beauty was Xue Tan Lang's sister, which meant that she was actually the Miss Xue that the pitiful guy had cancelled his engagement with.

But thinking about it again, if Miss Xue was really jilted by the pitiful guy, then she must really hated him to the bone. If the mysterious beauty was really Miss Xue, she would have beaten him to death, why would she risk her life to save him? Especially when they were fighting against the Marquis of Zi Jin, whose strength could induce despair in his opponents. On the verge of death, she had actually wanted to use her last blizzard to give him time to run away... A girl like her who could risk her life for him, could she really be Miss Xue who should be hating him down to his bones?

Yue Yang couldn't be sure, but he was very curious.

“Hey, hey. Although they have all gone away, I’m still here... If you think you have to go after them, then go quickly!” Luo Hua City Mistress looked amiable and easygoing on the surface, as if she didn’t care at all. However, Yue Yang could be sure that if he really went after the other two girls, he would probably not be able to meet Luo Hua City Mistress ever again.

Only a fool would dump a girl in front of him to go after another!

Yue Yang jumped up and quickly held Luo Hua City Mistress’ hands, pretending to be incomparably loyal and sincere, “Reporting to City Mistress, I have promised you my service and assumed the position of your personal Guard Captain to protect you 24 hours a day. Furthermore, I can also work overtime at night for free!” His words immediately amused Luo Hua City Mistress and made her laugh out loud until her whole body shook.

In the end, she sent Yue Yang a look, “I daresay you are the most shameless person in the whole world!”

Shortly after, she added, “Can you tell me how many girls exactly have you flirted with? Ten? A hundred?”

Yue Yang stomped his foot and stand at attention, pretending to be honorable and all, “Reporting to the City Mistress, a hundred woman is my life’s goal! Your personal Guard Captain’s current successful count is zero. End of report, waiting for your next instructions!”

“Hahaha!” Luo Hua City Mistress’ hands rested on top of Yue Yang’s shoulders as she laughed hard. Her body had become weak with laughter and she almost fell into Yue Yang’s embrace.

The sweet smell from her body penetrated deeply into Yue Yang’s heart.

If he were to speak of Luo Hua City Mistress’ sexiest moments, it was when she was laughing with her unique, unrestrained laughter. Her loud laughter did not make him feel that she was disgraceful. On the contrary, it made him feel that she was very natural, exuberant and frank. She made him feel that she was showing her joy that was truly from the bottom of her heart. The laughter that she laughed out didn’t look fake nor concealed, it was real and out in the open. It even had the lovable quality that others didn’t have; it was extremely beautiful.

Yue Yang really wanted to hug the Luo Hua City Mistress who liked to laugh tightly, then kiss her cherry lips fiercely and suck her sweetness and happiness from her mouth.

His hands moved slightly, but stopped afterwards.

It was not yet the right time.

Inevitably, the day where she would take the initiative to hug him herself would come. She would then inch her cherry lips towards him and stay beside him forever.

As long as he managed to make her completely fall for him... This Luo Hua Mistress, he would definitely not let her escape from his hands. He must definitely win her over and make her fall in love with him!

“Alright, I shall employ you as my temporary personal Guard Captain for a month. After a month, if your performance is not up to par, I will fire you immediately.” Luo Hua City Mistress finally managed to stop her laughter after great difficulties and declared, pretending to be strict and honorable. “My personal Guard Captain, I am tired from my journey. It’s all forest and wilderness here, there’s no human settlements even within a few dozen kilometers in radius. Do you have any good idea?”

“The good idea is...” Yue Yang then carried Luo Hua City Mistress on his back in one swift movement, his forearms supporting her legs and his hands propping her butt, before he started walking with great strides.

Luo Hua City Mistress felt that this brat had opened her legs a little too wide when he carried her up. Furthermore, the way his back rubbed with her bottom part also felt a little uncomfortable. Her snow-white face immediately turned red as she felt something warm coming from the place that was rubbing against him.

She wanted to scold him and struggle to come down, but she suddenly felt an indescribable feeling of satisfaction and comfort being carried by him that way.

Might as well, she thought, as she slowly rested her upper body onto his back. At first, she tried to prop her body up to prevent her

chest from touching his back.

However after a while, she felt that it was extremely tiring this way. She kept moving and changing the positions of her arms, trying to find the most comfortable position. In the end, she finally circled her arms around his neck and slowly relaxed her body, pasting her whole body onto his back. She naturally relaxed her whole body and allowed him to carry her forward. Luo Hua City Mistress discovered that this posture was not as awkward as she had imagined it to be. On the contrary, she felt an unusual sense of security.

She remembered that at the Hanging Pavilion in the Flying Mountains, he had carried her this way before.

Remembering it again now, she felt that it was extremely comfortable.

Although this brat was a little fickle-minded, he was quite truthful about his bad points, unlike those men who put up a false appearance and made her feel disgusted.

Remembering all the times they went through together, and then remembering the scene that happened just now, Luo Hua City Mistress couldn't help but to laugh out again. When Yue Yang curiously turned his head around, Luo Hua City Mistress asked something that even she herself had never thought she would ask, "When you were carrying me to escape from the Hanging Pavilion before, did you ever tried to touch me secretly?"

Yue Yang immediately jumped in fright. Although his wolfy paws was pressing against Luo Hua City Mistress' butt unbridledly, his mouth had hurriedly denied, "I have never done such a thing like touching others secretly! I have never even thought of it..."

"Then what are you doing now?" Luo Hua City Mistress almost sweated to death. How many times had this brat actually touched her secretly? His movements seemed to be seasoned and professional!

"It was just a momentary loss of control, really!" Yue Yang sweated profusely, why didn't his hands listen to him?

"How long are you going to lose control then?" Luo Hua City Mistress felt that if she let this brat continue to knead her butt, she would probably become a well-kneaded dough.

"If you don't mind, I'd like to lose control for a while more..." Yue Yang couldn't bear to let his hands go. With such a wonderful feeling in his hands, he wouldn't want to let his hands go so easily even if he die. Above all, listening to her sweet breathing in his ears and her heart thumping, these feelings simply made his wolfy blood boil! If he could carry her like this, he didn't mind carrying her for his whole life!

"How bothersome. You are too rude, you failed as a Guard Captain!" Luo Hua City Mistress tried to twist her body around to show her resistance, but Yue Yang had taken it as encouragement instead.

“If my performance is not up to par, you can deduct it from my pay. My performance will get better over time...” Yue Yang felt that he was almost burnt by the fire of passion. He turned back, wanting to kiss Luo Hua City Mistress as he sought her cherry lips that was breathing out her sweet-smelling breath.

Luo Hua City Mistress avoided him, disallowing him to kiss her.

However, as the movements of Yue Yang’s wandering hands became even more serious and persistent, determined to kiss her no matter what, she slowly lifted her head.

Slowly closing her mesmerizing, dazed and beautiful eyes, her lips slowly trembled.

She slowly leaned closer, her lips blossoming like a flower blooming...

Kiss her!

No matter if the sky fell or the earth split apart, he must definitely kiss this beauty!

As Yue Yang was about to fiercely kiss her, a sudden gust of wind blew. Both him and Luo Hua City Mistress jumped in fright, lifting their heads at the same time as they looked around the surroundings, thinking that the mysterious beauty had come... After looking around for quite a while, they didn’t see anyone, but their hearts almost stopped out of fright.

When Yue Yang wanted to kiss her again, Luo Hua City Mistress bit on his earlobe and laughed out loud, “Little Scoundrel, don’t even think about it!”

The slight pain on his ears sent Yue Yang’s senses reeling.

His wolfy blood boiled!

He really wanted to just go ahead and push her down, but he was certain that not only would Luo Hua City Mistress refuse to be pushed down, a certain hidden female thief would also watch him being beaten black and blue without doing anything. Maybe even the Imperial Swordswoman who had left angrily would come back to join in the fun and beat him up too...

Forget it, it was too easy to be exposed doing bad things during the day.

He should wait for night time!

This Luo Hua girl would fall for him sooner or later, so he shouldn’t be too impatient. Food must be savoured with every single bite. Even tofu must be eaten bite by bite!

Just as Yue Yang was thinking about how to launch a sneak attack on Luo Hua City Mistress that night, a teleportation gate suddenly opened behind him. Princess Qian Qian brandished her great sword and rushed out loudly. Yue Yang jumped in fright.

What had actually happened? Could it be that the mysterious beauty had told her about how he had acted insolently towards Luo Hua City Mistress? Could it be that this tigress had wanted to catch them in the act then slash him down with her sword?

Who would have known that Princess Qian Qian's lovely shout afterwards would make Yue Yang's heart started palpitating instead. This was because Princess Qian Qian's shout was: "Run, quickly!"

Chapter 169 – Flaws, Temptations, Beating People At Their Own Game

“What happened?” Seeing that Princess Qian Qian’s face was completely red, Luo Hua City Mistress quickly got off from Yue Yang’s back. She was shocked when she saw the anxious look on Princess Qian Qian’s face and quickly asked her what happened.

“Above Hope Town’s ruins, there are two Earth Demon-ranked Corrupted Warriors who are about to ambush us. Run!” Princess Qian Qian rushed towards them.

Without wasting a single second, she took out a silver teleportation scroll that was outlined in gold, and opened a large-scale party teleportation gate.

Then, she hurriedly pulled Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress, trying to take both of them away from this dangerous situation.

However, at the instant right before entering the teleportation gate, Yue Yang’s hand moved.

With the Hui Jin Magic Blade in his left hand, he cut towards the teleportation gate with its purple flames. His right hand took out the Dragon-Slaying Dagger, slowly yet unstoppably thrusting towards Princess Qian Qian’s back. The teleportation gate shattered into pieces with an explosive sound. After Yue Yang learned how to control the fire ability from the power of [Yang], the strength of his purple flames had increased to more than ten times as compared to before. The teleportation gate that was

difficult to break had disappeared with a single slash of Yue Yang's blade.

At the same time, Princess Qian Qian was pierced by the Dragon-Slaying Dagger through her back.

The Dragon-Slaying Dagger pierced her from behind and came out from her chest... Not just Princess Qian Qian, but even Luo Hua City Mistress was extremely surprised.

Why did Yue Yang want to kill Princess Qian Qian?

Was it Just because Princess Qian Qian had kicked him flying, so now he wanted to pay her back in double and kill her?

With a blood-curdling scream, Princess Qian Qian fell onto the ground, painfully clutching her chest with fresh blood spewing out of the wound. Her eyes showed no understanding of the situation, as if asking Yue Yang why he had done this.

“What are you doing?” Luo Hua City Mistress was angry. Even if Princess Qian Qian had kicked Yue Yang, at most, he could just slap her in return. Otherwise, he could perhaps take off her clothes and spank her butt. Why did he have to kill her? Human beings were not Guardian Beasts. If they died, there would be no way for them to revive again... Luo Hua City Mistress knew that Yue Yang definitely had a reason to do so, but she still felt very angry. He had killed off Princess Qian Qian without even uttering a single word. He was far too cruel!

“Actually, I can explain, give me some time!” Yue Yang, however, had a brilliant smile on his face.

“Speak.” Luo Hua City Mistress suppressed her anger. She felt that if this guy did not explain clearly the reason why he did this, she would probably bite him to death alive!

“She’s a fake Princess Qian Qian!” Yue Yang said with absolute certainty.

“A fake?” Clouds of doubt were cast in Luo Hua City Mistress’ heart.

“I’m not, I’m not, q-quickly save me...” Princess Qian Qian stretched out her bloodied hand in pain, struggling to ask Luo Hua City Mistress to save her.

“Did you know how many flaws there were in your disguise? Too many! Not only that, ever since the matter that arose with the fake Elder Tian Suo, I’ve always been looking for leads on this. You can’t use the same trick on me twice.” Yue Yang strode in front of the fake Princess Qian Qian and shrugged. “Although you changed your appearance to look exactly like Princess Qian Qian on the outside, but, in front of me, you’re like a clown who has too many flaws, goofing around everywhere!”

“When did I not act like her?” The fake Princess Qian Qian suddenly stood up. Coughing lightly, the wound in her chest rapidly grew smaller and knitted itself together. However, the demonic heart that Yue Yang had pierced through with the

Dragon-Slaying Dagger was unable to recover, causing her great pain.

“First, Princess Qian Qian has the [Six Records] Inherent Skill. She is great in staring at people with her eyes. I didn’t have that sense from you at all; Second, Princess Qian Qian is hiding an extremely powerful, mysterious beast in her body. I’m sorry to say this, but you don’t have it in your body either; Third, Princess Qian Qian’s running habit. She doesn’t carry her greatsword horizontally like you do, but rather drags it. This is because she cuts relatively late, slashing from her back to the front, which eventually is much faster than making a sweeping slash. It also has greater power.” Yue Yang smiled lightly. The fake Princess Qian Qian was dumbfounded at the number of flaws she had after all.

“I felt that there was something strange too, but I really didn’t notice that she wasn’t holding her sword as per usual... “ Luo Hua City Mistress felt that this Yue Yang brat was indeed very attentive.

“Princess Qian Qian rarely keeps her sword on guard while running. She likes to sheath her sword and launch a surprise attack to deliver a fatal blow.” Yue Yang gave another example.

“Yeah, that’s right!” Luo Hua City Mistress confirmed it by nodding her head.

“Couldn’t it be the case that she had just finished a battle with someone beforehand?” The fake Princess Qian Qian could not believe that keeping the sword out was an error too.

“Of course she could have. But, you didn’t know the changes after she pulled out her sword at all. At first, her sword sheath was positioned to tilt towards her left shoulder. However, the moment she pulled out her sword, her sword sheath would tilt to her right shoulder with an incomparable speed in order to give momentum for both of her hands to slash with the greatsword. Your sword sheath is still currently tilting to left side. This doesn’t fit Princess Qian Qian’s habit when she was pulling her sword. You have to know that if a habit is formed from young, it won’t change in normal circumstances.” Yue Yang sneered.

“This... “ The fake Princess Qian Qian really didn’t know about these detailed movements of Princess Qian Qian’s sword sheath.

“An important flaw is that Princess Qian Qian’s sword is an equipment. However, your sword, since you couldn’t find the same greatsword to fool us, was created with a beast’s illusion. Because it is a beast there’s a faint link between it and you. On the other hand, Princess Qian Qian’s sword is only an equipment that is meant to support the battle strength of its owner.” After Yue Yang pointed it out, that fake Princess Qian Qian turned the greatsword into a silver python.

“Any other flaws?” The fake Princess Qian Qian seemed to be about to move.

“Of course there is.” As Yue Yang said this, Luo Hua City Mistress was dumbfounded.

There wasn't even half a minute to examine her just now. This lad had managed to find so many flaws on her?

The fake Princess Qian Qian's patience was fraying out. She locked her gaze to Yue Yang and sneered, "What other flaw did you see?"

Yue Yang shrugged and spread his hands out. His smile was like a light breeze, that made others have the impulse of punching him in the face with one look. "You have a fatal flaw that causes you to never be able to mimic Princess Qian Qian. Therefore, no matter how well you act like her, you'll be seen through with a single look! The final and greatest flaw is that you aren't a virgin! You don't have the virgin smell on your body like Princess Qian Qian does... Before you try and trick me, could you please take the trouble to check how good my nose is?" At the beginning of his speech, Luo Hua City Mistress had thought that this brat's performance was magnificent. But when she heard that he used his sense of smell to differentiate, she immediately punched him lightly, feeling a little embarrassed.

The fake Princess Qian Qian had an ugly expression on her face. Her face darkened as she shouted angrily, "Are you done? If you're done then you can die!"

With a flick of her hand, an item flew out.

That was a small black ball that shattered beside the feet of Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress.

A black light covered their surroundings, forming a pitch-black empty field. The fake Princess Qian Qian disappeared from her original position, leaving only Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress there.

When Luo Hua City Mistress wanted to summon her grimoire, she suddenly discovered that her spiritual qi was cut off. She had a shock and cried out, “Ball of Pollution! This is the Ball of Pollution that the Demon Abyss uses to specially break summoning! This Ball of Pollution was originally dark green in colour, how can it be disguised like this. That’s really crafty!”

A snake came down from the sky without any sound or presence, stealthily preparing to bite at Luo Hua City Mistress’ head.

However, with a slash from Yue Yang, it rapidly turned into a greatsword and parried his blow.

The clash of the two weapons caused a loud metallic sound to ring out.

At the same time, in the darkness, the fake Princess Qian Qian had reached out her hand that wore a Spider Venom Ring towards Luo Hua City Mistress’ nape.

A protective barrier rapidly expanded from Luo Hua City Mistress, causing the fake Princess Qian Qian to be rebounded away.

Luo Hua City Mistress held her summoning grimoire and smiled proudly. “Did you think that I wouldn’t stand a chance against a Ball of Pollution? You’re just using petty tricks. Did you really think that you could assassinate us just by relying on a single Ball of Pollution?”

“Perhaps it may not be enough with me alone, but the other two Earth Demon now know that the plan has failed and they’ll come rushing to us straight away. They only need a minute to get here. At that time, the two of you will definitely die here. Do you know how they will kill you off? They’ll torture you for a long time. You won’t easily breathe your last breath. At that point of time, you won’t be able to live or die. Let’s see if you can still be proud and arrogant then!” The fake Princess Qian Qian hid within the darkness and sneered like an owl. She came in and out of the darkness from time to time.

“Is that right? But to end this battle, I don’t even need a minute. I only need ten seconds!”

With a flash of his silhouette, Yue Yang pounced towards his left.

The golden Dragon-Slaying Dagger, on the other hand, was thrown towards the opposite side.

With just a single choking sound, the fake Princess Qian Qian who was still complacently hiding in the darkness cried out after getting hit by the dagger and fell onto the ground.

If it had been a normal weapon, it wouldn’t have been able to

harm the fake Princess Qian Qian who had fused her body with her beast. However, the Dragon-Slaying Dagger was an exception. This treasure could cause even giants to have a headache when seeing it, not to mention the fake Princess Qian Qian.

“I’m Princess Qian Qian, do you really want to kill me?” Suddenly, the fake Princess Qian Qian who had fallen to the ground after getting hit by the dagger started crying. With a weak voice, she begged, “I’m your lover, how could you bear to kill me? My heart aches, just to get the better side of another woman, just to please her, you killed me off this cruelly...”

“Nonsense, you’re fake! Why are you still trying to act so pitiful?!” Yue Yang’s heart was definitely made of steel. He stamped on the chest of the fake Princess Qian Qian.

“I’m your most beloved Luo Hua... Am I pretty?”

With a flash of a black light, the fake Princess Qian Qian actually turned into Luo Hua City Mistress. Not only that, her entire body was naked without a single piece of clothing. Her entire beautiful body was exposed to him, causing Yue Yang to almost drool.

At the same time, she had done an exaggerated seductive pose, causing Yue Yang’s wolfish blood to boil looking at her.

Luo Hua City Mistress was enraged.

She dared to do these kinds of sultry actions while using her

appearance?

Then, looking at Yue Yang who was extremely happy after being seduced, she was sweating profusely until she was almost powerless.

This method of attacking was really evil!

It might not have been useful against other people, but towards a huge pervert like Yue Yang, it was absolutely effective! She originally wanted to remind this lad that the real one was right behind him and her body most definitely did not look like that. Only their faces had become alike. Suddenly, she saw Yue Yang extend his wolfish hands, trying to grab the fake Luo Hua City Mistress body excitedly. She fell onto the ground with a loud boom.

Could this huge pervert actually mistook it for the real thing?

Didn't he think that based on her personality, she wouldn't even make those sultry poses when she was naked in bed? How would it be possible for her to do it here then? This guy was really an idiot!

Just when Luo Hua City Mistress was charging a ray of light to send Yue Yang flying and turn that fake Luo Hua into mush, she watched in astonishment as Yue Yang's hands penetrated deeply into the fake's chests, then forcefully taking out the other demon heart that was located inside the chest of the fake Luo Hua. Fresh blood covered his entire hand... He did not seem like the pervert that he was just now. Rather, his face was covered with ridicule,

and his expression was extremely arrogant yet ruthless.

Luo Hua City Mistress jumped for joy inside.

So this brat didn't fall for it at all. Instead, he had beat the fake at her own game.

Chapter 170 – Ancient Wisdom

“You...” The impersonator who had the appearance of Luo Hua City Mistress cried out, “You are so ruthless!”

“Thank you for your compliment!” Yue Yang threw the demon heart in his hands to one side. Hui Tai Lang immediately scurried over and sniffed at it, however, the usually greedy Hui Tai Lang didn’t eat it immediately.

“Let’s die together!” That impersonator suddenly shrieked fiercely.

“Come here quickly, she is going to explode!” Luo Hua City Mistress noticed there was something wrong and immediately called out to Yue Yang to return. Yue Yang shook his hands, signalling to her that he was okay, all the while looking down on the impersonator. The impersonator’s figure suddenly transformed, and with a flash of dark light, Luo Hua City Mistress’ beautiful appearance had disappeared, replaced with an ugly woman whose face was filled with wrinkles. She looked extremely old; her skin sagged, her eyes hollow, her neck swollen as if there was a huge tumor inside, and her breasts were incomparably shrivelled, the two ugly sacks dangling twistedly from her wizened ribcage. It looked extremely disgusting.

Her previously slim and taut stomach had quickly expanded like a ball. There were also strange black spot that started to faintly appear on her stomach.

Her two legs had quickly dried up, turning into withered bones.

Hui Tai Lang jumped in fright and scurried away, but it still couldn't escape the dark space no matter what.

Seeing that Yue Yang didn't enter Luo Hua City Mistress' shield, it also didn't dare to enter and seek protection. Finally, it pathetically hid behind Yue Yang's body, its two heads lying on the ground. It raised both of its paws trying to cover its eyes, however, it only managed to cover its left head's eyes, leaving its right head exposed. It became extremely troubled.

Right at the moment when the impersonator shriek her intention to blow up together with Yue Yang, Yue Yang immediately kicked Hui Tai Lang's butt into Luo Hua City Mistress' shield, before entering it himself.

Behind him, a loud explosion reverberated.

The whole sky was filled with scattered blood and flesh.

Some parts were even sprinkled on the shield, but it was immediately rebounded away, falling to the ground instead.

The dark space disappeared without a trace. Other than the splatters of flesh and blood scattered all over the ground, it was as if nothing had happened before. Yue Yang surveyed the surrounding for a while before a frown appeared on his face.

“What’s wrong?” Luo Hua City Mistress asked in concern, “Is there something wrong?”

“There are no other Earth-ranked Demon fellows chasing after us...” Yue Yang’s tone appeared to sound a little disappointed as he sighed.

“Idiot, hahahhahaa!” Luo Hua City Mistress immediately laughed out loudly, maybe even too much, as she gave a light punch on Yue Yan’s chest and said, “Silly brat, let me tell you. No one will immediately attack again after their plan had failed. They definitely won’t come. Think about it, if they have a 100% confidence in killing us, why would they resort to tricks? Furthermore, we are not even sure if this Demon Servant was someone sent by the Demonic Palace. Although the Demonic Palace is aggressive, brazen and crazy enough to do this, they are not fools...”

“So you think that this demon who can take over other’s appearances is not sent by the Demonic Palace?” Yue Yang had already guessed this possibility when he was surveying the surrounding just now, but he did not expect that Luo Hua City Mistress had also thought the same thing.

“This monster is usually called ‘Demon Servants’. They are not very strong, at the most, they are only as strong as a Level 5 [Grandmaster]. However, they are extremely illogical. They are willing to risk anything for their convictions, even their own lives. Demon Servants are usually created by strong, high-leveled Corrupted Warriors with the help of the power from the Demon Abyss. There are both male and female Demon Servants, and they

are all extremely loyal. They are also very brave, unafraid of death, willing to die for their master anytime. Furthermore, they are experts in disguise; Although there are not that many Demon Servants that can execute such a detailed Morphing Technique like that one just now, there are still quite a few of them. These Demon Servants are not specific to the Demonic Palace alone, various countries in the Soaring Dragon Continent also owned them.” Luo Hua City Mistress’ face suddenly became serious, “They won’t divulge their identity in most cases, but there’s a limit to their Morphing Technique. They can probably only morph for a few dozen times, because it drains the essence in their body heavily. Seeing that Demon Servant’s dried up body just now, seems like it was nearing death. That’s why she could act so crazily, her intention was to die together with us.”

“Why did you think that she wasn’t sent by the Demonic Palace?” Yue Yang nodded, before asking again.

“Are you trying to test me?” Luo Hua City Mistress sent Yue Yang a look. She already know that this brat had also noticed it and that he was merely curious about how she had known it herself. She couldn’t help but give him a light punch again, “If I couldn’t even discern this, how can I become a City Mistress! If she was really someone from the Demonic Palace, she would definitely not mention Demonic Palace at all. Since she had said it, that would mean she intended to shift the blame to the Demonic Palace. Especially after her plan has failed; if she was really someone from the Demonic Palace, she should have shifted the blame to others!”

“Then who in this world would want to implicate the Demonic Palace?” Yue Yang could guess the first point, but he couldn’t guess who would want to do such a thing.

“That’s difficult to say, it might probably be...” Luo Hua City Mistress hesitated a little as she reached her fingers out and wrote two words on Yue Yang’s palms, making Yue Yang extremely shocked.

Yue Yang’s mouth moved a little, but he didn’t ask anything in the end.

He only nodded silently.

Seeing his pondering expression, Luo Hua City Mistress curiously asked him back, “What are you guessing right now, silly brat?”

Yue Yang grabbed her hands, as if he wanted to write something on her palm too. However, Luo Hua City Mistress was extremely ticklish, and she didn’t allow him to do so. In reality, Yue Yang’s act of trying to write on her palms was fake, he only wanted to hold the beauty’s hand and take an advantage of the situation. Luo Hua City Mistress’ hands were so soft and tender that Yue Yang couldn’t bear to let go after holding them in his hands. However, if Luo Hua City Mistress caught on this brat’s rotten intentions, he wouldn’t be able to avoid the accusation.

In order to distract Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Yang hurriedly said his own opinions after observing the situation, “I saw two identical marks on both Black-winged Tan Wu Fang and Luminous Demon Ding Zang’s body. Seems like that was the Demonic Palace symbol.”

“Yes, that’s the Demonic Palace insignia. There’s one in every Corrupted Warrior’s body.” Luo Hua City Mistress was successfully distracted by Yue Yang.

“However, on that Demon Servant’s body just now, I did not see the same insignia. I started to suspect that she was not from the Demonic Palace then. There is also another point. Every Demonic Palace members, no matter if it is Black-winged Tan Wu Fang, Luminous Demon Ding Zang or the other Corrupted Warriors, all of them don’t possess a demon heart. This demon heart can only belong to Demon Generals and higher-ranked Demons in the Demon Abyss... The weird thing is that Hui Tai Lang, who really like to eat Demon Hearts, had actually ignored it. It is obvious that this demon heart is also fake. It did not have the true power of a demon heart, that’s why Hui Tai Lang refused to eat it. The third point is that demons that have two demon hearts are usually Demon Commanders. The Demon Commander Ma Li Ang that we fought previously possessed two demon hearts, and he was extremely strong. However, this impersonator who similarly had two demon hearts was extremely weak... The demon hearts in her body was simply a fake appearance to make others think that she was powerful, when she was actually trash in reality! That’s why I feel that she’s not from the Demonic Palace. Furthermore, if the Demonic Palace had really wanted to ambush us, they would have done it here instead of killing us after teleporting us to another place...” Yue Yang was still holding Luo Hua City Mistress’ hands tightly as he explained his judgement.

“The place that I wrote to you just now had been cultivating Demon Servants for a long while. I just don’t understand why they would do such a thing, but I can be certain that this is not a good thing. No matter if it is the Demonic Palace or the people from that place that are targeting us, we have to be very careful! Okay now,

since the danger has already passed, please let go of my hands.”

Luo Hua City Mistress tried to pull her hands away, but Yue Yang had held it tightly and refused to let go.

Instead, he flung her arms to his back, intending to carry her on his back again.

She had tried to rebuke him for his rough treatment initially, standing firm on the ground and clamping her legs tight, refusing to let him carry her. However, as his wolfy paws tried to spread her feet apart, she felt that his actions was extremely indecent and embarrassing. If she continued to fight him, she would lose her face if anyone saw them this way. Hence, she immediately relaxed her feet and lean forward onto his back.

Her hands punched lightly on his head. She was trying to show that she was angry and wanted to punish him, but that strength on her punch was not even enough to kill a mosquito.

Her mouth, on the other hand, harrumphed loudly, “Fail! This kind of personal Guard Captain is simply too incompetent!”

Yue Yang smiled like a rogue and said, “Deduct it from my pay! I didn’t want to be paid anyway, hahaha!”

Luo Hua City Mistress felt that his hot, wolfy hands were about to misbehave again, and hurriedly reached her hands down, slapping his hand away. “Hey, losing control once is enough, do

you intend to do bad things in broad daylight?”

“Understood. Next time I will sneakily and surreptitiously do bad things!” Yue Yang’s reply made Luo Hua City Mistress laugh non-stop again.

This brat was really flippant and glib-tongued, she really couldn’t do anything to him.

Seeing its master soaking in the bliss of romance, Hui Tai Lang approached the three-tailed Snow Fox too, planning to win favor from it.

It was only trying to learn from its master!

Alas, who would know that the three-tailed Snow Fox had a high standard in choosing friends, and had completely ignored Hui Tai Lang instead? It proudly stick its soft tails up, stepping forward gracefully as it followed its master from behind. It didn’t even give Hui Tai Lang a glance from the corner of its eyes. However, seeing such a lofty demeanour, Hui Tai Lang had actually drooled instead. Its wolfy eyes lighted up. With regards to chasing girls, it should chase a proud one like this! Hui Tai Lang hurriedly chased after it and walked alongside the little Snow Fox, then used its most proficient foreign language to hit on the beauty, “Awooo woof, woof woof, woof woof woof!”

“...” The three-tailed Snow Fox turned its head, signalled that it didn’t understand this foreign language and told Hui Tai Lang not to waste its breath.

“Meow!” Hui Tai Lang tried another foreign language again.

“...” The three-tailed Snow Fox was still aloof after hearing it. Hui Tai Lang’s foreign language attack had all failed. This little Snow Fox was a fox, not a dog nor a cat, it would be weird if it could understand dog and cat languages.

“Shut up, don’t disturb me chasing girls!” Yue Yang found that his romantic two person world with Luo Hua City Mistress had been smashed by Hui Tai Lang’s babbles, and was extremely angered.

Seeing its master angry, Hui Tai Lang immediately pretended to be obedient and good.

In the end, Luo Hua City Mistress started to laugh after watching its hilarious acts. Even the three-tailed little Snow Fox also seemed to laugh in secret.

Two days later, at the bottom of the mountain of the Cloud Peak Lake in Despair Abyss.

As it was inconvenient to climb the steep cliff, Yue Yang left Hui Tai Lang and the three-tailed Snow Fox at the bottom of the mountain. He reminded Hui Tai Lang over and over again to protect the three-tailed Snow Fox while he and Luo Hua City Mistress climbed the steep mountain cliff. The Blood Queen could fly thousand meters high, but she couldn’t carry Luo Hua City Mistress or Yue Yang up the cliff. There was an unseen force in this

cliff that not even Luo Hua City Mistress knew the cause of. To reach the top of the mountain, even the Bloody Queen, who could originally fly thousand meters high over mountains had to stop at around 500 meters out of the 3000 meters high cliff. She also had to use her hands and feet to climb the mountain instead of flying up.

If she leave this Cloud Peak Lake, her flying ability will immediately return to normal.

There seemed to be a different space, an invisible restriction.

Luo Hua City Mistress was tired after climbing, so Yue Yang had bound her to his back with a rope. She was very light anyway, she wasn't of any burden to Yue Yang at all. He had climbed to around 2000 meters high before he saw the Bloody Queen waiting near a platform above. She was screaming non-stop as she pointed at the fog and cloud above.

Yue Yang hurriedly climbed onto the small platform and looked upwards. He realized there was a few big letters written above.

However, he couldn't read any of them.

“This is a Summoning Seal... This must be a Restriction Spell from an Ancient Summoning Pattern. The God's Ruins was filled with such letters.” Luo Hua City Mistress took out a silk handkerchief to wipe Yue Yang's sweat and said sweetly, “Rest a while while I record these summoning seal down. Maybe I can break the spell later on!”

“It’s just a few letters, yet it can restrict this whole space?” Yue Yang felt that the power of summoning was extremely terrifying. It wasn’t restricted to plants or beasts, it could even affect dimension, light, mental and soul. There were even scriptures and spells... Right now, the Soaring Dragon Continent could only scratch the surface of the art of summoning.

“It was said that this was left behind by the human warriors from Ancient times. Ancient mankind are really strong, we are only peeking at their footprints right now!” Luo Hua City Mistress nodded surely, “This is also a piece of wisdom that our Ancient ancestors had left us, it’s a pity that there was no one among us who can succeed it!”

Yue Yang was about to say something, but he suddenly felt his mind was shaken, as if something had suddenly came out from his body.

Under Luo Hua City Mistress’ eyes, she saw an unimaginable wonder.

The wonder appeared right before her eyes...

Chapter 171 – Mysterious Rune, Complete Level Up

What Luo Hua City Mistress' saw was a ray of rainbow light appearing on Yue Yang's head, shooting right towards the Runic Circle on the Ancient Rune.

She couldn't see anything clearly. That ray of light might only be a ray of rainbow light, but it might also be a figure of a Guardian Beast.

Just as Luo Hua City Mistress was about to ask Yue Yang about it, she realized that his eyes were closed and his body was floating in the air. His breath was calm, as if he was sleeping. She didn't see his Grimoire, but she saw the Halo Shield of his Grimoire erected and surrounding his body. Golden streaks of light poured out continuously, forming dozens of meters high pillar of light that shot right towards the giant Runic Circle above the mountain peak.

At this time, the giant Runic Circle was emitting a weird yet marvellous sound, coupled with rays of bright white light that looked like an aurora, beautiful beyond compare.

When the pillar of golden light touched the Runic Circle, the Runic Circle seemed to receive a huge amount of energy, the white light that it was emitting exploded ten times larger than before. It became so bright that Luo Hua City Mistress and the Bloody Queen couldn't open their eyes at all.

The Runic Circle then emitted a beautiful, mysterious and heavenly sound, before it suddenly started to revolve.

Luo Hua City Mistress tried to block the light with her hands, and through the slit of her fingers, she saw countless golden and white runes raining down from the sky. The white runes in the sky which were originally very big became smaller very quickly. On the other hand, the golden runes which was smaller in size originally, grew bigger the moment it touched the golden pillar of light. Countless mysterious looking runes fluttered in the sky rhythmically as if dancing to a song. They fluttered down to the ground with their incomparable beauty. In the end, they entered Yue Yang's body and disappeared without a trace.

An extremely small amount of runes floated towards Luo Hua City Mistress' body.

However, they did not enter Luo Hua City Mistress' body easily like the way they had entered Yue Yang's body. On the contrary, they knocked against each other and even rebounded away, floating back into the sky again.

Amongst these runes, there was a small portion that had successfully entered Luo Hua City Mistress' forehead, heart and palms.

Luo Hua City Mistress felt a shock jolting through her body.

There were many types of pure, immense energy bursting on her forehead, heart and hands, rapidly joining together inside her

body, as if rinsing through her whole body very thoroughly. There was so much energy that it almost burst out of her body, but it finally pooled in her abdomen. She could feel that a Giant Runic Circle had appeared inside her Spirit Realm and was constantly assembling itself. It gave her a kind of feeling that seemed to understand but not to understand what was happening... Luo Hua City Mistress who couldn't level up and had reached the bottleneck previously, suddenly received enlightenment in her mind, as if she had suddenly mastered the knowledge and understood perfect wisdom.

Her Summoning Grimoire floated out on its own and emitted a bright golden light. Her protective shield appeared and re-absorbed some runes that had rebounded away.

Luo Hua City Mistress' Spirit Realm received a huge shock and she lost her consciousness.

Similarly, her body also floated in the sky.

However, her body only floated 1 metre above the ground, unlike Yue Yang who was floating more than ten meters high above.

Right before Luo Hua City Mistress lost her consciousness, she felt two familiar figures embracing her, one of them even cried out in surprise. She immediately felt assured. With these two people here, she, who had exhausted her spirit and mental state could finally rest and sleep peacefully.

On the other side, the Bloody Queen raised her hands and cupped

them together to catch some of the pure energy that had condensed into golden runes, looking astonished and startled.

At this moment, Yue Yang who was surrounded by countless runes suddenly created a unique hand gesture unconsciously in mid-air. A ball of rainbow-coloured Runic Circle appeared in his two hands, which then floated to the Bloody Queen's forehead.

The Bloody Queen let out a cry that was the highest pitched that she ever did.

She spread open her wings and flew straight towards the sky.

When she flew back down, her body was ignited in flames. There was also golden rays of light coming from under her feet that flowed to the top of her head and down to her legs again. Finally, the golden rays of light gathered at her wings and shattered into millions of pieces as it smashed into her feathers.

The million pieces of golden rays floated in the sky and fluttered into Yue Yang's body, forming a white golden pillar of light before shooting right towards the Blood Queen's forehead again.

The Bloody Queen's body had become renewed from the top to bottom.

Her fiery hair started to change then and there, turning platinum in colour as it draped over her shoulders gracefully. Her long hair hung down like a waterfall right until her butt.

Her wings was also completely reborn, turning platinum in colour.

Looking at her now, she looked even more powerful, agile, and beautiful than ever before.

This transformation surprised the Bloody Queen so much that her face was filled with tears of joy. She understood that she had levelled up from Gold-ranked Level 5 straight to a whole new tier, stepping into a new realm that most beasts would find it extremely difficult to reach: Platinum-ranked Level 5... This evolution had even surpassed her previous life's level reaching a whole new realm of Platinum-rank. What would wait for her in the future was a whole new world, a world that other beasts could only dream about!

Only by surpassing this boundary would she be able to step into the realm of wisdom and intelligence.

Only by surpassing the King-rank would she be able to become what was known as Holy Beast.

The Bloody Queen kneeled on the ground as tears streamed down her face.

All of this was bestowed to her by her master... Although he was her master, he had never enslaved her like the ugly humans did in the legends that she heard before. Even under the situation where he knew that she was a Guardian Beast that would never die, he

had also never allowed her to stay in dangerous situations...

Just when the Bloody Queen was crying emotionally, two pillars of golden light rose up from both of her sides.

The two pillars rose high up, even higher than Luo Hua City Mistress, inching closer to Yue Yang's body.

One of the pillars of light joined with Yue Yang's body immediately.

Countless runes fluttered down to the ground...

The Bloody Queen could feel that although she had rose up to Platinum-ranked Level 5, she could still feel a kind of intense pressure, as if there were two other stronger Guardian Beasts snarling at her side and declaring that they were stronger than herself.

Following that, a figure suddenly jumped down heavily from the sky onto the small platform, shaking the whole platform so much that it wobbled.

It was the Barbarian Cow Shadow, Ah Man. She had also come out from the Grimoire at a certain point of time. There was a golden-coloured Runic Circle on her forehead too, it looked sort of similar to the Bloody Queen's, but a little bit different. At the same time, her body had also slowly transformed... The Bloody Queen had just wanted to stand up when she suddenly felt an extremely

strong pressure pushing her back down. She had to bend over and struggle before she could finally resist that unrivalled power. In the sky, there seemed to be a ten-meter tall gigantic figure shining brightly.

It was unknown how much time had passed, but suddenly, there was a heavenly, nature-like cry coming from within the Runic Circle above. Following closely afterwards, there was also another nature-like sound echoing the first one.

Those nature-like sound was actually not hearable by ear, it reverberated right into others' souls.

The Bloody Queen immediately kneeled down, sprawled on the ground, showing her respect to the creature in the sky.

When those two clear, nature-like cry disappeared, the Giant Runic Circle above the mountain peak also slowly stopped revolving. The white light it had emitted had slowly disappeared as it returned back to normal, as if nothing had happened before. Only some of the runes on the Runic Circle had shifted a little, the runes arrangement looking a little different than before.

The rest of the golden, floating runes revolved quickly and entered into Yue Yang's body.

The golden pillar of light disappeared.

Yue Yang who was floating ten metres high up in the sky slowly

floated back down, light as feather.

The Bloody Queen was just about to reach her hands out to catch her master, but she realized that the little lamia loli that her master dearly loved was holding him in her arms as they floated down. There was a mysterious rainbow-coloured Runic Circle on Xiao Wen Li's forehead too... The Bloody Queen hurriedly bowed to show her respect before reaching her hands out to hold Luo Hua City Mistress in her arms.

On the other side, the Barbarian Cow Shadow 'Ah Man' who had undergone her third reconstruction reached out and caught the other two figures in her arms, placing them on the ground lightly.

Yue Yang felt like he had dreamt for a long time.

In his dream, he felt like there were countless of people and stories. He even heard people speaking and laughing in his ears. At times, there was even a silverbell sounding laughter in his dreams. However, when he opened his eyes, he couldn't remember anything from his dream. That kind of feeling was as if he was seeing something right in front of his eyes yet he was unable to touch it at all. He simply couldn't remember anything. It was extremely a weird feeling.

Turning over into a sitting position, he saw Luo Hua City Mistress sleeping sweetly on top of his body.

This was a chance bestowed to him by the heavens!

Yue Yang was about to reach his wolfy paws out and carry out a magnificent taking of advantage when Luo Hua City Mistress was still sleeping.

However, he unintentionally saw that on the other side, the Bloody Queen was staring at his hands without blinking, her eyes seemed to be filled with a kind of light... Her gaze looked almost human; unlike a beast's, her gaze was filled with intelligence and wisdom. When he looked at her forehead, he saw a golden coloured Runic Circle engraved on her skin, making her look different from before... When he observed her more clearly, he realized that the Bloody Queen's body had undergone a huge transformation. Her wings had even turned into a platinum colour.

“What happen here?” Yue Yang was stunned, unable to make sense of the situation.

“Runes... Summons... Reborn... Level... up...” The Bloody Queen stammered out as she started to speak. Although she tried her utmost effort, Yue Yang still couldn't understand.

“How are you able to speak now? Ah, that's not right, you can already speak before. I mean, when did you manage to learn the Soaring Dragon Continent's language? Your hair, and your wings, what had actually happened?” Yue Yang reached out and caressed the Bloody Queen's platinum coloured hair and wings with his hands, then discovered that her face had started to turn red, revealing an expression that a blushing girl would have. He was immediately bewildered.

“I...have...already...levelled up... Platinum... five...” The Bloody Queen stammered again before lowering her head down, feeling shy as she tried to hide from Yue Yang’s gaze, unwilling to continue to speak.

“You are Platinum-ranked Level 5 now?” When Yue Yang heard it, he was both surprised and elated. What tonic had this Bloody Queen eaten that caused her to level up so quickly? Even if she had undergone Variant Evolution, a Gold-ranked Level 5 should have levelled up to Platinum-ranked Level 4. But she had actually levelled up to Platinum-ranked Level 5, so she should have ingested some kind of a miraculous tonic to be able to level up so much. Could it be that Luo Hua City Mistress had given it to her? What exactly did Luo Hua City Mistress gave her?

Could it be the Beautiful Demonic Flower that they had gotten from the Hanging Pavilion before?

He summoned his Silver Grimoire immediately. However, when he flipped it open, he realized that the Bloody Queen’s illustration had disappeared.

Eh?

Didn’t they say that Guardian Beasts wouldn’t desert their masters?

Shortly after, he realized that this Bloody Queen must have moved her house from this Silver Grimoire to the Divine Grimoire. As for the Barbarian Cow Shadow that was left behind, Yue Yang

realized with astonishment that her body had undergone a huge reconstruction once again... When he looked at the Thorny Flower Demoness, he also saw that she had turned into a silver-ranked 'Runic Phantom Thorny Flower Demoness'. He couldn't summon the Thorny Flower Demoness and the Barbarian Cow Shadow, but even the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice illustration had a different Runic Circle arrangement. Yue Yang was thoroughly bewildered, he couldn't understand how there could be so many Runic Circles that invaded inside his Silver Grimoire. Furthermore, it was even engraved in all of his beasts' forehead.

Even the mysterious little Golden Beast on his wrist had an engraved Runic Circle on its body!

Yue Yang summoned Xiao Wen Li out and strangely discovered that the little loli didn't have a mark engraved on her forehead. When Xiao Wen Li was summoned, she yawned adorably, her drowsy eyes looked as if she had not have enough sleep.

Forget it, he should let this little loli rest and sleep first!

Yue Yang was about to allow her to continue to sleep, but he suddenly realized that there was something different about the little loli's body. It seemed like she had grown a little taller...?

When he used his Level 3 [Divine Eyes] to check, he realized that this little loli had actually... levelled up.

The little lamia loli who originally had no reaction and no indication of levelling up even after killing hundreds of monsters

and receiving so much experience, had actually mysteriously levelled up right now. The thing that troubled Yue Yang the most was that he didn't know how she could actually levelled up. This matter was really strange.

Luo Hua City Mistress had woken up at some point of time and laughed as she watched Yue Yang.

“What happened here? When I was unconscious, what had actually happened?” Yue Yang really wanted to make sense of the entire development, otherwise he would die from his curiosity.

“I was unconscious the whole time and even woke up later than you. How would I know what happened? I don't know anything at all. I don't know anything about how your Bloody Queen levelled up and evolved into Platinum-ranked beast!” When Luo Hua City Mistress said this, Yue Yang almost wanted to plant his head into the Despair Abyss. This way of saying, it was even worse than what he would normally say. This girl was definitely saying all this to take revenge on him, she was definitely saying all these on purpose!

“You are so ruthless!” Yue Yang knew that he wouldn't get anything from Luo Hua City Mistress' mouth. He thought, ‘Even if you didn't tell me, I will find out the cause myself.’

“Thanks for your compliment!” Luo Hua City Mistress suddenly looked like she was trying to hold her laughter. It looked like it was really hard for her to do so. Her shoulders were trembling but not a single sound of laughter was heard.

“Who are you talking to just now?” Yue Yang suddenly asked her, taking her by surprise.

He remembered that in his dreams, it was as if he heard some girls talking and chattering, even letting out a silverbell-sounding laughter at times. The Bloody Queen had just learnt how to speak and was still a mute while Xiao Wen Li still couldn't speak, so it was definitely not the two of them.

Since it was that way, who exactly was Luo Hua City Mistress talking to just now?

Chapter 172 – Go Berserk, Hui Tai Lang!

“You must’ve been dreaming!” Luo Hua City Mistress nodded affirmatively.

Yue Yang was speechless. He knew that he wasn’t dreaming about that. This was because he was dreaming about something else at that time. There was no way that someone could have two dreams at once. Even if Luo Hua City Mistress didn’t want to say it, Yue Yang could guess that it was probably the mysterious beauty that had followed him. It could’ve also been the Imperial Swordswoman, Princess Qian Qian. They said that they don’t know each other, but in reality, they were probably all friends, very close friends at that.

What confused Yue Yang the most was the fact that he couldn’t sense the mysterious beauty’s presence at all.

She should be hiding somewhere within his detection range. She couldn’t be too far off, so why couldn’t he sense her at all?

It really was confusing. Did she know his detection range? The mysterious beauty had become more and more mysterious in his mind..... unless..... unless it had something to do with her Inherent Skill?

Yue Yang was suspecting many things in his mind, but his expression did not change at all.

After resting for a while, they continued their climb onto the

Cloud Peak Lake.

Using half a day's time, Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress finally reached the top of the Cloud Peak Lake that was suspended in midair.

In Yue Yang's eyes, this place probably used to be a geyser opening on an inactive volcano. After many years had passed, it turned into a giant mountain top lake. The Cloud Peak Lake wasn't that big. Although it was foggy, if one looked closely, one would be able to see the edge of the lake on the other side. The lake was basically an oval shape. It's diameter was around a few kilometers and the circumference looked to be less than twenty kilometers.

"Are there any water beasts here?" Yue Yang had heard a lot of rumors about water beasts in lakes. But of course, that was the case in his previous world.

"What kind of water beasts are you talking about? Some sort of gigantic fish-type beasts?" Luo Hua City Mistress didn't know much about the existence of water beasts. This was because in Soaring Dragon Continent, there were too many types of strange beasts. It was impossible to know every type of beasts.

"Uhh. Let's just pretend I didn't ask about it." Yue Yang wasn't too interested in water beasts either.

This was because Yue Yang had seen an abundant amount of beasts already. At the same time, he had killed a bunch of them too. Yue Yang wasn't too curious about new beasts anymore.

The Starlight Serene Indigo Grass did not grow on the Cloud Peak Lake. It grew on the peak of an even higher mountain.

The steep and mysterious mountain that Yue Yang climbed was slippery and barren, sustaining no life whatsoever. Yue Yang had to expend a tremendous amount of energy in order to carry Luo Hua City Mistress and himself up the mountain. Luo Hua City Mistress could climb by herself, but she was feeling very weak. Every once in awhile, she would have to rest. The wind on the mountain was very cold and it sounded like the wailing of ghosts and the howling of wolves. Yue Yang was worried about her so in the end, he decided to carry her up.

It was empty at the peak of the mountain. Other than some snow lying on the ground, there was completely nothing else.

Originally, Yue Yang was a little discouraged as it seemed like the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass had already been picked by someone else. However, after Luo Hua City Mistress surveyed the area carefully, she found a small crack on the ground. This filled Yue Yang up with hope.

There seemed to be a small cave there. It seemed like someone could enter if they forced themselves in.

The two entered and began to climb a few dozen meters downwards. After a while, they discovered that at the edge of a cliff that protruded out, there were strange flowers that was glowing faintly like stars. Above, it looked like there was a line of

starry sky, and below was a hole sheltered from winds. The Spiritual Qi from heaven and earth coagulated together, inspired and stirred by the breath of creation. Sure enough, only this magical place would be able to nurture the growth of the magical flower.

The Starlight Serene Indigo Grass. He had looked through the medicine encyclopedia and found out that it was very hard to obtain.

According to the encyclopedia, it was a rank 6 Legendary Medicine!

It was uncertain what kind of places they would thrive in, but they usually grow in places of high altitudes where they are bathed in starlight. The altitude had to be high enough where no other plants could sustain life within a fifty foot radius. According to the legend recorded in the Medicine Encyclopedia, the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass had actually originated from the Outer Realm, the world beyond Tong Tian Tower. Ten thousand years ago, there was a Starlight Princess who loved solitude, and pureness. She loved being secluded in the mountains and spending time with her flowers. However, the Starlight Princess was assassinated afterwards. When she was assassinated, her blood splattered all over the flowers. Her soul then began to fuse with the flowers, and among the flowers, was her favorite... the Serene Indigo Grass. The Serene Indigo Grass received most of the Starlight Princess' Spiritual Qi out of all the flowers. Thus, people begin to call these flowers the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass.

The flower was like its old master. It loved solitude and pureness.

It would not bloom without a starry night and those without a pure heart could not pick the flower.

If any ordinary person tried to pick the flower, its Spiritual Qi would scatter and the flower would wither away.

Seeing the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass, Luo Hua City Mistress became very excited. She pulled Yue Yang to one side and warned him not to get close to her. Before she entered the cave, she bathed herself and washed her clothes in a small pond near the cliff and got rid of all of Yue Yang's dirty male odor from her body. Only then did she walk towards the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass harboring excitement in her heart.

Although there were only a few flowers, they gave off a very radiant shine.

Before she picked the flowers, she paid her respects to the Starlight Princess, "Your highness the Starlight Princess, please allow this one to have three of your flowers. I'm not asking for any more. Just three. Please."

"Why does it seem like there's something wrong?" Yue Yang suddenly felt a shiver in his heart.

There were no beasts guarding the cave entrance at all. Maybe it was because this small cave where the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass grew was located at the edge of the sky, where no strong beasts noticed its existence. However, Yue Yang still felt that there was something wrong and just couldn't feel assured. Just as Yue

Yang, who was filled with doubts, tried to look for clues around the cave entrance, he heard a delicate shout coming from right on top of the cave entrance, followed by a loud sound. It seemed like someone was fighting ferociously. When Yue Yang turned around to see what was happening, a scorching hot fireball shot into the small cave opening, aiming straight towards Luo Hua City Mistress.

Yue Yang was shocked. He recognized this type of flames.

This... This was the Luminous Demon, Ding Zang's Hellfire.

Sure enough, the Luminous Demon Ding Zang had been following them, harboring evil intentions... However, who was the one that noticed the Luminous Demon trying to attack him and stopped it at the same time?

Was it Princess Qian Qian?

Yue Yang was familiar with how Princess Qian Qian always let out a shout when she fought. Her shout was very unique and different from others, it was extremely sharp and clear, and it was also filled with spirit. It sounded like hero's cry. Although he wasn't able to hear the cry very clearly just now, he knew that there was great crisis up above... With Princess Qian Qian's strength, she wouldn't be a match on a one-on-one duel with the Luminous Demon Ding Zang...Right now, even in the midst of a ferocious battle, the Luminous Demon Ding Zang still had spare power to shoot Hellfire to attack Luo Hua City Mistress. Furthermore, he still managed to set fire on the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass. This meant that not only the Luminous Demon Ding

Zang was here, he had also brought a few reinforcements!

“Watch out!” Yue Yang anxiously tried to jump up towards protect Luo Hua City Mistress.

“Don’t come here. You must not come over!” Luo Hua City Mistress hurriedly called out her grimoire and summoned her shield to block the flames.

In her heart, the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass was the most important. Even if she was hurt, she didn’t want to see such priceless artifact wither away.

A loud sound reverberated from the outside again. The intensity of the battle outside shook the whole cave. Yue Yang didn’t know what the situation was like outside so he immediately climbed out and prepared himself to assist Princess Qian Qian...

Under the mountain, Hui Tai Lang leisurely accompanied the three-tailed Snow Fox. It continuously tried communicating with the little Snow Fox through the use of different languages.

However, its usage of other languages sucked. Let’s not talk about the three-tailed Snow Fox, even if other animals heard it, they wouldn’t know what it was saying either.

It was better for it to use body gestures.

From time to time, Hui Tai Lang would go and catch some small

animals and tried to win the beautiful fox over.

What it didn't know, however, was that the three-tailed Snow Fox was a vegetarian like its owner. If it had given the fox something like a Frost Truffle or a Wisdom Fruit, then it would definitely have won the little Snow Fox over. As for the small animals that was drenched in blood, the fox did not like it at all. The fox had graciously wrapped its tails around itself and started sleeping on the floor, quietly waiting for its master to return.

Compared to the fox, Hui Tai Lang was a bit too active.

It was waiting for Yue Yang as well, but it had to entertain himself somehow.

Every time it saw small animals running around, it would immediately chase them. It had also complacently chased a group of noisy Level 3 Snow Wolves ten kilometers away in order to let the Snow Fox sleep peacefully. It also casually killed a few Giant Spiders and dug their magic cores out.

However, it couldn't bear to eat the cores and brought them back with it.

It was ready to give the cores to please the little Snow Fox.

However, when it returned to the mountain, it was shocked from the wretched sight in front of him. The snowy ground was completely covered with blood. The little Snow Fox had already

turned into giant six-tailed Fox Spirit, her whole body covered in wounds that were inflicted by the group of ferocious beasts around her. She was standing there, howling in pain. Standing in front of her was a ranker. He held a green Ball of Pollution that prevented the Snow Fox from releasing its full strength. He had also stuck a Metallic Rune Pole on the ground, and that black-coloured pillar released a black ring of light that poured out continuously to greatly suppress the fox's power.

Three Bronze-ranked Level 6 Hyenas violently bit at the six-tailed Fox Spirit's body with their horrifyingly sharp teeth.

With each bite, a piece of flesh would come off the six-tailed Fox Spirit's body.

Covered in wounds and drenched in blood, the six-tailed Fox Spirit couldn't use all its strength to fight. It was being suppressed by the black halo from the Metallic Rune Pole. The Ball of Pollution had also limited her abilities. Now, its speed was only at around a tenth of what it used to be. Although it was still very fast, it could not dodge the attacks from the three Hyenas.

However, its opponents were not just the three Hyenas.

There were three more beasts that were as strong as the Hyenas. They all surrounded the six-tailed Fox Spirit and attacked. There were two Silver-ranked Level 5 Thunder Leopards and a Silver-ranked Level 6 Scorpio Lion. The six beasts bared their bloodied fangs and surrounded their prey. This prevented the six-tailed Fox Spirit from escaping while they all attacked.

“Hahahahahaha. Darling, you are finally going to be mine. Come here, come here... What a beautiful and intelligent white fox. Only I, Lie Lie, is worthy to be your master. I will definitely cultivate you to become a Holy Beast. Come over to your master! Hahaha!” The tattoo covered Corrupted Warrior took out a contract scroll and opened it.

A white light emerged from the scroll and landed on top of the six-tailed Fox Spirit's head.

The six-tailed Fox Spirit was already in so much pain that it wished it was dead, and when the white light landed on its head, it made it suffer even more.

Its legs stumbled, it was hard for her to struggle under the light of the contract scroll.

“Wang!” The three Hyenas and Thunder Leopards continued to attack the six-tailed Fox Spirit, slowly eating away its flesh.

“Howl.....” The most sinister one was the Scorpio Lion. He raised his scorpion tail and stabbed the six-tailed Fox Spirit's leg, releasing poison into it. Normally, the poison would not have had an effect on the six-tailed Fox Spirit, but combined with the other attacks, the six-tailed Fox Spirit finally fell!

Once it fell, the Hyenas, Thunder Leopards and Scorpio Lions all pounced on it at the same time and wildly bit the six-tailed Fox Spirit. Blood was splattering all over the place. Her fur was ripped

apart. They had even bitten away half of her tail. The place was filled with blood. The scene was very tragic.

The six-tailed Fox Spirit finally used the last of its energy to howl and frantically jumped up.

Using the remainder of its strength, it pounced to the Corrupted Warrior and bit the contract scroll into pieces, rejecting the contract. With its tails, it swept the Thunder Leopards and sent them flying at the Corrupted Warrior, causing him to drop the Ball of Pollution.

The Corrupted Warrior was sent flying as well. When he landed, he touched his face and felt that it was swollen. He had been hit by the six-tailed Fox Spirit and his nose started to bleed.

He became very agitated. He held the Metallic Rune Pole and continuously smashed it on the six-tailed Fox Spirit's head. This sent the six-tailed Fox Spirit flying back a few meters. The Corrupted Warrior then started to yell, "You've failed to appreciate my kindness. So be it. Bite it to death!"

At that time, Hui Tai Lang was running over to rescue the six-tailed Fox Spirit with all its strength. Seeing what had just happened, Hui Tai Lang suddenly went berserk.

Chapter 173 – Battle, Undying Hui Tai Lang!

“Awoooo!”

Hui Tai Lang let out the loudest howl it had ever howled since it was born. Its wolf howl shocked the whole heaven and earth, reverberating through the mountain valley and left a resounding echo.

Its red eyes were glaring to the point that it was about to pop out.

It was so angry that its chest almost exploded. The black flames on its body blazed like volcano erupting, soaring up to the sky, the shock wave from the explosion exploding in all directions. Just as the Hyena, Leopard and Scorpio Lion were about to tear the Six-tailed Fox Spirit into shreds, Hui Tai Lang leapt up the mountain wall like a Demon King descending with a loud rumble. With just one leap, it bounded through a space of more than ten-meters away, colliding into the Leopard who had the fastest speed and sending it flying away. It then stood firmly in front of the Six-tailed Fox Spirit which was heavily injured and was on the brink of death. It, who was still a Silver-ranked Level 4 currently, wasn't affected by the other party's higher-ranked pressure. The fury accumulated in its four eyes were practically enough to burn the whole heaven and earth!

Its black flames soared up to the sky, its demonic qi exploded.

Its proceeding howl towards the sky had actually scared the six beasts that were higher-levelled than it was, causing them all to

retreat backwards.

That Corrupted Warrior jumped in fright from Hui Tai Lang's tyrannical howl. He had even thought that it was a Gold King Beast initially, his legs trembling from fear.

But observing it closely, he realized that it was only a Silver-ranked Level 4 Two-headed Demon Wolf. Furthermore, it was uncontracted.

He couldn't help but be overjoyed by the unexpected fortune falling to his hands, "Hahaha, seems like I, Lie Lie, had struck it rich today. That intelligence that I have received before was indeed correct, that brat really had a Two-headed Demon Wolf. I had definitely made the correct judgement to stay here and ambush them. Haha, it's good this way too. Compared to a six-tailed Fox Spirit, I like Two-headed Demon Wolf more..."

The three Bronze-ranked Level 6 Hyenas realized that Hui Tai Lang only looked imposing on the surface, but its level was actually lower than themselves. They began to let out echoing growls and charged forward altogether.

They bare their bloodied mouth wide, trying to use those sharp teeth that could even shatter cow's horns to bite onto Hui Tai Lang.

One Thunder Leopard was extremely cunning. It didn't fight against Hui Tai Lang, but leapt to the side instead, agilely jumping on the mountain walls. With a single leap, it prepared itself to

pounce onto the heavily injured, unconscious six-tailed Fox Spirit, thinking of ending its life completely.

Seeing its opponent making its move, the black flames on Hui Tai Lang's body burned even brighter.

Hui Tai Lang leapt high up and turned into a ball of fiery meteor, colliding right into that Thunder Leopard's ribs.

That Silver-ranked Level 5 Thunder Leopard was sent flying from the impact of the collision. "Boom," it crashed onto the mountain cliff, shattering some rocks and setting a few rocks loose, causing it rustle down. Hui Tai Lang didn't wait for the Thunder Leopard to make a sound, instead it immediately bounded and charged towards the Thunder Leopard. It opened its mouth and immediately locked onto the Thunder Leopard's throat. Its other head bit on the Thunder Leopard's spine and refused to let go. Its four claws seized that opportunity to embed itself onto the mountain cliff, before it violently smashed the Thunder Leopard onto the mountain cliff.

This way, it further increased the damage from its bite, causing the wound opening to widen and made it bleed even more. It could also prevent that Thunder Leopard to resist it or struggle free.

This was the hunting skill that Yue Yang had taught it... He told it that a lot of beasts had the ability to fake its death. Biting their neck off wouldn't guarantee their complete death. The best way to hunt was to attack both the enemies' throat and their backs, injuring them heavily. Hui Tai Lang had two heads anyway. In the midst of attacking, no matter how the enemy struggled, he told it

to sink its teeth even deeper into them and bite them with greater strength.

But Hui Tai Lang hadn't been able to master the technique. Yue Yang was extremely unsatisfied with its performance and even called it an idiot dog.

Right now, in a crisis, the hunting skill that it had learnt before was unleashed immediately. The blood that flowed from its prey's wounds greatly stimulated Hui Tai Lang's killing intent and comprehending ability.

He even managed to use the hunting technique that Yue Yang hoped it would learn but it could not before to kill its opponent.

Even though the enemy was a Thunder Leopard that was higher-levelled than itself, it did not have the power to resist under Hui Tai Lang's attack.

At the same time, the Hyenas that didn't have a great jumping power and the Thunder Leopard whose leg had turned mushy like tofu after being heavily injured by Hui Tai Lang, only watched without doing anything, unable to be of help. They could only watch helplessly as Hui Tai Lang mauled their comrade. They could only roar ferociously at Hui Tai Lang, trying to provoke it.

The Silver-ranked Level 6 Scorpio Lion spread its wings and clumsily started to fly.

It was about to prick Hui Tai Lang using its scorpion tail.

As long as Hui Tai Lang was poisoned, its battle power would be greatly decreased, and it could even die...

Without waiting for the Scorpio Lion to fly closer to it, Hui Tai Lang flung its two head and threw the Thunder Leopard in its mouths towards the Scorpio Lion. Unfortunately, the Scorpio Lion's scorpion tail was pointing right towards the front. As a result, the Thunder Leopard was impaled at the Scorpio Lion's tail and it immediately cried out a cry that reverberated through the mountain valley. Hui Tai Lang then turned around and jumped using the mountain wall as foothold towards the Scorpio Lion's back. It tore the ugly wings on its back off with its teeth violently, and also tore the Scorpio Lion's skin with its claws to shreds. That Scorpio Lion was originally clumsy in flying due to its enormous body and heavy weight. It was already struggling to fly due to the weight of the Thunder Leopard's body. With the additional pressure from Hui Tai Lang, it had reached its limit to fly. When its wings was torn off by Hui Tai lang, it immediately fell to the ground like a meteor.

“Boom!” The Scorpio Lion and Thunder Leopard fell on the ground with a loud sound.

“It's so smart!” That Corrupted Warrior was completely astonished. This Two-headed Demon Wolf was a hundred times smarter than what he had imagined it to be.

“Awwooo!” Hui Tai Lang that had been pressing on the Scorpio Lion's body to make it fall, turned in midair, its four claws

embedding themselves deeply into the Scorpio Lion's head. The moment the Scorpio Lion fell to the ground, however, it loosened its claws and immediately took the opportunity to jump, decreasing the impact from falling.

The Three Hyenas immediately charged towards it fiercely, baring their teeth and claws, wanting to bite Hui Tai Lang to death.

But it was too late. Hui Tai Lang had already shot towards the Thunder Leopard who was heavily injured from the multiple attacks it received.

After being bitten on its neck and back, impaled on a scorpion tail and crashing heavily to the ground, if it weren't for the fact that it was a Silver-ranked Level 5 beast, this Thunder Leopard would have probably been dead long ago. Just as it was about to struggle up and return back to its master's side, Hui Tai Lang howled loudly and collided onto the Thunder Leopard, sending it flying away.

Hui Tai Lang had smashed it to the mountain wall again.

Then, Hui Tai Lang's left wolf head once again bite on the Thunder Leopard's neck in a deadlock, sucking its blood at the same time to hasten the Thunder Leopard's death. Its right head, together with its claws, tore at the Thunder Leopard's abdomen, violently tearing it into shreds...

It remembered Yue Yang telling it before... When it was facing against a bunch of opponent that was difficult to win against, it

must attack the weakest one first, and furthermore, it must kill it completely.

Towards Yue Yang's words, "Rather than injuring 10 fingers, it's better to just break 1 finger", Hui Tai Lang didn't really understand. However, it understood from Yue Yang's multiple demonstrations that it must definitely kill one of its opponents. It must definitely kill it completely until its opponent truly die!

The Thunder Leopard that was on the brink of death let out a fierce current of electricity from its body, crackling loudly.

Before it died, it had used its final move to survive, releasing the electricity current in its body to electrocute its opponent. Although it was more skilled in forming a ball of electricity on its mouth and shoot it towards its opponent, it didn't have the chance to do it now. It could only try to release electricity from its whole body, hoping that Hui Tai Lang would loosen its bite as a result.

The electric current exploded, causing Hui Tai Lang's body to crackle with electricity as smoke slowly emitted out.

However, Hui Tai Lang steeled its heart and bit the Thunder Leopard even tighter, refusing to let go. Even if the Thunder Leopard scorched itself to charcoal, it would never let go.

The other Thunder Leopard immediately formed a ball of electricity and shot it towards Hui Tai Lang, who avoided it agilely. Seeing that its attack had failed, the Thunder Leopard charged forward with its fastest speed in order to save its comrade. It bit

onto Hui Tai Lang's back legs hard, and like its comrade, released the electricity in its body continuously, intent on saving its comrade. The two Thunder Leopard's electricity flowed on Hui Tai Lang's body back and forth, electrocuting its body until smoke came out.

The three Hyenas that were about to charge forward and attack Hui Tai Lang, together with the Scorpio Lion, hurriedly retreated, afraid of getting implicated by the huge electric current swirling in the air.

“Hisss...” As it endured the pain of being electrocuted, Hui Tai Lang's claws that had been continuous scratching and clawing had finally managed to tear open the Thunder Leopard's abdomen. In an instant, blood splattered out as Hui Tai Lang pulled the Thunder Leopard's intestines out. At this moment, in the sky, the Metallic Rune Pole descended on the ground. That Corrupted Warrior called Lie Lie brandished the Metallic Rune Pole before smashing it heavily on Hui Tai Lang's back.

This fellow had a deep understanding on the weaknesses of wolves, dogs, foxes, cats and all these beasts. For smaller beasts, their weaknesses were extremely obvious. First was their throat being bitten and second was their spines being smashed.

Had it not for the fact that Hui Tai Lang had evolved into Ironback Demon Wolf before, its spine would probably have been broken to half receiving this heavy blow.

Right now, however, it furiously howled loudly.

It didn't fall even when its back was smashed, on the contrary, it even bend its waist and shook that Metallic Rune Pole off.

Hui Tai Lang's two heads attacked on both of its sides while its claws spared no effort in pulling the Thunder Leopard's innards. That Thunder Leopard's chest was completely torn open as countless of its innards spilled all over the ground.

Hui Tai Lang was still afraid that the Thunder Leopard was not completely dead, it even tore the Thunder Leopard's heart that was still beating out and swallowed it down in one go.

Three minutes. Hui Tai Lang finally managed to kill one enemy, the Silver-ranked Level 5 Thunder Leopard!

"This bastard!" That Corrupted Warrior called Lie Lie had the powers of a Level 6 Beginner [Junior Elder]. He was extremely furious when he saw this and immediately raised his Metallic Rune Pole up before swinging it down towards Hui Tai Lang's body. With this heavy blow, Hui Tai Lang's body flew over ten meters away.

Hui Tai Lang who was sent flying in mid-air landed heavily onto the ground. Its four claws left a deep scratch on the ground as blood dripped from the corner of its mouth.

However, its eyes were still burning with anger, glaring at the Corrupted Warrior coldly.

The Scorpio Lion's scorpion tail suddenly ambushed Hui Tai Lang from behind, pricking its right hind leg.

Hui Tai Lang didn't panic. Instead, it turned around and immediately pressed down the scorpion tail with its claws. Its two wolf head then violently bit at the Scorpio Lion's tail. The Scorpio Lion wailed in pain and flung its tail, throwing Hui Tai Lang hard on the ground.

Chance!

After seeing Yan Po Jun's Blazing Lion, Yue Yang had taught Hui Tai Lang, "Idiot dog, do you know what are lion's weaknesses? It doesn't have enough power on its hind legs, so it will not be able to attack its opponents with its hind legs or jump very far. Its body is also very hard and inflexible, so it will be difficult for lions to attack enemies at their back. At this time, what you need to do is to attack its anus and injure its innards, do you understand? Don't attack lions head on, you have to attack them from behind! Of course, you'll also have to see if it's a male or female lion. Female lions are much more flexible than male lions, so it would be difficult to execute this move. I'm talking about male lions here, just like that Yan Po Jun's Blazing Lion. Idiot dog, do you understand?"

At that time, Hui Tai Lang didn't understand his words, but it understood it right now.

With its master's teaching and its inborn natural abilities, its two

heads bit on the Scorpio Lion's hind legs while its claws embed itself deeply inside the Scorpio Lion's anus. It used its greatest strength to tear the hole open, tearing the Scorpio Lion's innards and pulling them out... Blood splattered on the ground non-stop as the Scorpio Lion howled a miserable cry... Behind them, the Corrupted Warrior Lie Lie who was raising his Metallic Rune Pole could only stare dumbstruck.

What a cunning bastard!

The scene in front of him was simply hard to believe. A Silver-ranked Level 4 Two-headed Demon Wolf could actually inflict so much damage to his Silver-ranked Level 6 Scorpio Lion. Furthermore, it was all done right under his nose.

“Bastard, you are seeking death!” The Corrupted Warrior Lie Lie who finally returned to his senses raised his Metallic Rune Pole furiously, violently smashing it onto Hui Tai Lang's Body.

“...” Hui Tai Lang didn't resist nor let out any sound. Instead, it continued to bite tightly onto the Scorpio Lion's hind legs as its claws continued to claw onto the Scorpio Lion's anus. It kept pulling different parts of the Scorpio Lion's innard each time it clawed into it.

The Scorpio Lion was still alive, but right now, it felt like it was better dead than alive.

It had already betrayed its master long ago and only wanted to leave this place quickly. However, Hui Tai Lang simply refused to

let it go, adamant on killing it completely.

The three Bronze-ranked Level 6 Hyenas howled loudly as they charged forward, trying to bite Hui Tai Lang. However, they were immediately frightened by the violent and mad Hui Tai Lang, retreating far away and watched the situation silently instead, afraid to charge forward and attack.

The Corrupted Warrior Lie Lie didn't know how many times he had raised his Metallic Rune Pole and smashed it against Hui Tai Lang. In the end, he smashed it ruthlessly and heavily down on Hui Tai Lang's spine.

Finally, Hui Tai Lang loosened its bite.

Although the Scorpio Lion was still alive, it was not far from death.

A huge pile of innards that was clawed out by Hui Tai Lang scattered all over the ground... Hui Tai Lang's whole body was drenched in blood. There were its enemies' blood, and there were its own blood too... It stumbled and swayed as it walked towards the Six-tailed Fox Spirit.

The Corrupted Warrior Lie Lie let out a rough breath, completely exhausted. He had never seen such a determined Demon Wolf before.

Ten minutes. Hui Tai Lang killed its second enemy, the Silver-

ranked Level 6 Scorpio Lion!

“Go, kill it now!” The Corrupted Warrior Lie Lie pointed towards Hui Tai Lang who was heavily injured, nearing death and vomiting blood non-stop, ordering the Thunder Leopard and the three Hyenas to bite it.

“Awooo...” Hui Tai Lang howled loudly towards the sky. It, who was heavily injured, could actually intimidate the Thunder Leopard and the three Hyenas, who retreated backwards continuously.

“All of you are trash!” The Corrupted Warrior Lie Lie raised his Metallic Rune Pole furiously and was about to crush Hui Tai Lang to death. However, at this moment, there were six bloodied fox tails that suddenly swept towards him, flinging him far away. The Six-tailed Fox Spirit’s body grew ten times bigger as its spirit force exploded. Its six tails waved as a sweet smelling smell erupted from its body. It expelled a ball of pure light that fell onto Hui Tai Lang’s body, who was heavily injured and on the brink of death... In an instant, Hui Tai Lang’s wounds immediately healed, closing up under the gazes of its enemies. Its black flames exploded once again as it loudly howled to the sky, reverberating through the mountains.

Its life force had completely recovered and it had returned to be that undying Hui Tai Lang.

When the Six-tailed Fox Spirit finished expelling its pure light, its body immediately became smaller, returning to its Three-tailed Snow Fox appearance. Its eyes slowly closed, as if it had passed

away...

Hui Tai Lang went insane. It charged madly towards the Corrupted Warrior, Lie Lie. This time, its target was this strong human! No matter what, it must definitely kill him!

“Kill it, I don’t like this kind of glare the most!” The Corrupted Warrior Lie Lie realized that he felt a strange kind of fear under Hui Tai Lang’s glare.

“Awoo!” Hui Tai Lang recklessly charged forward. It only had one target, and that was this human.

Five minutes later, the Thunder Leopard which was trying to stop Hui Tai Lang was killed as its spine had been bitten off by Hui Tai lang.

This was Hui Tai Lang’s third kill.

Half an hour later, Hui Tai Lang’s body was badly mauled and mutilated, wounded all over. Its left wolf head had even been battered down to pieces. However, all three Hyenas had fallen in front of it, torn into shreds and mangled into pieces of flesh... This was its sixth kill, and it was a kill that was done even with the Corrupted Warrior Lie Lie ganging up on it!

There was only Lie Lie, who was drenched with blood from head to toe, in front of Hui Tai Lang now.

The Metallic Rune Pole that Lie Lie was holding in his hands trembled. It was the first time that he was really scared of a beast whom he had disregarded initially. He was frightened to the point that his whole body was trembling.

If this Silver-ranked Level 4 Two-headed Demon Wolf was stronger even by a little, the one dying today wouldn't be it, it would be him... Lie Lie was a well-known Beastmaster in the Demonic Palace. He was extremely knowledgeable on beasts, hundreds of times more knowledgeable than ordinary warriors. In his whole life, Lie Lie had seen many strong beasts, but he had never seen a Two-headed Demon Wolf with such a strong willpower and determination, who had the ability to persevere until the end. He had truly never seen it before!

From the look of its injuries, this Two-headed Demon Wolf should have been dead long ago. But it was still alive, and it was even trying to kill him.

With its injuries, it shouldn't be able to stand up. It should only be able to await death quietly.

However, it was still fighting with all its strength!

"I don't care if you are a Two-headed Demon Wolf or a Three-headed Cerberus. I don't believe that you won't die. I will definitely have you killed today!" Lie Lie was completely frightened. He felt that if he didn't kill this Two-headed Demon Wolf today, he might not be able to tame beasts anymore in the future. Right now, whenever he close his eyes, he would see this Two-headed Demon Wolf's frightening eyes in his mind. It was

blood red, filled with anger and fury!

If he didn't kill it and get rid of this fear haunting him in his heart, Lie Lie felt that he might go insane.

“Awoooo!” Hui Tai Lang vomited blood non-stop. It only had the strength to unleash its last attack. If it was in its normal state, it would have been dead long ago. But for revenge, its desire to kill this human continued to spur it forward. Even if it dies, it must kill this human!

“You want to kill me? Dream on. What make you think you can kill me with your strength alone?” Lie Lie ridiculed it.

He knew that Hui Tai Lang was completely exhausted, and could probably only attack one last time before collapsing in front of him, breathing its last.

Lie Lie raised his Metallic Rune Pole, gathering his strongest power. His heavy blow that packed over tonnes of kilograms of force smashed down.

“Boom!”

Just as Lie Lie raised his Metallic Rune Pole, gathered his strongest power and swung it down towards Hui Tai Lang, a large figure protected Hui Tai Lang with its body the moment Lie Lie's heavy blow was barely one head apart from Hui Tai Lang.

It was the Six-tailed Fox Spirit who had pretended to be dead.

When it awoke from its unconsciousness and saw Hui Tai Lang about to be killed with the pole that was coming down, it immediately flew forward and blocked the blow that would have killed Hui Tai Lang with its own body... Hui Tai Lang watched dumbstruck as the Six-tailed Fox Spirit's huge body collapsed down to the ground with a loud boom, its fresh blood spilling all over the ground.

Hui Tai Lang didn't howl or cry out, it only used its last bit of strength to leap towards the Corrupted Warrior Lie Lie furiously.

It opened its mouth wide and immediately bit at his throat!

Ten minutes later, Hui Tai Lang who had one of its front leg twisted and fractured, one of its head battered to pieces, its body covered with deep wounds that even exposed its bones, spit out Lie Lie's head from its mouth. It then struggled as it crawled towards the Six-tailed Fox Spirit... A trail of blood trailing behind it... In front of it, the Six-tailed Fox Spirit had become Three-tailed Snow Fox again. This time, its head had even been battered and weighed down by the bloodied Metallic Rune Pole.

Receiving the fatal blow for Hui Tai Lang on its own body, it had collapsed instead.

Fresh blood had dyed its originally snow-white fur completely red.

Hui Tai Lang had no more strength to shove the heavy Metallic Rune Pole away and save the Three-tailed Snow Fox trapped underneath. It could only bite the pole with its mouth and struggled to pull it off. Yue Yang's words that ordered it to protect the little Three-tailed Snow Fox properly continued to ring in its ears.

Suddenly, a bloody tear dripped from Hui Tai Lang's eyes...

“Awooooooooo...”

It looked up to the sky and let out its saddest, grieving howl. Its howl could even break hearts and form tears on others' eyes. Its bereaved cry echoed throughout the valley for a long time, reverberating continuously.

The undying Hui Tai Lang finally collapsed on top of the Metallic Rune Pole.

As it slowly closed its eyes and the bloodied view in front of it slowly faded away, that black-coloured Metallic Rune Pole suddenly emitted a faint white light. The white light grew stronger and stronger, and then, a Runic Circle appeared, clearly and vividly rising from the Metallic Rune Pole, floating into the white light. A few golden runes appeared and entered into Hui Tai Lang's body, while some white runes entered into the Three-tailed Snow Fox's body...

It was uncertain how much time had passed before the white light slowly dissipated and disappeared.

The Metallic Rune Pole shattered into pieces with a loud cracking sound.

The sudden sound woke Hui Tai Lang up... Its eyes suddenly opened...

Chapter 174 – Tides Of Strong Enemies, Fierce Battle Descending

On the peak of the mountain cliff, Heaven's Line Cave.

Yue Yang was about to climb out of Heaven's Line Cave to rescue Princess Qian Qian when there was suddenly a large quake from above. The booming sound was as if Lightning Gods had struck the mountain top. Rock fragments rained down like raindrops.

In the midst of the rubble which messily splattered onto the ground, a human shadow also fell and landed like a meteorite. She seemed as if she was no match for her opponent and was thus struck down the cliff.

As the person was about to crash into the rocks, Yue Yang immediately flew over and caught her.

However, as the gravitational momentum was too forceful, even with Yue Yang's abilities, he was unable to completely neutralize the crashing motion. Both people were hence smashed onto the rocks, smattering them with a loud rumble. Yue Yang's vision blackened in spells of time. Thankfully he had reduced a good large part of their falling momentum. If it didn't, two of his rib bones would probably have been broken by now. Looking at the person in his bosom, as expected, it was the Imperial Swordswoman Princess Qian Qian. Without saying a word he whipped out his Hui Jin Magic Blade.

"Idiot, I am the real one!" Princess Qian Qian was afraid that this

fellow would attack her, so she immediately glared at him with her noble gaze, warning him not to do anything to her indiscriminately.

“Didn’t you already return to the palace? Why were you following me from behind?” Yue Yang did not want to part with the beauty in his arms, his nose moving about her neck to take deep breaths of Princess Qian Qian’s virgin scent, silently sighing in pleasure. With such a beauty in his arms, it was really better than having the entire country under one’s rule. No wonder so many people would rather die under the climax of sexual pleasures. A sexual lifestyle was too much of a desire to look forward to.

“Stay away from me...!” Princess Qian Qian was speechless when she saw that even in this kind of situation, this brat had not forgotten to take advantage of her, sniffing her body everywhere. Her face reddened and she jumped, pushing Yue Yang’s wolfish paws away.

A burst of [Hellfire] rumbled down from the sky with a loud bellow. This time the target was not Luo Hua City Mistress, but Princess Qian Qian.

Instead of retreating, Princess Qian Qian advanced towards the sky of raging flames and waved her sword.

The flames split into two halves.

The Sword Qi that reverberated out from her slash rose into the

sky and slashed onto the rocks on the roof of the cave, deeply penetrating within as it sliced the rocks in its way.

She was worried whether Yue Yang would be burnt into charcoal in the midst of the [Hellfire]. But when she looked back, she realized that this fellow was squatting right behind her, using her body as a shield, and was safe and sound. He even had a wily smile on his face that was itching for a spanking. This made Princess Qian Qian really annoyed. “What are you doing?”

Yue Yang was currently admiring Princess Qian Qian’s lovely figure and perky butt. Normally, these were mostly covered by her silver armour, hence it was not too obvious.

But just now she had to forcefully wave her sword to attack. With those big movements, her curves were immediately exposed.

Of course, Yue Yang only admired and did not say it out loud. He initially thought to say that he was staying behind her to avoid the flames, but once he was glared at by her noble gaze, he accidentally said “I am just admiring the scenery here”

“How’s the scenery then?” Princess Qian Qian was furious.

“Not bad, it’s just that I can’t see it clearly, it’ll be better if the armour is removed.” Yue Yang’s imagination was running so wild that he accidentally said the truth again.

“Then I’ll let you see as much as you want!” Princess Qian Qian

raised her butt, and her body suddenly knocked backwards, her butt knocking into Yue Yang's face and blasting him numerous meters away. Yue Yang rubbed his nose which was hurting badly, silently thinking that even sexual luck was not something that he could endure painlessly. If she had knocked him without anything covering her butt it would be nothing much, but she just had to wear a full bodied silver armour that was hard and solid, it was too much.

Luo Hua City Mistress was too busy to attend to the both of them. She was currently staring at one stalk of Starlight Serene Indigo Grass that was outside the boundaries of protection of the Protective Shield, burning into a pile of ashes by the [Hellfire]. The flower became spots of starlight, disappearing within the interiors of the cave.

As a person who loved flowers, she was extremely infuriated.

But at this moment, there was no other choice than to repress her anger, and gather the remaining Starlight Serene Indigo Grass, placing them into the jadebox she had previously prepared.

Loud rumbles periodically sounded from the top of the cave. Crushed rocks the size of boulders smashed down from above.

After successfully avoiding the falling rocks, Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian discovered that the enemies above had already forced open a giant crack on the crevices of Heaven's Line, jumping into the hole in an aggressive manner.

The person who came was the Luminous Demon Ding Zang.

He seemed to be cautious fighting against both Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian. Upon his descent, he immediately summoned his Grimoire, raising his protective shield.

In contrast, the Luminous Demon Ding Zang's comrade was extremely arrogant.

His comrade was a tall and sturdy giant who stood at above three meters in height, and was as strong as an ox with tightly packed and ripped muscles all over his body.

There were strangely shaped gauntlet that resembled a large hammer in both of his fists. The black gauntlet had numerous wolf fangs as barbed tips. It not only looked extremely terrifying in strength but also seemed to have a large potential to kill and injure. Whoever was punched by those would at the very least suffer bone fractures throughout his entire body.

The giant looked exceptionally confident. His upper body was naked and his skin was exposed, not wearing any armour at all. Even his two legs were only clad in black leather pants.

Upon descent, he smashed the giant rock that he stepped on into pieces, causing rippling tremors that shook the entire cave.

Yue Yang realized that this giant could be stronger than the Luminous Demon Ding Zang. He was also a pure Strengthening-

type beast's maniac warrior. With the support of a Gold-ranked Beast within his body, he absolutely had a terrifying battle strength. Although it could not compare to the abnormal Marquis of Zi Jin, but one definitely could not underestimate this monster. It would already be a tough and arduous battle to fight with these two enemies. However, in reality, there were certainly not only two enemies to face.

There was another enemy, a masked man who was as thin as a bamboo pole.

He soundlessly floated down on a piece of rock. He had leaped down from an altitude of more than ten meters and yet did not make a single sound when he landed. Such light leaping skill made Yue Yang frown. He would rather fight with two giant-like strength-type opponents than fight agile-type opponents like this masked skinny man.

The fourth enemy was an old man wearing a bamboo rain hat. He held an emerald green fishing rod in his hand and also carried a large bottle gourd on his back.

He may look a little like a village fisherman, but his power should be one of the strongest amongst all of them.

There was still a fifth enemy who was floating down from the roof of the cave.

This person was a woman with a sexy figure, wearing heavy makeup and dressed gaudily, with fresh flowers on her head. Her

breasts were like huge balls sticking out, and were almost bursting out from her top. At the same time, they were very bouncy, and when she landed on the ground, the pair of giant balls started bouncing without any sign of stopping.

Even though on the surface, Yue Yang's eyes were emitting hearts and mouth was drooling non-stop looking at the view, he was extremely alert inside.

If this gorgeous lady who dared to wear a maxi dress to battle was a weak fighter, she would perhaps already be utterly defeated by now. However, when she landed, the skinny man and the old fisherman immediately took steps away from her. Even the insanely strong giant also took two steps ahead, pretending to press in on Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian. But in actual fact, it was trying to keep its distance from this frightening woman who was lightly kissing her phoenix fairy fingernails and smiling alluringly ... Yue Yang felt that she may not be the strongest one, but was definitely the most terrifying one out of the five. To suffer a punch from the giant would probably severely injure him, but to be raked by this woman, he would probably be toast.

This battle was five against three, the enemies clearly gaining the upper hand against them.

Yue Yang realized that this team of opponents really complemented one another perfectly.

There were two Strengthening-type Rankers amongst the five, one strong and one agile, one as the main attacking force and the other for mounting sneak attacks. This already constituted

sufficient attacking power. Additionally, they had the Elemental-type Luminous Demon Ding Zang's [Hellfire], practically covering both long-range and close-range type battles. As for the old fellow, he had large amounts of stored energy. Just by looking at that long Emerald-green Fishing Rod, one could tell that he had unsurpassed battle skills and was positioned as the coordinating commander. The cooperation of the four of them blended into each other well.

Finally, there was still the gaudy woman who was the most fatal. On the surface, she looked as seductive as a whore, but was in actual fact, she was probably as poisonous as a serpent.

“Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian, and this Titan who is deliberately concealing his identity, today, I am honoured to introduce to you our comrades from the Demonic Palace.” The Luminous Demon Ding Zang's shrill voice sounded. “You are the youngsters with the most potential such that the Ten Major Sky Demons ordered for you to be seized no matter what, even if you have become corpses. Today, we risk the great danger of a complete wipe-out of our army and sincerely invite you to join our Demonic Palace ... Even though the name ‘Demonic Palace’ is not nice-sounding, but other than that, we are actually the world's the most outstanding, most free, and even the happiest Rankers. As long as you become members, you will be able to experience a brand-new and exciting world. You will never be able to find out more secrets on this rigid and inflexible Soaring Dragon Continent, because those old fellows would keep telling you that they will tell you next time or that you would understand once you reach that level. They won't tell you the truth ... But we are entirely different from them. Our strongest rankers would impart the most important information down the ranks every year such that everybody can level up quickly ... The Falling Cangue Mountain is not what you imagine to be the Land of the Abandoned Demons,

but is in fact a happy heaven, a blissful world! ”

“Nice speech!” Yue Yang carelessly clapped twice, and then yawned. “Just that it’s a little too long.”

“.....” Princess Qian Qian kept staring at the gaudy woman’s chest. One could tell that she was a little jealous of that pair of giant breasts that could cause nosebleeds.

Luo Hua City Mistress did not even raise her head, but continued to quietly, silently and gently gather the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass, as if a little extra strength from her would cause pain towards the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass. She lovingly put each stalk of Starlight Serene Indigo Grass into the jade box, not sparing even the flower buds which had not blossomed.

These Starlight Serene Indigo Grass would not be spared in the battle which was going to break out later even if they were not picked.

It was precisely because they were fated to be destroyed that Luo Hua City Mistress was lamenting their eventual fate.

On hearing Yue Yang’s sarcastic remark, the Luminous Demon Ding Zang was not angered.

He pointed to the three-meter tall giant and introduced him. “Allow me to introduce our Demonic Palace’s very own Hercules, ‘Xing Meng’, who is widely known for his brute strength. He once

smashed a Battle Kodo Beast's head into pieces bare-handed. He had also once twisted and broke Giant Mammoth's tusks, killed Giant Iron-skinned Crocodiles, headbutted Iron-horned Wild Oxen, and tore apart Bronze-bodied Forest Boas He is now ranked the thirty-eighth in the Demonic Palace, and is known as the 'Mountain Destroyer Earth Demon'."

Yue Yang nodded and clapped. "Not bad, the makings of a labourer."

The three-meter tall giant Xing Meng's face immediately blackened, his two eyes seemed to be almost spouting fire in anger.

The Luminous Demon Ding Zang pretended not to hear Yue Yang's words, and went on with his introduction. "This is 'Gu Zhui'. If you think that him being ranked thirtieth in the Demonic Palace is not high enough, you can take a look at Soaring Dragon Continent's Killer Roll. There are a total of ten wanted men that have a bounty placed on their heads. The one at the top of the Roll is our very own 'Gu Zhui'."

As the Luminous Demon Ding Zang continued his introduction, the extremely tall, masked skinny guy gracefully bowed at Princess Qian Qian. "I am interested in killing the Princess. Please forgive me when I offend Your Highness later."

"Bah!" Princess Qian Qian really had an unyielding character. Her response was an arrogant spit in contempt.

"Thank you Princess!" Nevertheless, the masked skinny man

named 'Gu Zhui' smiled evilly, the wicked bloodlust in his eyes growing in intensity. But he still suppressed his bloodlust, as if waiting for the best opportunity to explode. The Luminous Demon Ding Zang then introduced the old fellow wearing the bamboo rain hat and holding the fishing rod. He smiled a little deferentially and said. "Ranked number twenty-six in the Demonic Palace, 'Duke Xian' that was the talk of the town a hundred years ago. Three thousand six hundred and eighty one military successes accumulated throughout his life, this record is practically something that us later generations cannot hope to beat Countless Rankers have died under the hands of 'Duke Xian', even including a few Kings. If I recall correctly, Princess Qian Qian's two uncles, the extremely intelligent Prince Xian and Prince E have also been defeated by him"

"Such small things that happened in the past is not worthy of mentioning!" The old fellow smiled, pleased with himself.

"Don't overestimate yourself, old fellow, because your name or your looks both look like they really need a spanking!" Yue Yang was extremely not used to this. Why didn't this old fellow go to the mountains and retire? He was already so old, yet he was still so arrogant. How would the younger people feel?

"Are you not going to introduce me to this young handsome fellow?" The incredibly pretty giant breasted woman tossed a flirtatious look at Yue Yang.

"Ah" On hearing this, the Luminous Demon Ding Zang actually nervously wiped the cold sweat on his head, nodding. "Who doesn't know our 'Phoenix Fairy Beauty', cough, your

beauty and allure is renowned in this world

“After talking for so long, you still haven’t gotten to the point.” The pretty big-chested woman continued to blink and toss flirtatious looks at Yue Yang. “Young handsome fellow, my name is Phoenix Fairy. I am not very good-looking, and I can’t compare to the little princess beside you. But I have some skills in giving some service. You can try me out when we are free, then you would know my positive points. Young enemy, don’t worry, you are so good-looking that I wouldn’t bear to attack you. Even causing a little injury on your face would cause me so much heartbreak! Why don’t you listen to my advice and come over to our side, and bring that little princess with you? Isn’t it great to have everybody happy together? I hate fighting and killing the most!”

While talking, the gorgeous woman used her luscious red tongue to lick her sexy lips.

Her eyes attracted the hearts and soul of men, and had unlimited flirtatious intent.

While she was talking, she kept swinging her hot figure which could induce nosebleeds in men. Her extremely bouncy giant breasts bounced up and down, making Yue Yang stare until his eyeballs almost fell out.

On seeing this fellow’s useless demeanour, Princess Qian Qian was extremely aggravated. She did not pinch him like a normal girl would, but specially extended her hand and slapped Yue Yang’s butt hard, awarding him with a hard slap as she snorted coldly,

“Wipe your saliva! That woman is a Minor Sky Demon. Other than the other eight Minor Sky Demons and the Ten Major Sky Demons, those four fellows together won’t be able to defeat her. According to legend, the number of men she had sucked dry is more than one thousand. If you want to die, you can go over, and let her big breasts suffocate you!”

“Really? She really is a Minor Sky Demon? How do you judge Minor Sky Demons, is it by the three measurements?” On hearing this, Yue Yang was shocked.

(Shiro: Uhh, here Minor Sky Demon can also be called Little/Small Sky Demon. So Yue Yang was asking if she was little Sky Demon because of her three sizes)

“Nobody in the entire Demonic Palace dares to challenge the Minor Sky Demons. Only if more than half of the Ten Major Sky Demons agree, one can then be promoted to become Minor Sky Demons. The number of people that this witch has killed is even more than the amount of ants that you stepped on. Do you think she is the weakest? She just hides her true power well, idiot!” Princess Qian Qian crammed such knowledge into Yue Yang in time.

“Ah You’re right!” Yue Yang discovered that even with his Level Three [Divine Vision], he could not tell the level of the witch’s true strength. He had actually been fooled by her false projection of her strength, and he was very shocked upon realizing that. But luckily, using his Level Three [Divine Vision] to observe her, he discovered one weakness of this woman. A smile crept up on the corners of his mouth. This woman was very hard to fight, and he could not tell her true power. It was probably close to the level of Marquis of Zi Jin whom he fought after he was weakened

from fighting against Grandma Chi.

But if he could make use of that weakness, he should still be able to fight her with barely enough strength.

Yue Yang was glad that he had the skill of [Divine Vision], otherwise he would not even know how his death would arrive in this battle!

“Young handsome fellow, where are your eyes looking at? That’s so annoying, I am not so strong. I am only ranked fifty-fifth in the Demonic Palace, a lot weaker than the four of them. Later when we fight, you, young handsome boy, must not use so much power fighting me, and don’t touch any parts of my body that you aren’t supposed to!” The curvy woman, Phoenix Fairy, swayed her waist like a snake, her enormous breasts bouncing, almost splitting her top and spilling out. On seeing this, Yue Yang could not help but inwardly swallow a mouth of saliva. This response made her laugh uncontrollably, her pair of giant balls swaying even more vigorously, making one’s nose spurt blood.

“The flirting can conclude for now.” Princess Qian Qian raised her giant sword, shouting. “If you have decided on your opponent, start fighting!”

“I haven’t decided!” Yue Yang realized that all opponents was cruelly strong. It would be tough fighting any one of them.

“Even if you haven’t decided, you still have to fight them. Do you think the enemy will give you extra time? They haven’t started

attacking since they arrived here because they were carefully checking whether we had set any traps of them. Now that they have discovered that there are no traps, they will immediately fight you!” Princess Qian Qian’s words have not left her mouth when the giant “Xing Meng” powered forward and pounced towards them, raising his giant Wolf Teeth Gauntlet and slashing towards Yue Yang’s face with a thundering roar

Chapter 175 – No One Can Take Advantage Of Me!

Yue Yang couldn't avoid confronting Giant Xing Meng's punch.

Behind him was Princess Qian Qian. If he dodged it and let her take the hit, even if she was fine afterwards, she would probably curse him forever. Yue Yang couldn't dodge the attack, but he wasn't stupid enough to fight against a three-meter-tall Giant whose arms were even thicker and harder than his own body head on. He first used his leg to kick Princess Qian Qian's small bottom, sending her flying away like a cannonball. He used the momentum from kicking her body to spin in the air, ingenuously avoiding Giant's punch and at the same time landing a kick on Giant Xing Meng's face. However, Yue Yang's kick that had packed additional strength from Giant Phantom Shadow's power and was strong enough to even destroy a bison's neck bone, didn't do much damage to Giant Xing Meng.

The Giant advanced instead of retreating, brandishing his giant club as if his sole intention was to pulverize Yue Yang's tiny body.

“HOU!”

Speaking of strengths, Giant Xing Meng's terrifying, barbaric strength was indeed stronger than Yue Yang's. If Yue Yang didn't have the additional strength from Giant Phantom Shadow, he might not even compare to Giant's single finger.

As for defense, Giant Xing Meng's skin was even harder than a Giant Mammoth's.

Yue Yang had never seen a case where the enemy could totally disregard his attack even after using the full strength of his legs. However, according to that saying from Stephen Chow's movie, "[In the world of martial arts, speed defines the winner](#)", becoming powerful in fighting was not solely based on strength and strong defense alone. Real martial art skill centered around speed and technique, not the biggest fist or the strongest strength.

(Shiro: Stephen Chow is a well-known actor in Hong Kong, one of his well known movie is Kung Fu Hustle.)

If they were comparing reaction speed, skill and agility instead, Yue Yang would probably be able to beat Giant up while flirting with girls. He would even have the time to eat, wash his clothes etc in the middle of it all...

When Giant Xing Meng threw out his thunder-like punch, Yue Yang could easily avoid it and at the same time return his attack with ten kicks or even more. If his enemy was only the Giant Xing Meng, then he could only meet his miserable death under Yue Yang's tyrannical attacks! However, Giant Xing Meng could display his maximum strength when he, the skinny Gu Zhui and Duke Xian coordinated with each other.

The skinny Gu Zhui summoned a human-like Skeleton Puppet that had a pair of skeletal wing on its back and wrap himself up inside the Skeleton Puppet's skeleton.

He then flashed towards Yue Yang's back, faster than lightning.

The bony wings on his back pricked at Yue Yang's back like a poisonous scorpion tail.

His hands was about to attack Yue Yang...

“Go away!”

Duke Xian had also rushed over, brandishing his Emerald-green Fishing Rod.

His spear technique looked like a hundred thousand spears dancing, the rod's after-image dense like a forest.

The attack seemed to be able to pierce into dimensional spaces, emitting a loud hissing sound.

When Yue Yang saw this, he immediately jumped off of Giant Xing Meng's face and shot out like a bullet. He twisted his body and avoided the skinny Gu Zhui's fatal prick, then welcomed Princess Qian Qian's sword, slipping through it like a fish. Spreading open his arms, he hugged Princess Qian Qian and charged towards the ground, breaking away from the pincer attack together with her. Even if they ended up tumbling miserably into a puddle of water, but at least they escaped the three-men pincer attack, safely breaking away from the battle.

“Isn't that the Yue Clan's Spear Technique?” Princess Qian Qian

was extremely stunned when she saw Duke Xian executing the Yue Clan's Spear Technique with his Emerald-green Fishing Rod.

"Heheh, those years were really difficult. I only managed to learn this technique by torturing and questioning a member of the Yue Clan. If I remembered correctly, his name was called Yue Guan." The Yue Clan member Yue Guan that Duke Xian had mentioned was the old man Yue Hai's uncle. Yue Guan was originally a genius martial artist that the Clan had put all of their hopes on. However, one day, he went missing on his way to a meeting and completely disappeared without a trace. The Yue Clan believed that he was assassinated by an enemy clan and spent ten painful years searching for the assassin, but they never found him. They didn't know that he was actually trapped by Duke Xian, a member of the Demonic Palace.

"....." Yue Yang realized that Duke Xian's true strength wasn't the Yue Clan's Spear Technique. His real abilities were still deeply hidden.

Could it be that this fellow's skills were even stronger than the Yue Clan's Spear Technique?

He was even able to execute a Spear Technique using a light and flimsy fishing rod. This showed that he truly had deep and profound skills and technique. Yue Yang turned around and realized that the rock that Princess Qian Qian had stood on previously had been filled with small, fine holes. These were all caused by the wind impact from Duke Xian's Spear Technique.

If the Duke Xian's Spear Technique's wind pressure was already

this dangerous, then if that Gold-ranked treasure Emerald-green Fishing Rod were to prick a person, that person would probably die miserably.

Yue Yang thought about this and twitched his brows a little.

Princess Qian Qian noticed the change in his expression. She reached her fingers out and wrote a few words on his back lightly.

"I understand..." Yue Yang knew that at the beginning, both sides were only testing out each other's strength. The next battle would be when they would fight to the death. Luo Hua City Mistress had also finished gathering the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass and was charging her [Aurora Light].

If they could teleport, then Luo Hua City Mistress would've called out to Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian to come inside her protective shield and teleport away from this place.

The problem was that on top of the Heaven's Line Cave, there was a black-coloured pillar of light suspended in mid-air.

It disturbed the whole dimensional space making it impossible to teleport.

If one wanted to leave this place, one must fight to the death..... only the winner would be able to leave; the loser could only stay within the cave forever.

Not only did Yue Yang's, Princess Qian Qian's and Luo Hua City Mistress's expression became serious, even Giant Xing Meng, the skinny Gu Zhui, the old man Duke Xian and the Luminous Demon Ding Zang didn't dare to be careless. This was because when they were testing out each other's strength just now, they couldn't even gain a little advantage. These three youngsters were definitely not going to be easy opponents... The only one who still had a smile on her face was that beautiful, alluring Phoenix Fairy beauty who had a pair of swaying, gigantic breasts. She was currently sitting on a flat rock near the walls inside the mountain cave. Her bare, delicate, exquisite and smooth legs looked even more beautiful with the pair high heeled shoes that she was wearing.

She watched the situation below as she leisurely swayed her legs lightly, her face smiling all the while.

“Tenfold Muscle Strengthening!” Giant Xing Meng yelled.

A cloud of black smoke exhausted from his mouth.

The black smoke transformed into a black ox head humanoid, and it fused together with Giant Xing Meng.

In an instant, Giant Xing Meng's muscles began to change rapidly, bulging and becoming even more muscular. Clusters of muscles fold over each other. A layer of black, metallic kind of radiance appeared on Giant Xing Meng's skin. After the fusion, Giant Xing Meng's strength and defense had increased by tenfold. With just one attack, he could destroy mountains and shatter rocks open. This was also the reason why he was called the “Mountain Destroyer Earth Demon”.

Gu Zhui didn't summon anything any more, he only moved his legs and began to do a weird dance.

Those who were familiar with the skinny Gu Zhui's attacks knew that this was his [Death Dance].

As his movement speed increased along with the speed of his dance, Gu Zhui's body split into two, and from two, he split into four.

Finally, the number of Gu Zhui's copies skyrocketed, as if there were dozens of Gu Zhui doing the same dance on the ground.

Duke Xian, on the other hand, summoned a small shrimp and let it rest softly on his fishing rod's hook.

Yue Yang's gaze froze when he saw this. This shrimp looked harmless on the surface, but it was actually the most deadly one!

Yue Yang remembered what he read from the Beast Encyclopedia before. Amongst the 'Top Ten Vicious Beasts', there was a beast that Yue Yang did not expect to be amongst the top ten at all, and that was the 'Shrimp'.

This Deep Ocean Crossbow Shrimp's body wasn't big, but it could shoot high pressure Water Arrows that could easily pierce through the bodies of three Mammoths placed next to each other. Furthermore, the friction caused by these arrows could reach up to

three thousand degrees celsius. In deep oceans, this Shrimp could easily kill a King Octopus with its arrows.....Yue Yang couldn't be certain if this little shrimp was really the Deep Ocean Crossbow Shrimp, but either way, he mustn't be careless.

The Luminous Demon Ding Zang didn't shoot [Hellfire] towards Yue Yang anymore. The opponent that he had chosen was Luo Hua City Mistress.

“[Hellfire]!” He aimed at Luo Hua City Mistress, a little passively.

That was because he couldn't attack Luo Hua City Mistress who was protected within her protective shield. Furthermore, Luo Hua City Mistress had also gone all out to attack with her [Aurora Light], targeting the Phoenix Fairy beauty sitting on the flat stone high above the mountain. The Luminous Demon Ding Zang immediately moved to protect the Phoenix Fairy beauty, but he had to unleash two rounds of [Hellfires] before he could block against Luo Hua City Mistress' [Aurora Light]... Luckily, Luo Hua City Mistress' [Aurora Light] charging time was slower than his [Hellfire].

The blazing light beam of the [Aurora Light] burned incomparably brightly, blazing through the air, shooting straight towards the enchanting Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty acted as if she didn't see anything or hear anything, but the Luminous Demon Ding Zang lashed his long sleeves as he unleashed two waves of [Hellfire], aiming towards the [Aurora Light].

“Boom!”

The great explosion that resulted from the collision of [Aurora Light] and [Hellfire] resounded deafeningly, shaking the whole mountain, causing a few rocks to rustle down from the mountain walls.

The loud exploding sound echoed throughout the cave, deafening everyone present there even more. It was as if someone had knocked their head with a club. Both the heatwave from the [Hellfire] and the [Aurora Light]’s dissipated arrow of light shot towards the ground, where Giant Xing Meng, Yue Yang and the others were fighting in... Just as the great explosion exploded, everyone started to move synchronously.

Princess Qian Qian jumped high into the air towards Giant Xing Meng, slashing her sword towards him.

While Giant Xing Meng tried to deal with the attack, Gu Zhui tried to launch a sneak attack to kill Princess Qian Qian. However, Yue Yang grabbed Princess Qian Qian’s left leg, and threw her skillfully right at Duke Xian’s back. Princess Qian Qian’s slash chopped Duke Xian’s body in half..... but the figure of Duke Xian’s chopped body disappeared into thin air. Duke Xian’s real body had instead appeared behind Yue Yang as he snickered: “Too slow.” He let go of his bent Emerald-green Fishing Rod, and like a whip, the rod lashed at Yue Yang’s waist, causing Yue Yang to lose control and was sent flying to the ground. It was as if Giant Xing Meng and Duke Xian had undergone thousands of times of practice together; when Yue Yang was in mid-air, Giant Xing Meng very

synchronously swung out his punch right towards Yue Yang's head, sending Yue Yang flying away like a cannonball to the opposite side. As Yue Yang tumbled in mid-air, Duke Xian swished his Fishing Rod again, shooting the long fishing rod string out. The shrimp that was hooked on the string suddenly become bigger. It then shot out a [Water Pillar] that pierced right through Yue Yang's body powerfully. The [Water Pillar] even pierced through the mountain wall behind Yue Yang, creating an open hole to the other side.

The thickness of the mountain wall was at least ten metres thick, yet it was easily pierced through by the [Water Pillar].

It was clear what would happen if such a formidable and terrifying power were to hit upon Yue Yang's body.

Yue Yang, who was beaten up by the enemies' coordinated attacks, fell onto the pool of water with a loud crashing sound. He didn't get up for a while, as endless stream of blood flowed from his body.

Princess Qian Qian wanted to rush towards Yue Yang and save him, but she was stopped by the countless Gu Zui's copies who was executing his [Death Dance]. She was pushed back continuously; it was difficult for her to even protect herself.

“There's something wrong!”

Duke Xian managed to kill Yue Yang instantly with one move, but there was no happiness in his face.

Standing on the rock by the pool and looking down on its surface, he felt an incomparable doubt in his heart. He felt that the cunning brat was the most frightening adversary, who was even harder to handle than Princess Qian Qian. How could he be killed instantly with one move like this?

Giant Xing Meng, on the other hand, was looking down on Yue Yang instead and said, “How can that pretty boy survive after taking that much damage? Unless he has an undying body, he must be dead! Ahh.....My eyes, MY EYES!”

Suddenly, Giant Xing Meng’s right eye exploded like a soap bubble, splattering blood everywhere and staining his hands in red.

Duke Xian jumped in fright at this, and he hurriedly raised his Emerald-green Fishing Rod, protecting his body.

At the same time, he sought for his enemy’s presence in all directions.

Then, a clear voice suddenly came from his back, sounding warm and familiar as if they were old friends, “Old geezer, are you searching for me?”

Duke Xian turned his head and found a topless Yue Yang who had a brilliant smile on his face, as bright as sunshine. Yue Yang was reaching his hands out towards himself with a Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger in his hands... Duke Xian wanted to quickly retreat

and avoid the attack, but he realized that his body was as heavy as a rock, so heavy that he couldn't move at all. He also wanted to raise his Fishing Rod and unleash his Spear Technique on Yue Yang, creating dozens of holes on his opponent's body... However, his hands felt heavy as lead. No matter how anxious he was to move his body, he couldn't move a single inch.

It was as if there was an invisible chain binding his body tightly.

Duke Xian was terrified.

"No one can take advantage of me! You are not an exception. This is what you owed me, paid back with additional interest!" Yue Yang pierced his Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger right through Duke Xian's back. Then, he turned and pulled out his Dragon Slaying Dagger, swiping it through Duke Xian's neck this time, cutting off his windpipe and carotid artery agilely.

Crimson blood splattered through the air...

Chapter 176 – This Brat Is Really Abnormal!

When Gu Zhui's sudden, fast attack arrived, Yue Yang had already disappeared without a trace.

“Ah!”

Duke Xian collapsed onto the rocks painfully, the fresh blood near his heart and neck splashing onto the ground.

In contrast to Xing Meng's swift recovery of bleeding wounds and revival of battle strength, Duke Xian's two legs thrashed around and seemed to be completely dead after a while.

This time, it was Princess Qian Qian's turn to crease her lovely eyebrows. “This old fellow seems to be feigning death... Your trick to injure yourself to lower the enemy's guard just now had failed. How was it? How much were you beaten up? ”

Yue Yang appeared behind her. He shook his head, indicating that he was fine.

But in truth, there was a huge gaping wound around his waist. There was a deep tear on his flesh caused by the fishing rod's whip just now, that one could almost see to his bones ...

“This fellow has a shadow in his body that can't be seen by others. It should be a Guardian Beast. Other than being able to sneakily attack Xing Meng's eyes, it could also grab Duke Xian's

limbs, and can even suffer blows in defense of its master. All of us must take note of this.” Gu Zhui immediately realized there was something wrong and reminded his comrades of this.

“[Aurora Light]!” Luo Hua City Mistress shot the destructive [Aurora Light] towards Duke Xian’s corpse from the high cliff where she was standing on.

KABOOM...

The [Aurora Light] destroyed all the rocks near the pool. A large slab of rock on the surface subsided into a concave with a loud roar, and the water flowed into it, becoming a new pool of water.

When the [Aurora Light] disappeared, there was a shadow standing at the side of the pool.

Green head, golden back and black tail.

There was an old tortoise in human shape standing there. Its falcon-like beak produced the voice of Duke Xian. “I haven’t exposed my true form for so long. Youngsters nowadays really can’t be underestimated! Alright, in return for your actions, and to neutralize the rage in my heart, I have decided to torture all three of you to death, and then eat all of you alive...”

“Thousand Year Kappa?” Yue Yang cried out involuntarily. After such a long battle, this fellow was not even a human being?

“I want to ask you, if we die, will you still be able to recognize me in your next life?” Princess Qian Qian lightly wiped away the trail of blood from Yue Yang’s mouth, switching from her default tigress attitude, asking him in a soft and gentle tone.

“If you are still a great beauty, I guarantee that I would be able to recognize you with just one look.” Yue Yang nodded his head with all certainty.

“What if I become an ugly girl?” Princess Qian Qian asked.

“Even if I recognize you, I will pretend that I don’t know you...” Yue Yang spoke truthfully. However, without even being able to finish his sentence, he was punched by Princess Qian Qian.

“You will not have a next life, because Duke Xian has the ‘Devouring Soul Pearl’. You will be forever trapped within the Devouring Soul Pearl until your souls are completely consumed!” The Luminous Demon Ding Zang started to laugh evilly.

“These few little thieves are easy to handle, I can defeat them with just one hand! Both of you leave, I’ll see you off!” Yue Yang extended his hand and lifted Princess Qian Qian up, throwing her upwards with all his effort towards the cave roof entrance of Heaven’s Line Cave. At the same time, he raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade, slashing at Gu Zhui who was hurtling towards him. His legs rotated in the air like a spinning pinwheel, kicking the injured eye of Xing Meng, forcing both of them back.

Duke Xian, who had a human head and tortoise body, appeared

behind Yue Yang in an extremely fast speed that Yue Yang could not even imagine. He delivered Yue Yang a blow, sending him flying away.

Yue Yang twisted his body in midair, and rebounded his body from the rock he was sent flying to, propelling himself into the air.

There was a flash of black shadow in the air and Duke Xian appeared again.

Duke Xian's long metal tail swiped across and whipped Yue Yang away... Seizing this opportunity, Gu Zhui shot his bone out, extending his bones and pierced it through Yue Yang's right shoulder, pinning him onto the rock wall.

Xing Meng's heavy fist arrived soon afterwards, but Yue Yang had already disappeared.

He appeared within the protective shield of Luo Hua City Mistress, holding up her lovely body with both hands.

"Idiot, I am not leaving, I am not a Strengthening-type Ranker like Princess Qian Qian, I can't escape! Let me go, I want to stay and fight with you!" Luo Hua City Mistress started to scream.

"I am a man, what I say is final!" Yue Yang used all his effort to throw Luo Hua City Mistress towards the Heaven Line's cave entrance. Luo Hua City Mistress was thrown involuntarily, landing on one of the highest rocks. She still wanted to jump

down, but Princess Qian Qian had turned and leapt over to her. She hugged Luo Hua City Mistress to her waist, giving Yue Yang a deep look. Gritting her teeth, she leapt out of Heaven's Line Cave.

Within the cave, Yue Yang was the only one left. He now wanted to face all five opponents on his own.

“Do you know why we didn't prevent them from leaving?” The Luminous Demon Ding Zang started to laugh out loud. “That's because we still have people outside!”

Large rumbling tremors travelled from the cave opening.

Terrifying howls of wolves and women's shouts successively sounded.

The loud sounds of battle constantly travelled to the cave below and echoed throughout the cave for a long time.

The Luminous Demon Ding Zang pointed a finger at Yue Yang and nodded with an unexpectedly serious expression on his face. “You don't know how much the Ten Major Sky Demons treasure you. In order to hunt and kill you, without a second thought, they dispatched large amounts of forces to distract the attention of both Da Xia and Tian Luo Kingdom. They even sent a Minor Sky Demon, four Earth Demons and five Human Demons, ten people in total, to come forth and eliminate you with such an unprecedentedly large and powerful army... You are our priority target, if you don't surrender, you have to die! As for Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress, under the siege of four Human

Demons whose abilities were their exact nemesis, I believe they won't be able to hold on for long... By the way, let me tell you another piece of information, the Demonic Palace has placed so much importance on you that we even especially send a Human Demon to hunt and kill your 'Two-Headed Demon Wolf and Luo Hua City Mistress' Three-tailed Snow Fox. You guys have definitely no chance of escaping alive. From today onwards, all traces of your existence will evaporate into nothingness in the realms of humans, and will disappear eternally from people's memories..."

Yue Yang raised his eyebrows, and his expression was unexpectedly serious and somber. "You all want my life? Then you should offer something sufficient in value in exchange!"

Duke Xian with his human head and tortoise body opened his falcon-like beak and laughed coldly. "Little fellow, you have no chance. Even with just me, I can kill you a hundred times!"

Xing Meng, who was blinded in one eye by Yue Yang pounced on him madly and punched him furiously.

Up till now, he still could not understand how Yue Yang was able to soundlessly shatter his eyeballs. Actually, not only him, everybody could not understand this, even the Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was sitting on the horizontal rock had a frown on her face. She hadn't been able to see clearly in the instant when Yue Yang was hit by Xing Meng. This fellow must have done something, but she could not completely see through how or when Yue Yang had actually made his move. He was hit by Xing Meng, but not only he was completely fine, he was also able to blind Xing

Meng's eyes. This was simply too strange!

Yue Yang raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade.

The spiralling [Spherical Beheader] shaped itself into layers of a blade tower in Yue Yang's hands, cutting across the space surrounding it.

Xing Meng raised his giant Wolf Teeth Gauntlets and forcefully met the attack head on, making sparks flying everywhere.

Initially, he was still able to meet this attacks using his brute strength, but Yue Yang's hands then spun like a windmill in flowing water, repeatedly hitting Xing Meng's arms. The Hui Jin Magic Blade penetrated Xing Meng's skin with mad slashes, making him cry out in pain. But his defense was also abnormally strong. The attack only caused him pain but no injury. Instead, he hugged Yue Yang, then used his head which had already hardened to steel to headbutt Yue Yang.

"I'll let you be cool!" Yue Yang was even crazier than Xing Meng. His fists were already beating up Xing Meng's head and face like raindrops, focusing most of his blows especially in Xing Meng's injured eye. Hitting Xing Meng's elbows and knees in quick succession, Yue Yang finally violently headbutted into Xing Meng's face with force, causing a loud crack. Duke Xian, Gu Zhui, and the Luminous Demon Ding Zang stared at this, completely stunned. This was their first time seeing someone fight Xing Meng with just his body.

This kid really was a lunatic...

Even somebody as strong as Xing Meng was forced to take steps backwards from Yue Yang's blows.

When Yue Yang locked Xing Meng's throat between his two knees, using his hands to twist his head, Duke Xian, Gu Zhui and Ding Zang heard the cracking sounds of Xing Meng's head. Xing Meng's head looked as if it was about to be snapped off.

Roaring, Xing Meng waved his giant arms frantically, using even more strength. Finally, he ripped Yue Yang, who had almost snapped off his neckbone, away from him and sucked in a painful gasp of air.

Gathering even more brute strength, he smashed Yue Yang heavily into the rock surface. He raised his giant legs and was ready to stomp Yue Yang into a pulp of meat.

A voice even louder than Xing Meng's roar exploded into the air.

Like a devil, both of Yue Yang's hands gripped onto Xing Meng's calves. Gathering strength, he lifted Xing Meng high up into the air and smashed him against the ground heavily.

Yue Yang's movements looked like he had just thrown a sack filled with cottons. Lifting Xing Meng, whose body was multiple times larger than his, he smashed him into the ground repeatedly, violently and madly, pulverizing the rocks and sending pieces of

rock flying everywhere. Finally, as if thinking that it was still insufficient, he smashed Xing Meng onto the rock walls, creating large vibrations throughout the cave, causing it to almost collapse.

Duke Xian, Gu Zhui and Ding Zang all continued to stare, stupefied. It was their first time seeing Xing Meng being so heavily injured by somebody.

Xing Meng's brute strength and physical combat levels were unparalleled. How was this even possible?

Could it be that this fellow's strength was even larger than Xing Meng?

"Bastard, I can't move, why aren't you guys helping!" Xing Meng painfully struggled to dislodge himself from the smashed mountain walls. Shaking his dizzy and heavy head, he complained loudly at his comrades who were merely watching without lifting a finger to help him.

"This fellow has a skill that temporarily locks other people's movements." Duke Xian was immediately alert, he had previously gotten the worst of this.

It was not because Xing Meng's strength could not compare to Yue Yan. It was because his movements were locked and he was unable to struggle, that was why he was beaten up so badly by his opponent... Hearing that Yue Yang's final trump card had been exposed by his comrade, a flash of killing intent arose in the eyes of the masked Gu Zhui. It was time to take action. Dancing his [Death

Dance], he transformed into more than ten copies of himself. His copies all converged towards Yue Yang, closing in on him and encircling him.

In contrast, Duke Xian's attacks were more direct.

His giant Golden Tortoise Shell directly smashed towards Yue Yang's head.

Yue Yang's figure suddenly disappeared and re-appeared near some splintered rocks, delivering a heavy blow through the air... With a loud rumble, a shadow was hit away from the ground.

The illusions that were attacking Yue Yang completely disappeared, and Gu Zhui's real body collapsed onto the ground with a bang. "He can see through the illusions!" Gu Zhui's cry of surprise had not finished when Yue Yang had already pounced onto his body. His body tightening around him, his two legs sandwiched Gu Zhui's waist, and his hands started to twist Gu Zhui's head, intending to snap off his head. At the same time, he snorted cold-heartedly. "Correct, your prize is a dead human head!"

The skeleton winged bones on Gu Zhui's back pricked Yue Yang's body like raindrops in a storm, and blood splashed all around.

But Yue Yang paid no heed to them. He, without even flinching, pressed down on Gu Zhui, with both hands determinedly twisted Gu Zhui's head.

Frightening snapping sounds sounded from the twisting of the neckbone. As compared to Xing Meng, Gu Zhui's defense was a lot weaker. Also, he mainly launched sneak attacks with high speed. Once he was wrapped around by Yue Yang, that was equivalent to exposing his biggest weakness to Yue Yang's devil hands.

If Yue Yang used his Hui Jin Magic Blade or Dragon Dagger to attack him, Gu Zhui would not be afraid of him, because his skeletal bones could defend against knives and blades.

But Yue Yang chose to use the most direct method.

Twisting and snapping his neckbone and brain... He was not a Thousand Year Old Tortoise like Duke Xian, but a human Ranker. He definitely could not regenerate his brain after it was twisted off.

"Help!" Gu Zhui wanted to struggle, but he realized that he could not even move a finger.

With only his summoned beast, the Fallen Angel Skeleton to help defend against the brutal twisting of his neck, he also used his winged bones to attack, hoping that this would force his enemy back.

Duke Xian dealt a heavy blow to Yue Yang's back, with internal strength equivalent to the the explosiveness of a mountain torrent.

Yue Yang suffered a heavy blow like the rumbling sound of thunder, but his body was still completely fine...

Yet, in contrast, it was Gu Zhui whose fresh blood spurted out from his nose and mouth. The Luminous Demon Ding Zang shouted out urgently. “This fellow knows how to neutralize force, and can even dissipate my [Hellfire]. Duke Xian, you must use external force to attack him, and directly destroy his body!”

“Let me!” Xing Meng raised his giant fists and smashed downwards onto Yue Yang’s back like a meteorite shower, delivering multiple blows until there were huge gaping wounds of flesh that could be seen and blood splashed everywhere.

He then raised Gu Zhui together with Yue Yang into midair and delivered a torrent of punches.

His intentions were to knock Yue Yang into unconsciousness and rescue Gu Zhui.

After at least a hundred deafening lunatic punches, even Xing Meng was also panting in exhaustion. He threw away Gu Zhui and Yue Yang, thinking that Yue Yang would be definitely completely dead by now, and would already be smashed into a mess of bones.

When Duke Xian and Ding Zang saw that two of them had become a messy pulp of flesh and blood, they heaved a sigh of relief.

Only the Phoenix Fairy who was sitting on the rock cliff was still frowning.

“Is he dead?” Ding Zang asked Xing Meng.

“Definitely dead!” When Xing Meng said this, he was actually not very sure in his heart, but was just trying to appear confident.

How could he not be dead after this?

What a joke, under those attacks of brute strength, even a giant mammoth would be dead. A young fellow being able to survive something like that? Xing Meng felt that even Gu Zhui who had the protection of the Fallen Angel Skeleton might also already have been smashed to death by his power...

“I can prove that that Gu Zhui is dead. He is completely dead. As for me, I seem to be still alive!” Yue Yang, covered from head to toe in blood, suddenly sat right back up. He raised Gu Zhui’s human head that was bleeding from his eyes, ears, mouth and nose, and his eyes still widened in shock, throwing it over to Xing Meng. A devil-like grin crept up Yue Yang’s face. “Luckily I had your help. Otherwise, I wouldn’t be able to twist off that fellow’s head so easily. That fellow had the Fallen Angel Skeleton protecting his entire body, I almost suffered a large disadvantage!”

“.....” Xing Meng also did not know whether to be terrified or to be furious, his body was shaking in fear.

“Now, it’s your turn.” With wounds all over his body and bloody holes poked by the bones, Yue Yang pretended to not see his wounds. Standing up, he pointed towards Duke Xian. “The second

one to die is you!”

“On what basis, young fellow?” Duke Xian stood tall and arrogant. Even with their help, Gu Zhui had still been killed by this fellow, and that made him perturbed. But he still remained confident in his many years of practice, depth and strength of power, and also the high defense of his tortoise armour, and was entirely unafraid of his opponent. He was not Gu Zhui. Yue Yang wanted to snap off his head? He just needed to hide his head back into his shell, and that would make any move against him useless!

“Because I am younger than you, and I can withstand attacks better than you.” The bloody Yue Yang walked to face Duke Xian. He did not smile, but a cold glint of smile seemed to flash across his eyes. “Before you pass away, I’ll tell you a huge secret. Yue Guan is not the only person in the Yue Clan who is able to withstand attacks...”

Hearing this, Duke Xian raked his claws towards Yue Yang’s chest.

Yue Yang turned agilely and smoothly executed a shoulder throw that made Ding Zang and Xing Meng stare in wonder, throwing Duke Xian into the pool of water. Then he jumped into the water, and started to chase after him.

The Luminous Demon Ding Zang was pleased. “This fellow is courting death. He’s competing his swimming ability with Duke Xian. Throughout the Demonic Palace, other than His Excellency the Sky Dragon, Duke Xian’s ability to fight battles under water is one of the strongest, and is incomparable to others. This fellow is

screwed!”

Seeing all the massive splashes in the pool, with ripples of blood continuously floating upwards, Xing Meng really wanted to go down to lend a hand to Duke Xian.

But he knew that he was not good at fighting in water. If he went down, he would definitely be beaten up.

Raising his head again, he looked at Phoenix Fairy who was still looking calm and confident and his heart settled.

With this malicious woman around, even if this fellow knew how to fly, he would still not be able to escape her hands...

After a few minutes, the terrifying stuffy sounds emanating from the bottom of the water started to cease. Xing Meng and Ding Zang saw Duke Xian’s tortoise figure slowly float up, and started to cry out in pleasure.

“Duke Xian is definitely worthy of being first in underwater battle. Sure enough, he is awesome!” The Giant Xing Meng was unable to contain his joy as he rushed to the side of the pool to welcome Duke Xian’s return. To be honest, he was already a little afraid of Yue Yang’s undying spirit that was like a cockroach. He had never seen a guy so strange and crazy as he was. It would be nothing much if it was three versus five people, but he even sent his two comrades away and fought the five of them alone.

Recalling his terrifying actions of forcefully snapping off Gu Zhui's head even under everybody's attacks to save him, Xing Meng was a little displeased.

He hated those whose battle spirit and determination was stronger than his!

Duke Xian's body emerged onto the surface with a splash. Xing Meng extended his hand and pulled Duke Xian onto the shore. He was about to say a few words of boot-licking flattery when he suddenly screamed in terror. Ding Zang felt his heart shiver, and he worriedly asked. "What happened?"

"Duke Xian doesn't have a head..." Xing Meng's face was full of terror.

"Who says he doesn't? It's here!" Yue Yang slowly floated out of the water, raising the green human head in his hands high up into the air, throwing Duke Xian's human head out, and then crawled onto the shore with a little difficulty. "I spent so much effort in fishing it up, don't say that it isn't there! Oh right, I don't have much strength left, which one of you wishes to die first?"

"....." On hearing this, Ding Zang and Xing Meng were so scared that they swallowed a mouthful of saliva in terror. Their nervous throats were extremely bitter. Only now did they realize why the Ten Major Sky Demons would dispatch four Earth Demons and five Human Demons. Even then, they still think there were not enough safeguards, and added a Minor Sky Demon at the last minute.

As it turned out, this fellow was really abnormal!

Chapter 177 – Major Sky Demon? Sky Law?

Just by looking at the superficial injuries he had, this guy would have died long ago even if he had ten lives.

But against all expectations, he was still alive.

The most frightening thing was his expression. There was a kind of cold killing intent like the edge of a knife. It was sharp like the Grim Reaper's scythe or the claws of a Demon King that could be used to gouge people's hearts out.

The giant Xing Meng and the Luminous Demon did not know what best to do. Should they rush forward together to kill him off? Or should they wait for the Minor Sky Demon Phoenix Fairy Beauty to move instead? Under everyone's watch, Gu Zhui's head had been snapped by this guy. The scene spoke for itself; Duke Xian, that thousand year old turtle had eventually died underwater. How did he die? How was his head claimed by this guy? Nobody knew... This guy emitted a sense of mystery from head to toe. Nobody could see through him at all!

Out of all of them, the one who had this kind of feeling the most was the Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

She had been calmly observing the opponents. She realised that this guy had been concealing his true strength all this while.

He had almost never thought of failure. He had never marked Duke Xian, Gu Zhui, Xing Meng nor Ding Zang as his main enemy.

She could see that the target that he feared and wanted to hunt down the most was herself...

Would he rather be hurt than reveal his true finishing moves?

When an extremely tragic and miserable howl had come out from outside the cave, the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's expression changed slightly.

“What’s going on?” Ding Zang and Xing Meng’s expressions both changed. They knew clearly that this did not sound like Princess Qian Qian’s nor Luo Hua City Mistress’ voice. Conversely, it seemed to be from one of their companions.

Could it be that they had even failed when fighting 4 on 2? Those four beasts were meant to restrain Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress...

How? How was this possible?

With a light sigh, the alluring and gorgeous Phoenix Fairy Beauty put her own finger to her lips, then softly sighed. “The hunting plan has failed. I agree to give up on the mission. All of you, go!” Her words were like a bolt from the blue. It caused both Ding Zang and Xing Meng to stand there stupefied. The plan had failed? Giving up on the mission? She hadn’t even moved... Giving up on the mission now...

“Ah... “

Another tragic howl came out from the cave. It was even clearer than the previous sound.

Not only that, this sound was completely different from the previous sound.

This was another companion.

Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress who were outside were fighting 2 against 4. But, not only were they able to win, they were also able to kill those Human Demons whose beasts were their beasts' natural enemies so quickly?

Ding Zang and Xing Meng both felt that what happened today was incomparably weird. There were hundreds of questions unanswered and mysteries everywhere.

Suddenly, they heard the mouth of the cave quietened down and it was deathly still again. It was almost as if nobody was fighting above. The Luminous Demon Ding Zang and Xing Meng looked at each other. They were both guessing that Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress had taken down their four companions along with them.

A breeze of cold air soundlessly blew in.

The Luminous Demon Ding Zang and the Giant Xing Meng could not help but shiver in the cold.

Their bodies jolted as fear crept into their faces...What level of ranker did it take to have this kind of chilling ability that could so soundlessly make them shiver from the cold? What kind of beast did it take to have such power? Ding Zang and Xing Meng found out that their surroundings were turning into frost. Even the pool nearby had started to freeze up, amassing a thick layer of ice.

Only when the air they exhaled had turned into fog did the two people realise that within a minute, the entire cavern had been frozen into an ice cavern.

This had turned into a world of ice.

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty started to smile. She giggled, her giant breasts swaying around wildly. “So you had concealed such an expert after all. No wonder you were so calm!”

“It’s [egg-calm](#)!” Yue Yang was even more righteous.

“What?” The Phoenix Fairy Beauty was confused by Yue Yang’s strange play of words.

“You still haven’t died?” From a hole above, Princess Qian Qian’s voice resounded. It was tinged with incomparable amounts of anger. “It looks like you should die and leave your mouth behind. You still want to dally with women?”

“Why would I dally with women? Tonight, the bridal room is no

problem too.” Hearing Princess Qian Qian’s voice, Yue Yang fell onto the ground and stretched out, as if he had fainted over. Xing Meng was extremely happy. He flew over with his fists raised, ready to beat Yue Yang into a pulp. As for Princess Qian Qian, Xing Meng felt that Ding Zang’s Hellfire could completely restrain that almost purely strengthening-type warrior. It would be fine to leave her to him.

(Seph: 洞房 is Chinese for bridal room. XXX happens there. It can also be literally read as a cave room.)

Just when the Giant Xing Meng was about to move, suddenly, two black shadows fell from above.

With a “Pa” sound, they fell onto the rocks, breaking the rocks into innumerable pieces.

One of the spherical fragments rolled towards the feet of Xing Meng. When Xing Meng looked at it, he realised that this was the head of one of his companions who was frozen over, with his eyes open although he was dead. Those eyes that resembled a dead fish continued to stare at himself, just like Gu Zhui and Elder Xian. It was really disgusting and horrifying.

The Luminous Demon Ding Zang was also bewilderedly looking at one of the fragments.

He recognised it as the shattered upper body of one of their other companions. Although it had been shattered beyond recognition, but he still barely identify that it was one of their companions. Now, Ding Zang could confirm that the four companions they had

outside had all died in battle. At the very least, two of them had died after being frozen. There were not just attacking three people, they were attacking four. There was still another mysterious expert who was adept at freezing skills. It was something that they had not anticipated before they set out. This expert's ability at hiding his/her presence was incredibly good. None of them, even Phoenix Fairy Beauty, had realised that this person had been hiding themselves outside...

Now, he finally understood why this guy had hurriedly sent Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Princess out of the cave.

That was to attract the attention of the four enemies lying hiding outside. He had long known that there were people lying in ambush outside. He had attracted their attention instead, allowing the concealed expert to launch a surprise attack on the four enemies, coordinating together with Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress to hunt the enemies down.

His four companions outside had died in a single battle, completely wiped out.

It was not that they were lacking in strength. It was just that they had been tricked by this guy and that mysterious expert hiding outside...

Princess Qian Qian hugged Luo Hua City Mistress and came in again from the Heaven's Line. Her silver armour had been broken to the point where it seemed difficult for it to cover her body. Her body was full of fresh blood, and she had as many wounds as Yue Yang did. Her thigh and shoulders had multiple deep, slash

wounds. Ding Zang recognised the wounds as the Hundred Soldiers Human Demon's weapon. He was chosen specifically to counter Luo Hua City Mistress, but he had been taken out by Princess Qian Qian instead. As for the other beast meant to counter Princess Qian Qian in close combat, the Thousand Feather Human Demon, his secret silver arrow had pierced Luo Hua City Mistress' chest instead. Before the "Thousand Feather Human Demon" died, it howled out tragically as its soul was annihilated. It seemed like it had been killed at the risk of Luo Hua City Mistress' life with her using [Aurora Light].

As for the other two beasts, the "Wolf Soul Human Demon" and "Fiend Human Demon", they had instead been frozen alive and turned into ice sculptures by the mysterious expert...

They were unable to use the Fiend Human Demon's telekinesis to interfere with Luo Hua City Mistress' gathering of spiritual qi to release her [Aurora Light], nor were they able to use the Wolf Soul to surround Princess Qian Qian. Although their abilities could restrain Princess Qian Qian and Luo HUa City Mistress, but against the mysterious expert who was proficient at using ice-related abilities, they had met with a tragic end!

Ding Zang's mind flashed quickly as he thought of various possibilities.

He could almost imagine how Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress had fought during the battle...

Suddenly, Ding Zang saw the Phoenix Fairy Beauty gestured with her hands.

This was the gesture that only Demonic Palace rankers who had summoning grimoires knew. It was the “Sky Demon Escape”.

Without a summoning grimoire, no matter how strong a person was, the Demonic Palace would not cultivate that person to the very last step. This was because no matter how strong that person was or how much potential they had, they would never have a greater value when cultivating as compared to people who had summoning grimoires. If a person who held a grimoire could not win against the enemy, the Demonic Palace’s Ten Major Sky Demons had permitted them to retreat and conserve their strength.

Luminous Demon Ding Zang knew that although he was not the strongest in their party, he was definitely the most important person in the party. This was because he was the only one who possessed a summoning grimoire.

The Sky Demon Escape was an order to quickly leave the current location. This was the new mission that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty had gave Ding Zang secretly.

However, in giant Xiang Meng’s perspective, this gesture turned into a completely different meaning. He thought that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty had decided to move against Yue Yang herself...

“Let’s go!” Ding Zang knew that the mysterious expert was still waiting for him outside. It was impossible to escape with his own strength and he had to find a scapegoat. As expected, the giant

Xing Meng immediately soared into the sky, handing the battlefield over to the Phoenix Fairy Beauty. He went ahead of Ding Zang and flew towards the Heaven's Line Cave entrance. Xing Meng was not a fool. He felt that judging by the habits of the opponent, no matter if it was that crafty guy or Princess Qian Qian, they would be more willing to intercept Ding Zang. This was because it was more worth it to kill Ding Zang. With himself as a strengthening-type warrior, his power and defense were extremely strong. That guy and Princess Qian Qian who were fools would not take the initiative to intercept himself.

“What... a fool.” Ding Zang ridiculed him under his breath.

Ding Zang never felt that Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian would pursue and attack him. Even if the two could still fight, they would conserve in order to fight against the Phoenix Fairy Beauty later on.

Xing Meng and Ding Zang soared towards the Heaven's Line.

Suddenly, an icy storm burst at the cave entrance.

Almost at the same time, Ding Zang summoned his grimoire and raised his shield. He was completely unharmed by the icy storm. However, Xing Meng completely became a lump of ice and fell onto the ground loudly. A shadow that was dressed up like a thief looked at Ding Zang with eyes as cold as ice and gave up on attacking him. The storm rushed towards Xing Meng who had been frozen into a block of ice. If he did not have a summoning grimoire, Ding Zang felt that he would have definitely died. Meeting an enemy whose element restrained his... The icy storm

that the opponent employed with the terrifying speed, impeccable timing and terrifying battle sense was practically an existence that was his natural nemesis.

If he did not own a summoning grimoire, he believed that the opponent would definitely attack him first.

Ding Zang wiped the cold sweat off of his face. Looking down, he found out that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty was giving the gesture to leave. He was certain inside and gulped. He quickly soared out of the cave hole and flew madly towards a higher cliff. Then, with another jump, he soared towards the highest cliff... He summoned a wind winged beast, and successfully merged with it. Giant wings grew from his back. Then, facing downwind, he glided downwards. Only now did he realise that he really picked his own life back.

Gliding down, Ding Zang abruptly discovered a black dog completely covered in wounds nursing a small white fox. Its claws dug deeply into the rocks, slowly climbing up the cliff with great difficulty.

Ding Zang was extremely shocked.

A bad premonition flashed across his mind... Could it be that the “Hundred Beast Human Demon” could not even win against a Two-headed Demon Wolf and a Three-tailed Snow Fox that he was hunting? Then, that guy who could barge into the top 100 of the Demonic Palace was actually defeated by a wolf and a fox?

This, what kind of beasts were these?

So scary!

Ding Zang could not help but shiver. After a while, he landed onto a small platform and immediately kept his wings. Then, he took out a teleportation scroll and opened it, escaping from the current location.

He did not dare to stay in this place for a moment longer!

Ding Zang believed that if he stayed for a moment longer, his life would be in danger... Not only was that guy extremely overpowered himself, even his beasts were incomparably overpowered!

Within the cave, Princess Qian Qian placed the fainted Luo Hua City Mistress at Yue Yang's side. She smiled at Yue Yang somewhat apologetically, saying, "This arrow was supposed to be shot at me and not Luo Hua City Mistress. She insisted on taking this arrow in my stead. Thankfully, it didn't pierce her heart. Otherwise, her life would be over now. You guys just rest a while now. Wait until I cut that Phoenix Fairy into pieces, then I'll treat the both of you. Summon your grimoire first!"

"Without him, we can't win. Get him to come here now!" The mysterious beauty was unhurt on the surface, but the black cloth covering her face was completely stained with fresh blood. It was apparent that her internal injuries were extremely serious.

“Didn’t I say that girls can’t do anything much without guys...” Yue Yang stood up, staggering a little. He took out that “Golden Bell” that he was rewarded with from the Aries Temple and gave it to Princess Qian Qian. “If we don’t treat our injuries now, our blood will run dry. Do you know how to use this thing?”

“Stupid, you can’t use it. This needs a suitable person’s blood to unseal!” Princess Qian Qian knew from first glance that this was a treasure that was sealed with a curse. Without unsealing it, it was impossible to be used.

“Too bad, this is a treasure that can heal... Eh?” The mysterious beauty suddenly flew towards them. When she took it from Princess Qian Qian’s hand, a white light slowly emanated from within the golden bell. As if it had a life of its own, the light filled the area. Following that, an extremely powerful burst of white light radiated outwards, illuminating the entire cave.

“What’s going on?” Princess Qian Qian was surprised. There was no reaction when she took it. How come there was a reaction when the mysterious beauty took it.

“I don’t know either!” The mysterious beauty only felt that the powerful white light soaked into her body. The serious injuries she had sustained earlier quickly became better.

“...” Looking at the mysterious beauty, the Phoenix Fairy was stunned at first. Soon after, when she saw the treasure, she looked like she was in ecstasy, but she also looked regretful. Her expression was extremely complicated.

Princess Qian Qian's and Yue Yang's injuries were also healed.

Bathed in the white light, the injuries on both of them rapidly healed at a speed where the eyes could see. Within a single minute, aside from the injury dealt by the arrow that had rendered Luo Hua City Mistress to still be unconscious, Yue Yang's, Princess Qian Qian's and the mysterious beauty's injuries had mostly healed. With a few light coughs, wisps of blood were coughed out from the mysterious beauty's lungs. Princess Qian Qian bit off the broken blades on her shoulders and thighs, allowing the injuries to quickly heal under the white light.

Originally, Yue Yang wanted to pull the secret silver arrow out, but the mysterious beauty reached her hands out and stopped his reckless actions.

Luo Hua City Mistress' injuries were too heavy. The white light was also about to fade, if the wound wasn't healed in time...

The white light from the golden bell slowly disappeared, turning into a grey bell.

Yue Yang did not have the time to look at it. He put it inside the Lich Ring for now.

"The three of us will take turns to attack. You'll be the main attacker, I'll support you. Qian Qian, protect Luo Hua first. Join the fight only when we're in danger. Anyway, your beasts are strengthening-type beasts. Summon your grimoire first and rest

for a while!” The mysterious beauty gave the role of main attacker to Yue Yang.

“She’s a Minor Sky Demon, and her hands are coated with poison. She could kill me in an instant. You’re still making me the main attacker?” Yue Yang did not seem to be too pleased with the arrangement of this mission.

“I doubt that she is a Minor Sky Demon. There’s a possibility that she was actually a Sky Demon that is disguising herself to take down her prey...” “The mysterious beauty was even more daring at doubting stuff than Yue Yang.

“Why don’t you suspect that I’m one of the three Major Sky Demons, the ‘Sky Law’ of Falling Cangue Mountain instead?” The Phoenix Fairy Beauty smiled.

Her words were like a bolt from the blue.

It exploded in Yue Yang’s, Princess Qian Qian’s and the mysterious beauty’s eardrums, causing the three of them to be stunned.

Chapter 178 – Phoenix Fairy Beauty

Sky Law?

Sky Law was one of the strongest Rankers in the Demonic Palace of the Falling Cangue Mountain. Together with Sky Pearl and Sky Wrath, she was one of the Three Major Sky Demons!

It was said that Sky Law was a woman, who ranked second amongst the Ten Major Sky Demons. Her abilities was only second to the strongest ranker of the Demonic Palace, Sky Pearl. Sky Law was an existence that was even stronger than Heavenly Imperial Guardians. A Level 6 [Elder] would probably end up being instantly killed if they accidentally bumped into her. Right now, Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian and the others were injured all over and were completely exhausted. How would they be able to defend against such a strong Major Sky Demon?

Yue Yang felt his heart sink. From the beginning, he had already felt that something wasn't right.

The old cunning fox was unable to hide his true strength from him, but this Minor Sky Demon Phoenix Fairy Beauty could. However, logically speaking, with her rank, she shouldn't be any stronger than the old cunning fox...

Unless she really was Sky Law!

The mysterious beauty's first reaction was to shake her head wildly, "Impossible, you can't be Sky Law! Every single Peak

Ranker in the world has already agreed to ban killing promising younger generations from each other's sides. If you really are Sky Law and you killed us, then all the Heavenly Imperial Guardians from the three countries and the strong rankers from the Four Great Sects would immediately charge towards your Falling Cangue Mountain and completely annihilate the Demonic Palace... If you really are Sky Law, you wouldn't join in the fight to kill us. We are merely a younger generation. You ought to be fighting against the strong warriors from the Demon Abyss in Tong Tian Tower's Seventh or Eighth Floor. Why would you be here to kill us! Phoenix Fairy may be a fake name, but I daresay you are definitely not Sky Law!"

The enchanting and alluring Phoenix Fairy Beauty giggled, "Don't be nervous, even if I'm not Sky Law, I am still a Minor Sky Demon, Phoenix Fairy. You all are still not my opponents."

After hearing this, Princess Qian Qian's expressions turned a little better.

Heavens!

If she really was one of the Three Major Sky Demons, "Sky Law", then they wouldn't even need to fight this battle.

At this time, only Yue Yang still kept the doubt that he felt from the bottom of his heart.

"You, I'd like to ask you a question. Why don't you summon your beast? Are you afraid that I would see through your trump card?"

Phoenix Fairy Beauty sent a smile to Yue Yang, her voice gentle and sweet as if she was talking to a lover. However, the sweeter her smile was, the swifter the beads of cold sweat formed on Yue Yang's head appeared.

Through all of the battles that Yue Yang had faced, he would rather be injured than summon his beasts.

This was because there was a kind of unexplained fear in his heart. He feared that this Phoenix Fairy Beauty would see through his secrets. No matter if it was the matter about how the Bloody Queen that had fused with his Phantom Shadow, the Barbarian Cow Shadow's reconstructions, or the little lamia Xiao Wen Li's existence, they were all his secrets. If anyone ever found out about it, even if he win the battle this time, he would draw an infinite number of enemies.

He had three Guardian Beasts, whose lives were tied to him and abilities shared with him. This was something that others could only hope for in their dreams.

As long as the Phoenix Fairy Beauty announce this to the public, or reported it to the Demonic Palace, the consequences would be inconceivable.

Yue Yang didn't have the confidence to kill this Phoenix Fairy Beauty Ranker who at least had the strength of a Minor Sky Demon. If he wanted to defeat her, he had to use that weakness. If she was really Sky Law, then that weakness must be something that she had purposely revealed to lure her enemies into her trap. If that was really the case, he would definitely meet a really

unfortunate end.

After killing Gu Zhui, Yue Yang had tried to observe Phoenix Fairy Beauty in secret. He discovered that she was completely indifferent, looking as if Yue Yang had only stomped on a little ant in her house. When Yue Yang hid inside the water and shot his Innate Invisible Sword Qi that pierced through the back of Duke Xian's head, killing him, the person with the strongest ability amongst the team, the Phoenix Fairy Beauty was still calm and unperturbed. Only when Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the mysterious beauty killed the other four enemies outside did her expression changed a little.

It did not matter if she was truly Sky Law, this woman was definitely not an easy opponent to handle.

Yue Yang hoped that her disguise was merely a beast's ability, not her body's own ability to control Qi... Yue Yang wouldn't summon Xiao Wen Li even if he was beaten to death. Xiao Wen Li was his secret weapon, no matter what, he shouldn't let such a strong opponent knew about it. If he couldn't beat her, Yue Yang thought that this Phoenix Fairy Beauty would take him, Princess Qian Qian and the others captive to the Demonic Palace in the Falling Cangue Mountain. At the most, he could just wait for the three kingdom's Heavenly Imperial Guardians, Grandma Wu Teng and the old cunning fox to save them.

He could only show his trump card two two kinds of people. First was someone who would never betray him and would help him to keep this secret, and the second was someone who would die.

Even if it was his family that would never betray himself, he wouldn't let them know about this secret easily, because this knowledge served no advantage to them at all.

"I heard that your strength would be able to increase multiple folds when you are angry, even ten times stronger... Come then, attack me with your strongest attack!" The alluring Phoenix Fairy Beauty reached her slim, snow-white hands out to Yue Yang, her fingers that was dyed in Phoenix Fairy Juice pointing towards Yue Yang who was located far away. She then clamped all her five fingers into a fist, and Yue Yang's whole body suddenly flew towards her.

Tumbling in mid-air, Yue Yang turned around and took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade, igniting its purple flames.

A move that had the ability to split the whole heaven and earth slashed down...

However, he was shocked to see an extremely frightening scene.

The [Spherical Beheader] move that he slashed down with all of his strength was actually stopped by the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's single finger.

"Good boy, don't hold back. You can use more strength, I can take some beating." The Phoenix Fairy Beauty revealed a warm smile but her actions didn't show any mercy. With a twist, she smashed Yue Yang's whole body onto a rock. Thundering rumbles ensued as the whole cave shook from the impact. Yue Yang felt his

vision turned black and his head buzzed. His spine and ribs ached incomparably, as if he had received a shock that shook all the bones in his body.

The wide rocks underneath Yue Yang's body split open like a spider web upon impact with his body, forming cracks all over the ground that trailed all the way to Princess Qian Qian's legs, who was still frozen in shock.

The frozen ice surface of the pool also shattered from the impact.

Luo Hua City Mistress' body, who was lying on the ground, actually jolted up from the impact even in her unconsciousness. The mysterious beauty hurriedly held her body down.

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty stooped down, exposing her nosebleed-inducing, gigantic breasts exclusively for Yue Yang's view as she asked with a smile, "Is it very painful? Are you a little angry now? Young people don't have to be rational all the time, it's not right for you to act so rationally every time. You ought to get angry, be reckless and hot-headed like a mad bull. That's how youngsters should act!"

"I..." Yue Yang was so angry that he was about to start cursing.

However, before he could even start cursing, the Phoenix Fairy Beauty had already grabbed him with one move and threw him towards the mountain walls, sending him flying off, shooting like a meteor onto the mountain wall.

Yue Yang rebounded from the mountain walls with his legs, quickly unleashing a counter-attack and used all of his strength to ignite the purple flames on his Hui Jin Magic Blade, infusing his newly found fire ability into his Twin Fish Spherical Beheader move, slashing towards Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

But Phoenix Fairy Beauty only reached her hands out and grabbed onto Yue Yang's wrist.

Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade hung suspended less than three centimeters away from her eyebrows, unable to advance any further.

At this time, Phoenix Fairy Beauty raised her incomparably enchanting face and smiled, "Why don't you try using that [Binding Chains] ability of yours? Is that your Inherent Skill? But why do I keep feeling that your eyes are always glinting with some kind of ability, making me feel uneasy?"

"I'm going to kill you!" Yue Yang was furious. He felt that if he didn't kill this Phoenix Fairy Beauty now, she would dig all of his secrets out.

He unleashed Xiao Wen Li's [Binding Chains] Inherent Skill. Countless of golden-coloured Sword Qi condensed together to form Innate [Supreme Sword], shooting with a loud exploding sound straight towards the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's heart. Such an attack could even pierce through Demon King Ha Xin's palm. This Phoenix Fairy Beauty was only a Minor Sky Demon, so she would definitely not be able to defend against it. But when Yue Yang's [Supreme Sword] shot out, he was shocked to discover that his

[Binding Chains] Inherent Skill had already been dispelled. It was not one second yet... Demon King Ha Xin could also dispel it before one second, but at that time, Xiao Wen Li's [Binding Chains] Inherent Skill had not levelled up yet. It had already levelled up now, yet it couldn't stop the Phoenix Fairy Beauty for one whole second?

She, she was definitely not a Minor Sky Demon!

Heavens!

She was really Sky Law...

Yue Yang felt numb all over his body, absolutely horrified.

He braced himself and risked it all to pierce his [Supreme Sword] straight through Phoenix Fairy Beauty's chest.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty let out a surprised cry at first, but immediately revealed a satisfied smile, as if she had truly confirmed something. Her alluring body flashed and she had suddenly entered into Yue Yang's embrace, easily dodging his [Supreme Sword]. She whispered in Yue Yang's ears, "Sweetheart, you are so ruthless... You could even bear to injure a beautiful babe like me..."

"Just die!" Yue Yang pressed her down with both of his elbow, sending blows to both of Phoenix Fairy Beauty's temples. He also released his Innate Sword Qi out from his elbows.

“Good boy, I’ll reward you with a kiss!” Phoenix Fairy beauty pecked Yue Yang’s lips with a fleeting kiss, before floating up a little and shoved her gigantic breasts onto Yue Yang’s face. If she was an ordinary girl, Yue Yang would only feel a little suffocated at the most. However, the Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s breasts were extremely bouncy. They could actually send Yue Yang shooting off like a meteor into the ice surface of the pool, smashing into it with a splash.

Yue Yang was even faster than light as he shot out from within the pool.

Charging towards Princess Qian Qian, he instantly summoned his Silver Grimoire... He turned towards Princess Qian Qian and shouted towards the mysterious beauty who was holding Luo Hua City Mistress, “You guys, quickly run away now. Don’t become ugly girls in your next lives, otherwise I would pretend not to recognise you! We have completely lost, this damnable whore is really Sky Law. I can’t defeat her, let alone you girls... Go now, use your [Light Wind Teleportation] and take them away. I only have my last bit of strength left...”

“Forget it. If she is really Sky Law, we will not be able to escape.” Princess Qian Qian took out her great sword, “Who would know what happen in our next lives? Maybe I would become a guy!”

“Dammit, if you become a guy, do I have to become gay?” Yue Yang sweated.

“You can just become a girl then, no?” Princess Qian Qian’s imagination was even wider than Yue Yang’s.

“Since this is the case, here, hold Luo Hua. I can’t take her with me, I can only go by myself!” The mysterious beauty passed Luo Hua City Mistress to Yue Yang.

“Hey, are you really going?” Princess Qian Qian was stunned.

“See you in our next lives...” The mysterious beauty flew towards the Phoenix Fairy Beauty. In mid-air, she emitted thunder in her right hand and ice in her left, creating a world-shaking ice storm as she stormed towards the Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Yue Yang and the others could only hear her voice shouting, “I can only freeze myself with her for 10 seconds, you guys escape now!”

Loud rumbling ensued as the whole space suddenly froze to ice.

The mysterious beauty had indeed trapped herself with the enemy, frozen in ice.

Princess Qian Qian’s eyes turned red as she raised her great sword, preparing to charge forward and throw away her life. However she was held back tightly by Yue Yang.

The ice didn’t manage to last for ten seconds. It only lasted for three seconds.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty floated out from the ice, holding an

unconscious mysterious beauty in her hands. She smiled towards Yue Yang and said, “Should I say you are foolish or clever? Your comrade has sacrificed herself to create an opportunity for you to escape, but you don’t even try and gave up on it immediately... Little boy, you are too calm. Are you angry now? Will you be angry if I do this?”

Her fingers that was dyed in Phoenix Fairy Juice danced lightly before embedding themselves into the mysterious beauty’s chest...

Seeing this, Princess Qian Qian went berserk.

She brandished her great sword with all of her strength, slashing towards Phoenix Fairy Beauty with a force of more than a thousand tonnes.

But Phoenix Fairy Beauty only reached out her slim palm and softly bumped at Princess Qian Qian’s chest. Princess Qian Qian immediately shot out like a meteor towards the opposite mountain wall. Upon impact, her armor shattered into pieces as blood burst out from her body.

“Get angry, boy. Let me see your true strength. Do you hate me? Come and kill me if you hate me!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty floated towards Yue Yang’s protective shield. Her hand that was stained with the mysterious beauty’s blood pierced through his shield and slowly inched closer. Under Yue Yang’s watch, she pulled the Secret Silver Arrow that was stuck on Luo Hua City Mistress’ chest out, then aimed it at Luo Hua City Mistress’ face, “Are you angry yet? I’m gonna kill one of your lover now. Look at her beautiful, exquisite little face... I’m going to turn her into a monster and

shatter all of her brain matter. Do you want to watch her die in front of you? Get angry and stop me! Otherwise, I will kill all the people close to you...”

“You are going to kill all the people close to me?” Yue Yang’s mind was completely blank. When he heard her words, the beautiful woman’s face, Yue Bing and the little girl flashed across his mind. Then there were also Xiao Wen Li, Yi Nan, Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian and the mysterious beauty...

“That’s right, do you want to see me killing all the people that are close to you? I will wring all of their heads off, just like how you wring Gu Zhui’s head off alive just now!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s face was filled with a satisfied smile, her warm and gentle voice soft as a light breeze but it also held a tinge of magical quality that seemed to entice Yue Yang, “Get angry, boy. Don’t you hate me in your heart? Charge forward and try to kill me then, push me down on the ground, bite me off with your teeth. Don’t you want to dig my heart out?”

“Woahhhhhhhh!!!!”

Yue Yang was completely berserk, his berserk status exploded his strength by ten, hundred times over.

He felt something shatter in his mind, as if something had broken. It was as if a meteor had struck on a planet and shatter that planet into pieces. His whole mental state exploded and his rationale collapsed. There was only one thought in his mind right now, and that was to kill Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Kill!

He must kill this woman in front of him. No matter what, he must kill her.

Yue Yang's consciousness had completely disappeared. His eyes turned red as a dark golden Rune suddenly appeared on his forehead. After that, small, countless runes started to appear all over his body, becoming a mysterious Runic Circle. They moved around the surface of his body as if they were alive. Yue Yang, who had gone insane, suddenly spurted a mouthful of blood, sprinkling it all over his hands. The weird thing was that the blood had immediately turned into blazing flame, raging continuously...

"Ancient Rune and Nirvana's Flame?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty revealed her terrified expression for the first time, "This time I really played too far... Luckily this brat still didn't know how to use his strength yet..."

"Kill you!" Yue Yang raised the raging [Nirvana's Flame] on his hands, preparing to smash it onto Phoenix Fairy Beauty's head.

"Not good... San-er, I'm Fourth Mother! Yes, I'm your Fourth Mother. I'm your mother, what are you trying to do? Shuang-er is still small, can't you yield to her a little bit? If she is mischievous, I can just spank her butt for you. Do you really want to kill Shuang-er? Take your hands down now, good boy. If you are tired, sleep for a while. Everything will return to normal when you wake up again. Be a good boy and sleep!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty held Yue

Yang's hands lightly, and gently pulled it down. She tried to hypnotize Yue Yang with a mother-like gentle tone. There would be Ancient Runes that appear in front of her at times, which then entered into Yue Yang's red eyes.

The red-colour on Yue Yang's eyes slowly dissipated as he returned to normal. In the end, his eyes slowly closed as Yue Yang fell into Phoenix Fairy's embrace.

The [Nirvana's Flame] on his hands had also disappeared slowly.

The Runes on his body had completely vanished...

Phoenix Fairy Beauty laid Yue Yang down on the ground and looked at her hands that had been scorched black. Fear filled her face again, "This boy's [Nirvana's Flame] has actually burnt my body to this extent. when he is only an Innate Level 1. How could I allow him to level up even further?"

She raised her hand. She could easily kill Yue Yang, who was still unconscious.

Just as her hand reached Yue Yang's forehead, she suddenly stopped.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty slowly took her hand back, blowing lightly on her scorched hands instead. That scorched black skin quickly disappeared, replaced with a snow-white, tender and soft layer of skin that quickly healed. Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked at Yue Yang

with a complicated gaze, as if trying to find an excuse for herself: “Forget it, this was just a brat who had only trained for a few dozen years. He could only reach Innate Level 1 after getting berserk. At normal times, he would probably only be at Level 6 [Junior Elder] level. Why would I be afraid of this kind of opponent? I’ll kill him when I have already played with him enough! Such a handsome young boy, it’s kind of a pity if I kill him too early...”

Looking at the sleeping Yue Yang, Phoenix Fairy Beauty suddenly stooped her body and strangely kissed Yue Yang’s lips, “I can’t bear to kill you, boy. This is the first time I am softhearted towards anyone, so you shall relinquish your first kiss to me! Ha, it’s a pity that these girls didn’t know about it. Otherwise, they would probably be jealous of me to death! Lalala, I’m indeed a bad person, I’m a sinful woman!”

“Eh?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was about to do something more exciting to Yue Yang’s body but her expression suddenly changed.

She waved her hands as her body suddenly teleported out to the cave entrance of the Heaven’s Line Cave.

On the high cliff at the peak of the cave, there was a woman whose back was facing towards her. She wore a long, snow-white, skin-tight tunic made of dragon leather. Her bare, smooth and delicate shoulders was exposed and a Six-winged Fairy as big as a person’s palm was flying round her. Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s expression immediately changed when she saw her. There was a little fear, rebellious and indignant expression on her face, and finally, she called out to her with a low voice, “Older Sister...”

The mysterious woman with her exposed shoulder harrumphed, “If I ever saw you in Soaring Dragon Continent again in the future, I swear I’ll kill you, even if you are my younger sister!”

“That’s what I was actually baffled about. Why was there no one taking care of this boy? So it turns out you are his Introducer... Annoying, you are always like this! You are always stealing the best things away from me since young; beasts, treasures, and now, you are even booking the best person ahead!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty suddenly screeched, blowing over her top.

“Wrong, I gave you the beasts that suits you the most and also gave you the best treasures. You are the one who thought that I didn’t give you enough and is always unsatisfied with me. That’s the reason why you feel that the world is unfair towards you. Let me say one last time, I booked him ahead because I have the ability to cultivate him. He is someone who has the power to surpass me, to surpass every single warrior in the Soaring Dragon Continent; he might even surpass our ancestors. He has an endless potential that you would never be able to see through completely. If you and your organization still have ideas about him, your Demonic Palace can just disappear. I will only say this once. Next time, I will kill you immediately!”

The mysterious woman with exposed shoulders waved her hands and immediately tore a rift in space, vanishing into the air.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was driven mad as she stomped her feet, “I hate you the most! Why are all the best things always yours? This time, I will definitely not succumb to you. If you have the ability to cultivate him, don’t I have it too? You were not even looking at me

when you talked to me, can you still be called my older sister? Who would want such an older sister, annoying!”

A light breeze blew. Phoenix Fairy Beauty thought that her older sister had re-appeared, she jumped in fright and quickly drew a magical Runic Circle with her hands. Immediately, a tear appeared in space and she hurriedly entered it, leaving the place.

That mysterious woman with exposed shoulder didn't re-appear.

A faint, almost indiscernible sigh could be heard from the empty space that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty had teleported away from.

Chapter 179 – Beauty Beautiful As Ever

Within the cave, the ice and snow started to slowly melt.

The Giant Xing Meng suddenly roared, and the ice on his body exploded. Frozen, he collapsed on the ground and could only recover after a long while. When he stood up, he discovered that both Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress had fallen on the ground inside the cave, unconscious. Elated, he shouted, “In the end, this mission would still be completed by me, Xing Meng! Haha! Gu Zhui and Duke Xian have already died in battle, and Ding Zang is just a cowardly weakling, they are not fit to share the fruits of victory with me!”

He leaped in front of Yue Yang and raised his Wolf Teeth Gauntlet, preparing to send a killing blow downwards at him.

Suddenly, he sensed that there seemed to be somebody behind him and was shocked.

Turning his head, he discovered a fluffy and adorable little loli lamia that was blinking her huge eyes while looking at him. She looked extremely adorable, but the power with which she moved scared Xing Meng stiff.

That fluffy and adorable Little Loli was holding two small and exquisite icicle blades in her hands.

With just a light slash, Xing Meng realised that his right leg had been chopped off silently and the wound had been completely

frozen in a split second.

“Argh!” Xing Meng was shocked. His body definitely couldn’t be considered weak at all. Then how could one slash be sharp enough to remove his leg? How was this even possible? Even the Giant Mountain Splitting Axe could not hurt his skin... Wait, those must be Divine Army Weapons!

Xing Meng was so frightened that he fled for his life without looking back.

Hopping frantically with one leg, he heaved his body up with his arms as he climbed the rocks, escaping from the cave entrance of the Heaven’s Line Cave in an undignified manner, being extremely afraid that the little loli lamia would chase him down.

However, the little loli lamia did not give chase. She merely took out a dark golden bow that was larger than her body, her fingers dancing across it as she pulled it. Numerous flashes of lightning gathered, forming a ball of explosive lightning streaks, whizzing towards Xing Meng’s back.

There was a loud rumbling sound.

As if struck by lightning, Xing Meng was blasted away mid-air, as lacerating wounds opened on his back. His entire body was burnt to the colour of charcoal-black.

Disoriented, he fell down from mid-air, rolling on the bumpy

cliff, knocking into snow piles and shattered rocks along the way. When he came back to his senses, he was already enroute to the Cloud Peak Lake under the valley. He was so scared that he immediately tried to grab the rock walls, slightly reducing his falling momentum.....

After much expended effort and difficulty, Xing Meng managed to break his fall. He crawled down from the edge of the cliff.

Looking at his reflection in the lake water, he realized that he had become a roasted pig, the type that was charred, because all his skin had become charcoal.

“I will definitely take my revenge for this!” Xing Meng was furious. He wanted to take revenge immediately after he recovered from his injuries and this time, he would definitely fight his enemies to the death. If he could not take them head on, he could secretly get help from his family and friends. In any case, he would make his move as soon as he had the opportunity to do so. Moreover, there was somebody providing information for him, so he was not afraid that he would not have this opportunity. After being reduced to this one-eyed and one-legged state, Xing Meng was especially fuming with rage.

“Woof!” The sound of a strange dog bark suddenly sounded from behind him.

“Shitty dog, scram!” Xing Meng realized that there was a demon wolf which sported an entire body of injuries. Perhaps it had sniffed the blood on his body, hence there was a hint of bloodlust in its eyes. Xing Meng was furious. Even a Bronze-ranked Level 3

Demon Wolf dared to target him? If not for his painful wounds that made him reluctant to make even small movements, he could have used just a single hand to crush it to death.

“Meow...” The severely wounded Demon Wolf suddenly changed itself to sound like a cat, taking two steps closer at the same time.

“Its also good to eat some dog meat to supplement my recovery!” Xing Meng laughed coldly as he stood up, preparing to finish off this odd severely injured Demon Wolf with one punch.

“Awoooo!”

Suddenly, a dark golden Summoning Rune appeared on the Demon Wolf’s forehead. Strange runes also flashed in its eyes.

Its body rapidly changed shape and started growing large.

A raging black flame started to burn. This was followed by the appearance of a pillar of dark golden light that morphed into the figure of an enormous Giant Golden Wolf. The Giant Golden Wolf then diffused into the body of the Demon Wolf. There was an ear-splitting howl and the Demon Wolf’s black flame exploded into a storm like the breaking out of a flash flood. Even Giant Xing Meng, standing upright on one leg, could not help but be forced to hop back.

Black smoke rose up in spirals and dissipated into the air. The Demon’s Wolf black flame turned into a dark golden Black Hellfire,

which converged into a ball, burning continuously.

What appeared in front of Xing Meng was a Three-headed Demon Wolf that emitted dark golden Black Hellfire around its neck and down its spine. Out of the three heads, the middle one was the largest, the other two was slightly smaller. Each of the Three-headed Demon Wolf's foreheads had a unique Summoning Rune on it.

The aura that it gave out resembled that of a Demon King descending...

"This wolf can actually control its transformation? Isn't this a Gold-ranked Level 5 'Cerberus'? No, that can't be, this should be an Ancient beast, the World Destroying Demon Wolf. Even if there are two more heads, it definitely must be an Ancient Demon Wolf!" Xing Meng felt his head was going to explode. It was better for him to avoid Ancient Demon Wolves, which knew how to conceal their true strength and could control the transformation of its body. Luckily, it was not very high-leveled, otherwise he would have been turned into dog food.

"Woof!"

"Meow!"

"Awoo!"

The three heads all made different sounds, but the six wolfish

eyes expressed a kind of bloodlust that revealed one single word: Food!

Xing Meng hurriedly hopped two steps backwards, trying as much as possible to reduce the sound he made. Gently, he carefully reached into his torso and took a large Demon Crystal. Throwing it on the ground, he said. “Dog-kun, be good and eat the Demon Crystal. Human meat is not nice to eat. If one is not enough, I’ll give you another one!”

However, the terrifying Demon Wolf did not even look at the Demon Crystal. With one paw, it sent the Demon Crystal that was intended as a bribe flying away, and pounced forward to Xing Meng with the speed of lightning.

What ensued were cries of pain and howls of suffering...

At Heaven’s Line Cave.

When Yue Yang woke up, he realized that his entire body that was filled with wounds had healed without his knowledge.

His body contained powerful and abundant amounts of Spiritual Qi.

When he sat up, he realized that there was a kind of uncontrollable strength that shot him up into midair when he was just trying to sit up. After much effort, he only barely managed to control it a little. He remembered that he had gone berserk when

he saw the Phoenix Fairy kill the three girls. Why haven't he died? Furthermore, how did he had a breakthrough instead? Yue Yang realized that his body now possessed a powerful source of strength that was hard to control. It felt like he shake the whole mountain with a punch and create a river with a kick. Landing on the ground, Yue Yang did not manage to control the amount of force he exerted and both of his feet actually smashed into the stone surface, burying him deep into the rocks. The hard and solid rocks felt as soft as tofu... Yue Yang staggered as he almost fell down. As he placed his hand on the rock walls to steady himself, he had not even used an ounce of strength when the rocks were immediately smashed, leaving five deep traces of a hand.

Yue Yang saw the mysterious beauty lying on the ground. Wanting to rush over to save her, his two feet exerted strength and his entire body shot into the rock walls like an artillery shell.

With a loud rumbling sound, he was buried deep within the rock.

This speed was more than ten times faster than before.

Yue Yang was unable to successfully control his newly attained strength. At the same time, he was also extremely puzzled. When did he become this strong?

Was this done by the Phoenix Fairy?

“They’re fine. Come up, I have something to tell you.” A clear voice travelled down from the entrance of the Heaven Line Cave. On hearing this, Yue Yang thought this voice was very familiar,

but he could not remember where he had heard it before.

With one leap, at super speed, there was not enough time for Yue Yang to turn and he smashed into the rocks, coming out of the other side with a thundering rumble.

He jumped out of the smashed rocks in an undignified manner. Only now did he realize that in front of him, there was a mysterious lady who was wearing a snow-white, skin tight and waist-tight dragon leather outfit, showing off her small, delicate and lovely shoulders. Even though he could only see her back, an eureka moment flashed within Yue Yang's heart. He called out in sudden realisation. "It's you!"

This mysterious beauty was the beautiful onesama with snow-white breasts whom he had met at the Shang Wu Camp before entering Tong Tian Tower. She was the one who gave Yue Yang a Crystal Card. At the same time, she was also the Introducer for Yue Yang's entrance into Tong Tian Tower. This was an extremely mysterious beauty whom Yue Yang couldn't find anything about, no matter who he tried to ask. Nobody would tell him even the smallest details about her.

As for those who knew her personally, their faces changed and they rapidly changed the subject when she was mentioned.

Even the old cunning fox only laughed awkwardly and sealed his lips.

Who on earth was she?

Even the Night Empress, who was one of the esteemed Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Tian Luo Empire, spoke of her with a hint of jealousy. From this, one could tell that this beauty oneesan with G-cup breast was extremely strong!

“I know that you have been looking for me and perhaps you have many questions for me.” The mysterious beautiful oneesan did not turn back her head, but merely spoke gently. “There are many things that would constitute a burden for you if you know about them now, that’s why I did not tell you anything... But if you want to listen, I can always tell you. Just that when you know of it, perhaps you won’t be as happy-go-lucky as you are now.”

“Then let me ask you a few questions!” Yue Yang did not want to know the truth only to be saddled with some sort of responsibility. He was only a little curious and meddlesome, hence he asked, “Can you tell me who you are?”

“I am your Introducer to Tong Tian Tower.” The mysterious beautiful oneesan replied lightly.

“What is an Introducer then?” Yue Yang did not understand.

“Hmm, an Introducer is about equivalent to a master or mentor, but you don’t need to formally become my apprentice. I will just give you guidance that you need in an entirely free capacity, which you don’t need to repay. I would also not force you to learn anything in particular. If the day comes when you don’t need me as an Introducer anymore, you can break away from this

relationship. Actually, all Rankers have a predecessor (sempai) as an Introducer, you are not the only one.” The beautiful onesan nodded her head slightly.

“But you didn’t teach me anything!” Yue Yang sweated, wasn’t this type of Introducer too irresponsible?

“Last time, I had a clever and quick-witted little sister with extremely good potential. I wished from the bottom of my heart that she would level up fast and not take any detours, becoming the Strongest Ranker as early as possible. Hence, I arranged a practice route that was most suitable for her, giving her the most suitable beast and best treasures. I gave her the best for every single thing, and followed everything according to her wishes... But ultimately, she chose a path that I never imagined her to take. After leveling up to become the Strongest Ranker, she immediately broke off relations with me, and fell out with me. She thought that my arrangements were some sort of mistake, that restricted all her freedom in life, that made her feel that everything was planned for her... After that, I reflected on my actions. Perhaps she was right, and freedom is the most important thing in this world. I gave you nothing, but I gave you freedom. You don’t need to accept my arrangements or my missions, you possess the ultimate freedom of will and life. You don’t need to train to a certain realm or be under the pressure of competitive rankings like others... I hope that you would be happy, live happily, train happily, and do what makes you happy. No matter what you do is right or wrong, I will not interfere. You got stronger because of your own hard work. Hence, I may not be fulfilling my responsibility as an Introducer, but you are free!” The beautiful onesan slowly raised an example, her voice gradually become softer.

“Freedom is good, but not saying a thing at all is also not good.” Yue Yang thought that it was certainly good to be free, but it was also not wrong to have somebody guiding him.

“What do you wish to know?” The beautiful oneesan asked.

“Ah, for example, the current state of my body. What’s happening?” Yue Yang felt that his strength increased a lot but he did not know how to control it. This gave him a huge headache.

“Your body’s current state is at Level One of the [Innate] realm. In such a state, living in Soaring Dragon Continent will cause you some trouble, because what you touch will be destroyed. When you hug a loved one, he or she may suffer a bone fracture. Hence after reaching the [Innate] realm, you can’t live in Soaring Dragon Continent if you don’t know how to control it.” The beautiful oneesan suddenly laughed.

Her laughter was soft, but extremely pleasant sounding.

It was like a light wind brushing across one’s face, so gentle that it rejuvenated people’s minds and bodies.

“Then what can I do?” Yue Yang now felt that it was important to have an Introducer. Simply relying on himself to comprehend things would take too long.

“Normal people will first learn how to control their strength. After learning the [Presence Concealing] Skill, they will then

slowly level up to [Innate]. You, however, are a little different from them. You are still a kid who doesn't know anything, yet you have already levelled up to the [Innate] realm and become Level One of [Innate] in one go. That's why you ended up with the current situation. Now, you possess the strength of a Level 9 [Saint], but you are using the kind of strength a Level 6 [Elder] would use to control it. Of course that will be impossible." The beautiful oneesan still did not turn her head. She only extended her hand backward, her white fingers lightly touching between Yue Yang's eyebrows.

A knowledge gently wove itself into Yue Yang's brain, enabling him to suddenly see the light.

So that's how it is...

An entirely new knowledge emerged within Yue Yang's brain.

At the same time, it combined with his current state, blending and integrating, until it became an enlightenment of wisdom as he achieved perfect understanding.

Summoning his Qi, using this method of concealing his energy, Yue Yang immediately found that all the strength in his body had been perfectly sealed within his body. It slept quietly, waiting for him to awaken it when he needed it... In a split second, his body returned to his previous state. The feeling of exercising perfect control over his actions came back again.

He moved his limbs about a little, realising that it's more of a

blessing to be a normal person.

After becoming [Innate], whatever he touched smashed into pieces. That sort of life was really too terrifying.

Luckily he was outside. If he was inside the Ivy Academy or at home, he might injure Yue Bing or little Yue Shuang if he pulled or touched them.

His current state was the best. He could just be a normal person at normal times, but during battles, when he need to lift the restraint on his strength, he could remove the seal and battle with the strength of an [Innate]. This would kill two birds with one stone!

“There are certain things which are better left unsaid. Even though you may be confused and muddleheaded, but you could slowly fumble about and level up and also be able to comprehend. Additionally, within the various realms and environments, you will meet all sorts of people. Interacting, learning and training with them would enable you to slowly learn as well. Isn’t this process even more interesting? Also, you are a little man, you also have your own pride. You probably don’t want other people to restrict you too much. So whatever you want to know, I’ll tell you next time! Train hard, I’ll come back to find you after a year..... ” The beautiful onesan seemed to be prepared to leave.

“Wait, beautiful mentor, what’s your name?” Yue Yang hurriedly asked for the beautiful onesan’s name.

“Names are not on the agenda of the Introducer. If you really want to know, after you get to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, you will see a Warrior Ranking Board. The one on top is my name.” The beautiful oneesan almost made Yue Yang burst in curiosity.

“So how strong are you?” Yue Yang thought that if she was very strong, then he would also benefit from his association with her. Next time, if he saw people like the Phoenix Fairy, he could throw out her name to scare the other party. Wasn’t she a mere ‘Sky Law’? His own mentor was a pro that was ranked first on the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower’s Warrior Ranking Board... The beautiful oneesan smiled as if she saw through what Yue Yang was thinking. “There’s also another Ranking Board at Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.”

“You’re still at the top of the ranking?” Yue Yang was so surprised that he almost fainted.

“There’s no top ranking for that Ranking Board, because those ranked at the top have never officially battled each other. In other words, I am one of those ranked in front.” The beautiful oneesan’s words almost made Yue Yang fall flat onto the ground, what was the difference between this and being the top?

“My last question: Beautiful mentor, do you have a boyfriend?” Yue Yang was extremely suitable in moonlighting as paparazzi, because he was extremely meddlesome.

“If there’s a human guy who’s able to break through Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and enter into the Eleventh Floor, I may

consider him a little. After all, living alone for a thousand years has been a little lonely.” The beautiful oneesan’s words held very strong hints and almost hooked Yue Yang’s attention away. But what made Yue Yang almost faint was that this beautiful oneesan who did not look any older than twenty years old was actually a thousand year old witch..... Forget it, even Bai Suzhen had to train for a thousand years to become [Madame White Snake](#). Also, as compared to Empress Fei Wen Li, this was nothing. One of her naps would take ten thousand years, that was even scarier!

Yue Yang saw the beautiful oneesan drew a line in the air and immediately create a tear in space, then disappeared into it. Yue Yang was no longer shocked, his heart was already numb with enough shock for a lifetime.

In comparison, the Demon King Ha Xin who was still restricted by the confines of space was a little tragic.

Yue Yang felt that it was fine even if Demon King Ha Xin was tragic. This fellow was his opponent anyway. People like the beautiful oneesan was active around places like the Ninth and Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. The Demon King Ha Xin would at most be labouring about in Tong Tian Tower’s seventh or eighth level. If he could see the corner of the beautiful oneesan’s skirt, he should be happy with it.

However, after Yue Yang calculated his odds for a while, he discovered that even if he possessed the strength of Innate Level One, he still could not defeat the haughty and overbearing Demon King Ha Xin.

But the Summoning Grimoire recorded that this fellow was a Level Eight Demon King. Could it be ... could it be that he was a Innate Level Eight?

Was that fellow Ha Xin so strong?

Yue Yang hurriedly rejected that notion.

If what Grandma Wu Teng and the Night Empress said was correct, then according to the standards of the levels of Tong Tian Tower, a Level Nine [Saint] would be considered an Innate Level One. Yue Yang felt that Demon King Ha Xin's strength would at most be only Innate Level Four or Five, or maybe he would not have even reached that level!

Yue Yang kept vilifying this strong opponent in his heart, itching to curse the Demon King Ha Xin into a pitiful little midget.

This was mainly because the psychological shock dealt by Demon King Ha Xin to Yue Yang was too big. Currently, only him and Phoenix Fairy both could penetrate the protective shield of the Summoning Grimoire.

Other people like the Marquis of Zi Jin could not do anything about the Grimoire's halo protection.

The difference lay here.

“Wait till I have trained till [Innate] Level Five or Six, then I'll go

to the Demon Abyss to kill off Demon King Ha Xin. Whatever concubines and princess he has, I'll capture them all back to be my female slaves." Yue Yang was letting his imagination run wild when a weak moan sounded from within the cave. It seemed that Princess Qian Qian was already awake. Yue Yang hurriedly slipped in. He'll think about the female slaves next time, now he must first take care of this Imperial Swordswoman who had a noble glare. This concerned his future blissful sexual life...

When he first came down, he realized that the mysterious beauty whose heart had been penetrated by the Phoenix Beauty had sat up and was covering her chest with her hand, seeming as if she was in pain.

"Don't move, I'll help you check!" Yue Yang volunteered himself.

"....." Is this fellow pretending to be nice, or is he a real pervert? No matter what, the mysterious beauty had nothing to say about him.

Chapter 180 – Saving Luo Hua, performing CPR!

Yue Yang immediately moved closer. He had actually wanted to look at the wound on the mysterious beauty's chest.

The mysterious beauty's face turned into 囧.

If it weren't for his face that was filled with concern and anxiousness, she would have already used her Ancient Book to send him flying over to ninth clouds and above. She blocked Yue Yang with her hands and tried to explain gently, "I'm okay, my heart wasn't injured, so the injury is not life-threatening. I was just hypnotized by the enemy just now, I lost all the strength in my body and fell into a semi-unconsciousness, unable to get out from the mental trap."

"It's good that you're okay..." Yue Yang heaved a sigh of relief.

So turned out that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty was just scaring him. She didn't really kill the mysterious beauty, she was only trying to make him angry.

He was provoked to the point that he completely went berserk and lost all of his reason, so what had actually happened afterwards? Was it the mysterious beautiful teacher who had ample bosoms who had driven Phoenix Fairy Beauty out? The reason that he was Innate Level 1, was it because he went berserk just now and hence managed to break through a new level? It seemed like Phoenix Fairy Beauty didn't really do anything bad to

him. She only used her peculiar ability to cast an illusion and provoke his wrath, making him breakthrough Innate Level 1.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty should neither be relative nor a friend to him. Why would she do that then?

Yue Yang couldn't understand, but he felt that Phoenix Fairy Beauty, this woman with gigantic breasts, was extremely frightening. She could even send him flying like a bullet with her gigantic breasts. Yue Yang sweated profusely.

"I'm going now." The mysterious beauty saw that Yue Yang was deep in thoughts. She suddenly bided him farewell.

"You have suffered from serious internal injuries, so you will have to rest properly. Stay in bed and don't go anywhere else." Of course, Yue Yang was unwilling to see the little beauty off, he hadn't even asked for her name. Maybe this girl was really Miss Xue. If that was so, he would definitely explain to her clearly that the matter of their engagement cancellation was a plot done by someone else, he didn't know about it at all. Yue Yang felt that even if it was an Engagement Cancellation Letter written by the pitiful guy himself, he wouldn't admit that it was him. No matter what, he wouldn't let this girl go, he wouldn't let her walk away from his palms.

"Don't bother about me." The mysterious beauty was a little resistant towards Yue Yang's concern to her, but she immediately softened her tone: "I am fine. You should go and look after Qian Qian and Luo Hua!"

“Wait a minute, could you perhaps tell me your name?” Yue Yang thought that she wouldn’t answer him, but he couldn’t help but ask her about it.

He really wanted to know this mysterious beauty who loved to read books and stalk him.

Who was she actually?

Was she Miss Xue or another person?

Was she stalking him because she had an engagement with the pitiful guy before or was it because she was curious about him? Was she ordered by someone or was she tailing him on her own will?

Everything was a bunch of mystery. Yue Yang hoped to clear the fog and understand the truth. Even if he could only know a little more about her, it would be better than guessing in the dark like this. Of course, he also knew that with this girl’s personality, she probably wouldn’t tell him anything. However, if he could dig out even a little bit of secret, he wouldn’t let the opportunity go.

With regards to Yue Yang’s question, the mysterious beauty acted as if she didn’t hear anything. Instead, she stood up, turned around and immediately left.

Yue Yang immediately charged towards her and asked, “Why did

you save me that time?”

“Why don’t you tell me about your secret then? Everyone has their own secrets...” The mysterious beauty turned around and smiled. Her smile was silent and didn’t really show in her expression. However, her eyes that were as clear as springwater was smiling, immediately filling Yue Yang’s heart to the brim. He never thought that her smile would have such a powerful charm over him. It was as if he suddenly saw a ray of light in his darkness and loneliness, illuminating his whole heart.

Yue Yang’s heartbeat accelerated by a hundred more beats per minute.

He felt like she was his first love. He always wanted to talk to her, but his mouth would stammer and he couldn’t say anything in the end. He could only look at her dazedly.

The mysterious beauty turned around and waved her little, snow-white hands lightly, bidding her farewell.

As a light breeze flowed from her body, she disappeared from Yue Yang’s sight... She was just like a Wind Snow Elf who came and went soundlessly, but she was also like a mysterious fairy who brought about light into Yue Yang’s life!

He must never miss such a girl. He must succeed in winning her over and add her to his harem, Yue Yang held his fist tight as he decided his heart.

“If you are not willing to let her go, you should just chase after her. Just leave me and Luo Hua here to die,” Princess Qian Qian’s voice was extremely weak, but the jealousy in her voice was enough to flood the whole mountain cave. It could even drown Yue Yang alive.

(Shiro: note that drink vinegar = jealous in Chinese. Here, it could also be translated as ‘the vinegar in her voice was enough to flood the whole mountain cave’)

“Your Highness the Princess, are you alright?” Yue Yang had only noticed that Princess Qian Qian was still stuck inside the mountain wall at this moment. He hurriedly leapt over to her to help her out.

“Don’t come here. Find me some clothes...” It’s not that Princess Qian Qian couldn’t come out herself, it was just that Phoenix Fairy Beauty had shattered her clothes completely.

Although she had an outspoken and straightforward personality, she couldn’t let Yue Yang see her body naked.

Hence, she continued to hide inside the concave space in the mountain wall.

Of course, she was also gravely injured and was thoroughly exhausted to the point that she almost collapsed. She also didn’t have any strength to move.

Yue Yang hurriedly gave her Yue Bing’s clothes, taking them from his Lich Ring. They might not fit her perfectly, but it was

better than nothing.

If they had gone according to what Yue Yang had thought secretly in his heart instead, Princess Qian Qian would be better off walking around naked. However, he thought that it would be difficult for this wish of his to be realized. The purpose of the naked Princess Qian Qian was to allow him to have an unobstructed view of her body. But she might try to kill him to prevent him talking to others about it, or start crying loudly and drown the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent with her tears... Yue Yang definitely wanted to push her down in his heart, but it was a little difficult to do now. The best thing to do was to pretend that he was a good boy and reduce the defense she had in her heart. If he wanted to push this wild tigress down, he could only do it at the time when the defense in her heart was at its lowest and when they were not in a situation where they have to be alert.

“Close your eyes!” Princess Qian Qian warned Yue Yang not to peek, otherwise she would let him know the power of her little white teeth. Let’s see if she wouldn’t bite him to death!

“Don’t worry, I’m a good boy... I guarantee that I will not peek.” Yue Yang showed his sincerity.

He was not going to peek, he was going to watch her openly and blatantly instead.

Princess Qian Qian knew that this brat was a pervert, so she had already covered her breasts and the part below with her hands. Other than glaring at him with her tigress eyes, she had even bared her white teeth.

She thought that if she hid inside the dark concave mountain wall, Yue Yang wouldn't be able to see her body clearly.

Unfortunately, she didn't know that Yue Yang had shared Empress Fei Wen Li's [Night Vision] ability... Of course, Yue Yang pretended not being able to see anything on the surface as he gave the clothes to Princess Qian Qian. He awaited in anticipation for the tigress to reach her hands out and take the clothes from his hands, therefore revealing her body.

"Put the clothes down, then scram." Princess Qian Qian saw that this brat had almost drooled a waterfall, so she knew that he had taken advantage of her. Turned out that this brat could actually see her body!

"I didn't see anything! I didn't see your slender waist nor your long legs, I completely didn't see anything," Yue Yang wanted to prove that he was innocent.

"Wipe your drool!" Princess Qian Qian really couldn't stand this brat. He was obviously a pervert yet he tried to act like a good boy. How could there be such a shameless person like him in this world?

Yue Yang was afraid that this tigress would suddenly grab onto a boulder and smash it to his head, so he didn't dare to stay longer. He immediately put the clothes down and ran away hurriedly.

Returning to Luo Hua City Mistress' side, he carried the sleeping

Luo Hua City Mistress up.

Suddenly, his face went pale.

He realized that Luo Hua City Mistress had no heartbeat...

Heavens, Luo Hua must not die, he still wanted to be the first man to push her down! Yue Yang was scared to death as he hurriedly lay Luo Hua City Mistress' body on a rock with flat surface. He reached his hands out to check her breathing, but found that she wasn't breathing too.

It seemed like Luo Hua City Mistress had been too gravely injured. Her injuries were also not treated for a long time, hence her body had become too weak and her heart had stopped from shock.

If he didn't perform CPR and chest compressions on her right now, this girl would definitely die!

"Don't scare me, don't scare me, quickly wake up!" Yue Yang was so scared that his heart almost exploded. He was so anxious that he almost went insane. How could he watch Luo Hua die and do nothing? Yue Yang punched himself, "Calm down, calm down, think about what you should do... CPR, chest compressions, I can do it, I can do it!"

Yue Yang took a deep breath, and tried his best to calm down.

He first lay Luo Hua City Mistress' body flatly as he thought about how to perform CPR on her. His hands trembled as he opened her lower jaw, pinched Luo Hua City Mistress' nose, then took in a deep breath and blew it onto her small mouth. After he blew a few mouthful of air into her, Yue Yang saw that Luo Hua City Mistress' chest was moving up and down. He hurriedly stopped as he remembered that he wasn't supposed to blow too much... The proportion of blowing and chest compressions was supposed to be 2 to 30, it seemed like he had blown too many times... As for his hands that were on her chest, under his nervousness, Yue Yang didn't even remember to do anything else.

Seemed like he was supposed to put the heels of his palms on top of each other and interlock his fingers.

He couldn't remember the other things.

Yue Yang realized that his hands were trembling hard, so he hurriedly breathed to calm himself down. He must not use too much force and break Luo Hua City Mistress' ribs in the end.

“Wake up, Luo Hua, you are not this weak! You are a City Mistress right? Don't die so easily like this! Quickly wake up. Don't you like flowers? I'll give you more flowers in the future, you can ask for whatever flower that you want, as long as you wake up... Don't die, I beg you, don't scare me!” Yue Yang tried to press for a few times and felt that he wasn't pressing with enough power. He immediately tried to increase his strength as he continued to press on Luo Hua City Mistress' chest, all the while calling out to her, hoping to wake her up.

After pressing for a few dozen times, Yue Yang realized that Luo Hua City Mistress' heart still had no reaction.

He did another round of CPR and chest compression on her, but she didn't turn for the better, her heart and breathing was still not present.

Yue Yang realized that her heart had stopped for too long, and his hands started to tremble harder. He remembered what he had learnt before. If there was not enough supply of oxygen into her brain and her brain continued to be lacking in oxygen for more than ten minutes, it would cause an irreversible damage.

"Don't die, I beg you, can't you be a little stronger?" Yue Yang tried to use his Innate Qi to stimulate Luo Hua City Mistress' heart, but he only added vitality to her heart, he didn't feel her heart starting to beat. Yue Yang was almost driven mad. How could Innate Qi be useless to stimulate her heart too? Was this really the end? No, Luo Hua City Mistress must not die...

"There's nothing that I can't do. I will definitely save you, I will!" Yue Yang took out his Dragon Slaying Dagger and tore Luo Hua City Mistress' clothes in one move. He was about to cut a hole on her snow-white chest and reach his hands inside, performing a heart massage inside her body.

A pair of flawless, unblemished mounds bounced out as Luo Hua City Mistress' clothes were torn. The peaks were round and white like snow mounds. Her small cherries were tender and pink, incomparably beautiful.

But Yue Yang didn't have time to ogle at these, his mind was completely set on saving Luo Hua City Mistress.

As long as she could live, Yue Yang would rather live his whole life with a bad reputation.

He didn't mind being called a pervert as long as she could live. She could just scold him later on... As long as she could live, he didn't care about any other things at all! She must definitely live on...

In order to steal Luo Hua City Mistress back from the clutches of the Grim Reaper, Yue Yang became so anxious that his eyes almost turned red. He had almost lost all of his reason.

Suddenly, one hand reached out and stopped Yue Yang's wrist.

It was Princess Qian Qian.

Princess Qian Qian was shocked when she saw Yue Yang holding his Dragon Slaying Dagger over Luo Hua City Mistress. She cried, "What are you doing?"

Yue Yang replied anxiously, "I'm not killing her, I wanted to save her. I'm saving her, do you understand? I want to open her chest and massage her heart directly. Luo Hua, she, she doesn't have a heartbeat and she wasn't breathing. You do CPR on her... She must not die, I will definitely not let her die so easily like this! Ah, right,

can you summon a beast that can shoot electricity? A weak one will do, it must not be too strong...”

“I only have one beast, my Guardian Beast!” Princess Qian Qian was shocked at the frantic Yue Yang, and cried out, “Electricity? Cutting open her chest? Are you sure that’s a method to save a person?”

“You can shock her heart with electricity. That will stimulate her heart to start beating again...” Yue Yang couldn’t explain to Princess Qian Qian in detail; he also had no time to do so.

“But...” Princess Qian Qian had not even finished speaking when Yue Yang started to raise his Dragon Slaying Dagger.

If he couldn’t use the defibrillator method, he could only cut her chest open and massage her heart directly.

If this continued on, he wouldn’t be able to save Luo Hua City Mistress. She must definitely not die. He couldn’t just stand here, do nothing and watch her die!

Princess Qian Qian held Yue yang’s wrist in a deathly grip as she cried out anxiously, “Idiot, she’s only in a death-like coma! She turned her body into that state in order to minimize the damage on her body. It’s not what you think! You idiot, don’t cut her chest open...”

(Shiro: Sorry, I mistranslated a few chapters back. Luo Hua’s Snow Fox was in a death-like coma, not fake death)

When Yue Yang heard this, his worry, fear and frenzy all disappeared. Yue Yang was stunned for a moment, but soon joy spread across his face.

So it turned out that Luo Hua City Mistress was in a death-like coma, it was not as if her life was really in danger.

Yue Yang didn't know too much about death-like coma, he only knew that some beasts had that kind of ability. However, he immediately felt at ease. He looked at Princess Qian Qian excitedly and asked happily, "Really?" When Princess Qian Qian nodded assuredly, Yue Yang finally heaved a sigh of relief. He felt a kind of mad rush of joy and happiness that could fill the whole of heaven and earth. He immediately relaxed and laid his whole body on the ground, closing his eyes full of emotions, "She's not dead, thank god..."

"You idiot!" Princess Qian Qian was both angry and humored at the same time, but seeing Yue Yang's face who immediately relaxed after being so anxious and nervous, she felt moved.

Although this brat was a little stupid and liked to lie, he had a sincere heart.

He sincerely wanted to save others.

It was just that his method really made her sweat to death.

When she remembered that he wanted to cut open Luo Hua City Mistress' chest with his Dragon Slaying Dagger and massage her heart, Princess Qian Qian did not know what to say.

Finally, she reached her hand out, touched his chest lightly and used an extremely gentle tone that even she herself had never heard before, assuring him: "Everything's alright, don't worry. Everyone knew how to take care of themselves..." However, when she said this, Princess Qian Qian thought that she shouldn't be too nice to this brat, so she punched him again. "Idiot, I've never seen an idiot like you. I've also never heard about such a useless method of cutting chests open and massaging the heart inside. Do you want to save her or kill her? You are doing this on purpose, aren't you?"

Yue Yang had also realized that he was in deep shit this time. He jumped in fright as he quickly jumped up, then quickly run away as he frantically shook his hand, "There really is that kind of method, I am the one who invented it! I did not do it on purpose, I only wanted to save her, wahhh...!"

Seeing Princess Qian Qian was about to get angry, he immediately escaped out of the Heaven's Line Cave.

Looking at his miserable escaping figure, Princess Qian Qian suddenly laughed.

She helped Luo Hua City Mistress who was on her death-like coma to cover her exposed breasts, whispering softly, "Seems like he was really worried about you..."

Ten minutes later, Princess Qian Qian carried Luo Hua City Mistress and got out of the Heaven's Line Cave.

Yue Yang gathered his guts as he tried to feel for Luo Hua City Mistress' pulse. He realized that there was a weak pulse, but it was still a pulse nonetheless, so he could finally be sure that Luo Hua City Mistress was fine. As he breathed a sigh of relief, he tried to explain to Princess Qian Qian, "I really wasn't doing it on purpose just now. Maybe my method is wrong, but there really is such a method. In any case, I didn't tear her clothes on purpose..."

"It's useless to explain. It's certain now, you are a big pervert and a sis-con!" Princess Qian Qian harrumphed.

"Ugh, it's okay if you call me a big pervert, but I'm really not a sis-con..." Yue Yang felt that he was a little bit misjudged. Why did she call him a sis-con?

"Then why would you have Yue Bing's clothes?" Princess Qian Qian glared at him with her tigress eyes.

"We were training together previously, I was afraid she doesn't have a change of clothes, so I helped her buy some." Yue Yang felt that he was only doing what a good brother should be doing. Must he be criticized in doing so?

"Then how would you know what her undergarments sizes are?" When Princess Qian Qian asked this, Yue Yang was speechless. It wouldn't be possible for him to say that he had received some education from watching romance action movies made by the

beautiful actresses of some island. With regards to women's body study, he would be able to estimate their sizes with close to 80-90% accuracy as long as he had seen it once. He had hugged and carried Yue Bing before, and she hasn't been growing much too, so it would be weird if he could buy the wrong size... Yue Yang couldn't explain it to Princess Qian Qian, so he could only deny it softly: "I'm really not a sis-con!"

"Can you speak it with more confidence?" Princess Qian Qian realized that she liked watching him act this way, because his reaction was really interesting. It was so funny that she had to use all of her effort to stop herself from laughing out loud.

Chapter 181 – The Feeling Of Being Electrocuted

Returning to the Cloud Peak Lake's lakeside, Yue Yang discovered to his astonishment that Hui Tai Lang had gone back to Bronze-ranked Level 3 from Silver-ranked Level 4. Hui Tai Lang, who had two heads previously, had turned back into a single head. Its body was covered with wounds, looking half dead. Yue Yang could not help but faint at the sight of this.

Other's beasts would become stronger the more they battled. Their ranks would also rise higher. This good dog, on the other hand, had actually dropped from Silver-ranked to Bronze-ranked.

Then, he saw the giant Xing Meng had fallen in front of Hui Tai Lang.

It seemed that when the giant Xing Meng tried to escape, he fought a great battle with Hui Tai Lang. Eventually, this powerful 'Mountain Destroyer Earth Demon' was tragically taken out by Hui Tai Lang.

"Was it Xing Meng who beat you up to this state?" Yue Yang was a little astonished. It did not seem that that was what had happened.

Hui Tai Lang's body was riddled with scars, new wounds covering the old ones.

It seemed like it had fought more than just one battle.

After all, he had undoubtedly ordered it to protect the Three-tailed Snow Fox. When did it sneak up here again? Seeing that the Three-tailed Snow Fox was not there, he hurriedly asked Hui Tai Lang, “Where’s Luo Hua’s Snow Fox?”

Hearing that Yue Yang asked about the Three-tailed Snow Fox, Hui Tai Lang lowered its head ashamedly.

Yue Yang sweated profusely. Was the Three-tailed Snow Fox killed? It was all over for him now. How would he explain this when Luo Hua woke up again?

Hui Tai Lang limped towards Yue Yang.

It was prepared to be cruelly hit by Yue Yang in a moment of anger... Seeing its pathetic look, Yue Yang put his fist down. “You’re just a wolf. I shouldn’t ask you to do any better. Being able to survive isn’t bad at all.” Yue Yang extended his hand, giving a portion of his Innate Qi to Hui Tai Lang, assisting it to rapidly recover from its wounds.

This really moved Hui Tai Lang. It howled towards the sky for a long time, displaying its appreciation for its master.

When Yue Yang was delivering his Innate Qi to Hui Tai Lang, he realized something new.

Why were there golden and white Runic Circles faintly floating out from his hands? Could this be a special phenomenon of being Innate Rank 1? Yue Yang was confused. The most mystical thing was that, there were Runic Circles on his arms. Furthermore, these Runic Circles could move on its own, changing between different shapes and runes at random. Yue Yang could not make heads or tails out of it at all.

What was even more peculiar was that Yue Yang knew these Runic Circles had a special effect of powering up his Innate Qi. With the power of the Runic Circles buff on his Innate Qi, the healing effect of his Innate Qi had grown stronger by at least ten times.

Hui Tai Lang's body and soul were extremely refreshed. It could not help but howl.

Then, suddenly, a Golden Rune surfaced on its forehead. The Runic Circles that was fluctuating on Yue Yang's arms had also appeared between its eyes. A burst of golden light came out from its body.

This anomaly caused Yue Yang to jump.

Startled, he finally realised that Hui Tai Lang could transform. It was able to conceal its true strength?

Yue Yang was curious now. Hui Tai Lang had become Gold-ranked Level 5 some time ago, yet its appearance was as if it was a Bronze-ranked Level 3 beast. If not for the effect of the treatment

by the Runic Circles, even he could not see through this... If even his Level 3 [Divine Eyes] could not see through it, then Yue Yang could bet that any normal warrior would probably not be able to see that Hui Tai Lang was a Gold-ranked Level 5 Demon Wolf.

Had Hui Tai Lang accompanied him for too long that it learnt how to be cunning and use the [Counterfeit] skill like himself?

“What’s with this dog?” Princess Qian Qian was also curious. However, she was not curious about the transformation, but rather the runes on Hui Tai Lang’s forehead.

Princess Qian Qian knew that Hui Tai Lang was at the foot of the mountain. It could not have obtained any runes.

It had also not signed a contract with Yue Yang either. How did it possess the Summoning Runes?

Yue Yang thought that Princess Qian Qian was talking about Hui Tai Lang turning from Bronze-ranked Level 3 to Gold-ranked Level 5, and explained, “I’m not too clear either. But, Hui Tai Lang was originally Silver-ranked Level 4. Perhaps some kind of breakthrough allowed it to turn into Gold-ranked Level 5. I’m guessing it learnt some kind of skill so it could conceal itself as a Bronze-ranked Level 3 beast. I don’t know the details of the situation and Hui Tai Lang can’t speak, so I don’t have any way of finding out the truth right now.”

Princess Qian Qian sweated. “Idiot, any high-level beast with wisdom will conceal their strength. The higher their wisdom is,

the better they are at concealment. What's so strange about that? But, this dog of yours doesn't know how to conceal its strength. Rather, those runes are helping it conceal its strength secretly... “

“Ah, there really are Runes! Hui Tai Lang, were you contracted by someone?” Yue Yang was shocked.

“Woof!” Hui Tai Lang hurriedly denied it, then acted like a loyal and devoted pet to Yue Yang.

“Can't you even differentiate between a Contract Runes and a Summoning Runes? The Rune on its forehead is an Ancient Summoning Rune. It's just like a strengthening-type beast, which had the ability to increase the strength of the body it belongs to. Don't your body have Ancient Runes too?” Princess Qian Qian felt that Yue Yang should study in the Academy for at least a hundred years, otherwise he would probably still be a joke who didn't know anything.

“Hey, don't compare me to it. Even though I'm like this, I'm still its master!” Yue Yang felt that if he were to be compared to Hui Tai Lang (Great Grey Wolf), his name could be easily associated with Da Se Lang (Great Perverted Wolf).

“It is an idiot dog, and you are a perverted wolf, you guys are trashes of the same feather...”

Indeed, Princess Qian Qian had pointed out the association that Yue Yang wanted to avoid. Yue Yang could only draw circles on the ground at one corner miserably, looking extremely depressed.

With such a strong vigilance and defence, it would probably not be easy to push this Imperial Swordswoman down.

According to the wise words of Mr. Qu Yuan, “The way ahead is long, I shall search high and low.”. Yue Yang thought, when would that saying turn into “Those breasts are big and attractive, I shall grope them high and low”. This was simply too difficult! However, if wooing girls is a lifelong technique. Other than taking note of TPO (Time, Place, Occasion), he would also need some skills. Yue Yang didn’t believe that he couldn’t make the tigress Princess Qian Qian his if he unleashed his perverted manuals of “36 Stratagems of Wooing Girls” and “108 Techniques of Picking Girls” that he made on earth.

So what if she was a Princess?

Princesses were originally born into this world so that he could push them down... or so goes Yue Yang’s wild imaginations.

Far away, a shadow flashed. Yue Yang saw a silver light approaching fast towards them.

It was fast like a meteor rain in the sky. Even with his Level 3 [Divine Vision], he still couldn’t be able to see things very clearly. In a flash, the silver light had already appeared in front of Yue Yang.

The moving silver light turned into a calm, unmoving state in less than a second.

When Yue Yang observed it carefully, he realized that it was Luo Hua City Mistress' Three-tailed Snow Fox. So it turned out that it didn't die. Yue Yang happily reached his hands out, wanting to grab onto the little fox and shout out to the sky. However, his hands met an empty space instead. The Three-tailed Snow Fox had already moved towards Princess Qian Qian's back, where Luo Hua City Mistress was still lying unconscious. It brushed its master's face with its soft, fluffy tails. It looked extremely gentle and loving.

Hui Tai Lang hurriedly tried to copy the Snow Fox's method of fawning over its master. It scuttled over to Yue Yang's side and used its great tail to brush across him. However, its tail had caused icicles to break apart and snow to disperse all over the place instead.

"Do you want to die?!" Yue Yang really couldn't stand it. He kicked it flying ten meters away.

"Woof!" Hui Tai Lang finally understood that it was fated to be beaten all its life. It just didn't have enough luck in its birth, it didn't have the good fortune of sharing an intimate relationship with its master. Furthermore, its tail that was even harder than steel wouldn't feel comfortable brushing across its master's body. Compared to the little sister Snow Fox's fluffy tail, they were simply heaven and earth's apart. Hui Tai Lang hurriedly bowed its head in shame, pretending to be obedient...

At night, Luo Hua City Mistress finally woke up.

The Three-tailed Snow Fox brought its master a small flower that could only bloom near cliffs. Luo Hua City Mistress was so happy that she caressed its little head, thoroughly overjoyed.

Hui Tai Lang observed quietly and thought, this method of fawning over master, it should also be able to do it!

It searched for a long time for fresh flowers, but couldn't find any. Finally, it found a Dog Tail Grass that was fluffy and big. It hurriedly bite it off and brought it back to Yue Yang.

Yue Yang was so angry when he saw it that he shouted at it, "Scram! Stay away from me!"

Only then did Hui Tai Lang finally understood that its master did not like flowers and grasses. He was different from the Three-tailed Snow Fox's master. Looking at its acts, Princess Qian Qian couldn't help but laugh until her stomach hurts. She gave Yue Yang a thumbs up, "Like master, like dog. This saying is really true!" Yue Yang was immediately angry when he heard it, "Tigress, what did you say?" Princess Qian Qian laughed out loud, "Nothing, I'm just saying that your dog is very clever. Maybe it is close to evolving into a Holy Beast. If you bring it to the Aries Temple, pass the Trial and received the wisdom blessing by the Ancient Code, it could perhaps evolve into a Holy Beast..."

"Aries Temple?" Yue Yang was immediately interested when he heard this.

Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian had already

trained their grimoire and levels since young, hence their ranks and levels were very high now.

They have already gone above Level 5 a few years back. He, on the other hand, had not. He was not used to summoning his grimoire, hence he was still a Level 2 Braveman now...

If he could pass the Aries Temple Trial once, not only Hui Tai lang, he thought that even the Thorny Flower Demoness would also be able to turn into a Holy Beast. As for the Bloody Queen, Yue Yang was not worried about her anymore. Since the Bloody Queen could speak now, even if she wasn't a Holy Beast, she wouldn't be too far from evolving into a Holy Beast. Yue Yang's goal was to cultivate the Bloody Queen into a Mythical Beast that could contract her own grimoire.

"This journey really tire me to death, I have to return home and recuperate for a while. But we have actually earned quite a lot of profit." Luo Hua City Mistress took out a stalk of Serene Starlight Indigo Grass from her jade box and placed it into another smaller jade box, before passing it to Yue Yang. She looked at Yue Yang, with a gaze that made him want to shout a long wolf howl and pounce towards her. Although she didn't say anything, her gaze was extremely gentle and loving... When Yue Yang went to the lake to bathe and check if there were any water beasts inside in passing just now, Princess Qian Qian had told her about how Yue Yang had tried to save her before. The reason for her gentle gaze now was because she had heard about Yue Yang's foolish actions in trying to save her.

"Did you guys want to kiss farewell? Don't mind me!" Princess

Qian Qian turned her head, pretending to give Luo Hua City Mistress and Yue Yang a chance to kiss farewell.

“Qian Qian, you...” Luo Hua City Mistress was greatly distressed, her pale cheeks turning red.

Yue Yang had actually wanted to kiss Luo Hua in his heart. If it wasn't for Princess Qian Qian breaking the mood, he had even thought that the mood was good enough to push Luo Hua down. Now that she had blurted that out, all the pink mood had been broken. If he couldn't eat the noodles, he couldn't even drink the soup.

Yue Yang was really frustrated with Princess Qian Qian, this pink-mood-destroying Imperial Swordswoman.

Luo Hua City Mistress looked like she wanted to hug Yue Yang to show her appreciation, but because Princess Qian Qian had said that, she didn't feel comfortable doing it.

She immediately open a teleportation scroll and waved her hands towards Yue Yang, “I'm going now!”

Yue Yang's heart was about to break.

He should have gotten a kiss farewell, but it was broken by Princess Qian Qian's words. She must have done it on purpose. No, this couldn't do. When Luo Hua City Mistress leave, he would have to force a hundred kisses on Princess Qian Qian's lips to

compensate for this, otherwise he wouldn't be able to take the frustration in his heart.

Before entering into the teleportation gate, Luo Hua City Mistress suddenly reached her hand out, her fingers hesitant as she caressed Yue Yang's lips for a while.

There was a kind of electricity current that jolted throughout Yue Yang's body.

His heartbeat accelerated to 300 beats per minute.

His wolfy blood boiled, soaring to the sky. Yue Yang had almost howled "Awooo!" loudly to the sky.

Friction could indeed cause electricity... Yue Yang realized that he felt like his whole body was being electrocuted right now. However, although it was not a good feeling, it was also comfortable. There was an indescribable, wonderful feeling in his heart. In any case, he felt like he was on cloud nine and suffocating from happiness.

"Isn't it just a simple rub on the lips? Look at how useless you became. Come, let me, the Princess, help you to rub your lips even more. I'll be using something that's better than fingers, you know..." Looking at Yue Yang's blissful face, Princess Qian Qian felt very jealous in her heart. She took off her shoes and raise her flawless feet, preparing to give a flying kick to this brat's face. Let's see if he would still dare to reveal such a perverted and blissful expression in front of her in the future.

“Hey, I already knew that you don’t have a good intention from the start!” Yue Yang’s reaction was fast, and he grabbed on Princess Qian Qian’s flying kick with one move.

He tried to maneuver her kick upwards, preparing to throw her against the mountain wall and take advantage of her.

Who would have thought that Yue Bing’s clothes, that had originally been too small for Princess Qian Qian, would give out and tear when Yue Yang lifted her leg? Her pants tore at her crotch, revealing a big part of her snow-white skin...

What had happened went beyond the two people’s expectations, shocking them.

Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian could only stare at each other, for a long time, not knowing what best to do.

Chapter 182 – Idiot, I'm Not Going To Talk To You Anymore!

After a long while, Yue Yang finally reacted. He turned around from Princess Qian Qian's face, afraid that she would feel awkward. He consoled her as he said: "Actually, I ain't see nothin'!"

(Shiro: It's kinda hard to tl this, but think of it as Yue Yang speaking in kansai dialect)

Princess Qian Qian really wished to bite this abominable brat and swallowed him whole, from the bottom of her heart.

After staring for so long, so much that his eyes were about to pop out, he still dared to say that he didn't see anything.

"You really didn't see anything?" Princess Qian Qian was a little bit flustered. She really couldn't stand this brat's gazes, as she hurriedly took her legs down from Yue Yang's shoulders.

"It was all dark so I didn't see anything..." Yue Yang hurriedly tried to prove his innocence.

"What?" Princess Qian Qian thought these words were too ambiguous. What did he mean by dark? He was really spouting nonsense.

"That's not what I mean. I mean, the lighting here is very bad. I didn't see anything clearly because it was only a glance.

Furthermore, your legs are very white and they really dazzle my eyes. I really didn't see anything just now!" Yue Yang replied, revealing exactly what he wanted to hide.

"What did you say?" Princess Qian Qian screeched, completely driven mad.

"I really didn't see it clearly. I didn't even see your undergarments that was white and had a little lace on the sides very clearly..." Yue Yang had not even finished speaking before Princess Qian Qian suddenly turned into a tigress and charged towards him in fury. She pushed him down to the ground, revealed her set of white teeth and bit on Yue Yang's shoulders violently. Yue Yang cried out in pain, but his wolfy blood started to boil with anticipation. He turned their bodies around and pressed Princess Qian Qian down to the ground instead. He was about to reach his wolfy paws out and turn this tigress of an Imperial Swordswoman into a little sheep, then carry out that legendary thing called 'pushing down', when suddenly...

"Ouch!"

Who would know that in Yue Yang's anxiousness, he had used too much strength when he turned their bodies around and pressed Princess Qian Qian under him. As Princess Qian Qian cried out in pain, the snow underneath their bodies collapsed, unable to support the weight of both of them. The two people involuntarily tumbled down and splashed into the Cloud Peak Lake.

Due to his rash wolfy actions, using too much strength and lacking in gentleness, they ended up getting dunked in cold water.

Mission Pushing Down had failed.

Princess Qian Qian really wanted to kill Yue Yang. She wouldn't brought up the matter about him kicking her butt anymore, but he had almost crushed her ribs just now and even threw her into a cold lake in the end.

She really had never seen such a pervertedly eager and savage fellow...

"I still have one more set of Yue Bing's clothes. Go and change your clothes, don't get a cold later!" Yue Yang immediately fawned upon Princess Qian Qian the moment he helped her get out of the water. He secretly contemplated about his experience in failures. Seemed like if he wanted to succeed in pushing down, he shouldn't be too anxious. What was he so anxious about just now, he had wasted such a good opportunity! He could even succeed in pushing her down, since it was this tigress who had initiated pushing him down first... Now everything was ruined, she probably wanted to murder him right now. It was such a waste of a good opportunity.

"I really hate people like you!" Princess Qian Qian wanted to storm away initially, but seeing that her whole body was wet and her clothes were torn, she thought that she couldn't go home exposing her little butt along the way. This matter would turn disastrous if anyone knew about it. Hence, she could only contain her wrath and receive the clothes as she yelled at Yue Yang angrily.

Yue Yang hurriedly expressed his apology and even guaranteed

by patting his chest, “Tigress, don’t be angry, I will take responsibility of you.”

When Princess Qian Qian heard this, she almost fell into the Cloud Peak Lake again.

What the hell, who would want him to take responsibility?

He wanted to take responsibility? Then wouldn’t he benefit more instead... Princess Qian Qian really wanted to cry aloud.

When Princess Qian Qian finished changing and came out, she realized that the brat had gone topless and was roasting a few fishes on a campfire. Seeing this, she really wanted to tie him up on a rod and roast him alive like those fishes instead. But when he passed her a delicious-smelling roasted fish, Princess Qian Qian felt that she was a little hungry. She didn’t try to be polite, instead, she decided to eat her fill before she took revenge on this brat.

“You must not talk about this matter to anyone, especially Luo Hua. If she ever heard about this, I will definitely kill you!”

Princess Qian Qian first ordered him to keep his mouth shut.

She couldn’t do anything else.

She could beat him up, but she was probably not his match in strength; She could scold him, but this brat’s face was thicker than the city’s wall. What could she do to him? Princess Qian Qian was

seething in anger, unable to release her fury.

If it weren't for her charging to him and biting him down, exciting his beastly nature, she would probably not end up in this state.

But he just had to...

It was not his fault alone, she also bear some faults. Princess Qian Qian sighed secretly. All the guys in this world all jumped in fright the moment they saw her. Why then, was this brat completely unafraid of her? Could it be that this brat was truly her nemesis? When she thought about this, Princess Qian Qian couldn't help but to clench her fist and punched Yue Yang again.

"You have already beaten me up just now, why are you punching me again?" Yue Yang was confused. Why did this tigress suddenly beat him?

"This is the interest!" Princess Qian Qian immediately gave him a bossy look. Why did she need a reason to beat him?

"Which interest is it from? Is it the interest payback from looking at you, or from touching you?" Yue Yang was very strict, just like a banker. He was adamant about making clear of the interest paybacks.

"Interest payback from touching me? You touched me just now?" Princess Qian Qian was confused when she heard him. Why didn't

she feel it just now?

“No, I wanted to but there wasn’t time. But I don’t mind paying in full plus the interest in advance to touch you...” Yue Yang replied very sincerely.

Princess Qian Qian heard this was immediately alarmed when she heard this and hurriedly retreated.

In her heart, she reminded herself never to let this brat had a chance to take advantage of her. When Yue Yang tried to approach her, she immediately retaliated, sending him flying with a punch. However, before she managed to be pleased with herself, she accidentally lost her balance, falling right beside the campfire. She wasn’t injured from the fall, it was just that when she tried to get up and propped herself up with her left palm, she accidentally touched the burnt branches on the campfire. It was so hot that she cried out as she shook her hand in pain.

Yue Yang felt that his blissful sexual life must have been cursed by someone. He had not even started to enjoy it when he encountered the Ice and Fire Catastrophe.

He hurriedly calmed his perverted mind and held Princess Qian Qian’s hands, channeling some Innate Qi to treat her wounds.

Actually, a little burn was nothing much to Princess Qian Qian, who was a warrior. It would heal within a short time.

But she liked Yue Yang's gentleness. She pretended to be in bad mood on the outside, but she was extremely happy to see him anxiously trying to treat her wounds. She even pouted at him, "I don't need your help, let go of my hand!"

Yue Yang thought that today might not be an auspicious day, it was really not easy to push girls down.

Touching, pushing down, he'd best refrain from doing it now. He should wait for a suitable time in the future to do it. He didn't believe that he wouldn't be able to push this tigress down if he found a big and comfortable bed... Whenever Yue Yang remember the spring blossom that he saw just now, and the feeling he felt when he pinned Princess Qian Qian to the ground, he felt a kind of beastly impulse surging inside him.

"Pervert, wipe your drool!" When Princess Qian Qian saw Yue Yang revealing a perverted expression as he held her hand, she was speechless.

A few moments later, she opened a teleportation scroll, raising a teleportation gate and prepared to leave.

Suddenly, she turned around and like Luo Hua City Mistress, she reached out her fingers to Yue Yang.

Could it be that she wanted to caress his lips just like Luo Hua City Mistress did just now? Yue Yang gulped down his saliva. It would be best if he could kiss Princess Qian Qian farewell. If he could give her a hot, searing kiss, the kind that would split the

heaven and earth and haunt her day and night, he would still have some hope to push her down in the future. Princess Qian Qian's fingers almost seemed like she was going to caress Yue Yang's lips, rubbing on his cheeks lightly. Electricity shot through his whole body again, as a surge of hot wave filled under his belly. The hot wave turned into raging flames, almost exploding inside him and turning him into a super ultra wolf beast.

“Look at your perverted face!” Princess Qian Qian then suddenly pinched hard on Yue Yang's cheeks, before bursting out in laughter, “Don't even think about it, do you think I'll kiss you farewell like Luo Hua wanted to? Dream on!”

“Really?” Yue Yang hugged Princess Qian Qian suddenly, and with the speed of light, he forced a kiss on her lips. He ain't gonna care if he was dreaming or not, he would take care of the consequences later after he had kissed her.

Bam!

Yue Yang used too much force once again, slamming both his lips and nose on Princess Qian Qian's lips and nose respectively.

Both of them bent down in pain.

Yue Yang's first reaction was to sigh in his heart: He was really cursed today, it was indeed not his lucky day to push girls down... Princess Qian Qian pouted in pain, “I've seen idiots before, but I've never seen such an idiot like you before. Pig-head, idiot, I'm not going to talk to you anymore!”

She angrily went into the teleportation gate. Yue Yang realized that his body would often be in a state of going out of control.

Along with his wishes, his body would release a strength close to Innate strength involuntarily.

This was unlike him normally, which was why he kept estimating his strength wrongly... If it was him normally, his pushing down and kiss farewell would have gone extremely smoothly. If he wanted to blame on something, he should blame his own inability to control when he should release his Innate Level 1 strength. This strength was usually concealed, but once Yue Yang tried to use his strength, he would accidentally unleash his innate strength instead. Although Innate Level 1 Strength was not that strong, it was much stronger than the strength that Yue Yang was used to.

“The saying that picking up girls and pushing them down is a technique was really true.” Yue Yang laughed out. Although he had failed this time, he was also quite successful.

He had almost pushed Princess Qian Qian down, but she wasn't angry at his perverted nature, she was only angry at his beastly actions.

That showed that she liked him in her heart, even if it was only a little.

This time he had failed at pushing down, but because of the

things that happened today, he should be able to push her down in the future. As long as he found the right time and place, choose the right feeling and atmosphere. This tigress wouldn't be able to run away...

Yue Yang's mood turned for the better, as he grabbed onto Xing Meng's corpse and returned back into the cave. He lined Xing Meng, Gu Zhui and Duke Xian's corpses altogether, then summoned his Thorny Flower Little Demoness out.

It seemed like the Thorny Flower Demoness had grown a little more. Her biggest transformation was that the vine that grew on her little, tender butt had disappeared.

When she was summoned, she immediately ran about the whole space, especially cheerful and enthusiastic.

Yue Yang had actually prepared to give her some clothes, but who would know that the Little Flower Demoness didn't like to wear clothes at all? She also didn't know how to wear it, as she clumsily tried to wear her pants on her head instead. Yue Yang sweated speechless when he saw this and quickly helped her to wear her clothes himself, becoming a babysitter. Her secondary stalk had already swallowed Xing Meng's and Gu Zhui's corpses. As for Duke Xian's body, it was as if the secondary stalk hated it. The Little Flower Demoness hesitated for a long while before finally summoning a bag of spore and plant it inside Duke Xian's corpse, allowing it to grow inside his body. The spore grew to become a Level 3 Giant Thorny Flower, before it reached its roots out and joined together with the Little Flower Demoness' cluster of flowers...

Duke Xian's corpse could only add another Giant Thorny Flower? Yue Yang sweated.

“He was a thousand year old tortoise spirit after all, I had a hard time killing him. Even if he's not nice to eat, you shouldn't waste food!” Yue Yang wanted to spank this Little Thorny Flower Demoness' butt who was extremely picky with food.

Yue Yang decided to rest inside the cave for half a day, allowing the Little Thorny Flower Demoness to consume the excess energy.

At the same time, Yue Yang also practiced to control his Innate Level 1 strength. He had no problems concealing it and lifting his limitations, it was just that he would accidentally lose control and use his innate strength at times. After practicing for a while, he summoned the Bloody Queen out and taught her to speak. He also tried to ask her about the location of the mysterious godly treasure that she knew about... Bloody Queen was still stammering in her speech, she was still not that adept in speaking and conveying her meaning. After Yue Yang consolidated all of her report, he reckoned that there was a hidden path on the Hanging Pavilion that leads to a teleportation circle. This teleportation circle would teleport them to the secret treasure, but there were extremely strong monsters protecting the treasures. The Bloody Queen couldn't describe these monsters, so it seemed like she had never gone there too. Only her mother had ever gone to that secret treasure.

After finishing all these, Yue Yang took Hui Tai Lang, who was disguised as Bronze-ranked Level 3, and returned to the Academy.

However, Grandma Wu Teng was not present.

The old cunning fox was also not in the Academy. Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Clan Brothers had already followed the eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie to train, so Yue Yang decided to bring Yue Bing back to Yue Clan Castle.

He was preparing to show off to the whole clan the scene where Yue Shuang succeeded in contracting a grimoire, helping the Fourth House to take their pride back.

Previously, his strength was not enough and he was also not very knowledgeable on the world of Soaring Dragon Continent, hence he was not able to go berserk as much as he liked.

Now that he had reached Innate Level 1, if his First Uncle Yue Shan, Second Uncle Yue Ling or any other people with bad intentions dared to pick a fight with him, he wouldn't stand on courtesy with them anymore. For Fourth Mother, he must create the most miraculous worldly miracle, so that others would be thoroughly shocked!

Looking at the towering Yue Clan Castle, the corner of Yue Yang's mouth curved up into a smile.

Chapter 183 – Fourth Mother In Danger

Yue Yang returned to the Yue Clan Castle, but he couldn't find Fourth Mother.

Neither the Old Man Yue Hai nor the deer-riding Fifth Grandfather were home. The substitute Clan Master Yue Shan and Second Uncle Yue Ling had gone to Shang Jing to prepare for the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament. Even the eldest son Yue Tian and Yue Yang's arch-enemy, Yue Yan, had also gone to Tong Tian Tower to complete their last training... In the whole of Yue Clan Castle, other than a few elders who never came outside and far relatives, there were only a bunch of servants. Only after Yue Bing asked around did they realize that their mother had gone back to White Stone City. Furthermore, Fourth Mother had already returned after Yue Yang and Yue Bing left the Castle.

“This is weird, didn't she want to stay behind and take care of Fourth Uncle?” Yue Yang felt that something went wrong.

Yue Yang had never met Fourth Uncle before.

He only knew that Miss Feng was taking care of him, as for how Fourth Mother got along with them, he had never thought about it before.

Could it be that Fourth Mother had gone back to White Stone City because she was bullied?

This shouldn't be the reason as Yue Bing and him had established

their strength to the Clan. Even the substitute Clan Master Yue Shan and Second Uncle Yue Ling wouldn't dare to give her an attitude. It was unlikely that someone would provoke Fourth Mother.

So what was happening exactly?

Yue Yang felt confused and puzzled.

“Fourth Mistress said that she was relieved since there is Miss Feng to take care of Fourth Master. She also said that it wouldn't be good to leave her house in White Stone City unattended for a long time, that's why she brought Uncle Nan, Aunt Xu and the rest back. Fourth Master's illness sometimes became better, other times it become worse. It was quite unstable. Miss Feng said there's hope for him to recover only if she brought him to get some kind of medicine. I am also not sure about this.” A butler reported the information which he had collected to Yue Yang immediately since he was afraid that he would offend this abnormal Third Young Master. Yue Yang currently wasn't the trash Third Young Master anymore. In the eyes of the servants, he was a cruel person who would kill anyone without mercy. They were afraid their head might get chopped off if they said the wrong thing. Therefore, this butler was being very cautious.

“If that is the case...we are leaving then.” Yue Yang started to understand the situation. It was not that Fourth Mother had refused to stay and take care of Fourth Uncle, it was just that Miss Feng had taken Fourth Uncle away.

Apparently the poison which Fourth Uncle got was very serious.

Yue Yang was planning to ask what kind of medicine that Miss Feng wanted to get, but when he saw the muddled face of the butler he was sure that the butler didn't know the detailed information.

He brought Yue Bing to Yue Clan Village to teleport to Shang Jing capital's teleportation circle, then to Red Cliff City and lastly to White Stone City.

Although the process was quite complicated but the time spent was not too long. The only disadvantage was that it was a little costly.

Yue Yang brought Yue Bing home, full of joy and expectations.

Yue Yang liked the small but warm and peaceful house in White Stone City more than the Yue Clan Castle. He had come from this small house, thus, he had no feeling towards Yue Clan Castle and the people in there. Only Fourth Mother, Yue Bing and Yue Shuang were his close relatives. As for the others, he would never recognize them as his relatives. At the most, they were just some people he knew.

Yue Yang smelled the smell of blood once he stepped into the house.

His expression changed and he rushed into the house.

He discovered that the house was full of bloodstains. Several servants who were hiding under the basement died tragically with their blood splashed all over the place.

Yue Yang couldn't find Fourth Mother and the little girl Yue Shuang's dead body amongst the pile of dead people. There were no trace of the old servant, Uncle Nan and the quiet Aunt Tsu as well.

He was relieved for a moment...perhaps Fourth Mother and the little girl were not killed but were only kidnapped by the murderer.

Yue Yang was so furious that he nearly went berserk, his body nearly lost control. However, he was clearly aware that it would be stupid if he lost control and got mad. He had to get Fourth Mother and the little girl back immediately. The fresh bloodstain on the floor and the dead bodies which were not completely stiff indicated that the time they got murdered had not exceeded twenty four hours. Yue Yang suppressed his anger and checked the livor mortis and cornea of the servants' dead body. He determined that the time the servants got murdered should be around ten hours.

Where did Fourth Mother go?

Did she escape with Uncle Nan or got kidnapped by the murderer?

And who would do this? How could they have so much guts, putting their hands on members of the Yue Clan, attacking Fourth

Mother? Could it be that the robbers or the murderers had an ulterior motive?

Yue Yang was all confused. He couldn't figure out the whole incident.

How could Fourth Mother encounter this kind of disaster when she was only home for few days? This matter was really suspicious.

However, since Yue Bing was so shocked that she was trembling non-stop, Yue Yang first created a story to comfort her, "Don't be afraid, calm down. Fourth Mother had escaped with the help of some people. None of the dead bodies are Fourth Mother's and Shuang-er's, we will have to trace some clues to rescue them. Bing-er, you're a good girl. Don't cry. You have to be strong. Let's bring mother back together!"

Yue Bing was too scared that she was about to faint. Her legs turned all jelly that she couldn't even walk.

She was so frightened that her body was trembling non-stop....

Suddenly, Yue Yang remembered something. He hurriedly carried Yue Bing on his back and rushed toward the direction of the Assassin Guild.

[Vengeance Hunter]!

(Shiro: Refer to chapter 18. Yue Yang had a Bloodrose Map in his Grimoire that allows him to locate anyone he wanted to find.)

He could only know the whereabouts of Fourth Mother and Shuang Er after he found the murderer. He must not delay the time to rescue them...Yue Yang was so anxious and angry that he wanted to kill all the people of White Stone City. However, he knew that he must remain calm at a time like this.

Offering a reward was not his main objective, Yue Yang only wanted to know the person who burst into his house and killed everyone.

As a result, the name of the murderer made him stunned.

He had heard the name before but never pay much attention on it...the name was 'Chang Dao'.

When he killed Tie Kuang previously, Yue Yang had heard the name of 'Xie Huo' and 'Chang Dao' from a big breast lady in a tavern. Wu Yi and Xie Huo were both killed by Yue Yang in the Merry Forest. Afterwards, Yue Yang went to Tong Tian Tower to find Yue Bing, then brought along his little sisters and Fourth Mother to rampage at Yue Clan Castle... He had indeed forgotten to kill Chang Dao, but how could Chang Dao know that he was the one who killed Tie Kuang, Wu Yi and Xie Huo? Furthermore, why would he burst into his house and kill every single person in the house, then kidnapped both Fourth Mother and the Little Girl?

(Shiro: Flashback to chapter 24. Yue Yang helped a prostitute to seek revenge and killed Tie Kuang, but Tie Kuang had the backing of Wu Yi, Xie Huo and Chang Dao. Yue Yang killed Wu Yi and Xie Huo who pursued him to take revenge on Tie Kuang, it's also here when Wu Yi summoned Demon King Ha Xin. But basically he left

out Chang Dao because he had to go to search for Yue Bing who went missing in Tong Tian Tower)

Could it be that there was someone behind who ordered him to do so?

Yue Yang recalled the way the big breast lady described Chang Dao. She said, “...his blade is extremely fast. Even as he sits down and drinks liquor, he could kill dozens of people in succession with only a wave of his hands. Normally, he doesn’t come to White Stone City very often; he appears and disappears unpredictably. However, this Chang Dao has a very obvious distinctive feature; his right hand that holds his blade is much larger than his left; at least twice its size.”

Chang Dao, if only he could find him....

Yue Yang summoned his Silver Grimoire and tried to trace Chang Dao on the Bloodrose Map.

A Bloodrose Dagger appeared on top of Chang Dao’s name on the Bloodrose Map, pointing out to an area... The area was not in White Stone City, it was at a place that was more than 100 kilometer away from White Stone City, the Starved Dog Range... Starved Dog Range was part of Misty Cloud Mountain. It was named as Starved Dog Range by the mercenaries because its contour looked like the spine of a thin dog. Besides, it had a dangerous topography and the area was deserted with only groups of stray dogs roaming around the ridge.

The area was a place where brigand would also found it hard to survive. In the ridge, there were steep cliffs and precipices as well as several valleys of various sizes.

It was said that an extremely tragic war once happened at the region of Starved Dog Range causing many people died under Starved Dog Range. There were piles of human bones in the valley to this day to such an extent that the soldiers who died couldn't be reincarnated and became the hateful ghosts that roamed around the place.

Starved Dog Range was a very famous haunted place.....

Why would Chang Dao visit this kind of place?

Could it be that he was the one who had kidnapped Fourth Mother and the little girl to Starved Dog Range?

Yue Yang kept his doubt in his mind. He comforted the trembling Yue Bing with a soft voice, "Don't be scared, Fourth Mother is safe. I found the murderer. His name is Chang Dao, the accomplice of Xie Huo. I suppose he is the one who has kidnapped Fourth Mother and Shuang Er. Fourth Mother should be somewhere at Starved Dog Range. I will rescue them immediately. Your condition is not good now, it would be better if you go back to the academy to wait for my good news. Don't worry, I am sure I will bring Fourth Mother and Shuang Er back safely."

"No, no, brother, I want to go, I want to go too!" Yue Bing grabbed Yue Yang's shoulder firmly. She neither wanted to let go

nor get down from his back.

“Then you have to be obedient. You must not cry. We can only rescue Fourth Mother and Shuang Er if we do not alarm the enemy.” Yue Yang felt pity of his unfortunate younger sister and Fourth Mother. He was the source of the disaster. If the enemy wanted to revenge they should’ve find him instead of them. They shouldn’t be the one who suffered.

Yue Yang kept his anger under control and comforted Yue Bing softly.

Yue Bing tried very hard to hold her tears so that she wouldn’t obstruct her elder brother. However, she was unable to control the fear and sadness deep inside her heart. She wiped her tears while she sobbed spasmodically.

As Yue Yang watched Yue Bing’s trembling hands, then looked at her eyes which were full of helplessness and her pale face, he swore in his heart that he would rescue Fourth Mother even if he had to rampage to the eighteen levels of hell. If something happened to Fourth Mother and the little girl, Yue Yang decided that he would kill every single person related to this case to avenge them, even if he became a killing machine who killed ceaselessly!

(Shiro: Chinese believes that there are [eighteen levels of hell](#).)

Certainly, Yue Yang would rescue Fourth Mother at all costs.

“Let’s go, Hui Tai Lang!” Yue Yang kicked Hui Tai Lang as a hint for it to lead them to the destination by following their scent.

It would be nearer to Starved Dog Range if they teleported from White Stone City to Black Forest City. But the Starved Dog Range was too big. If the target of the Bloodrose Map was not in the main city, it would not show a location specifically. Therefore, although teleportation was nearer, it would delay the time for rescue as they wouldn't have an accurate target to pursue. It would be better to let Hui Tai Lang track their scent and follow it along the way.

If this still did not work, then they would teleport to Black Forest City and change their route to Starved Dog Range.

Moreover, there was an advantage if Hui Tai Lang lead the way. It leaded the way according to the scent of Fourth Mother and the little girl. If the target was not at Starved Dog Range then it could prove that they were not with Chang Dao.

It would not be too late to go to Starved Dog Range to kill Chang Dao after he found Fourth Mother and the little girl.

Hui Tai Lang moved like an arrow and leaded the route ahead to Starved Dog Range....Yue Yang controlled his anger which was merely about to go out of control. He followed after Hui Tai Lang and dashed out from the city while carrying Yue Bing on his back. At night, the city gate of White Stone City was about to close. Since Yue Yang had nowhere to release his temper, he shouted angrily, "Those who block my path shall perish!"

The sound was as loud as thunder. Yue Yang moved like a dragon and laid a strong and heavy punch on the city gate.

The huge city gate was broken into innumerable pieces of wooden chips immediately.

The soldiers guarded on the city wall fell onto the ground as a result of the huge shock wave.

Until Yue Yang left like a hurricane and disappeared in the dark as he gone far away, the soldiers were shuddering while standing up. They looked at each other in dismay without knowing what was happening.

White Stone City Master was sipping tea leisurely at home. Suddenly, he heard a deafening sound. His hands shook and the tea spilled all over his luxurious clothes.

When his subordinates hurriedly reported to him, he wrinkled his brows.

“What is going on? Why would someone smash the city gate in White Stone City without any reason? Moreover, no one has this kind of capability besides of Master Golden Blade and I. This is really odd...wait a minute, there’s another person who could do this...don’t tell me that something happened to that boy? God, please don’t let this happen!” White Stone City’s master didn’t bother to give orders to his subordinates, he had to handle the matter himself. He rose high into the air, jumped over the high wall and flew away as he swept past the roof ridge.

Master Golden Blade had already arrived on the scene when the

White Stone City Master landed at Yue Yang's little courtyard.

The expression on Master Golden Blade's face was extremely serious, "This is a disaster. All Yue Clan's servants were killed. Fourth Mistress and the kid went missing. It's really a big trouble this time."

White Stone City's master trembled after he listened to what Master Golden Blade said, "Who is so daring to attack Yue Clan's member? Moreover, Fourth Mistress was just home for few days. It couldn't be such a coincidence even if it was just a robbery. Could it be that this is premeditated? We're dead, this is certainly a big and serious matter."

"It would be fine if they come for Yue Clan but it would be a great disaster if they come for Hua Clan's older sister." Master Golden Blade said bitterly.

(Shiro: Fourth Mother is from the Hua Clan)

"Impossible. No one should have known about the identity of Fourth Mistress..." White Stone City's Master trembled again as he heard what Master Golden Blade said, his face dripping with sweat.

Chapter 184 – A Heart's Sincerest Cry!

Yue Yang had never rushed so much to get somewhere before, but he didn't feel tired at all.

Even though he was carrying Yue Bing and was running through a mountainous path for a few dozen kilometers, Yue Yang didn't feel anything, enduring the whole thing in one breath. His heart was angry and indignant, making him feel more choked and uncomfortable over time. Nothing must happen to Fourth Mother and the little girl, otherwise Yue Yang would probably turned into an avenging Demon King.

Yue Bing was carried by Yue Yang at first, but when she saw it was too exhausting for Yue Yang who was sweating profusely, she put her sadness aside and got down, running alongside her brother.

It was just that her speed was too slow, unable to catch up with Yue Yang.

Although Yue Yang pulled her hands along, it was still tiring for her.

Finally, Yue Yang summoned the Bloody Queen and ordered her to carry Yue Bing. Although the Bloody Queen couldn't fly too fast carrying a person, but Yue Bing wasn't very heavy. With great difficulty, she could still match Yue Yang's speed. When the Bloody Queen got tired, Yue Yang carried Yue Bing again and ran along the way.

This long path of running made Yue Yang realized that he still lacked one type of beast, and that was: a mount.

A mount wouldn't be needed at normal times, but during emergency, there could never be enough.

After running for a few hours along this long path without rest, searching around the surrounding with its sense of smell, Hui Tai Lang led Yue Yang and Yue Bing straight to the Starved Dog Range. When they reached in front of the Starved Dog Range, where the mountain peaks could be seen from afar, clouds floated overcast and it started raining cats and dogs. Hui Tai Lang who was relying on its sense of smell to search, gradually lost its ability to do so. Due to the heavy rain, it lost its way and was unable to search for Fourth Mother and the little girl's tracks...

"Brother, what do we do, what do we do?" Yue Bing started crying unstoppably. In the rain, she hugged her brother as she cried out loudly.

"There must be a way, there must be a way..." Yue Yang also hated the damned heavens for making it rain at times like this, but he was definitely not going to admit defeat.

For Fourth Mother, he would definitely not succumb.

Even if his opponent was the heavens itself, Yue Yang would resist until the end.

This wasn't a battle. Fighting with the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, his life might not be in danger even if he lost. Because, for a person like her, if she really wanted to kill him, she wouldn't need to spend so much effort, she could just kill him instantly. It was because Yue Yang saw through the fact that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty would definitely not kill him, so he didn't fight with everything he had, conserving his strength instead. Only then would he be able to have a future. However, this matter of saving Fourth Mother, if he gave up, then their lives would be in grave danger. Hence, he would not give up no matter what. He must save both Fourth Mother and the little girl.

He must only win this fight, he couldn't lose!

Since Fourth Mother's and the little girl's smell had disappeared, washed by the rain, they had lost their tracks.

What do they do now?

Yue Yang turned a few rounds before finally deciding to summon Xiao Wen Li out.

"Xiao Wen Li, do you understand what I meant? I mean, take this searching as a part of the battle. Use your battle sense and find the location of Fourth Mother and little Shuang-er, do you understand? We will go according to your battle sense and save Fourth Mother... If you can't, then we can find that Chang Dao instead. But I hope that we can first find Fourth Mother. I saw a few horse carriage tracks on the road, and the tracks are quite

deep. Someone must have saved them, maybe it is Uncle Nan or Aunt Xu. But I daresay someone has already saved Fourth Mother...” Yue Yang’s words was said only to console Yue Bing, because there might be a possibility that Chang Dao had kidnapped Fourth Mother and ran away with a horse carriage. But Yue Yang was still unable to make Xiao Wen Li understand to use her battle sense to find Fourth Mother, “Try to feel it with your sense, use your natural senses and think about where they are. Then we will go to the way that you pointed out, do you understand?”

“Unn!” Xiao Wen Li seemed to understand. However, she pointed out a direction towards the White Stone City.

“No, wrong, I know Fourth Mother’s house is in White Stone City, but Fourth Mother has been kidnapped by someone. Kidnapped, do you understand? We are trying to find her, find Fourth Mother and little Shuang-er. Try to feel it for a bit, sense their presence carefully. Where is Fourth Mother?” Yue Yang felt that if Xiao Wen Li couldn’t find her, he would quickly enter his Dream Realm and ask the Heavenly Sword Goddess. No matter what, he must find Fourth Mother.

“...” Xiao Wen Li’s finger still pointed at the direction of White Stone City stubbornly.

“Heavens, no, no. Not White Stone City. We have just come from that direction. We want to go to the Starved Dog Range. Do you see that mountainous range? Fourth Mother must have gone there. Try to sense it carefully, and find where exactly she is!” Yue Yang was sincerely anxious.

“...” Xiao Wen Li closed her eyes and tried to feel for a long time. However, in the end, her fingers were still pointing towards White Stone City.

“What do we do? Brother? What do we do?” They were in a dilemma now. Hui Tai Lang had led them to the Starved Dog Range while Xiao Wen Li felt that they were still at White Stone City.

“Are they truly in White Stone City? Or are they on their way? Are they far?” Yue Yang was extremely troubled. His logic tells him that it would be best to believe in Hui Tai Lang, it did lead them correctly so far after all. But Xiao Wen Li would definitely not trick him at this kind of time, she had always been very obedient. Furthermore, her battle sense was extremely strong and she had always been able to make strategic decisions. Hence, Yue Yang felt that he should believe in Xiao Wen Li more.

It was just that he might make a huge mistake with terrible consequences if he turned back now.

Yue Yang stomped his feet. Making his decision, he decided to bring Yue Bing back to the Academy.

He decided to ask the old cunning fox to go to the Starved Dog Range on his behalf to save Fourth Mother. It would be best if he could catch Chang Dao. As for himself, he would use a teleportation scroll to return back to White Stone City. If Fourth Mother was still hiding inside the White Stone City, it would be best if he returned.

Yue Bing was stunned. When she heard that, she immediately praised Yue Yang's idea.

The old cunning fox wasn't in the Academy. Yue Yang almost went insane, he angrily wrecked the old cunning fox's house. In the end, he thought, if he couldn't find the vice principal, the principal would be fine too. In any case, he only need to find a strong person to help them.

Yue Yang quickly brought Yue Bing and rushed to the small building which was the Principal's office.

There were strange magic circles, pillars and a labyrinth made out of well-trimmed bushes blocking Yue Yang's path.

If it was at normal times, it wouldn't be difficult to pass through it.

But Yue Yang didn't have time to walk around the bush...

He completely didn't care and exploded his strength, destroying everything on his path straight away. He left Yue Bing outside as he burst forward all the way, turning the whole place outside the small building upside down.

On the way to the second floor, he realized that there was an increasing pressure pushing him down which each step. When he reached the second floor, the pressure was almost ten times

stronger than on the first floor. Yue Yang was extremely surprised. Seemed like this Principal was not an ordinary person.

However, Yue Yang couldn't care so much. When he couldn't open the door, he immediately took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade and slashed open the door.

However, just like entering the Mirage back then, he couldn't slash the door. It was as if there was an incorporeal dimensional space shielding the Principal's room in the second floor.

“Is it so difficult to meet the Principal?” Yue Yang was furious. He was about to use his Innate strength and destroy this dimensional place. Just as he was raising his Hui Jin Magic Blade ferociously and was about to unleash his Innate strength to break the dimensional space, suddenly an extremely gentle voice resounded, “Student Titan, do you need something?” Yue Yang felt the pressure disappeared as his body uncontrollably fell forward, falling to the floor.

When he lifted his head, he realized there was a thin lady looking down on her table, swiftly writing something.

Her long, black hair flowed down smooth like a waterfall, covering almost half of her face.

Yue Yang could only see her neat bangs. Due to the angle, he couldn't see her face clearly. However, from her snow-white skin and delicate hands, Yue Yang could feel that her temperament was different from the others. She was just like a stalk of white orchid,

clean and lofty.

She gave off a feeling of an especially educated person that was both calm and pure. She resembled a pure immortal in paintings who did not bother herself with the common folks troubles.

“You are the Principal?” Yue Yang heard that the Ivy Academy’s Principal was a beauty that no student had ever seen before. However, he never thought that she would be this young. She looked like she was a student, maybe even those geeky girls who scored exemplary results! Looking at her personality and interests, she looked a little similar to the mysterious beauty who always brought a book with her everywhere. It’s just that her voice and hairstyle was different from the mysterious beauty, otherwise, Yue Yang would have suspected that they were the same person. Yue Yang realized that he didn’t feel anything right now, he only wanted to save Fourth Mother. Hence, he hurriedly explained to the Principal who was still writing her documents busily, “Someone kidnapped my Fourth Mother and little sister. Tracking their smell, they should be at the Starved Dog Range. However, there was a big rain halfway there, hence we lost their tracks. I tried to sense them using their spirit, and found that my Fourth Mother is still in White Stone City. I, I came here to beg your help. Hope that you could lend me your strength... You can go to the White Stone City or the Starved Dog Range, but I hope that you could come and help me go both places to check their location. The old cunning fox, no, the Vice Principal is not here, Grandma Wu Teng and the eagle-eyed teacher is also not here, hence I can only ask for your help. I hope you can do us this favour. As long as you helped me save Fourth Mother, if you have any request in the future, I will do it without a second word!”

“I understand. Could you shout to your Fourth Mother and little sister sincerely with all of your heart when I raise my hands? I have a [Heart Cry] Inherent Skill, I would need your heart’s sincerest cry to determine their location!” The beautiful Principal who was bending over her desk slowly raised her hands, that was soft and tender as an orchid and flawless, unblemished. Her gentle voice floated into Yue Yang’s ears, “Start to cry out now, the more heartfelt your cry is, the more accurate I would feel their location in!”

“Fourth Mother!” Yue Yang shouted loudly. He didn’t know if this was possible, but he would believe her Inherent Skill.

A surge of bright light appeared on the beautiful Principal’s hands.

It then turned into countless pictures.

Yue Yang saw in front of a horse carriage, Uncle Nan and Aunt Xu was helping Fourth Mother up the horse carriage. However, before he managed to see the picture clearly, it had already disappeared.

The beautiful Principal suddenly coughed a little, “Your heart is not calm enough. You have to maintain the state of an empty mind. Try to call out sincerely once again, I can only use my Inherent Skill three times in one month. Don’t waste this chance again.”

“Alright... Fourth Mother, Fourth Mother, Shuang-er!” Yue Yang

tried to calm himself with all his effort. He thought about how Fourth Mother had always taken care of him and got rid of any other distracting thoughts in his mind. He only thought about Fourth Mother with all of his heart. This time, when he cried out, the whole space was shaken, as if there was an invisible shockwave that had blasted through the room.

The bright light in the beautiful Principal's hands shattered then rearranged themselves into a picture.

There were two horse carriages moving forward side by side.

One carriage turned a corner halfway and went towards the Red Cliff City while the other went towards the Black Forest City.

The scene flashed. The horse carriage that had moved towards the Red Cliff City had stopped and Fourth Mother, who was wearing common folks' clothes, hurried got down from the carriage. There were two familiar-looking woman helping Fourth Mother down, but Yue yang couldn't remember who they were. They walked towards a small bridge and went on a small raft. As the small raft floated away, the horse carriage also continued on its way.

Yue Yang suddenly realized that Fourth Mother did not actually go to the Starved Dog Range. Instead, she had gone to Red Cliff City, and got off her carriage halfway.

The scent that Hui Tai Lang had followed was Uncle Nan and Aunt Xu who had worn Fourth Mother's clothes to attract the

enemy's' attention. It seemed like Fourth Mother was afraid that someone would follow them from their scent.

“It's still not very clear. Shout out louder this time, it's your last chance!” The beautiful Principal started coughing in pain. Seemed like this [Heart Cry] caused a great distress to her body.

“Fourth Mother!” Yue Yang shouted loudly once again.

His head buzzed, as if there was a hammer that had shaken his soul.

Countless scenes shattered and surged inside Yue Yang's mind.

Not only could he see it with his eyes, the scenes had also appeared inside Yue Yang's minds. The bright light on the beautiful Principal's hands burst into more magical pictures. The scenes clearly showed there was an enemy chasing after Fourth Mother. Furthermore, there was not only one, there were more than a dozen of them. There was even an expert amongst them, who could chase after them easily and killed everyone inside the carriage ruthlessly. There were some enemies who continued to pursue forward, while some others went against the stream. There were also enemies who tried searching by the river. They had split apart to search for Fourth Mother... There was another scene showing Uncle Nan, Aunt Xu and another woman who had disguised herself as Fourth Mother being captured... Finally, Yue Yang saw there was a shadow pouncing onto the bamboo raft. Other than seeing Fourth Mother's horrified expression, Yue Yang could also seem to hear Yue Shuang's terrified cry!

“Brother...”

Yue Yang’s whole body shook as he started to sweat profusely.

Outside the window, Yue Bing was too anxious from the wait and called out for him. If it wasn’t for her calling out to him, Yue Yang would probably not be able to break away from the realm that he was feeling with his soul.

“I can sense that Fourth Mother had already been captured. Furthermore, she was captured not too long ago, by a woman who could fly. That woman was currently flying towards the direction of the Starved Dog Range. You should go to the Starved Dog Range quickly now to save her while I go and save your little sister. She should still be at White Stone City... The girl that your Fourth Mother carried was not your sister, because she didn’t have any reaction towards your cry...” The beautiful Principal waved her hand and immediately, Yue Yang had a feeling like he was pushed out of the window like a bullet.

“You, you, are you okay?” The beautiful Principal was bending over her desk, so Yue Yang couldn’t see her face. However, she seemed to be in extreme pain.

At the same time, there were drops of blood dripping on her clothes, creating blobs of red on her white, flawless clothes.

She was vomiting quite a lot of blood, shocking Yue Yang.

The beautiful Principal waved her hands, her voice a little vague, “This is my old illness, it’s nothing much. I will go immediately after I rest for a while. Quickly go and save your Fourth Mother!”

Yue Yang felt an unspeakable gratitude in his heart. This beautiful Principal was neither friend nor close relatives with him, but she was willing to help him find Fourth Mother. Even if it would cause such a great toll on her body, she still used her [Heart Cry] Inherent Skill. Yue Yang didn’t know why she was helping him. Maybe she was this altruistic with other students too, or perhaps it was for another reason, but Yue Yang was really thoroughly moved by her actions this time.

True sincerity showed itself in time of need indeed.

She had helped him without asking anything else when he really needed help.

This favour, he would definitely return it back to her!

If her body was weak and sickly, it didn’t matter what kind of illness it was, he would definitely find the best medicine to treat her.

If there wasn’t this sickly beauty, Yue Yang would really have no idea how to find more information on Fourth Mother’s location. He wouldn’t even know if Fourth Mother was dead or alive... Right now, at least he knew that there was a woman who could fly who had captured Fourth Mother and brought her back to the Starved

Dog Range. As for Yue Shuang, he now knew that she had been hidden by Fourth Mother previously. As for that girl that Fourth Mother was carrying, who exactly was she?

Whose kid was she?

Who would purposely give their child to Fourth Mother, knowing that someone was trying to capture her?

Those two women's faces looked extremely familiar, but Yue Yang really couldn't remember where he had seen them before... Yue Yang heart was in a mess as he jumped out from the window.

Yue Bing immediately charged towards him and hugged her brother, fearfully looking at Yue Yang, afraid that he would tell her bad news.

"Fourth Mother is fine, we must go and save her quickly now. Principal has promised me to save Shuang-er. Shuang-er seemed to still be hiding in White Stone City. Principal would definitely help Shuang-er out, so we only have to save mom now! Yue Bing, don't cry, we must stay strong. We can't just surrender to fate. We can win, we will definitely be able to bring mom back. Definitely!" Yue Yang carried Yue Bing on his back as he opened a teleportation scroll.

"Yes, we will definitely be able to save Mom, definitely. Mom!" Yue Bing, who had tears streaming down her face emotionally cried out, her voice echoing through the clouds above.

Chapter 185 – I Shall Grant You Death!

“Wait a minute! So you guys are really here!” The old cunning fox suddenly appeared not far ahead, shouting loudly, “You really made me run around in circles...”

“Quickly help us to save Fourth Mother!” Yue Yang yelled out, charging towards the old cunning fox and grabbing his sleeves, before dragging him straight towards the teleportation gate.

“Stu, stupid! Let me go! We have already found your Fourth Mother! You are going to save your Fourth Mother carrying your sister on your back? What nonsense are you doing?” The old cunning fox hurriedly held Yue Yang, the rash brat, down. Yue Yang and Yue Bing were both stunned when they heard him. Fourth Mother was already saved? Could it be that the old cunning fox had saved Fourth Mother and brought her back? How did he know that Fourth Mother and the little girl were kidnapped?

“Nonsense, if I leave Yue Bing alone, what happened if the enemies are still around and decided to attack her? You are also not here, how would I be assured leaving her alone!” Yue Yang didn’t thought that leaving Yue Bing in this place alone was a good idea. Although it may not be convenient for him to carry her and save Fourth Mother at the same time, it would be much better than leaving her alone.

If he left Yue Bing alone, how terrified and insecure would she be? She would probably driven insane with her imagination.

She would be an easy target for the enemy to attack... No matter how tired Yue Yang was, he wouldn't abandon his sister. As for the old cunning fox's news about Fourth Mother, if she had already been rescued, that would definitely be the best news ever!

Yue Yang and Yue Bing didn't ask for more details on the rescue as they were immediately overjoyed, cheering and hugging each other.

After confirming the news repeatedly with the old cunning fox, Yue Yang finally believed that the old cunning fox was not lying to him. Immediately, his whole body was washed with exhaustion.

He didn't manage to help at all, he even ran around in circles for the whole day.

However, no matter what, Fourth Mother had finally been rescued.

However, the old cunning fox didn't claim credit for himself. Instead, he shook his hands and said, "It wasn't me who rescued her. It was His Majesty and Marshall Yue who led a group of soldiers and personally rescued her. When I heard about the news, your Fourth Mother has already been rescued, I was only responsible for finding the two of you. The preparator who tried to rob your Fourth Mother is the Thousand Goblins King's subordinate. His/her power was extremely strong, even Marshall Yue and General Feng Kuang were injured a little. Fortunately both of them are fine. Let's go, your Fourth Mother is waiting for you two... This time, the situation was really dangerous. If it wasn't for the help from the State Grandmaster's [Reveal] Inherent

Skill that allowed us to rescue your Fourth Mother, the Thousand Goblins King's plans would have gone smoothly. Who would have thought that the Thousand Goblins King's power has become this strong!"

(Shiro: Thousand Goblins King is actually Ten Thousand Goblins King – 万妖王. I think Thousand sounds cooler than Ten Thousand, so I'm going to name him Thousand Goblins King instead)

Speaking of Thousand Goblins King, the old cunning fox's expression turned serious.

"Grandpa and General Feng Kuang were injured? What kind of person is that Thousand Goblins King exactly?" Yue Bing was shocked.

In Soaring Dragon Continent, although the old man Yue Hai who was a [Senior Elder] might not be the strongest Ranker, his fame in wars was almost unrivalled. He even led a group of 500 soldiers to fight against 200,000 soldiers and defended their city walls which was located near a cliff, for one whole month. Although Marshall Yue Hai had the help of a natural stronghold to defend the city, the achievement of defending a city to death was something that any other Marshalls or Generals couldn't even hope to catch up. It was also because of this battle that Elder Yue Hai was nicknamed the "Ironman Yue" "Iron Wall Yue".

That battle was Elder Yue Hai's breakthrough to fame.

It was just that after that battle, Elder Yue Hai lost an arm.

However, Elder Yue Hai didn't retire from the battle scene after being crippled from war. Instead, he demonstrated extraordinary talent and skill, getting stronger and stronger with time. His single crusade would not end until his army had won thousands of battles. Other than the few battles they fought in the Demon Abyss where they had to retreat due to the huge difference in strength, his army wars rarely resulted in defeat. He was Da Xia Kingdom's most reliable, most trusted war god, the Marshall Commander.

As for Feng Kuang, there was no need to confirm his strength. Although his army wasn't as powerful as the Elder Yue hai, his powers were more or less the level of Elder Yue Hai.

Just by hearing his nickname, "Thousand Dried Bones", one would know what kind of person Feng Kuang was right away.

(Shiro: Same thing as the Thousand Goblins King , Thousand Dried Bones is actually Ten Thousand Dried Bones – 万骨枯. Changed it for naming sake, hope you guys won't mind)

The number of enemies who died under his massacre, no matter if it was human soldiers from the Soaring Dragon Continent or demons and monsters armies from the Demon Abyss, went beyond the thousands.

That was how he was nicknamed as the "Thousand Dried Bones" by the common folks...

Even with Elder Yue Hai, General Feng Kuang and the Da Xia Emperor Jun Wu You fighting altogether in a team, two of them were still injured. It was obvious that the enemy's powers was

extremely terrifying. However, Yue Yang and Yue Bing had never heard the name “Thousand Goblins King” before. Who was he actually? Was he a Demon King in the Demon Abyss? Or a Lich King? Or was it a human Ranker’s nickname? Was he a small kingdom’s King?

When Yue Yang thought of this, his forehead creased into a frown.

Especially when he noticed how serious the old cunning fox’s expression was. It made Yue Yang slightly shiver. Even the old cunning fox thought that he was extremely formidable. Seemed like he was definitely not an easy opponent.

“Thousand Goblins King, he is an extremely terrifying demon. He was extremely brutal, killing was like his second nature. Furthermore, he had also cultivated numerous, incomparably vicious skills. Three thousand years ago, due to his brutality to humans, he was sealed by the ancient human Rankers. However, his loyal disciples continued to determinedly and fanatically followed him all this while, accumulating strength little by little, generation by generation. Throughout the years, when they felt that they were confident enough with their abilities to break the Thousand Goblins King’s seal, they would rise in revolt and attack us. There would at least be one bloody war between humans and these disciples who wanted to rescue Thousand Goblins King in every hundred years or so... The bereaved families of the Thousand Goblin King disciples who died in these battles have since worked together with the Demon Abyss and build a close relationship with the Demonic Palace. Their surviving vitality was extremely strong, it was very difficult to eliminate them from the roots. Furthermore, it was said that they had already cultivated an

Innate, and they were concealing their great strength. In the last hundred years, they had begun to stir troubles a few decades ago to test their strengths, but failed. Right now, it seemed like they are about to rise in revolt again... If these vicious, fanatical disciples managed to open the “Heaven Stairway” and find the “Heaven Resurrection Crystal”, they would succeed in breaking the Thousand Goblins King’s seal. If they succeed in resurrecting the Thousand Goblin King into this world, this world will probably turn into hell with blazing flames and rivers of blood...

When the old cunning fox explained this, he was looking at Yue Bing, intentionally or otherwise.

Yue Yang was a little bewildered. The old cunning fox didn’t explain why the Thousand Goblins King’s disciples wanted to kidnap Fourth Mother. Instead, he was looking at Yue Bing with that kind of look. What was going on?

Could it be that Fourth Mother was related to the Thousand Goblins King’s seal and resurrection?

Teleporting through the old cunning fox’s teleportation gate, Yue Yang and Yue Bing arrived at the Main Hall of the Imperial Palace and saw Fourth Mother who had just been rescued.

Fourth Mother seemed to still have lingering fears, her face deathly white. Her whole body was wrapped in Jun Wu You’s scholarly robe, her arms and feet were both bare. With her slightly revealed plump cleavage, it was obvious that she was naked underneath. Could it be that she had been taken advantage of by those infidels...? Yue Yang’s heart immediately palpated, feeling

extremely saddened and furious... Fourth Mother immediately ran towards Yue Bing and hugged her daughter with open arms, before crying out loudly.

“Mom!” Yue Bing hurriedly hugged her mother back, crying as if it was the end of the world. “Mother!” Yue Bing tightly embraced her mother, crying until she nearly couldn’t catch her breath.

“Aih!” Elder Yue Hai couldn’t help but to sigh a little. He turned his head, unable to bear watching this scene.

“Fortunately we rescued her in time, otherwise the consequences would be unthinkable. Little Yue Yang, this is not your fault. It’s our fault for neglecting our duties. Thousand Goblins King’s subordinates were all extremely cunning, they had even managed to plant a spy inside the Yue Clan. When we realized that there was something wrong, they have already made their move.” Due to Yue Yang’s exemplary performance on the fake Elder Tian Suo’s case in the Medical Institution, General Feng Kuang had a really good impression on Yue Yang. General Feng Kuang, who rarely spoke himself, initiated to explain the entire story to Yue Yang, “Those women in the tavern are people on your side, right? They were extremely sharp, they had immediately acted the moment when they received the news. They were the one who helped Fourth Mother escape. If it wasn’t for them, Fourth Mistress would probably lost her life now...”

“You guys should stay in the Imperial Palace for some time. I don’t know about other places, but it would definitely be safer inside the palace.” Yue Yang knew that Jun Wu You was an unusual Emperor, but he never thought that Jun Wu You would

personally went out of the palace to help chasing after the criminals and rescue Fourth Mother. His impression on the Emperor immediately became a lot better.

A white-haired old man who was carrying the little girl suddenly entered. The little girl was crying irreconcilably.

However, the moment she saw Yue Yang, she immediately jumped down to the ground and threw herself into Yue Yang's embrace.

It wasn't good when the little girl cry. She poured out her heart when she cry and let out her voice as loudly as she could, not caring about anything at all. She was unlike Fourth Mother and Yue Bing, who was hugging each other and silently wiping their tears. Instead she would cry as loud as she could. Especially when she saw Yue Yang, her cries had almost made the Main Hall collapse. She had completely cried all of her fears and humiliation out.

"Don't cry, don't cry... Little baby, don't cry..." Yue Yang hurriedly consoled her.

"My darling, Shuang-er, come here quickly, let me hug you too!" Fourth Mother hurriedly loosened Yue Bing and walked towards the little girl, wanting to hug the little girl.

"Big brother, big brother Xiao San!" Who would have guessed that the little girl had turned her head instead, unwilling to let her hands off from Yue Yang no matter what. She kept hugging Yue

Yang and refused to let go. Everyone thought that the little girl had gone too attached playing with her brother usually, even her mother couldn't be compared to him at this kind of situation.

“Shuang-er, I thought I wouldn't be able to see you anymore!” Fourth Mother hugged Yue Yang and Yue Bing altogether, crying out loudly.

“Wuuu!” Yue Bing had also ran over and huddled in the hug, hugging both her brother and mother tightly and crying out loudly.

“Fourth Mother... Where are your clothes? Yue Yang felt something wrong when they hugged each other together with the little girl. She was really naked under the robe. Could she really be taken advantage of by those bad people?

“Cough, your Fourth Mother is fine. We came just in time, only her clothes were torn.” General Feng Kuang reached his hands out and patted Yue Yang's shoulders, “As for those bastards with bad intentions, I have already killed them all. You'll have to thank all of your loyal subordinates, they protected your mother in front of the horse carriage right until the end. It was only when they saw me rescuing your mother did they finally breathed their last breath in peace. Although they were born into families with low-class background, I really respected them. They could practically be lauded as heroes and heroines!”

“My subordinates?” Yue Yang was shocked. When did he had any subordinates?

A fog of doubt floated into his mind, like black clouds that covered the sun.

He felt that something was wrong somewhere.

He knew that something was wrong somewhere. Could it be the timing of the appearance of the Thousand Goblins King? Could it be their purpose of attacking them? Or could it be the process of the rescue? They even said he had subordinates. There was a strange feeling that he just couldn't shake off...

Yue Yang felt a little anxious in his heart, he even felt like the world was turning in the wrong direction.

He couldn't understand the reason, but he suddenly had a severe headache.

He couldn't help but to shut his eyes and tried his utmost to use his Innate Qi to eliminate the headache and dizziness in his head. Who would know that when his Innate Qi flowed to his brain, his head felt even more painful than before. It was as if his brain was pricked by countless needles, extremely uncomfortable... His eyes, especially, which were the most sensitive part of his body, were searing in pain from getting pricked with his Innate Qi. Amidst his extreme pain, Yue Yang suddenly had a revelation.

It turned out his Innate [Invisible Sword Qi] had a special branch skill called [Open Heaven's Eyes].

This [Open Heaven's Eyes] was not an easy skill. Normally one would not be able to open it so easily, one must cultivate to a suitable realm before one would be able to open it.

Yue Yang never thought that he could open it at this time... Although he only opened the most basic, first level of [Heaven's Eyes], it was still an extremely rare occurrence. Most importantly, once this [Heaven's Eyes] were opened, it would be able to complement his Inherent Skill [Divine Vision]. They might even fuse together into one, becoming a new kind of ability...

[Open Heaven's Eyes]'s first realm was [Naked Eyes Traverse].

More accurately, this was the most basic realm of heightening the senses of his vision. It was still not the true [Open Heaven's Eyes] yet, it was only the superficial beginning.

Yue Yang covered his eyes, feeling as if a golden light shone into his eyes. Afterwards, he felt as if there was something that broke out from his eyes, making him shout out in pain, "Ah!"

Everyone was shocked by his shout. They thought that his brat had lost control and was about to go berserk again.

Elder Yue Hai and Feng Kuang both looked at him nervously.

The current Yue Yang was no longer the youngster who barged into the Yue Clan Castle previously. He had now improved by leaps

and bounds, so it wouldn't be easy to stop him. Even Jun Wu You was cautious against Yue Yang's movements. If this brat really went crazy, he was prepared to stop him personally too. He hoped that this brat wouldn't destroy his palace.

“What's wrong, San-er?” Fourth Mother was shocked, retreating a few steps back as she hurriedly asked full of concern.

“I understand, I finally understand it now... Fourth Mother, let's return home. We'll pack up our stuff and clean up, then move out from there and find a place where nobody can find us.” Yue Yang hold the little girl who was still hugging him and sobbing non-stop tightly. This little thing had refused to let go and continued to hug Yue Yang no matter what he did.

“Re, return? Fourth Mother is afraid... San-er, could you return instead, pack and clean up? Then we can move out!” Fourth Mother was still frightened out of her wits.

“All of you guys can just stay here, I will ask someone to send your stuff over. You should just stay in the palace.” Jun Wu You had thought that Yue Yang was about to go berserk initially. Who would know that this brat was actually thinking of leaving. He hurriedly urged them to stay, “Here at the Da Xia Imperial Palace, there are no rules and regulations like other places. Don't worry.”

“San-er, let's just stay here!” Fourth Mother hurriedly advised Yue Yang too.

“Brother...”

Yue Bing knew that with Yue Yang's personality, he didn't like to receive favours from others.

Furthermore, their mother always taught them to always work hard and continue to improve themselves. Hence, she also didn't oppose the idea of leaving, it was just that she thought leaving without saying thanks after his Majesty Jun Wu You and Grandpa had rescued their mother was a little rude!

"Bing-er, move over to that side. Here, carry the little girl and wait for me there!" Yue Yang took the little girl who refused to let go even if her life depended on it and yanked her off. He then shoved her into Yue Bing's embrace. The little girl was unresigned and struggled for awhile, but finally gave up resisting. It was just that her little mouth started to cry out "Wah, wah", looking like she was completely frightened by Yue Yang. Everyone was baffled, for what reason did this youngster want to advise fourth mother to leave the imperial palace so badly?

"San-er, I understand that you are very stubborn, but you should listen to His Majesty's and your grandpa's words. In any case, you are still very young..." Fourth Mother wiped away her tears.

"Alright that's enough, you impostor! I was already suspicious of you from the start, it's just that I didn't have the ability to see through just now. Now I can see that in this outer shell of Fourth Mother, there is a cunning demoness hiding." Yue yang took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade and pointed it to Fourth Mother, his killing intent exploding viciously.

His words shocked everyone present, including Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and General Feng Kuang. Even the white-haired State grandmaster frowned his eyebrows.

They had actually rescued a fake Fourth Mother? This Fake Fourth Mother was an enemy?

If that was the case, where was the real Fourth Mother?

Yue Yang, this brat, he had only came here for a few minutes. How could he be sure that this Fourth Mother was fake?

“San-er, don’t joke around. I’m not fake, i’m not. I’m your Fourth Mother!” Seeing the Hui Jin Magic Blade, Fourth Mother was crying in shock as her face paled.

“Stop pretending. You’ve made too much blunder. Even if I did not manage to see through your disguise, I will also suspect that you are fake.” Yue Yang raised three of his fingers, “Firstly, I was given some directions by my Principal’s [Heart’s Cry] Inherent Skill just now. She told me that Fourth Mother had just been kidnapped not too long ago, but you had been rescued for more than an hour ago. My Fourth Mother was captured on a raft, but you were rescued from in front of a horse carriage. With General Feng Kuang’s words, I could already determine that you are not my Fourth Mother. The second point is Shuang-er’s response to you. Although Shuang-er likes to stick to me, she wouldn’t refuse her mother’s hug. Her mother will always be her first choice. On the other hand, Shuang-er didn’t show any reaction to you at all, it was as if you were a stranger. That’s why I became even more suspicious of you. Thirdly, you don’t act like you are Fourth

Mother at all, you understand? You only looked like Fourth Mother on the surface, you don't have the substance she had inside. My Fourth Mother would never wear another man's clothes, and she would definitely not let herself continue to be naked underneath the robes. Fourth Mother is a virtuous woman who is ready to die to preserve her chastity. If her enemies really wanted to humiliate her, she would definitely bite off her tongue to kill herself rather than live and resigned to her fate.

She is a mother who is timid at normal times but is calm when facing a major situation. My good mom who is always calm in problematic situation, it doesn't matter if I fought until I was drenched in blood from head to toe or if the world ends; as long as Bing-er, me and Shuang-er is here, she will still be our mother. She is a great mother who would bear the burden of the whole sky for us if it is needed. She would definitely not be so emotional like you, crying and shouting in distress all this time... In the family, normally, she would listen to my words, because she feel that I am the small leader of the family. However, in front of an audience, she is my mother, so she will never allow me to be rude to my elders. Furthermore, she would never abandon our peaceful and warm home so easily... If it is the real Fourth Mother, she will never stay in the Imperial Palace unless both Yue Yang and Yue Bing have agreed to stay... As for you, you did not even think about anything and decided to stay straight away. You even pretended to advise me. As for your outer appearance, I have nothing much to say. You have a completely different body than Fourth Mother. I could even see through the disguise of a fake Princess Qian Qian whom I was not familiar with, let alone the Fourth Mother who nurtured me and brought me up. How could I not recognise her?" Yue Yang immediately raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade the moment he finished his speech.

“Hahaha!” The fake Fourth Mother suddenly spoke with a different voice. A ball of black light flashed as a fog-like shield surrounded her body.

Then the fog-like light entered her body once again, but the fake Fourth Mother had turned into another alluring woman.

She was much taller than Fourth Mother, she was even one head taller than Yue yang.

Her voice was filled with a pretty and flirty tone.

She pointed at Yue Yang with her black, sharp fingernails, “Sect Leader told me to be extra careful towards you, but I didn’t pay attention to his words. Now it seems like the Sect Leader wasn’t talking emptily. Brat, you are really hard to deal with.”

Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai looked at each other. They seemed to recognise this woman. Their faces gradually turned serious.

The white-haired State Grandmaster smiled, “I was thinking who was it, so it turns out to be the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder. No wonder you managed to fool us all. I thought there was something wrong in my heart, but there wasn’t any reaction from my [Reveal] Inherent Skill... If it wasn’t for little Yue Yang who discovered you in time, you would really have fooled us all.”

The old cunning fox who hadn’t speak since the beginning had

also nodded and agreed, “That’s right, I’m really ashamed of myself. We are all already so old, yet we couldn’t compare to a little kid. It’s really embarrassing!”

“She has indeed done a perfect disguise. Furthermore, she purposely did not wear any clothes, so that we would feel that it was improper to look and wouldn’t dare to look at her too much.” Feng Kuang roared angrily, “Spit it out now, where is the real Fourth Mother? Although Hundred Transformations Demon Elder is one of the Four Major Demon Disciple of the Thousand Goblins Sect, you’ll have to consider your abilities if you want to leave here alive.”

“You guys have the advantage in numbers, so I would definitely not be able to defeat you all. However, if I want to leave, you guys would definitely not be able to stop me. Other than those two old geezers who could probably kept up with me, you guys are not even fart in my eyes. If it wasn’t for the Ranker’s Agreement that prohibited me to kill emperors and harass kingdoms, I would have already killed all of you [Elders] and [Overlords]. Why are you acting powerful in front of me? No matter what, I am still a Minor Innate.” The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder swept a condescending glance across the people in front of her. It was as if she thought that she could completely disregard everyone in this room except for the old cunning fox and the State Grandmaster.

“You are just a Minor Innate who relied on others to be strong, why are you acting powerful in front of me!” Yue Yang was furious. He removed the limitations on his strength level by level as a Runic Circle rose up above his head and flashed. With a rainbow coloured light, he channeled his Spirit Qi to his right hand and grabbed onto the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder’s

throat, not giving her even a chance to defend herself, and smashed her on the ground ruthlessly.

A loud explosion ensued, the whole Palace Main Hall was shaking severely.

As the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder cried out miserably, Yue Yang stomped on that huge breasts of hers ruthlessly, with no mercy at all.

Only a loud cracking sound of fractured ribs was heard before the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder spat out a mouthful of fresh blood violently.

Elder Yue Hai, Jun Wu You and Feng Kuang's chin had all almost dropped down to the ground. Even the old cunning fox and the State Grandmaster was completely dumbstruck. Did this brat just struck down a Level 8 Intermediate-[Emperor], the Minor Innate "Hundred Transformations Demon Elder", with just a single move? What kind of strength did he possess to be able to do that? Even if it was an Innate Ranker, he wouldn't be able to easily struck the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder down to the ground with a single move so easily, right? The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder was, in any case, a well-known and vicious criminal for over two hundred years. Before becoming powerful two hundred years ago, she was a notorious demoness who sucked thousands of men's Yang energy, a demoness who struck fear in many people's hearts the moment her name was mentioned...

Was she really struck down with just a single move by this brat?

Without even a chance to resist or defend herself?

This, this was really unbelievable.

“Spit out my Fourth Mother’s location immediately, and I shall grant you death!” Yue Yang increased the strength on his feet, causing the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder’s chest to produce a series of painful, cracking sound, “Otherwise, I’ll make you feel a life worse than death!”

“You are an Innate, you are an Innate. You can’t kill me... According to the agreement between Rankers, Innate Rankers must not attack people who are lower ranked than them as and when they please, especially killing them. I am an Elder from the Thousand Goblins Sect and our Sect Leader had once participated in your Ranker’s Agreement. We, the Thousand Goblins Sect will not kill your people; Hence, you, Innate Rankers, should also not kill us... If you violate this contract, you would cause a world war. You would also make an enemy out of all the Innate Rankers. At that time, you would be consigned to eternal damnation. You must definitely not kill me. Not only that, you also have to let me go!” The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder cried out anxiously with her mouth full of blood.

“Innate? You are actually the seventh Innate of the Da Xia Kingdom?” The State Grandmaster almost fainted. No wonder [Elder] Ming Xin said that the seventh Innate was not older than thirty years old. What did she mean not older than thirty years old? This brat was only twenty years old!

“You did really well hiding it from this old geezer!” Elder Yue Hai

was trembling all over. He couldn't believe that the Innate that shook the whole country was actually his own grandchild.

Furthermore, it was the grandchild whose performance was the trashiest amongst all at normal times.

Even his most promising son, Yue Gang, had not been able to climb onto the Innate Realm.

He never thought that instead, his grandchild who had endured silently and put on an appearance of trash for decades had finally cultivated into the Innate Realm, the realm that no one in the Yue Clan had managed to reach in thousands of years! He, he might even be the first young Innate, a twenty year old Innate, in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent, no, even from the beginning of history.

Jun Wu You, however, mumbled out while massaging his temples, "No wonder that Qian Qian treated him so nicely... This is bad, wouldn't this mess up the seniority of the family? I would be one generation lower than Big Brother Hai, so I will need to call him grandparent-in-law? This is a mess..."

"You don't have to spout all these Innate Ranker's Agreement. I never signed any agreement before, nor have I heard about it before. I will kill you, even if ten thousand Innate come to save you. Motherfucker, you had actually dared to transform into Fourth Mother to trick me! You are still not telling me her location? Alright then, I shall grant you the most miserable way to die!" Yue Yang became angrier as he spoke, increasing the strength on his feet to step on the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder

chest. He crushed all her ribs alive, cracking them one by one.

Chapter 186 – 1 vs 1, Supreme Duel!

Suddenly, a red teleportation portal with twin revolving rings instantly appeared on the right hand of the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder.

Yue Yang was slightly startled, thinking that she wanted to escape.

He sneered and reached out his right hand, that was covered with mysterious runes, and leaned forward, grabbing the demonic witch, Hundred Transformations Demon Elder's throat tightly. He then raised her up before throwing her with as much force as he could to the other side.

Boom!

The entire hall shook. The rumbling sounded out as the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder's body hit the ground. The sound echoed for a long time. The marble floor was shattered like a spiderweb, extending outwards. Seeing that the red twin ring teleportation portal had appeared, the old fox immediately brought Yue Bing and the little girl away. Jun Wu You, State Grandmaster, Elder Hai and Feng Kuang was on their guards, as if worrying that some strong enemy would descend upon them.

The weird and unusual thing was that they did not try to stop the teleportation at all. They also did not destroy that red twin ring teleportation portal either.

The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder was very strong. However, ever since Yue Yang had officially become Innate Level One, he found out that he had a level of power that could shake the entire continent, especially when buffed by the runes and the Giant Phantom Shadow.

Level 7 [Overlords] and Level 8 [Emperors] did not seem to be undefeatable existences now.

With the effects of his frightening power and the Binding Innate Skill, Yue Yang whose power had been unrestricted found that he could easily decimate a Level 8 ranker!

“Aya...” Hundred Transformations Demon Elder cried for her bitter fate in her heart. She knew that the opponent was an Innate. She was already in despair.

No matter whether the foe was old or young, as long as he was Innate, then they would not be someone she could win against. Of course, she initially did not think that she lacked the strength to even escape. If she felt that she could not win, then she thought that she could definitely escape from this Da Xia Palace. However, when this guy started attacking her, she had completely given up. This guy knew a kind of binding skill that freeze her completely... Not to mention escaping, she couldn't even struggle to resist! This encounter was simply equivalent to a lifetime's worth of misfortune! The only hope now was that the Innate Treaty could bind him!

“Say it, otherwise you'll regret living in this world!” Because Fourth Mother was still in the enemy's hands, Yue Yang was

extremely infuriated.

He twisted the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder's right hand, and started snapping her bones from the fingers up. Bone by bone, joint by joint, he snapped all the finger bones of the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder's right hand, causing her to be in so much pain that she wished that she were dead.

Of course, this was just the beginning. The true suffering was still Yue Yang's Innate Qi. A thread of it went up the nerves of the broken bones and shot upwards.

The Hundred Transformations Demon Disciple Elder had never experience this kind of soul-searching pain that could even corrode her bones. She howled miserably to the heavens.

Yue Yang would not show mercy just because his enemy was a woman.

In his eyes, an enemy was an enemy. There was no distinction between a male or a female. Even if it was a perverted LGBT enemy, he would kill without hesitation!

“Falling into your hands, I admit defeat. But, I really don't know the whereabouts of your Fourth Mother. That's not the mission I have responsibility to carry out. That's being handled by the Hundred Wings and Hundred Eyes, it's completely unrelated to me. My mission is only to attract your attentions, and kidnap Yue Bing and Yue Shuang while at it... I really don't know!” The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder did not speak much at

first. However, she quickly became aware that her resoluteness was completely meaningless in front of Yue Yang.

That was because, Yue Yang was preparing to break all the bones in her body, then rip them out of her body while she was still alive.

Her words did not seem like a lie to Yue Yang.

He raised his right hand and snorted. “In that case, you can die!”

Receiving useless information from the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder, along with his anxiousness of wanting to save Fourth Mother, Yue Yang decided to give a single blow to this Hundred Transformations Demon Elder and immediately set off after killing her.

A voice rang out from behind Yue Yang. “Aren’t you awesome? Lad, if you don’t know the rules of the Innate Realm, then this old fellow can teach you!”

A big hand that was glowing with a golden light extended from behind, grabbing Yue Yang’s wrist that was held up high.

It was more ferocious than thunder, faster than lightning.

Yue Yang’s left fist which held thunderous power came back. He would certainly not hold back, delivering a blow with full power to the enemy...

Boom!

A muffled sound of collision resounded across the hall. The sound was both oppressing to the chest and nauseating.

Yue Yang was jolted backwards by a kind of power that could not be defended against. He first collided with a pillar which snapped before crashing onto a wall. He only stopped when he nearly broke through the wall to the other side. The wall was deeply hollowed out, the bricks turning outwards. Cracks could be found all over the wall, extending like snakes.

On the floor, a deep and long drag mark could be seen.

That was the result of Yue Yang attempting to use his legs to stand firmly. If he was not an Innate, if he did not use his entire force, he would probably be knocked flying out of the palace.

On the other hand, his opponent, a Golden Giant, was also knocked back five steps.

Deep footprints could be seen on the marble floor.

There was a splendid halo below the Golden Giant's feet. He wore an outstanding set of Gold-ranked armour with a special golden radiance. There was a greatsword on his waist and a hunting cape on his back. A golden mask covered his face, causing people to be unable to discern his identity. They could only determine his

strength by the Silver Moon Twin Star Badge he had on his chest.

A Silver Moon Twin Star could indirectly show the realm that this guy was from. He was Innate Level 2!

Behind the Golden Giant, there was also a vague silhouette of shadow that was extremely obscure, but one could still vaguely see a human form out of that shadow.

If a person was not paying attention, they might have even thought that this shadow was the Golden Giant's beast.

In truth, Yue Yang discovered that this faintly discernable shadow was the truly terrifying enemy.

This faint shadow's realm could not be seen clearly even with the combination of Yue Yang's Level 3 [Divine Eyes] and the [Traversing Naked Eye]. However, he knew one thing for certain. Comparing the Golden Giant to this faint shadow, the Golden Giant might not even be equal to one of the shadow's hands.

This gap would probably be the same gap in strength between him and the Phoenix Fairy Beauty...

"I pay respects to His Highness, Jun Wu You. We did not mean to intrude in your palace, much less interfere with political affairs that His Highness is handling." The faint shadow seemed to have faintly bowed towards Jun Wu You. Using a kind of mysterious voice, he spoke. "Regrettably, we must do this. We cannot sit idly

and watch a Ranker that is on the verge of entering the Innate ranks forcefully killed by the people in your palace... Perhaps she has committed an error. However, according to the agreement that us Innates have made with the various countries, we have the rights to redeem our outstanding juniors. Therefore, please offer us a condition. We will not ignore the honor conferred on you emperors by the Ancient Code and our ancestors. However, please understand our plight as well.”

“Since you’ve declared war against Da Xia as well, I won’t agree to release this person. This isn’t the problem between you Innates, this is an affair related to the Soaring Dragon Continent. You Innates can do as you like on the 6th floor of Tong Tian Tower and above. However, since the start of the Soaring Dragon Continent, there have been laws protecting it. Our country’s affairs are not controlled by Innates at all. You Innate rankers cannot interfere with our decisions, unless you declare war on us and kill us all. Otherwise, you cannot take away the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder.” Jun Wu You was extraordinarily stubborn. Even though he was just a Level 7 [Overlord], but towards Innate rankers, he did not show any sign of weakness.

“How troublesome. If we want to bring the person away, do you think you can stop us?” The Golden Giant sneered.

He stomped on the ground and shook his hands.

A golden ring-shaped wave expanded outwards from his body. Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and Feng Kuang were pushed back several steps by the shockwave.

The only person who could still stand without moving at all was the white-haired State Grandmaster.

The Golden Giant then bent his body down, preparing to grab the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder. However, a foot stomped down on the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder's spine heavily, preventing her to get up.

It was Yue Yang.

The Golden Giant's hand could not move.

He hadn't been able to see nor realize when Yue Yang who was sent flying had already come over and stood next to him. He was indignant. How could an Innate Level 2 ranker like him be oppressed by a baby Innate Level 1? If he didn't react to this at all, wouldn't he suffer a huge humiliation?

"You're looking to die!" The Golden Giant slowly straightened up and spat these words at him.

"Foolish!"

Yue Yang agreed in a ridiculing manner. His fist had already attacked the Golden Giant's face.

An explosive sound rang.

The Golden Giant, whose face was completely masked, had completely withstood Yue Yang's fist. He sneered. "Do you only have that much power?"

Yue Yang's [Binding Chains Inherent Skill exploded at the same time with his power. With a single fist, he sent the Golden Giant flying, crashing through the ceiling of the palace. When the Golden Giant, confused and disoriented, fell onto the ground, Yue Yang spat indifferently. "Against you, it's enough!"

"Hou, you're just looking to die!" The Golden Giant angrily jumped back up. He had never been this badly disrespected before.

"Ugly!" Yue Yang welcome the Golden Giant's attack. His body flashed and he had suddenly reappeared at the Golden Giant's back. The Golden Giant had thought of a hundred over different methods to turn around and attack Yue Yang, but he couldn't move his body a single inch. He could only watch helplessly as Yue Yang send him a blow with all of his strength, striking the back of his head heavily. The Golden Giant felt a contradicting, indescribable feeling of fury and gloom as he flew straight towards the wall, smashing straight through the opposite side of the thick walls.

"Good Inherent Skill!" The faint shadow praised him. "Since you're already an Innate, then I have a justification to kill you. Go to hell!"

A black beam of light shot out from the finger of that faint shadow.

This beam of light had that extremely powerful penetrative ability like lasers. However, that thin beam was oddly black.

With a flash, Yue Yang wanted to dodge it. However, he found out to his surprise that the black beam of light could bend... Just when he was prepared to take it head-on with his Sword Qi, a shriveled and aged hand came out from behind him, taking the Black Death Light. With a light grasp, an old man had suddenly appeared behind Yue Yang as he grabbed onto the Black Death Light as if he was catching a black snake.

Rubbing his hands together, the black light then disappeared into thin air.

However, his hands then started spewing black smoke upwards. His hands had turned charred black, as if they were burnt by a hot iron. The smell of burnt skin wafted out.

Slowly, an ordinary-looking old man came out from behind Yue Yang, talking in a gentle manner. “He’s just a child. If you kill him like this without giving an explanation, this old man will treat it as if you’ve declared war on us Da Xia. Also, those other friends who are enjoying the scene, are you interested in fighting with this old man? When it comes to power, I may not be as good as you. When it comes to the power of the country, Da Xia is even further behind and could not be compared to you. However, when it comes to doing something at all costs, our Da Xia boys have never lost to others. Whether it will be war or retreat, you can decide with a single sentence!”

At Yue Yang's other side, another tall and slim old man had appeared. He looked like a refined person, just like a scholar.

He had a polite smile on his face at all times.

However, his looks were completely unlike a scholar's. He looked more like a fierce-looking butcher with eyes filled to the brim with killing intent. He humphed. "Are you bullying our Da Xia? You pieces of shit, come at me! Regardless of whether it's a duel or a group fight, we'll fight you to the very end. What Innate Treaty, isn't that just a load of bullshit? In short, if you don't get out of here this instant, we'll fight now. You think the Thousand Goblins Sect can scare us? Or the Demonic Hall? Who are you trying to scare? You think we're three-year old kids?"

This tall and slim old man who looked refined yet spoke in a straightforward manner lightly tapped on Yue Yang's shoulder with his hand. It seemed to be a gesture for Yue Yang not to speak.

"Heavenly Imperial Guardians, please don't be angry. We have justification in this situation. They can't gloss over it." State Grandmaster mediated with a smile on his face.

"Did you just say that you Da Xia barbarians are reasonable? What a joke, where's your sense of reason? In Da Xia's Palace, an Innate wants to kill a newbie Innate. Not only do you not act as the mediator, you help each other in the dark. What kind of reasoning is that? The Innate Treaty states that any Innate aside from the Heavenly Imperial Guardians can move when a country is in crisis. Nobody can interfere with the direction of the Soaring Dragon Continent, much less kill people as they please, especially juniors

with potential. Otherwise, they're the common enemy of all Innates! You had already signed this treaty to not interfere with matters. But now, you have gone back on your words! You act as men of honour on the surface, but do something entirely different behind our backs. What wrong have we done if we tried to save our comrade? Not only that, we still respected your Da Xia Country. We only wanted to redeem the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder, but you continued to bitterly oppress us. How is that justified?" At this time, a silver masked giant male appeared beside the faint shadow. He refuted in an orderly manner towards what the State Grandmaster had said.

"Oh, there's some drama to see now. Ha! You don't need to care about us, we're just here for the entertainment!" Some red and black shadows appeared all over the palace.

"We, the Demonic Palace, express our neutrality towards this situation. However, we will not rule out the consequences of breaking the treaty." Again, some Innate rankers who were emitting green, blue and purple radiances, appeared at a side of the palace.

"3 against 4 isn't fair. The Thousand Goblins Sect only has three Innates, and Da Xia has four, I'll help the Thousand Goblins Sect out this time." A demonic looking man with huge curved horns growing on his head, sharp claws, a long tail and black hell flames burning around his body walked to the side of the faint shadow. He signalled that he would even sacrifice himself to correct this injustice.

"Scram, you don't have the qualifications to rule over the

matters of the Soaring Dragon Continent, demon!” Jun Wu You shouted loudly.

“Your Highness Jun Wu You, please calm yourself. I do not represent the Demon Abyss, because as everyone knows, I’ve cut all ties cleanly with the Demon Abyss. Although I’m not a human, I prefer to live in the human world. If I don’t look good, or if my identity does not conform to your standards, then I am regretful. Perhaps an Innate beauty from the Elf race would be more to your liking. Regrettably, I am not. Ha ha ha!” That demon Innate ranker bowed slightly towards Jun Wu You. However the expression on his face showed that he did not care at all.

“...” Yue Yang was about to speak. However the tall and slim Heavenly Imperial Guardian wrote a few words on his back, telling him not to talk at the moment.

“As for the matter of our little Titan wanting to kill the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder, aside from me, His Highness, the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians, as well as Marshall Yue and General Feng Kuang feel that there is nothing wrong with it. The reason is very simple. This is because the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder wants to kill his family. He has the rights to kill the murderer who harmed his kin. You would do the same if it happened to you. Another point is that he is a newly promoted Innate. He has never signed the Innate Treaty before. He does not know who his Introducer is either. Perhaps, nobody has ever told him anything regarding the Innate Treaty. Therefore, it is very normal thing for him to want to kill the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder. Try asking a young man who cultivated on his own to reach the Innate Realm. Under the situation where he did not have an Introducer, how would he

know about the Innate Treaty? If not for capturing the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder today, we wouldn't know that he was the newly promoted Innate Ranker. Everyone, if you don't want to declare war on Da Xia, then please go back. If you want to break the Innate Treaty and declare war on Da Xia, then please feel free to go ahead. If you have the capability to kill us old men, including His Highness, then we will have no qualms being beaten to death. We will definitely believe in our rankers' honour!" As State Grandmaster said his final sentence, he waved his hands and a shockwave erupted from it.

The Golden Giant who was originally about to stomp towards Yue Yang was pushed back nine steps by State Grandmaster.

The two Heavenly Imperial Guardians, Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and Feng Kuang all walked away, standing together with State Grandmaster. They shielded Yue Yang, and stood as a united front against many strong enemies.

Yue Yang was rather moved.

He knew that if this battle really began, Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai, Feng Kuang and the others could easily lose their lives.

As for the three Innates fighting against the four Innates on the opponent's side, even if he counted himself in, they might not be able to win easily. The most fearsome thing was that there was still Innates from the Demonic Palace who were eyeing the scene covetously. If one of the sides fell, he was afraid that they would take advantage of the situation.

Not only that, those fellows who sought entertainment were the same. They would not stand idly and watch at the very end. They would definitely add fuel to the fire and plunder the beaten side.

Although they knew perfectly well that it was impossible for them to win this battle, Jun Wu You and the Da Xia Empire's rankers' stubbornness still moved Yue Yang's heart. On Earth*, Yue Yang saw many harmonious societies, friendly neighbours who were close to each other developing together, having a great sense of friendship and all these things. Those foreign spokespeople talked about denouncing violence, solemn protests, condolences and other of such empty words. It did not have that kind of firmness that was present decades ago when the atomic bomb was the rights for speaking, not to mention that kind of grand stance of killing any outsiders two thousand years ago...

Now that he had heard it, he realised that although the Da Xia Empire was not really that strong, their attitudes were one of the best.

They would fight if the enemy wanted to. Even the emperor could bet his life in battle.

No wonder enemies who were strong beyond compare showed their respects first and foremost to Jun Wu You. The reason was that this emperor was worthy of Ranker's, or even everyone's respect. He may perhaps not be the best emperor, but he was definitely one of the firmest, most uncompromising and fearless emperors around.

If their emperor did not fear death, then would his generals and troops fear death?

If their emperor dared to put his life on the line, then would his generals, troops or even the citizens not dare to risk their lives to?

Of course they would!

Yue Yang's blood was boiling. His power was rising without end, reaching even closer to his berserk state. He was prepared to be the first to rush in and kill off that Golden Giant. It might not be possible for him to take out the other Innates, but this Golden Giant whose strength was the closest to him was definitely one he could kill!

“Oi, little boy, you’re being mischievous again. Did you get into trouble again? I have just gone home to take a shower, and you have already kicked up a huge ruckus.” Unbeknownst to Yue Yang, the Phoenix Fairy Beauty had already appeared behind him. Her slender arms wrapped across Yue Yang’s shoulders and neck. Her cherry red lips gave a sweet red aroma at the side of his ear. Her voice was like a tender, flirting lover.

“Sky Law, you know him?” Many Innate rankers were extremely surprised. When they saw Phoenix Fairy Beauty appear behind Yue Yang while being so affectionate, their expressions fluctuated.

“This is my little boyfriend. If anyone hurts him, I want you to compensate another one for me!” The Phoenix Fairy Beauty giggled, as if her words were true.

“Scram, go far away from me!” Yue Yang did not have the mood to flirt around with her.

This Phoenix Fairy Beauty appearing when Fourth Mother had not been saved was an even worse thing to happen.

Within the entire palace, Yue Yang estimated that there were two strongest Innate rankers. The first was that faint shadow, that was the strongest enemy! The other one was the Phoenix Fairy Beauty. This girl was one of the Three Major Sky Demons of the Demonic Palace. She was a ranker who would definitely not help the Da Xia Empire. It could not be said for certain that she wouldn't cause mischief behind their backs. Therefore, her appearance caused Yue Yang to feel even more annoyed. He gave her a completely disgusted expression.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty acted as if she were distressed and sobbed, “I have just allowed you to do that, yet you're so cold to me. I'm so heartbroken!”

Everyone looked like they had a sudden realisation. No wonder this guy could be so amazing. Turned out he was the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's little lover!

Of course, some people doubted it.

“Sky Law, is this real?” An especially elegant man from the Demonic Palace stood up and asked.

“Could you not care about my private affairs? Sky Dragon, if you want to meddle in other people’s business, wait till you’re in the top 3. No, top 3 is impossible for you. You can talk to me if you managed to rank in the top 5!” The Phoenix Fairy Beauty berated this person ruthlessly. Not only that, she did not even look him in the eyes.

“Fine!” That especially elegant male’s face changed when he heard it. He tightly clenched his fists and his eyes shot out rays of light like a sword, almost piercing into Yue Yang’s heart.

“Master of Thousand Goblins Sect, please sincerely apologise to His Majesty, and compensate us according to our wishes. Finally, please explain clearly why you are releasing the “Extinguishing Light” that’s used to kill an entire area. Only then can you leave. Otherwise, we will not spare any resources in fighting a war with you.” The State Grandmaster said as he became serious again. His identity and his words represented the determination of the Da Xia Empire. That determination was to never suffer humiliation. No matter whether they fought a bloody battle to the end or not, they had to protect the dignity of their country.

“He’s already an Innate, and he forcefully stopped us from saving someone. There is nothing wrong with our Sect Leader killing him. You say that he doesn’t know of the treaty, what evidence do you have? You say that he doesn’t have an Introducer. If he didn’t have one, how did he rise to the Innate realm?” The Silver Giant who wore a silver mask sneered as he retorted.

“Let me say a few words first then. This guy’s Innate was

accidentally triggered by me yesterday. As for who his Introducer is, I don't really know that. Sect Leader (Thousand Goblins Sect Leader), you can't really talk your way out of wanting to kill my little lover. If I didn't hear it wrongly, in the Soaring Dragon Continent, Innates are banned from attacking their outstanding juniors, especially killing them in a devastating manner... Sect Leader senior didn't really do anything good in particular. I'm uncomfortable hearing your words. Can Sect Leader give me a reasonable explanation?" The Phoenix Fairy Beauty clutched Yue Yang tightly, preventing him from speaking. This was not a battle of courage, this was related to the power balance between the entire Soaring Dragon Continent and Tong Tian Tower.

"Really, only two days? He became this strong after ascending to Innate in just two days? I don't believe it, it's absolutely impossible!" The Silver Giant did not believe it at all.

"There's no place for you to speak. If you interject again, I'll grab and drag you to Tong Tian Tower's sixth floor and kill you in front of the crowds. We'll see who can save you then. Be mindful of your identity. In front of numerous rankers, so many of them aren't talking at all. You, the weakest guy, keep rambling on and on. Don't you feel shame? I am asking the Sect Leader of your Thousand Goblins Sect, not you!" A look of disgust flashed across the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's face.

"..." The Silver Giant hurriedly took two steps back, hiding behind the Sect Leader, the faint shadow, lowering his head while remaining silent. However, his eyes flashed with anger.

"Sky Law, could you not scare my people? We're still an alliance

after all.” That Sect Leader who was like a shadow talked in a dull tone.

“The one who is allied to you is the Demonic Palace, not me.” The Phoenix Fairy Beauty grinned, saying, “Don’t use the alliance to pressurize me. Even if you are a Sky Pearl, don’t even think about talking to me like this. It’s fine if you don’t care about me. Who left this little sweetheart with with no one to rely on? Who asked this little sweetheart to be treat me so coldly? Little darling, I’m so heartbroken now, I won’t care about you anymore! I’ll just watch you getting bullied by a huge bunch of bad guys like this! I’m a weak little girl after all, I had no ability to care about you even if I wanted to!”

A large group of people rolled their eyes. She was a weak little girl?

If she was a weak little girl, then there would be no strong warriors in this world!

In the Soaring Dragon Continent, no matter how the ranking was done, she would definitely be able to rank in the top ten. If she was a weak little girl, then everyone could stop living now.

Of course, looking at what she meant, she seemed to want Yue Yang to beg for her help. Everyone there felt that this matter still had room for negotiation. Even if they had already started fighting, it seemed that it would be impossible for them to investigate further. This matter would be settled if the Sect Leader took his subordinates away and bowed to the Emperor of Da Xia. If they want to investigate the matter to the end, then Da Xia

Kingdom would definitely put their lives on the line. Who this Sky Law would help in the end was not certain at this point of time.

If the rankers from Tian Luo and Zi Jin heard the news and came here, the situation might even change again, moving towards another unknown.

“You want to bully little kids? I can’t bear to sit idly by and watch. We Tian Luo, Da Xia and Zi Jin are an alliance too. If you move against Da Xia, it means that you move against us three. How about this then? Since you don’t want to fight nor apologise, then make it a one-on-one duel between rankers to decide the victor. If the little Innate from Da Xia Empire wins, then you have to apologise and we won’t hand the person over. If you win, then we will return the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder back to you... This is the fairest way of dueling. Sect Leader, if you don’t agree, please don’t blame me for moving to help Da Xia.” Night Empress’s voice suddenly rang out.

“It’s Night Empress... “ Many people were secretly alarmed. She really came.

They wouldn’t care so much if any other Innate expert from Tian Luo came. But this was the Night Empress.

This Night Empress was not a good person to provoke either.

She was the same as Sky Law, the kind of ranker who could be placed in any ranking and still be in the top ten.

Not even that, she could possibly rank in the top five.

Although Night Empress did not speak to Yue Yang and assist him, but as an Innate ranker, everyone was not an idiot. They knew that she was especially protective of this guy. One-on-one was indeed the fairest mode of battle. However, in this case, she had imperceptibly helped this guy, who had just entered Innate, to escape punishment and death. This was because in a one-on-one battle, no matter who was up on the stage, nobody would be able to kill the two people on both sides under everyone's watch. If the most desperate situation occurred, an expert from either sides would definitely move to save the innate on their side. He could only be defeated at most, there would not be any real chance to kill him.

Now, there were many Innate rankers who wanted to kill this young man who had just entered the Innate realm.

Seeing his body completely covered in runes, if he grew up, he would definitely be a serious threat. They feared that he would be an Innate ranker who could squeeze into the top 10.

Therefore, no matter what, they had to think of a way to kill this guy as quickly as possible.

“Good idea, we'll settle it like this then!” The Faint Shadow Sect Leader was a little hesitant. He gave up on letting the Silver Giant go, and sent the stronger Golden Giant to face Yue Yang instead.

“Berserk, as long as you go berserk, you'll win! The other side

only has a hard shelled body, it's easy to deal with!" The Phoenix Fairy Beauty suddenly kissed Yue Yang's earlobe fiercely and gave him a plan.

"What are you all doing here?" Suddenly, a voice colder than ice resounded. "Scram, all of you! Go back to Tong Tian Tower! Those who don't abide by the treaty will all be killed!"

The entire crowd was scared until they were shivering.

Even the strongest Sect Leader hurriedly bowed humbly as a sign of respect. "We did not mean to violate the Innate Treaty. It's just that Night Empress has proposed a one-on-one Supreme Duel between that young guy from Da Xia Empire and our Massacring Demon Elder from Thousand Goblins Sect. Your Supreme Honour, please be fair and just!"

That ice-cold voice was like a snowstorm, blowing through the entire palace. A single sentence caused every Innate's heart to freeze. "A Supreme Duel? Are you bullying him because he doesn't have an Introducer? Let me tell you, his Introducer is me! If you kill him, I will eliminate the entire Thousand Goblins Sect... I won't be fair, please find someone better qualified than me to be fair. Before I leave, let me warn you one last time. If I find out that you appeared again on the Soaring Dragon Continent and violated the Innate Treaty, meddling in the affairs of the countries, I will massacre everyone no matter who they are!"

"..." The Innates present felt that this was a huge headache. Originally, they thought that Yue Yang was an easy prey to bully. Who knew that they would be the one getting scared to death?

This guy actually had her personally go to him to become his Introducer?

No wonder he was already an Innate at such a young age. No wonder Night Empress would be so protective, and Sky Law frantically tried to seduce him...

The Sect Leader muttered to himself softly for a while.

He bowed slightly to pay his respects to Jun Wu You. “Emperor of Da Xia, we will leave your palace and return to the Tong Tian Tower. We won’t interfere in any of your matters anymore. I wish you smooth tidings!” The implication of his words was that he would not take away the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder, but he would not order his disciples to bring Fourth Mother back either. They acted as if they knew nothing. On the surface, they were very polite and showed their respects to this emperor, Jun Wu You. In truth, they were still calculative. At least their disciples had taken Fourth Mother hostage. There was no news of her up till now.

“Hurry up and get into the Dimension of Duel, boy! Don’t think that just because you have a good Introducer, you can beat me that easily!” The Golden Giant opened up a teleportation scroll.

“...” Yue Yang was still worried about Fourth Mother, so he was not willing to duel right now.

However, by his ear, a familiar voice suddenly resounded,

calming and stabilizing his mind.

This voice allowed Yue Yang to focus on the duel. She did not guarantee anything, but Yue Yang was extremely convinced that the owner of this voice would definitely ensure the safety of Fourth Mother in his stead. Not only that, he believed that she had the capability to do it.

With her around, Yue Yang could truly duel at ease.

Defeating the Golden Giant was not just to rescue Fourth Mother, but also to protect Da Xia Empire's dignity.

Wasn't he only Innate Level 2?

Yue Yang did not bat a single eyelid and walked into the Dimension of Duel with his chest held up high. Not only him, even the spectating Phoenix Fairy Beauty, the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Da Xia Empire, Jun Wu You, State Grandmaster, Elder Yue Hai, Feng Kuang and the others, as well as the opposition's Innates had also gone in to spectate the duel. The significance of this battle was huge. If the Da Xia Empire won this battle, then it would rise again.

If it failed, then it would become the start of the Thousand Goblins Sect rise instead.

The Thousand Goblins Sect had always concealed itself in the continent for many years. It had accumulated strength over

thousands of years. Even so, they only had three Innates. If the Golden Giant fell in the battle, it would be a huge blow for the comeback of the sect.

Both sides definitely could not lose. They had to win!

“One-on-one, Supreme Duel!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty voluntarily became the judge for the duel. She raised her slender hand and said, “Da Xia Empire’s Yue Yang, Yue Titan, versus Thousand Goblins Sect Massacring Demon Elder Bai Li Tu Cheng! No restrictions to the duel, no time limit, no points, no time-outs. Assistance is forbidden. Duel lasts until one side dies in battle or when one side kneels down and begs to stop. If both parties have no objections, please come up for the duel... Countdown in 3, 2, 1, duel begin!”

When the Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s hand flagged down, the Golden Giant had already flown out.

In the same way, Yue Yang had also flew through the air, meeting him head-on.

Chapter 187 – Threefold Strengthening?

Even though the difference between a Level Two [Innate] and a Level One [Innate] was only one level, it was an insurmountable chasm.

Amongst the group of [Innate] Rankers, even the meticulously cautious and prudent Thousand Goblins Sect Leader did not feel that Yue Yang, who had just been promoted to [Innate] less than two days ago, could defeat the battle-experienced Tu Cheng.

Yue Yang had not even truly mastered [Innate] strength, while his opponent had been battling on the upper floors of Tong Tian Tower for many years. He was a young fellow who was of young age and had insufficient strength, while his opponent was a distinguished [Innate] who had profound strength and excellent beasts ... No matter how one compared them, Yue Yang was far from being on par with the Massacring Demon Elder, who had been training for more than two hundred years and had a well-known reputation. Even Jun Wu You, State Grandmaster, and Elder Yue Hai did not have hundred percent confidence in Yue Yang. They had supported Yue Yang because, firstly, this was the Night Empress's suggestion, and the Night Empress would never harm Yue Yang; secondly, because of Sky Law's hint. Since she was the one who had opened up Yue Yang's potential and directly helped him to be promoted to become a true [Innate], she should be the person who best understood his ability. Since she did not oppose this, and even thought that Yue Yang may be able to defeat Tu Cheng, then of course, Jun Wu You and company would not oppose it as well.

What eased the minds of Jun Wu You and company the most,

was because Yue Yang's Introducer was 'her'.

'She' was Yue Yang's Introducer.

Just this was enough to fill those who supported Yue Yang with confidence.

Even though he may not necessarily win, but they believed he would probably not lose. In this battle, even if it was still a tie after fighting to their last breaths, for a young, twenty year-old Yue Yang being able to tie with Tu Cheng, whose fame had lasted for two hundred years, a Level One [Innate] drawing against a Level Two [Innate] was also a victory with extreme importance!

Yue Yang was still young and had an inexhaustible potential, whereas Tu Cheng, who had been renowned for so long had already reached the peak of his strength. His potential had already been exhausted and there was no longer any possibility of improvement for him.

“Ha!”

Tu Cheng who had leaped in mid-air suddenly gave an unexpected loud shout when Yue Yang was about to meet his attack.

His body paused, both of his arms opening wide.

A series of strong shock waves exploded. A golden light beam

diffused outwards from his two palms, and blasted Yue Yang away with the force of a large explosion. Tu Cheng knew that Yue Yang had an [Innate] skill that could bind others. Previously, he had been careless, and had been beaten up by him. Now, he had already thought of a method to deal with Yue Yang, and it was to use mid-range attacks ... His [Binding] Inherent Skill was certainly powerful, but such a strong Inherent Skill could definitely only be used for a few times, and only in a long range. Tu Cheng predicted that Yue Yang's Inherent Skill could only be used to its full strength if he was in contact with his opponent or at a very near distance.

Hence, he decided that he would not give Yue Yang such an opportunity at all. He would simply use the shockwaves emitted at mid-range to defeat him.

Even though he could not kill him, but he had a hundred types of devilish methods to depose this fellow.

One of them was to entirely break the fighting spirit of his opponent, and deal blows to his opponent's resolution. As long as this fellow lost the heart of a Ranker and became a coward whose whole body was trembling in terror and could not even raise a fist, then even if he had potential, it would be to no avail.

Tu Cheng had seen many talented youngsters who had become cowards and useless beings after experiencing significant setbacks.

Now, he was going to completely break this arrogant young fellow

“You want to become an [Innate] Ranker? Pay some school fees first!” Tu Cheng, who had estimated a safe distance, was pleased. He flashed and reappeared behind Yue Yang’s back. At the moment when Yue Yang was waving his fists, Tu Cheng summoned a Platinum Grimoire. A halo of light rose, and blasted Yue Yang away. He was prepared to use an extremely precise and ingenious Grimoire Summoning to push Yue Yang, who was completely incapable of counterattacking, into the pits of despair.

At the same time when Yue Yang was blasted away, Tu Cheng summoned a Strengthening-type Ancient Giant Beast that was as enormous as a small hill.

The golden Ancient Giant Beast that was summoned howled out into the sky and assimilated into Tu Cheng’s body.

At that moment, Tu Cheng’s body became numerous times larger.

Now, Tu Cheng’s body was about ten meters tall. One of his fingers was almost as large as Yue Yang’s thigh. His open palm could completely envelop Yue Yang’s entire person.

Summoning a Strengthening-type Ancient Giant Beast was not enough. Tu Cheng decided to make Yue Yang feel desperate and inferior on the basis of strength, and completely pulverize his fighting spirit. A second Summoned Beast was summoned in the midst of golden light.

This time, it was a golden giant dragon.

Yue Yang had seen wyverns, but this was his first time seeing a giant dragon.

“Second Strengthening!” Tu Cheng yelled. The majestic and awe-inspiring golden giant dragon transformed into a bright ray of golden light, and assimilated into him.

Gigantic dragon wings sprouted out from Tu Cheng’s back. Both of his hands turned into dragon claws, and a dragon tail grew out from his back. All these made Tu Cheng look almost like he had become a human-shaped giant dragon. The [Innates] who were familiar with Tu Cheng knew that if the first strengthening of the Ancient Giant Beast merely added to his strength and size, then the second strengthening would cause his battle strength to increase exponentially. The second strengthening would also add the golden dragon’s skills of [Power Pressure], [Dragon Breath] and [Fly] to his skillset.

With these three skills, Tu Cheng’s victory was guaranteed.

His opponent’s level, realm, battle strength and especially his beasts could not be comparable to him ... Just the skill of [Power Pressure] could already reduce one’s opponent’s battle strength by half. Additionally, he had the terrifying [Dragon Breath] which was even scarier than [Hellfire], and [Fly], which made it impossible for his enemies to escape.

This battle was one that could be won without being fought.

Every single person in the group of [Innates] thought that way in their hearts. Only Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who had stood out individually, had a mysterious smile on her face, as if she was sneering at Tu Cheng's silly antics that were a waste of effort.

The purple-robed handsome young man from the Demonic Palace revealed an even more hateful look at Yue Yang when he saw the smile on Phoenix Fairy's face.

But he did not show this openly, like a poisonous serpent which was deeply hiding its true colours.

"I'll turn you into a roasted pig!" Tu Cheng pounced towards Yue Yang from a distance of ten meters. His enormous mouth opened, and a whiff of [Dragon Breath] spouted out.

"....." Yue Yang did not retreat. Instead he advanced, directly rushing to face Tu Cheng headon.

In a breath, Yue Yang summoned his Silver Grimoire, and the protective shield rose, ricocheting the imminently reaching [Dragon Breath] away. Everybody was extremely shocked. This fellow could actually use [Instant Summoning]? If they did not notice that his Grimoire was actually a Silver Grimoire, there would be practically nobody who would believe that this was a young rascal who was only twenty years old. This ability to control the skill of Instant Summoning was practically not something that a young person could master.

Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai were the ones who were the most surprised. They both knew that this fellow had only just contracted a Grimoire not long ago. Only half a year had passed, and yet he had already mastered Instant Summoning, which was something that other people may not even be able to master in twenty years.

It was not that they have not seen a genius before, it was just that they really haven't seen one that was genius to such a frightening level ...

It was the difference between half a year and twenty years.

Those who managed to learn it in twenty years were already considered geniuses. This... his growth really made people speechless.

Also, this fellow had always behaved like a useless trash. Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai sweated even more profusely. Turned out that this brat was also good at pretending to be useless!

Tu Cheng, who initially wanted to burn Yue Yang to a crisp, was instead burned in the face by his own [Dragon Breath]. He howled in pain. The [Innates] opposite them frowned when they saw this. This brat had actually erected his protective shield at the right time to protect against [Dragon Breath]. If he erected the shield one meter too far, it would be able to reach Tu Cheng. If he erected the shield one meter too close, the [Dragon Breath] would blast Tu Cheng away like a bullet. His grasp of the distance was just right.

If it were them, would they be able to do it better?

Nobody answered the question out loud, but the answer in all of their hearts were the same: They could not have done it better.

“[Windstorm]!” Even though Tu Cheng had suffered a blast of his own spouted [Dragon Breath], it only caused him pain. He was not injured at all. However, he was so embarrassed that he flew into a rage. He started to spin his body and hands like a pinwheel, creating a [Windstorm] that encircled the protective shield as it whirled.

The Grimoire’s protective shield was linked to its master’s state of mind. Small amounts of attacks would not have any impact on its master.

But long term attacks and tremendous quakes would affect the Grimoire master’s mind.

If the one attacking was a Ranker of Level Six and below, then even if he continuously attacked for an hour, it would not cause much of an impact on even the most low-levelled Bronze Grimoire Contractor But Tu Cheng was an [Innate]. Although the tornado [Windstorm] that he produced did not have enough power to destroy the protective shield, after some time, it would definitely affect Yue Yang’s state of mind. In a battle between experts, even a teeny bit of impact would cause one to completely be at a disadvantage.

Yue Yang did not hide within the protective shield to wait for the [Windstorm] to pass. These kind of [Windstorm] created by strength like this could be created by Tu Cheng anytime.

He instantly kept his Grimoire, and unexpectedly appeared behind Tu Cheng.

Using both of his hands, he grabbed at Tu Cheng who was as large as a small hill and raised him high into the air, then tossing him into the air of the [Tornado Windstorm]. At that moment, Tu Cheng was swept up into the sky.

“Its [Teleportation] and [Binding]!” The [Innate] rankers frowned yet again.

There was nothing strange for an [Innate] to master the Teleportation Skill. But this fellow had just been promoted to become an [Innate] and barely two days had passed. How did he learn it? The weirdest thing was how this fellow managed to teleport out from under his own Protective Shield. Before the Protective Shield vanished, Grimoire Contractors could walk out from within, but they definitely could not teleport out from it, could it be they had seen it wrongly? Or had this fellow reached the level of being able to instantly keep his Grimoire, and at the same time, could also instantly teleport?

The [Windstorm] disappeared and Tu Cheng fell down from the air. His reactions were very quick, he had already spread his giant wings out when he almost crashed to the ground, landing steadily.

Even though he did not slip and fall, he still felt that his reputation had completely been thrown away.

This fellow had actually returned all his proudest signature moves. This was a bigger and an even more intolerable humiliation to him than a ruthless slap to his face!

His [Dragon Breath] had been rebounded and his [Windstorm] had been used against him...

The furious flames in Tu Cheng's heart were already raging to the extreme.

He did not believe that with his Level Two [Innate] strength, he could not defeat this young rascal of Level One [Innate] strength. He decided to use the most direct method, using the greatest force he could muster and the most barbaric strength in his body to defeat his opponent head-on.

Could this fellow even make his own fists rebound on him?

“He!” Tu Cheng raised his giant fist and ruthlessly pounded towards Yue Yang.

With a giant rumbling sound, Yue Yang was blasted ten meters away.

Tu Cheng was pleased with himself. Yue Yang's [Binding] Inherent Skill was not omnipotent, it probably has a limit on the

amount of times it can be used. Under his powerful attacks, this brat would definitely kneel on the floor and beg for his forgiveness! When he thought about how this brat was going to kneel in front of him, his voice quivering and choked with tears as he begged for his forgiveness, Tu Cheng felt extremely pleased. The one who laughed at the last moment would be the real victor. Young fellow, you are still too green!

He raised his giant fist a second time, using his full strength to execute his punch.

Jeering and mocking as much as possible at him, he sneered, “Young fellow, have you not suckled enough milk from your mother? Why do you only have such little strength? Haha!”

The group of [Innate] Rankers opposite all felt that there was no suspense in a fight where a Level Two [Innate] was pitted against a Level One [Innate].

The disparity was so obvious and it wasn't something that could be made up for by technique.

The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader who was light as a shadow, however, had a bad premonition at this moment. He looked towards Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai, and discovered that even though they had anxious expressions on their faces, but it was still far from panic. This proved that this newly promoted [Innate] fellow still had some strength left and would not be easily beaten. When he looked at Phoenix Fairy, his heart shivered. Phoenix Fairy's smile had become even wider than her smile just now. Her expression was as if she was looking at a young tiger cub that had

still not known how to hunt for prey but had successfully caught a wild water buffalo. The tiger cub seemed to be trying to practice its hunting skill continuously, and could not bear to consume its prey at one go ...

A strange feeling flashed across his heart.

Before this, that fellow was blasted away by one punch of Tu Cheng and was forced to retreat ten meters, smashing the pillars and almost collapsing the walls.

At the moment with Tu Cheng having Twice-Strengthened, his strength had been raised by not less than ten times. With another blow at full strength, and this fellow meeting his attack with his fist, he only retreated ten meters.

What did this mean?

This meant that this fellow had been continuously improved himself in the battle, and was continuously becoming stronger. His strength had progressed from just now, when he had collapsed at a single blow, to his current state where he was almost on par with the Twice-Strengthened Tu Cheng. If they continued to fight, with Tu Cheng continuously using up his strength, and this fellow continuously improving, after a long attrition, the Level Two [Innate] Tu Cheng may very well be defeated by this Level One [Innate].

This fellow definitely had some sort of talent to be able to learn and grow in battle ... Otherwise, the Night Empress would

definitely not have proposed for him to fight Tu Cheng one on one in an Supreme Duel.

Sky Law would also not approve of it, and would definitely not stand out on her own accord to volunteer as a judge!

As this thought flashed past his mind, the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader was extremely angry. He felt that he had been tricked by the combined co-operation of the Night Empress and Sky Law.

Most importantly, the fact that 'she' would also agree to this one-one-one Supreme Duel proved that this brat's Inherent Skill might not even be [Binding]. This could possibly be a certain special ability of his beast. This brat's true talent was definitely being able to learn and grow in battle!

Bam!

The Thousand Demons Sect Leader saw that Yue Yang was still forced to retreat by the second punch.

He took note and counted the number of steps that Yue Yang retreated. Just now, it was ten steps, and he had retreated by ten meters.

Now it was nine steps, and it was also nine meters ... Just now, the footsteps were deep, each of them smashing into the ground. Now, the first few footsteps were still extremely deep, but the last two steps had become obviously shallower!

“Brat, use all your power! Hahaha, where’s the strength you had just now?” Tu Cheng was now very arrogant. He felt that his strength could completely overpower his opponent, all his punches connecting squarely with Yue Yang. He estimated that he only needed another ten punches or to make this fellow collapse to the ground, sapped of his strength, and sustain injuries serious enough to make him cough blood... To fight a proper battle with an [Innate] was different from exchanging moves with normal Rankers. In a situation where one did not defend himself at all, as long as he sustained a hit from an [Innate] Ranker, he would also immediately collapse.

As long as this fellow’s body was sapped of his strength, once he sustained a blow from his giant fists that had been Twice-Strengthened, all the bones in his body would probably be crushed to pieces.

Even if he could be saved on time, his future would also be bleak.

Tu Cheng had an extremely pleased smile on his face.

He raised his giant fists high into the air, ready to smash downwards with full strength, forcing Yue Yang to sustain his blows.

“Wait, Tu Cheng, let’s concede this battle, don’t fight anymore.” The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader was not so stupid as to let his subordinates function as practice targets for others. Moreover, this fellow had enormous potential. If they let him level up just like

that, then his own Top Ten position could even have to be shifted backward. He decided to give this competition up. One competition loss was nothing, but he definitely could not let this fellow grow.

“What?” Everybody was in disbelief as they looked towards the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader in shock.

“Hmph, what a shrewd fellow!” Only Phoenix Fairy was a little dissatisfied, but lightly harrumphed without a hint of surprise.

“Sect Leader, you are asking me to concede defeat? Let me kneel down and beg for this fellow’s forgiveness?” Tu Cheng was even more shocked. If the person saying this was not the Sect Leader, Tu Cheng would probably have responded with a fist. He did not dream of his most respected Sect Leader would order him to concede defeat. What did conceding defeat mean? It meant that in front of many familiar faces, he had to kneel and beg for forgiveness from a young rascal who was only twenty years old, an enemy who had even humiliated himself ... Once he kneeled, could he even straighten his back and continue living in the future? He was an [Innate] himself, not a commoner. No matter how strong the opponents he faced were, he had always towered loftily above them. Now, he had to kneel down?

“I think the best is to conclude the competition as fast as possible. It doesn’t matter even if you concede defeat, your strength is undoubted by everybody. No matter who you kneel to, this would not change.” The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader sighed lightly. “You are an [Innate], and I respect your decision. But if you continue the battle, you would most likely regret it.”

“No, even if I die in battle, I will never regret it!” Tu Cheng yelled in an almost frantic manner. “I would rather die than kneel!”

“Up to you!” The Sect Leader knew that he was unable to forcefully restrain him. Now he understood the intentions behind the Night Empress’s suggestion of the one-on-one Supreme Duel a little. Supreme Duels could not be forcefully stopped by anybody. Once the decisive battle commenced, there must be a winner and a loser. By proposing an Supreme Duel, the Night Empress’s motive was not to cause a blow to Tu Cheng, but it was directed at himself. She had already expected that he may possibly want to stop the battle, hence she proposed an Supreme Duel instead of an Honour Duel.

Also, Sky Law, this sly woman, had also suggested the condition of kneeling down and begging for forgiveness.

She had tricked Tu Cheng!

Sky Law knew Tu Cheng’s temperament and disposition. In front of the crowd, the reputation-loving Tu Cheng would never admit defeat, because admitting defeat meant kneeling down and begging for forgiveness.

Tu Cheng was an [Innate], but he was not the type of Ranker who was ready to bow and submit or endure humiliation in order to fulfill a more important goal. He was merely a strong and stubborn-headed ox.

The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader was in a very bad mood. Firstly, it was because he was unable to tell Yue Yang's true strength. Secondly, it was because he was tricked by the combined scheme of the Night Empress and Sky Law. Thirdly, his subordinate Tu Cheng did not comply with his orders completely. However, with his disposition of enduring troubles silently, he also did not show this to others. On the contrary, he pretended to respect Tu Cheng's decision. His behaviour may have confused everybody now, but he had also imperceptibly changed the angle of the situation to benefit himself If Yue Yang really won, then everybody would become more reverent of him due to his previous foresight. If Tu Cheng lost, then the potential impact on him would be minimized.

“Sect Leader, please forgive Tu Cheng from disobeying your order. This is my first time disobeying your order, and it will also be the last time as well. From now onwards, Tu Cheng dares to guarantee that I will never disobey your orders again. However, today, please permit Tu Cheng to have a decisive battle with this fellow to determine victory. I will not accept this kind of ending and I do not believe that I will fail. He is a Level One [Innate] and he has the help of the Ancient Runes. His level of strength is not far from mine, but Sect Leader, Tu Cheng is really confident of beating him! Because Tu Cheng has already succeeded in training Threelfold-Strengthening!” Tu Cheng turned his body and knelt down on one knee to humbly apologise to the Sect Leader.

To fall out with the Sect Leader was not a joke. Tu Cheng was not that kind of idiot, he understood the Sect Leader's strength and temperament clearly.

But Tu Cheng could not accept this defeat.

Even if the brat he was facing had potential that was regarded importantly by the Night Empress and Sky Law and was also extremely cunning and had fast reflexes, he was just a newly promoted [Innate] after all. He was only a Level One [Innate]! He, himself, was an [Innate] that had trained for two hundred years, and not long before this he had already trained Threefold-Strengthening.

The amount of battle strength added up from Threefold-Strengthening was already close to that of an Infinite Level Three [Innate].

Could it be that with his unlimited strength that was almost as strong as the strength of a Level Three [Innate], he still could not defeat a small kid of Level One [Innate]?

Even if he was beaten to death, Tu Cheng would not believe that he would lose!

Even if he disobeyed the Sect Leader's orders, he wanted to defeat his opponent and redeem his honour! He would definitely not kneel for a weakling that was lower-leveled than him, what basis does this brat have

“Heh!” On seeing this, Phoenix Fairy smiled. She looked like she had just watched her prey foolishly falling into the trap she had previously prepared.

“Threefold-Strengthening?” Yue Yang wanted to experience the

strength of Threefold-Strengthening.

Just now, Yue Yang had learnt the true Twice-Strengthening from Tu Cheng. He had added two gigantic shadows onto his own body, and realised that his strength had exponentially increased, until he could almost be on par with Tu Cheng. This Threefold-Strengthening Three gigantic shadows added together, how much strength would that be?

Originally, giant shadows required five shadows to assimilate together to become one.

Now that he learnt Twice-Strengthening, Yue Yang discovered that he would only need one more shadow to create the same effect as the assimilation of two gigantic shadows ... Could it be that similarly, he could just use one more shadow, to create the same effect as Threefold-Strengthening? Yue Yang was looking forward to Tu Cheng's Threefold-Strengthening to see how much his body changed He could also use the combination of Level Three [Divine Vision] and his [Naked Eye Traverse] here, and learn this Threefold-Strengthening that Tu Cheng had focused on learning for two hundred years.

In this battle, Yue Yang felt that if Tu Cheng knew the truth, he would definitely be so furious that he would vomit blood and regret so much that he would grind and break his rib bones.

It looked like other than the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader who could see through his improvements, other people did not notice his uniqueness. Perhaps there were also people who had noticed it, but these extremely scheming fellows had not shown any

expressions at all.

The only one with an expression on his face was that purple-robed guy from Demonic Palace. Could it be that that fellow was a pursuer of Phoenix Fairy?

Yue Yang looked at Phoenix Fairy. He had yet to push her down, yet he had so many romantic rivals to clear. Waves of jealousy washed over him. Yet another enemy for her hand had appeared, it was really irritating!

“Little daring, don’t look at me, concentrate on the battle!” Phoenix Fairy even flirtatiously blew a flying kiss to Yue Yang.

“.....” Yue Yang had nothing to say.

“Abominable!” When the purple-robed guy with handsome features saw this, he practically could not contain his anger. There seemed to be horns protruding from his forehead, and his mouth was gradually splitting towards his ears. He had slowly turned into a monster with a dragon head. Only when Yue Yang looked at him, that he quickly recovered his originally handsome appearance. Yue Yang suddenly saw the light. So this fellow was not human, but was actually like Duke Xian, the thousand-year old tortoise spirit, and was a monster... He just could not tell what kind of Thousand Year Old Demon this fellow was. His name was Sky Dragon, so could he be a Thousand Year Giant Dragon?

The sound from Tu Cheng’s Threefold-Strengthening grew even louder. He summoned a ball of red light, and tossed it to the

ground.

The ground immediately started to shake, and a huge mound grew from the earth. Lava flowed out of it like a volcano.

Under the eyes of the crowd, Tu Cheng dived into the volcanic lava.

The fiery flames blazed into the sky

When the Threefold-Strengthening was completed, it was as frightening as a solar storm, with the shockwaves from its impact spreading outwards in a loud rumble, forcing all the people back for half a step. As for Elder Yue Hai, Jun Wu You, and Feng Kuang, even with the three of them holding hands with each other, they were still forced to take one and a half steps back, showing the strength of this Threefold-Strengthening.

Yue Yang, who was standing in the middle of floor, was gently swaying his hands flexibly like a young girl.

The shockwaves and hellfire around him all became extremely mysterious flame rings, encircling his body as they spun. Stronger shock waves were also tamed to be as obedient as a kitten On seeing this, the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader's heart shivered.

He could tell that this was definitely not a skill that a youngster who had just been promoted to [Innate] could have.

In those years, even him who was known to be an exceptional talent, had to spend thirty years in training such a technique. If it were others, they would definitely not be able to master it within a hundred years. Even the extremely high-leveled [Innate] still could not do this until now! This fellow was so young, and yet was so proficient in controlling his strength... What on earth did 'she' teach him? If it was just normal training methods, this fellow would definitely not be able to do this!

Before this, the Thousand Demons Sect Leader only faintly suspected that Tu Cheng would lose, and was hence reluctant to let him become Yue Yang's practice target.

Now, he could almost be hundred percent certain that Tu Cheng would definitely lose this battle!

Chapter 188 – [Nirvana Flame] And [World-Exterminating Wheel]

Yue Yang could clearly see through Tu Cheng's body after Threefold-Strengthening.

However, he was unsure if he could create the same effect by adding another shadow. The reason was that the beast that Tu Cheng had used was a completely different and unique beast. 'Volcano' was supposed to be an element-type beast, so how could it fuse together with a Giant Dragon and an Ancient Giant Beast? Yue Yang was extremely confused. But Tu Cheng had actually managed to do it. With the facts laid before his eyes, Yue Yang couldn't help but to be confused.

Tu Cheng whose whole body was covered in flames looked like a Flaming Giant.

He raised his fists and smashed it down hard.

Obviously, Yue Yang couldn't face against it head on. Hence, he retreated swiftly backwards.

"[Flaming Spear!]" Tu Cheng condensed the flames on his body into a flaming spear and shot it towards Yue Yang ruthlessly.

Taking advantage of Yue Yang trying to dodge his attack, Tu Cheng swiftly moved behind Yue Yang. However, he did not pummel Yue Yang's body with his fists. Instead, he pummelled the

ground with all of his strength.

Rumble, a loud sound resounded.

The ground split apart and a volcano crater filled with spitting magma had been summoned by Tu Cheng.

If Yue Yang was stunned by the shockwave just now, he would have fallen into the red magma crater and melted into smoke. Or at least, his whole body would have been burnt by the magma. However, Yue Yang's figure had disappeared, his real body had reappeared in front of Phoenix Fairy instead. Yue Yang shouted furiously towards the Phoenix Fairy, "What the heck are you doing? If you have something to say, you could just say it out in front of the crowds. You just have to whisper them softly in my ears, and you are speaking nonsense to boot! So annoying!"

"I'm whispering words of love to you, so obviously I would need to secretly say it to you. It's embarrassing to let the others hear it.." Phoenix Fairy cheerfully replied, completely ignoring Yue Yang's temperament.

"I don't have anything to say to you!" Yue Yang felt that this girl was completely taking him as her pawn.

She might not like being pursued by that Sky Dragon, so she pretended to find a boyfriend on the surface. If she directed all Sky Dragon's attention to himself, she would feel a little more relaxed.

He hadn't even taken advantage of her, and he had to become her black sheep. He was simply furious.

Phoenix Beauty winked at him, before laughing out alluringly, "Alright, I won't say it anymore. Little Sweetheart, don't worry and fight your battle properly!"

Yue Yang bellowed in fury, "Who's your Little Sweetheart? I don't even have any relation to you at all! If you had let me get it on with you, I would have understood. But I haven't even taken advantage of you! After I have finished fighting this battle, if you let me push you down, I will allow you to call me Little Sweetheart!"

Phoenix Fairy seemed to be a little embarrassed when she heard this. She lowered her head and bumped her forefingers together shyly, "I am still sore at that place, you know... You, how could you refuse to acknowledge me the moment you turn your back?"

The crowd immediately strained their ears to hear about the gossips.

Tu Cheng who was standing on the other side, had used this opportunity to increase his strength again. He secretly summoned a few more 'Volcanoes' and hid these 'Volcanoes' underground. As long as Yue Yang stepped on it, it would immediately blew up.

Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai looked at each other, thinking that there was something wrong somewhere.

Why did Yue Yang ran over to Sky Law in the middle of a fight? Furthermore, he had been keeping his calm and reason all this while, so why would he be furious now? Could it be that Sky Law was using hypnosis on him? The two Heavenly Imperial Guardians also looked at each other in confusion. They were not very familiar with Yue Yang, but they thought that Sky Law was trying to make him angry on purpose. It seemed like it was related to what she had said just now... Just now, Sky Law had said, “Get angry! As long you get angry, you will win. Your opponent only had a body of hard shell, he is very easy to fight against!”.

Yue Yang should be an extremely calm person who was an expert in measuring his opponents and had a fast reaction speed.

Such a person wouldn't be easily angered.

However, when he was really enraged, the strength from his fury would be extremely terrifying.

“Which part of you is sore? I haven't even touched you!” Yue Yang shouted furiously. He was beaten black and blue by her before, she even sent him flying like a bullet with her chest. Shouldn't he be the one who's sore?

“That time, you had went berserk and pushed me to the ground. You were just like a barbaric bull and did that. Even when I cried out in pain, you still continued to do it non-stop. If it wasn't for my good health, I would have died because of you...” Hearing what Phoenix Fairy had said, Yue Yang almost vomited blood. He had completely forgotten that he had ever pushed this girl down. Furthermore, this girl should have been the one who would be

more likely to push him down. How could he had pushed her down?

Yue Yang turned around and saw that Sky Dragon's face had turned even darker than Judge Bao.

His eyes seemed to spout flames that was a hundred times, a thousand times hotter than Tu Cheng's [Dragon's Breath]. He practically wanted to burn Yue Yang to death with his glare!

The crowd of [Innates] also seemed to have misunderstood a little. This was not strange, Sky Law would have pushed this brat down because she loved handsome men. If they had no relations at all, why would she protect him? That was obviously not possible!

“Stop spouting nonsense. Even if I had really done it on the spot with you, I won't take responsibility for it! Scram!” Yue Yang felt that he might have pushed her down, but he would never take responsibility for it.

Whoever said that he had to marry someone after pushing them down?

Why couldn't they maintain their lovers' relationship after they had done the deed? If he had really pushed her down and had to marry her and stayed at home, what kind of familial blissful sexual relationship he would have?

For example, if he pushed girls like Yi Nan, Princess Qian Qian

and Luo Hua City Mistress down, then brought them back to his house as wives to warm his bed, that would still be good. They were the girls he liked anyway. But who would want a girl like the Phoenix Fairy? If he pushed her down, then so be it, he would take it as a one-night stand. Furthermore, Yue Yang also suspected that he hadn't actually done it. If he really had done it, it would be weird if this girl hadn't sucked his energy dry. When he woke up, his Spirit Qi had recovered and his body had also healed. There was no indication nor evidence on whether he had done it or not.

He remembered that his clothes were still neat and tidy that time. Furthermore, there were also quite a few girls around looking at him.

If he really pushed the Phoenix Fairy down, it would be weird if those girls did not work together to slap him to death afterwards!

Most importantly that mysterious big-breasted beauty might have already arrived earlier. If he had really pushed Phoenix Fairy down, she should have stopped him from doing it.

Of course, if he really pushed the Phoenix Fairy down before...

There was that possibility. Because Yue Yang had completely forgotten what he had done when he was on his berserk state. He might have really torn the Phoenix Fairy's clothes at that time, pushed her down and did the deed right then and there! Yue Yang wasn't really sure, but he wanted to use his actions to show one point. No matter what happened, he would not take responsibility. As the saying goes, "If it's free, why don't we accept it?". Such was Yue Yang's perspective.

However, Yue Yang would never be so cold-hearted towards Yi Nan, Luo Hua, Qian Qian and the mysterious beauty who loved to read books.

However, as for the Phoenix Fairy, even if he had done it a hundred more times, Yue Yang would still feel like he had not done anything.

She had looked for trouble on her own, why would he be polite towards her?

“Don’t be so cold-hearted towards me... If you treat me this way, my heart will break into pieces!” Phoenix Fairy completely ignored Yue Yang’s reaction, twisting and shaking her sexy waist alluringly instead. She then moved her snow-white, tender little face closer to Yue Yang’s lips, caressing his chin with her slender fingers as her cherry lips whispered, “I am just worried about you... You have to quickly finish the fight and save your Fourth Mother!”

“...” These words was like a bright sunlight that had cleared the foggy sky, exploding in Yue Yang’s mind. Yue Yang couldn’t think of anything else other than Fourth Mother’s beautiful smile.

“If you don’t go and save her, she might even encounter some mishap. At that time, you wouldn’t be able to be filial with her. You are her obedient little San-er, if she died before you managed to repay her kindness for bringing you up, wouldn’t you regret it very much...?” Phoenix Fairy whispered at Yue Yang’s ears, spitting out a dream-like pink bubble from her mouth. In an

instant, Yue Yang's energy had changed.

The other [Innates] realized that Yue Yang's energy was just like a volcano's, hiding a tremendous amount of strength that could erupt at any time.

Every single person secretly increased their alertness.

Thousand Goblins Sect Leader voiced out his protest, lightly harrumphing, "Sky Law, wouldn't you violate the rules if you do this? It's a one-on-one Supreme Duel. Are you doing this to help him or disturb the battle flow?"

Phoenix Fairy's fingers floated lightly around Yue Yang's eyes, her face flashing with a mysterious light. Her eyes looked like she was ridiculing the opponent, "I am actually helping you guys. Aren't we allied together? I saw your subordinate setting up a lot of volcanoes underground with all of his might just now. His actions was not discreet at all, hence I had especially asked my Little Sweetheart to come over here to talk with me, so that he would be able to set it up properly... Now he seemed to be more or less done preparing, and had hidden around ten over volcano traps. Haven't I helped you a lot?"

Thousand Goblins Sect Leader was slightly embarrassed and immediately refuted, "Actually, the 'Volcano' was an element-type beast that Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan shared together. When Tu Cheng summoned the Volcano, Kuang Zhan would inevitably show a reaction. Please don't misunderstand."

Phoenix Fairy shrugged her shoulders elegantly, before giving a light kiss on Yue Yang's cheeks, "Then it's my misunderstanding... Little brat, don't die here, otherwise your Fourth Mother will also die!"

"Fourth Mother!" Yue Yang's originally blank eyes suddenly flashed with light that looked like a flash of lightning.

The energy that he had hidden inside erupted with a force a thousand times, ten thousand times more powerful than Tu Cheng's Volcano eruption.

As Yue Yang howled out furiously, he instantly released all the strength in his body. He had even released the strength that he couldn't control before, the strength that even he himself had not known existed in his body.

The Ancient Runes on his body spun ferociously, forming a completely new Runic Circle.

At Yue Yang's back, an enormous Runic War Circle dispersed out like a ring of light. Following that, there was a smaller Runic War Circle spinning inside the first Runic War Circle.

Radiant burst of light shot out, sharp like an arrow. The Innate Rankers around blocked the light with their hands, but realized that their hands felt hot from Yue Yang's light. Those who were not powerful enough realized that their fingers were burnt from Yue Yang's light. They couldn't help but be fearfully surprised... The light that burst out from Yue Yang's berserk body had already

contained such a tremendous amount of strength. If they were hit directly by his fists, wouldn't they be done for then?

“His strength had almost reached Innate Level 2!” The Silver Giant, ‘Kuang Zhan’, who was standing behind the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, muttered out, his voice trembling.

“No, I think it's already at the level of Innate Level 3...” The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader's voice sounded a little choked. He had never seen such a person before, who could increase his strength to such a level in an instant. He really couldn't believe his own eyes.

Furthermore, the furious Yue Yang's strength was still increasing continuously.

Innate Level 3 was not his limit yet.

Suddenly, a flame that could destroy everything on its path appeared. It was countless of times hotter than Tu Cheng's Volcano's magma, a pure and clean flame. The appearance of these flames caused every single Innate's expression to change. Everyone suddenly had the impulse to run away, because, that flame was a flame that not even Innates could withstand, the [Nirvana Flame]. Possessing two balls of [Nirvana Flame] would be enough to cause the Innates on the opponent's side to tremble with fear. But there was actually a ten-meter tall pillar of [Nirvana Flame] surging from Yue Yang's body... That kind of ultimate destroyer of a flame would make anyone who saw it feel helpless and powerless.

Fortunately this pillar of [Nirvana Flame] had only surged upwards and did not hit anyone. Otherwise, other than the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, everyone would have been instantly killed.

The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader was also scared out of his wits.

Although his strength had almost reached the limits of a human and almost nothing could have the ability to destroy his body or soul, one of the few things that could really destroy him was the [Nirvana Flame]!

Phoenix Fairy was also a little surprised at first, as if she couldn't believe that the explosion of strength from Yue Yang's second berserk could reach this realm. She faintly felt that her [Charm] Inherent Skill would be a perfect match to this brat's berserk. As long as she used her [Charm] on him, then he would continue to get stronger and stronger... Every Time he went berserk, every time his strength exploded, his body would would amalgamate with the Ancient Runes even more, enabling him to display an even greater strength. As for the [Nirvana Flame] hidden in his body, he would also be able to increase its strength!

His future was limitless.

As long as his body could withstood more of her [Charm], his strength could still increase even more.

No wonder her elder sister could be interested in him and took

the initiative to become his Introducer. Turned out that this brat had really concealed such an enormous potential!

Phoenix Fairy discovered that she couldn't even see through Yue Yang's potential even now. How could his Ancient Rune and [Nirvana Flame] be able to mix together like this? Why didn't they repel against each other? Also, what Innate Skill had this brat cultivated? This was something that no one could ever do before. Under the circumstances where he had not finished cultivating his skill, and where he had not even known the terrifying strength he had in his body, how could his body possess two kinds of completely different, devastating powers? His skill must be a supreme, magical skill; it might even be an Ancient Innate Skill. Otherwise, he wouldn't be so abnormal!

Interesting little fellow, how many more secrets are you hiding exactly?

Phoenix Fairy's eyes were filled with humor.

“AGHH!”

Yue Yang roared, and like a thunder, he absorbed all the [Nirvana Flame] back and condensed them into his hands.

At this time, how could Tu Cheng dare to fight against him? He was so frightened that he immediately scampered away.

However, the furious Yue Yang was a thousand times faster than

light, and had instantly caught up with Tu Cheng who was flying away with his Dragon wings. With a wave of Yue Yang's hands, Tu Cheng's body which was protected by a volcano-like heat was destroyed in the middle by the [Nirvana Flame] on Yue Yang's hands.

He was hacked into two parts, falling on the ground.

The Innates surrounding the area immediately gulped their saliva in fear. So strong... This was a real [Nirvana Flame], a Volcano's heat was practically a joke in front of a [Nirvana Flame].

Tu Cheng, who had escaped from his Threefold-strengthened body of Giant Dragon and Ancient Giant Beast, howled out loudly. However, before he managed to run very far, he was hit by the berserk Yue Yang's fists.

The [Nirvana Flame] spear that he shot out from his fists had tore through the Giant Dragon and the Ancient Giant Beast.

Instant kill!

The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader's heart trembled. Even under a berserk state, this brat could still use the move that Tu Cheng had used just now, the [Flame Spear]. Such a quick learning capability was really frightening to behold.

"Please spare my life!" Tu Cheng thought that he was on the brink of death. If he didn't plead for his life now, he would really

die.

“Whoever tried to kill my Fourth Mother will definitely not be forgiven. AHHHH!!” Although the furious Yue Yang had not lost his reason completely, his state of mind was only focused in killing. Begging him was useless now. He raised his right hand that was holding his [Nirvana Flame] and smashed Tu Cheng’s head completely. None of the surrounding Innates dared to come up to stop him, including the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader.

He was confident that he could defeat the current Yue Yang, but he couldn’t guarantee that he wouldn’t be injured by Yue Yang’s [Nirvana Flame] attack.

Furthermore, he still could not figure out the meaning of the gigantic Runic War Circle on Yue Yang’s back. If that War Circle was the legendary [World-Exterminating Wheel] or the [Eternal Wheel], then he would really be in deep shit... Even if he could escape those Runic Circle’s imprisonment, his strength would be greatly reduced.

If he helped his subordinate now, he might have to drop out from the Top Ten Innate ranking.

Furthermore, looking at that giggling Sky Law, if he was injured, would she let him go that easily? There was also that Night Empress who was silently eyeing him on one side...

The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader sweated in his heart when he thought about this.

The Silver Giant 'Kuang Zhan' was Tu Cheng's brother. Although their relationship was close, he could only take one step forward before halting on the spot, shouting loudly instead.

His desire to help his brother had angered the berserk Yue Yang. The killing intent in his eyes exploded, "Kill, whoever wanted to kill Fourth Mother must die!" He went berserk once again, the [Nirvana Flames] on his hands igniting ferociously and the two revolving wheels of Runic War Circles on his back had actually followed his intentions, shooting out towards the Silver Giant Kuang Zhan.

"Either live or die!" The Silver Giant Kuang Zhan realized in fear that he couldn't dodge Yue Yang's attack. It seemed like he had been locked as a target by that Runic War Circle. He could only risk everything, pulled out his sword and hacked at the wheel of light that the Runic War Circle had shot out.

The wheel of light that was shot out by the Runic War Circle had soundlessly passed through his body and shot out to a distance of 100 meters away, before dispersing into countless Runes of light and returned back to Yue Yang's body.

The Silver Giant Kuang Zhan's body had been split into two by the wheel of light shot out from the Runic War Circle, collapsing on the ground with a loud boom.

Instant kill!

Every single Innate rankers trembled in fear.

The name of that Runic War Circle that the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader spat out with certainty had made them tremble even further. That was because the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader had mentioned “[World-Exterminating Wheel]”.

Other than Rankers who were Innate Level 5 and above, who would have the possibility to escape from this kind of [World-Exterminating Wheel], the others would end up like that Silver Giant Kuang Zhan, cut into two by the [World-Exterminating Wheel]... Such a [World-Exterminating Wheel] was not something that could be stopped by an Innate Level 5 and below. How could a Level 1 Innate brat manage to use it so easily?

Nobody could answer that question, but nobody could deny one fact.

The Silver Giant Kuang Zhan’s corpse was the best evidence.

“I’m gonna kill all of you. Kill!” The furious Yue Yang flew high up the sky. The [World-Exterminating Wheel] that had disappeared just now had actually condensed once again. Furthermore, it had actually become bigger, and there were traces of [Nirvana Flame] on its edges. Seemed like after using it once, Yue Yang had learnt to control it better. The surrounding Innates sweated profusely. What an abnormal brat! He could actually use it again? Was this brat really just Innate Level 1? Even Innate Level 5 could only release [World-Exterminating Wheel] once! Furthermore, other than this brat, everyone had never seen anyone who managed to use the [World-Exterminating Wheel]

without suffering from a rebound or even suffered from a little aftereffect... Five hundred years ago, there was an insane Innate Ranker who managed to succeed in researching Runic Circles. He only managed to use [World-Exterminating Wheel] once, before his Innate Level 6 body had exploded from the rebound of executing such a skill. In the end, only his skull was left.

Not only was this brat fine after using it once, he had still wanted to use it the second time?

All of the Innate Rankers had obviously not want to become his massacring target. They hurriedly left the Dimension of Duel. Now that Tu Cheng was already dead, if they did not leave this place quickly, the next one to die could possibly be themselves...

Who wanted to fight with this abnormal, berserk little madman?

Even the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader who had the strongest ability only looked at Yue Yang deeply before drawing a Runic Circle and tore a hole in space, leaving immediately.

Seeing that everyone had left and losing all of his targets, Yue Yang suddenly lost his berserk state.

Darkness shrouded his eyes as the Runic War Circle and the [Nirvana Flame] returned back to Yue Yang's body. Yue Yang lost control of his body and fell from the sky. Elder Yue Hai recklessly caught him in his embrace. This was still his grandchild after all. Even if Yue Yang was still covered in [Nirvana Flame], he still wouldn't let him go. Jun Wu You was also elated with the result,

he was the second to hurry to Yue Yang's side as he clapped his hands excitedly and cheered out loudly.

“What are you cheering for? This brat had showed off too much, he would probably not be able to use his Innate strength for at least three months. Otherwise he will be in trouble.” Phoenix Fairy floated to Yue Yang's side and leaned over to his face. Her large, alluring eyes looked at him flirtatiously, “How is it, Little Sweetheart? Do you feel comfortable after releasing all of your Innate strength? Your body will probably be sore for a month, and you must not use your Innate strength in three months. Otherwise, your weak body would probably explode!”

“It's all your fault!” Yue Yang felt that all of his body was sore beyond compare. A kind of pain and exhaustion had engulfed his whole body. If he still had some strength left, he would have sent this Phoenix Fairy girl flying with a slap. At least, he would have groped her breasts once. He wouldn't have let her go that easily.

However, it was even difficult for him to raise his hands now.

The two Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Da Xia Kingdom had consoled Yue Yang one after another instead, “It's okay, at first your body will not be used to releasing your Innate Strength and will suffer from this kind of pain. Furthermore, you have used your Innate strength too much just now. Normal Innate will probably need a year to recover, but you only needed a month. That is already very fast. Don't worry and recuperate in peace. Use this period of time to understand your state just now, that would be best for you!”

“I don’t have time, I have to save Fourth Mother!” Yue Yang panted out. He wanted to save Fourth Mother, he was still worried about her.

“If you save me, I will consider sending you to the Starved Dog Range!” Phoenix Fairy had not finished speaking before Yue Yang mustered all of his strength, jumped out of Elder Yue Hai’s embrace and pushed her down to the ground. His hands grabbed at her swaying breasts as he shouted out loud, “Stop acting like a spoiled child in front of me! I don’t dig your type!”

Phoenix Fairy did not think that Yue Yang could still do such a perverted action after a great battle.

In the instant where she was frozen, she, who was floating in the air was immediately pushed down to the ground by Yue Yang.

Elder Yue Hai, Jun Wu You and the others was shocked when they see this. But when they returned to their senses, they immediately turned around and chatted as if it nothing was happening as they walked out. Jun Wu You had even said to Elder Yue Hai, “What a nice weather we have today!”

Feng Kuang had replied, “Your Majesty, there’s clear blue sky thousands kilometers away. Sunshine is shining radiantly, the weather is simply perfect for fishing in the ocean.”

As for Elder Yue Hai, he had nodded and agreed, “I happen to have a fishing boat ready.”

The two Heavenly Imperial Guardians and the State Grandmaster had also joined in, “It’s been a long time since we go out together, these old bones are going to get rusty.”

Jun Wu You opened a teleportation scroll as he invited the others, “Then what are you all waiting for? Feng Kuang, go and prepare some drinks!”

They had all left just like that, as if nothing had happened. Only Yue Yang and the Phoenix Fairy that was pinned under him was left, as they stared speechlessly at those old geezers who were strutting away, acting as if they were not there at all... Yue Yang’s wolfy hands was still pressing against Phoenix Fairy’s snow-white breasts. When the two people returned to their senses, Yue Yang immediately pulled his hands away. He discovered that he had grabbed onto them too forcefully. Phoenix Fairy’s snow-white breasts were a little red from his strength.

“In for a penny, in for a pound!” Yue Yang felt that Phoenix Fairy’s body was extremely soft and sweet. His wolfy heart started to boil and his mind decided that he might as well really push down this rampant little girl.

“Wait a minute. What are you doing?” Phoenix Fairy was a little flustered, especially when she saw that Yue Yang was tearing her clothes. She immediately cried out in surprise.

“What am I doing? What do you want me to do?” Yue Yang thought that she was speaking nonsense. They had done it once anyway, why would she pretend this way? In any case, she wouldn’t lose anything if they did it again.

“I’m fine with anything, but don’t you have to save your Fourth Mother?” Phoenix Fairy rolled her eyes. When Yue Yang heard this, he immediately pulled up his pants and jumped up, roaring angrily, “Scram, I really hate seductive, foxy women like you! You really leave me hanging nowhere! Next time when you see me, just leave me alone! Otherwise, I’ll rape you once if I see you once!”

Yue Yang scolded her over and over as he felt guilty for forgetting Fourth Mother, getting muddle-headed by his lust.

He hurriedly opened his teleportation scroll and summoned the teleportation gate, going directly to the Starved Dog Range.

Chapter 189 – Working Together To Save Fourth Mother

In the Dimension of Duel, Phoenix Fairy frowned a little.

She muttered to herself, “Why would that little brat set a teleporting point here before teleporting away? Is it his habit? No, it can’t be. If it is habit, then he wouldn’t try to hide it from me... He must have some kind of secret. Could it be that he wanted to come back to collect Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan’s corpses? But Tu Cheng’s and Kuang Zhan’s equipments are all items that recognized their master. It will also be useless for him to have it. That’s weird. Should I peek a little... But if I put the ‘Eyes of Truth’ here, he would be really angry if he found out. Sigh, forget it then... One day I will definitely dig out all of your secrets!”

“Why don’t you wait for him here then? With his sense, he definitely wouldn’t discover your presence!” Night Empress’ voice resounded out.

“Damn, that gave me a fright. Night Empress, you haven’t left?” Phoenix Fairy jumped in fright, patting her chest adorably as she scolded the Night Empress in a coy tone.

“Stop acting coy with me. Your move doesn’t work on me. Sky Law, if you don’t mind me saying, I’d like to remind you to stay away from Yue Yang. Otherwise, you’d regret it.” Night Empress’ gentle voice was like a light breeze brushing across the surface of a lake.

“Thanks for the reminder. It’s just that, you know that he is dangerous, why don’t you stay away from him then?” Phoenix Fairy gave her an enchanting smile and replied back.

“Because he’s a couple with our Luo Hua, so he’s more or less family. I obviously need to watch out for him, so I will definitely not allow you to bring him to the Demonic Palace. Also, it will be best for you to do foolish things less. I could hear it from your elder sister’s tone just now that she is really angry. Sky Law, aren’t you afraid that she will capture you and lock you in the Black House for one or two hundred years? I remember that you have just been released not long ago, right? Did you think that you have improved a lot and have the ability to go against your elder sister?” Night Empress didn’t show herself, only her voice resounded out, sounding a little amused.

“I want to live freely. As long as I could be happy, I don’t care if I’m sealed.” Phoenix Fairy’s face immediately changed when the time when she was sealed was mentioned. It was obvious that she didn’t take things as easily as she tried to be.

“Up to you then!” Night Empress laughed lightly before her voice disappeared slowly. She, who was hiding herself, had soundlessly left the Dimension of Duel.

“No matter what, I’m set on stirring up trouble this time! Nobody likes me anyway. Hahaha, I’m a bad woman, I’m a bad woman, so I would need to do bad things, hahahahaha!” Phoenix Fairy stared blankly for a long time before finally laughing out loud. She laughed until her shoulders trembled and tears flowed down her eyes.

She continued to laugh as she drew a Runic Circle and tore a dimension in space, before disappearing into thin air.

Before she disappeared, an almost indiscernible sigh resounded in the Dimension of Duel.

It was very faint, almost unheard.

Starved Dog Range.

At this time, black clouds covered the sky. Although there was only a light rain, everywhere was covered in puddles of water, it was extremely moist.

Yue Yang discovered that his whole body was in pain, but thinking of saving Fourth Mother, he forced himself forward. Right now, there was not enough Spirit Qi in his body to summon the Bloody Queen. Fortunately, there was still Xiao Wen Li, the considerate and obedient little loli.

He didn't know what kind of method Xiao Wen Li used, but she managed to enter into the Divine Grimoire and called the Bloody Queen out for Yue Yang.

This time, however, the direction that Xiao Wen Li had pointed out wasn't the largest valley in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

Although there would be weird noises coming out from that large valley at times, as if there was an ongoing battle that Yue Yang wanted to check, he finally decided to believe in Xiao Wen Li's sense.

The direction she had pointed out was a place behind the Starved Dog Range.

There were a few mountains and valleys that were not connected in the middle blocking their path. If Yue Yang wanted to reach the place that Xiao Wen Li had pointed out, he must go around the Starved Dog Range, journeying to the right.

Although the Bloody Queen could lift Yue Yang and fly into the sky, she couldn't carry him flying for too long. Furthermore, Yue Yang was also extremely anxious and worried about Fourth Mother, hence he ordered the Bloody Queen to go first and save Fourth Mother. If he could rescue Fourth Mother one second quicker, he would move one second faster.

"Quickly find Fourth Mother. If you can't come back quickly to report to me, then stay there and secretly protect her safety. Do you understand what I mean?" Yue Yang knew that there was no more Innate Rankers in the Starved Dog Range. However, the Thousand Goblins Sect might have some Minor Innates. He didn't dare to make assumptions. As he ordered the Bloody Queen to investigate Fourth Mother's whereabouts, he quickly dragged his sore and exhausted body towards the direction Xiao Wen Li had sensed.

According to Xiao Wen Li's guidance, Yue Yang finally reached

the other side of the Starved Dog Range after half an hour.

On the other side of the Starved Dog Range, there was a humongous cliff. Halfway through the cliff, there were jagged rocks protruding out. After going around it, there was a towering mountain ridge.

The name of this mountain ridge did not sound very good. It's called "Dog's Leg Cliff". It was named as such not because it's shaped like a dog's leg, nor because it's located behind the Starved Dog Range. Legend said that there was once a war, where there was a shameless traitor who had allowed his enemies to infiltrate his own camp through a secret pathway in this Cliff, orchestrated a pincer attack on his army from the front and the back, hence causing a complete defeat of his own army... In order to remember the disgusting act of this traitor, the later generation had named the cliff where the secret pathway was hidden the "Dog's Leg Cliff"!

(Shiro: Dog's leg can also mean a derogatory term for henchmen)

Yue Yang didn't know if the legend was true or false, but there must be a small connecting pathway inside the cliff. This fact had already been verified by the Warrior's Guild.

If the Warrior's Guild hadn't verified it, they wouldn't draw a streak of line that represented the secret pathway on the map.

He didn't see Bloody Queen at all. Yue Yang resisted the pain in his body and climbed up the slippery cliff that normal warriors would never be able to climb. It was only at this time that he

realized that there was a whole new world up there. In the slippery, dangerous cliff, there was actually a mountain cave that couldn't be seen from below.

Even if Yue Yang did not have Hui Tai Lang's sharp sense of smell, he could smell a strong smell of blood coming out from within the mountain cave.

As he prepared to infiltrate into the mountain cave, a black shadow suddenly appeared behind his back.

Hui Jin Magic Blade exploded out with a slash.

When there was only a gap as wide as a string left, before Yue Yang chopped the other side's head off, he halted his Hui Jin Magic Blade suddenly.

That was because Yue Yang realized that the person who had suddenly appeared behind him was the Principal that had promised him to save his sister. She was still wearing the same clothes just now, but she covered her face with a white veil. A trail of fresh blood flowed from her mouth, blossoming like fallen cherry petals. Yue Yang felt extremely guilty looking at that. She had forced her exhausted body to use her [Heart's Cry] Inherent Skill in order to find his Fourth Mother... Right now, she must not have been able to find his sister, hence she switched over to Starved Dog Range instead... Yue Yang supported the beautiful Principal whose body was swaying back and forth, asking her softly, "Are you okay?"

“I’m okay. I am not injured, this is my old sickness. It’s nothing much.” The beautiful Principal who was covered in white veil consoled Yue yang instead, “Your Fourth Mother is alright. Wu Xia is protecting her in secret while Qian Qian and Luo Hua are waiting for an opportunity to save her. My body is weak, I couldn’t help much, so I stayed outside to wait for you. Go inside now, they would be reassured if you are with them!” The beautiful principal’s body had been trembling non-stop. When she spoke, the fresh blood dripping from the corner of her mouth stained her white veil with red.

“Wu Xia?” Yue Yang froze. Was that the mysterious beauty’s, who liked to read books, name?

Seeing that the beautiful Principal’s body was about to sway and fell to the ground, Yue yang immediately supported her up, placing his palms on her back and channeling his Innate Qi into her to help her heal her wounds.

The beautiful principal struggled weakly as she resisted, “You don’t have to waste your strength, my illness is already beyond cure. Just reserve your strength to battle for now, I would be fine if I go back and rest! I couldn’t find your sister, she should have already been brought back by the State Grandmaster... If you saw Wu Xia, don’t tell her that I have used my [Heart’s Cry] Inherent Skill. If she asked, just tell her that you did not come to see me at all...”

She had not finished speaking before her head slumped to the ground.

Yue Yang hurriedly hugged her in his embrace and channeled some Innate Qi into her.

The moment his Innate Qi circulated around her body, Yue Yang realized that this beautiful principal's body was extremely weak and fragile, to the point that it was hard for him to believe. Even old geezers who had been lying in bed for decades drinking medicines everyday would still be stronger than her. Most importantly, Yue Yang realized that there was a kind of weird energy in her body that was absorbing her life energy non-stop. If it wasn't for this weird energy in her body, she wouldn't be so weak... Yue Yang's Innate Qi that had been channeled into her body had also disappeared into thin air, completely absorbed by that energy. Only a small portion of his energy managed to stay within the beautiful principal's body.

The beautiful principal slowly woke up. Her first reaction was to struggle out of Yue Yang's embrace.

Her second action was to touch her face to check whether her white veil was still on.

After she realized that Yue Yang had not touched her veil, she seemed to sigh secretly. Yue Yang wanted to support her up, but the beautiful principal shook her hands adamantly and refused, "Don't waste time on me anymore, quickly go and save your Fourth Mother! I can return home on my own, you don't have to worry about me. My condition has been like this for a few decades, and I still have not died yet. I won't die so easily... You, did you really not touch my veil?" The beautiful principal opened a teleportation scroll, but before she entered the teleportation gate,

she suddenly asked with a weak, trembling voice.

“No!” Yue Yang shook his head.

Actually, he had sneaked a peek on the beautiful principal's face just now, and realized that other than her deathly pale complexion, she was actually an unrivalled beauty.

But Yue Yang did not recognize the beautiful principal at all, he felt that he had never seen her face before.

At the beginning, he thought that she was the mysterious beauty who loved to read books. But that doubt had been quickly cleared because the mysterious beauty was not as weak as the beautiful principal. Their voices are a little similar, but if he tried to observe carefully, their voices were also kinda different.

The beautiful principal's words and actions made Yue Yang extremely surprised.

It almost seemed like she had recognized him from the start, as if she was trying to hide some kind of secret from him. She had even forced herself to help him find his Fourth Mother with her exhausted, weak and fragile body... The thing that confused Yue Yang the most was that the mysterious beauty who loved to read books also seemed to be familiar with him. Furthermore, at the most dangerous time of his life, she had also sacrificed herself to protect him. What relation did these two girls actually have?

These two girls, how were they related to the pitiful guy?

Otherwise, were they acquainted with the pitiful guy's parents? Were they the pitiful guy's relatives?

“It's good if you didn't. Alright then.” The beautiful principal's body trembled a little before falling again. She wanted to leave hurriedly, but Yue Yang grabbed onto her hands hurriedly. He channeled some Innate Qi as he steeled his heart and asked with a little hesitation, “We, do we know each other previously?”

“No, we don't know each other previously. I only know about you when you came to the Ivy Academy to study.” The beautiful principal's reply made Yue Yang even more confused. The thing that made Yue Yang even more confused was that she didn't seem to be lying. The beautiful principal struggled to pull her hands off lightly. Yue Yang was afraid that her weak body would fall, so he immediately let go and supported her from afar, prepared to send her away. Before the beautiful principal entered the teleportation gate, she turned her head and nodded lightly, “Previously, I had heard about you before, but I have never seen you in person... When I heard that you had pulled your Fourth Mother and sisters with a carriage back to the Yue Clan Castle, I felt happy for you. A true man should have done what you have done. Quickly go and find your Fourth Mother, don't waste anymore time on me. You and I have no relations at all...”

Seeing the beautiful principal's disappearing, weak body, Yue Yang hurriedly turned around and flew into the mountain cave.

He didn't believe that he was not related to the beautiful

principal at all. They must certainly be related in some way. Furthermore, that mysterious beauty who loved to read books must have been related to them too.

Of course, if she didn't tell him, he couldn't force her to answer.

He could try to ask Fourth Mother after he found her. She would definitely tell him the truth!

There were many passages within the mountain cave, curved and meandering. Yue Yang saw that there was a big platform in front that was filled with a big mess. There were countless corpses and weapons strewn all over the ground. It was as if a huge battle had unfolded right there. Inside, there were a few exits leading out of the room. Yue Yang felt anxious, which way should he go to?

Then, he suddenly saw the Bloody Queen flying out from one of the exits. Yue Yang was immediately elated.

"In front, river, I, wait..." Yue Yang couldn't really understand what the Bloody Queen had tried to say, but when he charged into the exit, he realized that there was an underground river right in front of him. The Bloody Queen pointed down, showing some markings that Princess Qian Qian had carved on the rocks at the bottom of the river. The Bloody Queen had not known how to swim, and she was afraid that Yue Yang wouldn't be able to find her, so she could only wait for Yue Yang outside.

Yue Yang hurriedly recalled her back and jumped into the ice-cold water. He dived into the bottom of the river and followed

Princess Qian Qian's markings.

After around ten minutes, Yue Yang still couldn't find a gap to take a breath.

Yue Yang frowned at this river. The person who kidnapped Fourth Mother might be a warrior who could hold his breath underwater. But Fourth Mother was just a normal person, what about her then?

At a distance that was around five kilometers away from the underground river where Yue Yang was, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress were in the midst of a heated battle. Their capabilities were much stronger than the opponents', but their opponents were greater in numbers and their purpose was to stall for time. They were facing against three strong warriors who had been swimming in the water, avoiding the battle with them at all cost instead of fighting them head on. Furthermore, they were all experts in water beasts. They had waited under the lake and defended the water channel entrance.

Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress did not have any water-type beasts, hence their attacks had been useless on the enemies.

They were waiting for Yue Yang to come, but when he did not come for a long time, the two girls' hearts had started to become more anxious.

At one of the underground tunnel at the bottom of the lake, the

situation was completely reversed. The enemies had attacked relentlessly while the mysterious beauty defended.

A demoness who had wings on her back and a thin man with wolf claws continued to attack fervently.

The mysterious beauty who loved to read books exerted her utmost strength and effort to stop these two's attacks.

These two people's strength were about the strength of a Level 7 [Overlord] and above. Seemed like there were quite a few experts in the Thousand Goblins Sect. They attacked in turns, but they were unable to understand the mysterious beauty's ultimate moves, [Light Wind Teleportation], [Instant Summoning], and [Thunderstorm].

Although the mysterious beauty could not fight off her enemies and was constantly pushed back, she continued to hold on and did not let her enemies gain an inch forward towards her easily.

Although the two people were strong, it was also not easy for them to defeat her.

Especially in dangerous situations, a golden Rune Circle would appear between the mysterious beauty's eyebrows, and increase her strength by ten times over. She was able to push her two enemies back in a short period of time. It was just that those Rune Circles would only appear at the most critical times. Furthermore, that state could only be maintained for a short period of time. The mysterious beauty could only use that ability to support her, she

could not use it to defend against the two strong enemies who were working together to fight against her.

Further up in front, deeper inside the underground tunnel, at a distance of around 10 kilometers from the mysterious beauty, Yi Nan was carrying an unconscious Fourth Mother, running in front as she gritted her teeth.

She only had one thought in her mind.

And that was to 'hold on for a minute longer'. That was because she knew that she would be saved if she could hold on longer, hold on until Yue Yang arrived here.

Yue Yang would definitely resolve all these quickly, he would definitely will!

The other rankers in Da Xia Kingdom would also hurried over to them quickly... As long as she hold on a few moments longer, they would be saved! Yi Nan had bitten her lips to the point that it bled, but she didn't feel pain at all. She carried Fourth Mother and she continued to run forward non-stop, doing her utmost to escape and outrun the enemies that were chasing her from behind. It was pitch black in front, she didn't know what kind of things would await her in front, but she had no other choice. She could only run forward...

Run forward, hold on. That was the only way to win!

Yue Yang swam out of the underground river, and saw Princess Qian Qian shouting exasperatedly. She had wanted to slash at her enemies many times, but due to the water buoyancy, she ended up missing all her attacks.

Her enemies had made use of the deep lake and the environment to reduce her powerful attacks greatly.

“Yue Yang, come over here quickly. We have already saved Fourth Mother... but this place seemed to be like an abandoned tunnel. There was some kind of sealing force present that prevented us to use teleportation scrolls... Fourth Mother is in front with Yi Nan, the enemies are chasing after them now. We have to quickly go and save them! These people are not only the members of the Thousand Goblins Sect, they also had a bunch of demonic sect experts. They wanted to use Fourth Mother as an offering to open the ‘Heaven Stairway’. We must move fast! Yi Nan is injured, she might not be able to hold on for long!” Luo Hua City Mistress couldn’t display her full abilities at this place, hence she felt extremely anxious. When she saw Yue Yang had come, she felt very happy and immediately rushed to his side and told him the current critical situation.

“Don’t talk anymore, come over and help quickly!” Princess Qian Qian also felt very relieved when she saw that Yue Yang had arrived.

This was really good! This brat had finally arrived!

Chapter 190 – Do I Really Need To Do CPR?

Yue Yang raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade and rushed over to help Princess Qian Qian.

Although he had just fought a great battle with Tu Cheng, was sore all over and unable to use his full Innate strength, he could still use his Twin Fish Circle's [Spherical Beheader] and his [Yang Pole] fire ability, revealing his formidable power. After awaking his [Nirvana Flame] ability, his [Yang Pole] fire ability had become even stronger and purer. When Yue Yang raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade, the purple flames enveloping his blade immediately turned into a tangible fireblade, slashing down with a power that could rend heaven and earth upon a Depraved Being expert riding a Golden Tiger Shark in the lake .

That Depraved Being expert immediately thought that the situation wasn't good. A tangible fireblade? That was not something that he could stand against. He hurriedly rode his Golden Tiger Shark away down to the bottom of the lake.

If it was another time, Yue Yang would definitely have other plans.

But there was not enough time now.

He immediately summoned Xiao Wen Li and ordered her to attack the enemies in the lake.

Yue Yang didn't care that much anymore. He grabbed Princess

Qian Qian and threw her into the lake, then hugged Luo Hua City Mistress who was not that skilled in water and jumped into the lake. He didn't want to waste even a single second. He prepared to bring the two girls along as he forced his way through this hurdle and save Fourth Mother quickly... As for these Depraved Beings experts who were skillful in water combat, he would leave them all to Xiao Wen Li to handle.

Luo Hua City Mistress screamed, because she never thought that Yue Yang would use such a barbaric method to force his way through.

He had not yet defeated the enemies, and the three of them did not have any water-related abilities. Their combined strength might not even be a tenth of their enemies'. Were they really going to force their way through?

Then, the Stone-element Medusa and the Storm Mermaid was summoned by Xiao Wen Li. They swam with a speed much faster than Yue Yang's. Their combat power underwater was a few times stronger than their abilities above water. The figures of the Stone-element Medusa and the Storm Mermaid flashed as they split the water and overtook Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress. Even Xiao Wen Li who was the last one to enter the water, was much faster than Yue Yang.

When it came to water battles, it was definitely the Stone-element Medusa's and the Storm Mermaid's realm.

The Storm Mermaid immediately called forth her Storm Conch when she jumped into the water. It was as if an invisible demon

hand had created a mess on the lake, as huge whirlpools appeared everywhere and threatened to suck all living things into it. The Stone-element Medusa held Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yang who was holding onto Luo Hua City Mistress and dove into an underground channel at the bottom of the lake.

The Golden Tiger Shark swam furiously over, opening its mouth widely. Its sharp teeth glinted with menace, looking extremely terrifying.

The Stone-element Medusa turned around and glared at the Golden Tiger Shark.

She also relaxed her hands and let Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian go.

She quickly raised her bow and shot an accurate shot.

That Golden Tiger Shark was so afraid that it immediately turned around and swam away, even trying with all its might to jump out of the lake surface. It was as if it had met its predator, afraid beyond compare.

There was another Golden Swordfish and a Golden Octopus hovering around outside, not daring to come any closer. As for the three Depraved Beings experts, they were still trying to resist the whirlpool that was getting stronger and stronger. They could force themselves to stay in their place, but they were unable to move freely. Their subordinates, who were all experts in water battles, their men, who were all lying in ambush, and their beasts, on the

other hand, were all sucked into the swirling whirlpool. No one managed to escape the suction force of the whirlpool... The Golden Tiger Shark who had escaped the Stone-element Medusa's attack by jumping out from the water surface had not managed to fall back into the lake when a flash of lightning suddenly shocked its body with a loud clap of thunder.

The Golden Tiger Shark saw a terrifying scene. There was a graceful, terrifying beast floating on the lake surface who had summoned thunder, striking every single beast that had come out from the lake surface with lightning!

“Heavens, it's a Thunder Naga...”

The three Depraved Beings experts came out to the lake surface. When they saw the Stone-element Medusa and the Storm Mermaid entering the water, they knew that this battle would not be easy to fight. These two beasts were killing machines underwater. Stone-element Medusa had the ability to turn every single living thing into stone and sink them into the depths of water. As for the Storm Mermaid, although most mermaids were delicate and fragile beings, there was one exception, and that was the Storm Mermaid. The delicate and beautiful Storm Mermaid had the powerful ability to overturn seas and rivers. Let alone Tiger Sharks and Swordfishes, these kinds of normal-sized beasts, even the Gigantic Whale, a Colossal-type beast, wouldn't dare to provoke a Storm Mermaid... However, the thing that caused the three people to despair was that a third kind of terrifying monster had also appeared: the Thunder Naga!

Stone-element Medusas were quite rare. They were usually

hidden in small deserted islands where no human populations exist. They might also hide underneath lakes, refusing to get into contact with human beings.

Storm Mermaids would usually swim freely in the vast ocean. They loved freedom and also liked to play, so they very rarely attack others.

However, the Thunder Naga was very different from the first two.

They had existed in this world to become killing machines.

It didn't matter if it was the Deep Ocean Naga or the Sea Naga, they were both underwater killing machines and lunatics with superhuman combat powers. They would chase everything that they targeted relentlessly until they killed them. If one were asked what was the most intelligent and terrifying monster underwater, there could only be one answer: Naga!

And if one were asked which type of Naga was the scariest among all, there could only be one answer too: Thunder Naga!

The chances of a Thunder Naga born was only one in ten million of a normal Naga. Furthermore, once they were born, their level would at least be a Gold King Beast. They might even already be a Holy Beast when they were born... Thunder Nagas could easily summon thunders, no matter if they were underwater or above water. They would be able to easily massacre their opponents. They were originally not beasts from the Soaring Dragon

Continent. It was said that ten thousands of years ago, Ancient Ancestors had brought them back to the Soaring Dragon Continents oceans from the Tong Tian Tower and the Demon Abyss. Even though there were only a few Nagas that existed, they quickly became the strongest beings in the oceans, the kings of the ocean. The original 'kings' of the oceans "King Cuttlefish" and "Great White Shark King" were often seen electrocuted to death by the Thunder Naga, their corpses floating on top of the ocean...

The Thunder Naga that the Ancient Ancestors had brought from Tong Tian Tower and the Demon Abyss were only Gold King Beasts, but this Thunder Naga that had appeared on the lake in front of them was actually a Diamond-ranked beast. Furthermore, she was even cupping the legendary treasure, "Thunder Orb" in her hands.

Above the cliff, black clouds gathered.

Strikes of lightning was summoned by the Thunder Naga, accurately striking every single living thing on the lake surface.

Every living things died immediately, none of them was given any mercy.

The three Depraved Beings experts recklessly escaped to the shore, running away from the lake.

If this goes on, they would either be turned into stone by the Stone-element Medusa and drowned to the bottom of the ocean, or shattered into pieces by the Storm Mermaid's whirlpool. The most

frightening one would be getting electrocuted by the Thunder Naga's lightning. Whoever was struck by that fearsome lightning would probably be burnt to crisps alive...

The Golden Octopus was hit by the Stone-element Medusa's golden arrow, its tentacle was petrified. It then smashed into pieces from the whirlpools that the Storm Mermaid had summoned, and in the end, only its bald head was left. It still tried to escape by spouting water from its mouth, but was finally slashed by Xiao Wen Li. It spouted a large amount of black ink, thinking of escaping in the dark. However, unknowingly, the Golden Beast who turned into a bracelet on Yue Yang's wrist had returned back to its original appearance. It completely did not care about the black ink and straight away bore into the octopus' wound, overbearingly plundering the magic core inside the Golden Octopus brain.

The other Golden Swordfish could swim very quickly. It had already escaped ashore.

Its master hurriedly tried to recall it back to his summoning crystal.

However, a golden arrow shot out from the water, shooting right through the Golden Swordfish's tail. Following that, the Thunder Naga's lightning ruthlessly struck on the Golden Swordfish's body.

There was also a small snake, a water dragon-like beast who threw the Golden Swordfish body into the air. The Golden Swordfish's body suddenly disappeared before it smashed heavily onto its master, the Depraved Being expert's face, smashing its

petrified tail into pieces. Before the Depraved Being expert could breathe, Xiao Wen Li had already surged out, brandishing her Dual Blades and easily cutting the struggling Golden Swordfish into three pieces...

“No!” The Golden Swordfish’s master, the Depraved Being expert watched helplessly as his most treasured beast died in front of him. He cried out miserably.

“Quickly go, it’s not the time to be sad right now. It’s more important to protect your life!” His comrade, the other two Depraved Beings experts pulled him along with all of their might, as they charged into the underground river and escaped using a speed that they had never done their whole life.

In the lake, the gravely injured Golden Tiger Shark watched helplessly as its master abandoned it and ran away.

Facing against the Thunder Naga’s thunder balls, Stone-element Medusa’s golden arrows, the Storm Mermaid’s water dragon and Xiao Wen Li, it suddenly did an extremely clever action. It first tried to run away, but then it decided to give up. It turned its stomach over, floating on the lake surface. It didn’t put up a single resistance, and hoped that its opponents would have mercy and spare its lives seeing that it had completely acknowledged its defeat.

Beasts who were Golden-ranked and above often had a wisdom that normal beasts wouldn’t have.

They could abandon their fights and betray their master. This was not a strange phenomenon.

As for Bronze-ranked or Normal-ranked beasts, although they could also run away and betray their master, their intelligence were extremely limited. When their attack failed, they would only panic and try to run away. They might not be able to think of surrendering to their enemies.

Towards its surrender, Xiao Wen Li raised her Dual Blades, but finally dropped them again.

It seemed like she didn't really like a gold-ranked beast like this Golden Tiger Shark. It seemed like in her eyes, the Golden Tiger Shark was just a useless trash of a beast.

Xiao Wen Li watched as the Golden Tiger Shark trembled, tilting her head to one side as if she was thinking of something. Suddenly, she took out a summoning crystal. She didn't want to contract it, so she gave the summoning crystal to the Stone-element Medusa. The Stone-element Medusa also hesitated for a while before finally reaching out and drawing a summoning circle on the Golden Tiger Shark's forehead after Xiao Wen Li's relentless urging. She tried to seal it twice, but failed. The Stone-element Medusa was so angry that she immediately raised her golden bow and was about to kill this Golden Tiger Shark... Finally, under Xiao Wen Li's advise and help, she finally contracted it successfully on the third try.

The Golden Tiger Shark was so afraid that it kept trembling nonstop.

When the contracting was successful, its huge body turned into a ball of golden light and flew towards the summoning crystal.

When the Stone-element Medusa summoned it out, the Golden Tiger Shark didn't care about its gravely injured body and immediately displayed its most loyal behaviour, currying favor with its new master.

It turned its spear-like head and charged towards those beasts on the lake that were dizzy from the whirlpool, attacking them and massacring them without restraint... However, the Stone-element Medusa didn't look at it at all, she had already chased after Xiao Wen Li, who was chasing after Yue Yang.

“Die, whore. Just try to block me again!” The demoness with wings on her back and the skinny man with wolf claws attacked the mysterious beauty together. If it wasn't for the fact that she had just fought a great battle, and that her body had not recovered completely, her combat power had been greatly decreased, the mysterious beauty wouldn't end up being so miserable. She gritted her teeth, resisting the two strong enemies' attack with all her might. She even ignored all the curses that they spouted at her.

If the two of them managed to go past her, she would immediately use her [Light Wind Teleportation] and blocked them again in front.

She would stop them by using the protective shield erected by her [Instant Summoning].

In any case, before she completely passed out, she would definitely not let these two people go past her and caught up with Yi Nan. Yi Nan's power was lacking and her body was also injured. She was also carrying Fourth Mother as she escaped for their lives. If these two enemies caught up with them, they would definitely be instantly killed.

“She is more or less done for. Bai Yi, you go after those two in front and leave this girl to me. Wait for me to summon Black Smoke, then use the smoke to hide yourself and advance forward. I don't believe that I can't take down a simple girl alone...” The man with wolf claws licked his lips with his long tongue, a coarse, obscene look flashing past his eyes. He felt that his opponent had almost reached her limit. If they continued to fight, she might be cut into half by his partner, the demoness with wings. He felt that it would be a pity for such a beautiful girl to die before he enjoyed her for a while. Hence, he did not suggest for a stronger attack method, but suggested to use the Black Smoke instead. When darkness shrouds them, his partner would go in front and catch the other two while he would enjoy himself here...

“This girl is too barbaric, be careful of getting your balls kicked, idiot!” The demoness with wings on her back laughed out coldly, but she didn't oppose his intentions. In her heart, it did not matter what her partner did. The most important thing for her was to snatch the woman who could open the ‘Heaven's Stairway’ for them.

As long as they opened the ‘Heaven Stairway’, then she and her sister could transform a hundred times over. Then, along with the three leaders of Thousand Goblins Sect, they could enter the

Heaven Stairway and use the secret method to resurrect the Thousand Goblins King.

The Sect Leader had said before, as long as the Thousand Goblins King was resurrected, then the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent would tremble at their feet.

The man with the wolf claws retreated two steps back and took out a crystal stone.

However, before he managed to unleash his skill with his crystal stone, a blade tip that shot out faster than light flashed, targeting his right hand.

“Who’s that?” The man with the wolf claws avoided the sword tip and shouted loudly. At the same time, a fist had ruthlessly smashed onto his face and a furious voice exploded in his ears, “Go and ask King Yama in hell!”

(Shiro: King Yama is like the Hades of China)

Yue Yang charged over and immediately pummeled the man with the wolf claws to the ground. Although he couldn’t use his Innate Strength now, he was still on par with the man with the wolf claws, who was a Level 7 [Overlord]. In addition, he was furiously pummeling him with all his might. The man with the wolf claws couldn’t even struggle, he could only endure his pain and waved his claws to resist Yue Yang’s blows. At first, both sides attacks were more or less equal, Yue Yang gaining a little advantage as he had pinned the wolf-claws man’s body on the ground. However, the man with the wolf claws was able to use his sharp claws and

return quite a few of Yue Yang's blows... Yet, Yue Yang's defensive abilities were actually more than ten times stronger than the man with the wolf claws.

Yue Yang's skin was torn by the man with the wolf claws, but the cuts weren't too deep, they were simply superficial wounds.

On the opposite, Yue Yang's fists that fell like heavy rain were all packed with internal strength.

His Innate Qi exploded as traces of it entered into the man with the wolf claws' bones.

The man with the wolf claws' miserable cries resounded nonstop as his attacks became slower and slower. The initial fifty-fifty strength distribution between them slowly become forty-sixty, thirty-seventy, twenty-eighty... In the end, the man with the wolf claws were beaten black and blue by Yue Yang. He struggled relentlessly, yet was unable to escape from Yue Yang's clutches.

Behind them, the demoness with wings on her back wanted to save his comrade, but the mysterious beauty used her last bit of strength and maintained her protective shield, blocking in front of Yue Yang.

Princess Qian Qian was slightly late, but her great sword quickly came slashing down onto the demoness with wings on her back.

"You dared to try to kill my Fourth Mother, die, die, die!" Yue

Yang's blows grew stronger each time, beating the man with the wolf claws relentlessly, to the point that fresh blood splashed out and teeth scattered about. The man with the wolf claws' face had almost been bashed in by Yue Yang's punches. At the brink of death, the man with the wolf claws' strength suddenly exploded. He sent Yue Yang flying away, thinking of escaping his death. However, Xiao Wen Li suddenly appeared right in front of him. She reached out and released her [Binding Chains] Inherent Skill, locking him in his place. Next, the Stone-element Medusa's golden arrow immediately penetrated the man with the wolf claws' legs and the Thunder Naga's lightning struck down. As Xiao Wen Li brandished her blades and slashed at his arms, the Storm Mermaid unleashed a tornado that swept the man with the wolf claws up into the air... Yue Yang leapt into the air, his hands grabbing onto the man with the wolf claws' head and twisted it. With a cracking sound, the man with the wolf claws who continued to resist even after receiving so many blows finally died after Yue Yang broke his neck.

One down!

The man with the wolf claws' body slumped weakly to the ground.

His eyes were just like a dead fish's, wide opened as he died without his eyes closed...

Seeing that her opponents' reinforcements had all come, and furthermore, there was Yue Yang whose killing intent was exploding like a demon god's, the winged demoness immediately lost her wits out of fear and quickly escaped.

Flapping her wings, she quickly escaped through the tunnel where Yue Yang had come from. Princess Qian Qian, the mysterious beauty and Yue Yang had all blocked on the other side instead, afraid that she would chase after Yi Nan.

This made the demoness extremely happy. She felt that her life was more important, so she wasn't anxious to snatch Fourth Mother back.

When she had already flown a hundred metres ahead, she thought that she had managed to escape from the enemies' besiege.

However, suddenly, a frightening [Aurora] suddenly lighted up in front.

It was Luo Hua City Mistress.

She needed a lot of time to cast her [Aurora].

However, the moment she cast it, no matter how strong the enemies were, they wouldn't be able to endure the destructive power of the [Aurora].

The demoness didn't have a grimoire's protective shield, so she immediately tried to fly back in fear. Alas, her flying speed was a joke compared to the speed at which the [Aurora] shot out... Ten seconds later, amongst fragments of rocks, the demoness whose body was charred black crawled out in pain. She wasn't dead yet,

but the wings that she got from fusing with her beast had completely been destroyed. Even with the strength of a Level 7 [Overlord], she couldn't escape being gravely injured.

Princess Qian Qian raised her sword... The demoness was so frightened when she saw this and screamed, "Spare my life, spare me!"

Yue Yang brushed aside Princess Qian Qian who hesitated at the last moment and grabbed onto the demoness. He humphed cold-heartedly, "Whoever harmed my family, I will kill them without mercy. I don't care about their identity or if they are male or female!"

The demoness brandished her claws in despair, thrusting them towards Yue Yang's eyes, thinking of struggling in her last moments.

"Kill!" Yue Yang shouted loudly. With one shoulder throw, he threw the demoness down to the ground heavily. He didn't wait for her to struggle as he stomped hard on her spine immediately.

He also reached out for her head and twisted it like he did with the man with the wolf claws.

Simple and efficient.

He didn't show any mercy on her just because she was a woman. Furthermore, he had even used the same method he used to kill the

man with the wolf claws on her... Yue Yang had wanted to crush these two dog's bones to millions of pieces, but he thought that they might be good fertilizer for his Thorny Flower. In the end, he simply decided to use the simplest and most efficient method of twisting their neck off instead.

“Wouldn't it be better to capture her and question her first?” Princess Qian Qian didn't think that killing this woman was wrong, but she didn't want Yue Yang to become an illogical killing madman. It would perhaps be better if they caught her and handed her over to the interrogation authority who would behead her later on. Of course, that would be more troublesome, because the most important thing to do now was to save Fourth Mother. If they held her captive, they would also need to leave someone behind to watch her.

“Even if you think that way, she is already dead. Why do you think so much? She would just cause trouble if we leave her alive. Let's quickly go and save Fourth Mother, Yi Nan and Fourth Mother are injured...” The mysterious beauty patted Princess Qian Qian's shoulders. She then held Yue Yang and used her last [Light Wind Teleportation], teleporting Yue Yang 100 metres ahead so that he could have a head start to save Fourth Mother and Yi Nan.

When Yue Yang finally found Yi Nan who was carrying Fourth Mother on her back, ten minutes had already passed.

Yi Nan and Fourth Mother was hiding within stone cracks. Luckily Xiao Wen Li managed to feel their presence, otherwise, the anxious Yue yang would definitely not be able to notice their presence.

One of Yi Nan's ribs was broken. Someone had thrown a heavy object onto her body when they were fighting at the beginning. She was not injured very seriously at first, but as she didn't receive medical treatment for a prolonged period of time, coupled with the exhaustion from carrying Fourth Mother and running all the time, her injuries had become worse. Yue Yang caressed Yi Nan's hair which was drenched with sweat and was revealed after her headscarf came loose, helped her put on her headscarf back again, and laid her softly on the ground.

Although Fourth Mother's heartbeat and breathing had almost disappeared, Yue Yang wasn't worried, because he had seen Luo Hua City Mistress entering into her death-like coma state before.

He knew that this was a secret method of self-protection.

When Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the mysterious beauty arrived, they immediately shouted out loud, "Idiot, this is not a death-like coma! Your Fourth Mother never contracted any beasts, so she would definitely not understand how to enter into a death-like coma! Furthermore, this was not even..."

"Ah?" When Yue Yang heard this, it was like a bolt out of the blue for him. His heart immediately started to beat madly, "What did you say? Then, then, what do we do?"

"Quick, use that weird method of yours to save her... Use your, what do you call it – CPR! Quick, save her!" The three girls immediately shouted anxiously. They were so flustered that they

almost cried, as they quickly laid Fourth Mother on the ground clumsily, then beat Fourth Mother's chest disorderly like how Yue Yang had done to save Luo Hua City Mistress before.

“Are you guys telling the truth? Move aside!” Yue Yang's hands were trembling. This wasn't death-like coma? Fourth Mother was really going to lose her heartbeat? Heavens, he had even thought that she was fine just now!

When Yue Yang thought about this, he immediately felt really guilty.

He immediately pulled Luo Hua City Mistress, who was flustered and did not know what to do, and leaned over Fourth Mother.

In this anxious situation, Yue Yang looked at Fourth Mother, his heart trembling. Did he really need to do CPR? She, she was his Fourth Mother, and these girls were all looking at the side. This, this was really... But he couldn't not try to save her, time waits for no man. If he continued to hesitate, Fourth Mother would really die!

Chapter 191 – Coming Home

Opening Fourth Mother's lower jaw, Yue Yang checked if her airway was clear from obstruction. He was prepared to carry out the CPR.

But he suddenly had second thoughts. Yue Yang stopped and looked at Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the others. He pulled Princess Qian Qian's hands and said, "You do it!"

"I, I, I don't know how!" Princess Qian Qian was so flustered that she shook her hands wildly.

"It's very easy. Just pinch her nose, then cover her mouth with yours and blow air into her. You have to take in a deep breath at first, try to breathe in more air, then breath out into her mouth. After blowing breath into her twice, Luo Hua, start to press her chest. Lock your palms together, don't use too much force and break her ribs... The proportion for artificial respiration and chest pressure must be 2:30. What are you guys doing, still staring blankly like fools?" Yue Yang realized that he only knew the theory, speaking of really saving others, if he did not count that time with Luo Hua City Mistress, he had never really tried to save a person before.

"I also don't know how!" Luo Hua City Mistress looked down in panic, her hands continued to tremble violently, as if showing the anxiety she was feeling in her heart right now.

"Idiot, do it yourself... If you, who are the only one who knew it,

didn't save her, how could you let them save her? This is about saving a person's life. What do you think this is? Idiot, I'll just do it then!" The mysterious beauty saw that everyone was at a loss on what to do, so she took the initiative and bend her body over Fourth Mother's, giving her chest compressions. Princess Qian Qian also bent down hurriedly, but she couldn't grasp the essential thing that she must do and wasn't able to blow her breath into Fourth Mother. Seeing that it was quite impossible to leave it to the her, Yue Yang decided to save Fourth Mother personally.

This was saving someone!

He must save Fourth Mother, he wouldn't think about other things anymore. It was not the time to think about those things now.

He took off the mysterious beauty's veil and placed it on Fourth Mother's lips, then performed artificial respiration to save her. Yue Yang had seen this method in television before. This prevents any foreign objects such as saliva or other things to be blown into the victim's lungs. One could use a piece of veil or gauze as a separation.

Of course, there might not be such items in the place where they needed to perform artificial respiration, so this method is not a must and not a required rule in artificial respiration.

Yue Yang didn't care that much about looking at the mysterious beauty's face, immediately bending over and blowed two breaths into Fourth Mother's mouth.

The mysterious beauty hurriedly matched Yue Yang as she began chest compression right after he finished blowing his breaths.

The mysterious beauty's compressions was extremely light. She did not dare to exert too much pressure, afraid that she would break Fourth Mother's ribs. Yue Yang continuously reminded her to compress with a slower pace, but with a little more force. Princess Qian Qian, on the other hand, reminded the mysterious beauty not to use too much force. As for Luo Hua City Mistress, she helped to massage Fourth Mother's hands as she said to Yue Yang, who was blowing in breath into Fourth Mother, "Quick, Fourth Mother's hands felt very cold, you guys, quickly save her..."

"We can't do it too quickly. Everyone stay calm, don't be too anxious, and don't cry! You have to maintain a sustainable pace for CPR!" Yue Yang himself was also extremely anxious, but he knew that if he showed his anxiousness, then everyone would fall apart. He must persevere and continue resuscitating Fourth Mother.

"What other methods do you have?" The mysterious beauty realized that there wasn't much effect after they performed CPR, so she quickly asked Yue Yang to think of another way.

"Electric shock, we need electricity to shock her heart to move. Another way is to cut her chest open and massage her heart directly!" Yue Yang knew a lot of ways to save a person, but he had never tried any of them before.

When he thought about how he was going to cut open Luo Hua

City Mistress' chest and massage her heart before, Yue Yang still break out in cold sweat.

That kind of method was extremely dangerous.

He had never personally studied about how to save a person, and also had never tried to massage hearts directly. He hadn't even thought about what kind of consequences that would happen when he cut her chest open. Yue Yang was afraid that too much electric power would injure Fourth Mother further, hence he hurriedly added, "The electric shock must not be too high. We must use our palms to release the electric shock, the surface area in contact with her chest must be big. The time of contact must also be short, just enough to shock her lightly... I think, we'll have to take note if there is a lot of blood flowing from the wound when we cut open her chest and massage her heart. If there's a lot of blood, that will mean that she still have heartbeat. We must wait until she does not bleed, which will mean that there's no blood pressure and that her heart will need to be massaged... Actually, I have never tried it myself before!"

The mysterious beauty immediately refused to use the electric shock method, "My electric shock is used to kill enemies, I can't use it to save a person. Thunder Naga can't do it too, we are not the curing type!"

Princess Qian Qian stomped her foot non-stop. She was anxious to save Fourth Mother's life, but she couldn't help with anything. Her heart was full of worry to the point that she almost exploded.

After the third round of CPR, Fourth Mother still had no

reaction.

Yue Yang steeled his heart. If he continued to hesitate now, Fourth Mother would die. If her brain did not receive oxygen supply for more than 10 minutes, it would cause an irrevocable damage. He really shouldn't delay right now... He took out his Dragon Slaying Dagger and was about to cut Fourth Mother's chest open and massage her heart directly...

A small hand suddenly reached out from behind. Xiao Wen Li's small body squeezed in front of him.

A ball of white light condensed in her small hands as she placed it lightly on Fourth Mother's body. After receiving the energy from the ball of white light, Fourth Mother's expression became glossier and more lively. However, her breathing and heartbeat was still not present. Xiao Wen Li reached out her little hands and extended it into Fourth Mother's clothes. A bright rainbow light shone throughout her body, before slowly disappearing into thin air. Xiao Wen Li's hands almost seemed like it was going to fuse with Fourth Mother's body. Ten seconds later, Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian suddenly heard a light heartbeat. But the mysterious beauty didn't find any breathing when she tried to check Fourth Mother's breathing. She hurriedly asked Yue Yang to continue his artificial respiration...

Yue Yang was both surprised and happy. He hurriedly blow two more breaths into Fourth Mother's mouth.

Xiao Wen Li's hands had entered into Fourth Mother's body, her hands continuously massaging Fourth Mother's heart until her

heart recovered its own beat, before she slowly withdrew her hands.

Fourth Mother's body slowly shook. Although her heartbeat was extremely weak, Yue Yang could clearly feel that it was still beating.

Her breathing was also present, albeit faint. It was very faint at first, but it slowly become stronger, and finally returned to normal. Her lips started to become rosy again, and her hands and feet also started to become warm again. Yue Yang held Xiao Wen Li tightly, feeling extremely grateful for his little darling. It was really lucky that she was here to save Fourth Mother. Otherwise, if he tried to save her with his clumsy skills, he didn't know what would happen... If he really cut Fourth Mother's chest open and massage her heart, if her heartbeat and blood pressure recovered, then she would probably bled to death. What would happen then... Yue Yang really didn't dare to think of the consequences!

The three girls hugged each other emotionally and tightly, crying out relentlessly.

Only at this moment did their tears flowed out like a beads of pearls falling from a pearl necklace with a broken string.

Of course, this were happy tears.

When Yue Yang put the exhausted Xiao Wen Li down, the mysterious beauty had already put on her veil back again.

Although Yue Yang didn't care about looking at her face, he had seen it a little bit just now. Although he had not observed her face carefully, when he thought about it again now, he seemed to have some impression on her face... This mysterious beauty looked extremely similar to the beautiful principal, almost as if they were the same person. It was just that her face looked much better and healthier than the sickly, pale and beautiful school principal. Other than their different hairstyles, Yue Yang really couldn't differentiate the mysterious beauty and the beautiful principal at all... Could it be that they were sisters? But it seemed like the beautiful principal didn't have sisters at all!

Yue Yang would of course not ask the mysterious beauty about it now, he pretended not to see her face at all.

“Good darling, you really did good!” Princess Qian Qian also hugged Xiao Wen Li and kissed her cheeks. Yue Yang was a little flustered, he didn't know that this violent girl actually liked little children.

Xiao Wen Li's exhausted little face blushed a little as she struggled and wriggled out of Princess Qian Qian's embrace.

She turned into a rainbow of light and returned to Yue Yang's body, continuing her sleep.

Yue Yang was afraid that the ground was cold, so he quickly carried Fourth Mother on his back. After thinking a little, he warned the three girls, “This matter, don't speak any of it to anyone in the future. Just think like nothing had happened before!” Seeing that Yue Yang was looking at her especially when

he said this, Princess Qian Qian immediately voiced her defense, “Why are you looking at me? I’m not a blabbermouth, did you think I will say it to others? I really hate the way you are looking at me now, why are you looking at me so suspiciously? Don’t look at me, otherwise I’ll beat you up!”

She raised her fists in defense against Yue Yang’s doubt.

Luo Hua City Mistress hurriedly smoothed things over, “It’s nothing much, you are just saving Fourth Mother. I didn’t think there was anything wrong, saving someone is a good thing!”

The mysterious beauty replied Yue Yang directly, “What are you thinking about? Get those evil thoughts out of your head!”

Yue Yang secretly wiped his sweat. It was great that they didn’t misunderstand. He was afraid that the three girls would think too much. He tied Fourth Mother’s soft body on his back with a rope, while Princess Qian Qian carefully carried Yi Nan on her back.

The four people looked at each other, everyone was beyond exhausted.

They had fought great battles continuously. They had first fought at the Heaven’s Line Cave in the Cloud Peak Lake at the Despair Abyss, fighting a bloody battle with the Demonic Palace’s Rankers. Their bodies had not yet recovered, yet they had come here to save Fourth Mother. Now that they had managed to save Fourth Mother, their bodies felt thoroughly exhausted. Yue Yang had even fought Tu Cheng before this and unleashed his Innate

Strength, his body was even more tired and sore all over. He carried Fourth Mother and walked forward. Princess Qian Qian carried Yi Nan and followed, walking exhaustedly.

Luo Hua City Mistress and the mysterious beauty both supported at each other and walked behind them.

Yue Yang spent more than an hour to walk the 10 kilometers of underground tunnel, reaching the place where he had killed the demoness with wings and the man with wolf claws.

Yue Yang stored both of their corpses into his Lich Ring. The three girls wondered as to why he had done that, but didn't ask too much.

“This secret pathway might be related to the “Heaven Stairway”. Otherwise, there wouldn't be this kind of restrictive force here.” The mysterious beauty deduced. “If there's time in the future, we should explore this place once again and investigate it carefully. The Thousand Goblins Sect's movements had been very suspicious lately, we have to be more careful...”

“Let's talk about it later. I'm really exhausted right now, I just want to rest.” Princess Qian Qian increased her pace and walked beside Yue Yang, “Luckily your Brother Yi Nan is not heavy, otherwise I won't have the strength to carry him out. I say, Little Liar, you, do you actually like this kind of type?” The mysterious beauty and Luo Hua City Mistress didn't say anything, but their ears were pricked up, trying to listen to Yue Yang's answer.

“I don’t have time to talk bullshit with you!” Yue Yang felt like all the bones in his body had been broken. Fourth Mother who was actually really light, felt as heavy as a mountain on his back.

“I can help you carry her for a while!” Luo Hua City Mistress was still the kindest, taking the initiative to shoulder Yue Yang’s burden.

“No need!” Yue Yang didn’t want to look weak, refusing her offer immediately.

What would others say if he let girls carried the injured people, and he, the man, walked without carrying anything?

When they reached the underground tunnel at the bottom of the lake, Yue Yang finally couldn’t endure it anymore. He put Fourth Mother down and rested for a while. He didn’t have the strength to carry Fourth Mother out of that tunnel entrance that was located at the bottom of lake, that underwater tunnel... Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress was also dead tired. They were so tired, even more tired than Yue Yang that they immediately leaned on each other and slept the moment they sat down. Only the mysterious beauty sat down warily and stayed on guard, in case there was some kind of unforeseen event... When Yue Yang looked at her, the mysterious beauty humphed lightly and said, “Just go to sleep!”

In his sleep, the sound of Princess Qian Qian’s, Luo Hua City Mistress’, the mysterious beauty’s and Yi Nan’s laughter flashed through relentlessly in Yue Yang’s ears.

Yue Yang felt that they were extremely naughty. They were obviously right beside him, yet they kept hiding from him. He could only see them occasionally.

He wanted to grab them, but he just couldn't grab onto them.

As he entered deeper into sleep, Yue Yang realized that he had entered into his Dream Realm.

The big loli that had beaten him up N number of times previously was waiting for him in the Dream Realm, practicing her skills.

Yue Yang realized that the big loli's skill was actually at Innate Realm right now. However, it was entirely different from his own Innate skills. Her control and technique was at least a hundred times better than Yue Yang. Under her superb control, her display of an Innate Level 1 strength made Yue Yang gasp in amazement... Turns out that he could control Innate [Invisible Sword Qi] in that way... If he knew about it earlier, he wouldn't need to go on berserk state in order to beat Tu Cheng up black and blue.

The big loli didn't say anything, she only performed her skills in front of Yue Yang, allowing Yue Yang to enter into a whole new realm of realization and knowledge.

If one liken the Innate Realm to a building, then Tu Cheng's Innate Level 2 strength was like a building with two storeys.

Tu Cheng with his Threefold Strengthening was almost at the level of Innate Level 3, so it was equivalent to a building with 2.5 storeys. Yue Yang wasn't aware of how high his level was after he became berserk, he only remembered almost killing Tu Cheng instantly.

Right now, the big loli had used another realm to tell Yue Yang that although Yue Yang's building was only one storey tall right now, the building's floors were not equivalent to his own strength...If one were to liken Tu Cheng's 2.5 floors as a normal building, then the big loli's Innate realm looked like a building that was 1 floor high on the outside, but her 1 floor building was equivalent to the Imperial City of Beijing. The area of her 1 floor storey was so much higher than Tu Cheng's 2.5 floors... More accurately, the Innate Realm that the big loli showed Yue Yang was beyond what he had imagined it to be. Her Innate Level 1 was extremely wide and mysterious. It was not only stronger than Tu Cheng's Innate Level 2 strength, it was at least ten times stronger than Tu Cheng's strength!

Her Innate realm was extremely rich and abundant, magnificent beyond compare.

Yue Yang was also Innate Level 1, but he felt that his Innate Level 1 was just like an ordinary house built from wood. On the other hand, the big loli's Innate Level 1 was like the Imperial City of Beijing, grand and majestic.

Although both of them were Innate Level 1, their strength, skill and potential were all completely different. When Yue Yang saw this, other than shock, he was also extremely happy. Now he could

finally understand a little about the magnificent realm of the true Innate Level 1... Previously, he had wanted to level up hurriedly, but that would be the worst mistake. On the contrary, he would need to first cultivate a solid foundation for his Innate Level 1... Yue Yang felt that if he could also get to the level of Innate Level 1 that the big loli displayed, cultivating a good foundation like that, even if he wanted to build a skyscraper in the future, he wouldn't need to worry as he would have a concrete and wide foundation at the start.

It was only now that Yue Yang finally realized the importance of a good foundation.

What he really needed the most turned out to be a better foundation.

Without a good foundation, he would be like Tu Cheng. Although he had reached Innate Level 2, or maybe higher, he would probably encounter a bottleneck and would be stuck at that level. This was because a good foundation would decide one's growth! With an ordinary house as a foundation, one would definitely not be able to build a skyscraper!

Seeing that Yue Yang had understood, the big loli didn't start to beat Yue Yang up like she used to previously.

On the contrary, she showed Yue Yang even more skills, so many that he almost couldn't remember it all. However, the big loli was extremely patient, she had even corrected Yue Yang's mistakes.

Although the big loli did not say anything, she personally demonstrated her skills to Yue Yang. She had used the most direct and clearest body language to tell Yue Yang all the secrets of Innate Level 1.

Yue Yang completely understood the parts where he was inadequate in. He was lacking in medical knowledge, telepathy, fusing with beast, transforming techniques and many others. He realized that other than being a little outstanding on physical skills, he still couldn't keep up in other areas. Even his beast manipulation skills were far behind the warriors in Soaring Dragon Continent... If it wasn't for Xiao Wen Li who was clever beyond compare, who knew how to battle on her own, he wouldn't even be worth of mentioning if he had used his own abilities to control his beasts... For example, his lack of control could be seen when he was manipulating the Barbarian Cow Shadow. As for the Little Golden Beast, Yue Yang had not even understood how to control it himself. It had came out on its own will every single time.

“I really need to cultivate my foundation. This is extremely important!” Yue Yang sighed countless of times in his heart.

Now that he had seen the realm that the big loli had shown him, he was like a country bumpkin who had just entered a city full of tall skyscrapers, and had just known about airplanes and cars. Looking back at his straw hut, he felt extremely shameful and embarrassed.

When he woke up, Yue Yang realized that he had already returned to his home in White Stone City.

Fourth Mother was sitting in front of a table as she fed the little girl. She fed a spoonful of food to the little girl, then turned to the other side and fed Xiao Wen Li with another spoonful of food. She had even used her handkerchief at times to wipe the traces of food on the two little girls' lips.

Yue Bing was leaning over his bed. Maybe she was too exhausted, she was sleeping extremely soundly.

“How did I come home?” Yue Yang remembered that he had obviously slept at the underground tunnel. How did he come home? Who had carried him back here?

Hui Tai Lang who was lying on the ground, hanging out its tongue, was initially bored to death. It accidentally saw Yue Yang had woken up, and immediately jumped towards Yue Yang full of energy, ecstatic beyond compare. It shouted out “Woof, woof!” relentlessly, as if it was Yue Yang's most loyal, most trusted watchdog. Yue Yang sweated profusely. This Hui Tai Lang seemed to have mastered its foreign language well. If he didn't look at its appearance and only hear its voice, he would have thought that it was a dog...

“San-er, have you woken up?” Fourth Mother turned around and saw that Yue Yang had woken up. Her hands trembled, almost dropping the bowl in her hands.

“Brother Xiao-san...” Yue Shuang immediately stood up on top of her chair and jumped onto Yue Yang's body, crying out loud. Yue

Bing had also woken up, but she didn't make a sound. She only hugged Yue Yang tightly, her tears flowing down fervently.

“Ha, didn't I say that this brat would definitely not die? Yue Yu, come over here and look, isn't he awake now!” Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yang's older cousin, Yue Yu, who were outside, heard the commotion inside and quickly came into the room, their faces all looked pleasantly surprised.

Behind them, there were Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers who were all stuck at the door, unable to come in, unable to go out of the room.

They were all extremely anxious and had wanted to charge into the room altogether, but they had gotten stuck at the door instead.

Someone had kicked their butts from behind as Fatty Hai and the others fell onto the ground with a loud boom. Following them, the confident old cunning fox entered the room brazenly, stepping on top of their bodies. The old cunning fox laughed happily, as if Yue Yang had owed him 30,000 gold and promised to return it to him today. He waited until Yue Yang finished comforting the whole room full of crying girls before patting on Yue Yang's shoulders and whispering secretively on his ears, “Brat, you are really done for this time... Heheh, beg me, otherwise I will definitely not help you. You have to beg me full of your heartfelt sincerity!”

Yue Yang sweated profusely when he heard this. What? Done for?

He was completely fine, why would he be done for? Could it be that the matter of him performing artificial respiration on Fourth Mother was accidentally mentioned by Princess Qian Qian?

But it was still done to save Fourth Mother, he had no other way at that time...

He then looked at Fourth Mother who was happily wiping her tears. Yue Yang was greatly relieved. If Fourth Mother had known about this matter, she would definitely feel awkward. Since she was acting normally, that meant that Princess Qian Qian had not said it out. Furthermore, she was also not that kind of blabbermouth, she was only a little violent, a tigress who liked to glare at others with her tiger eyes!

“Student Titan, you also knew that lying is bad. Lying to girls especially, is all the more a bad thing to do! Right now, you have lied to two girls, and their families have come over here to ask for your explanation. What do you say you should do? Previously you were still unconscious, so they had let it go. Now that you have woken up, you won’t be able to avoid it even if you wanted to. I say, you’re really done for!” The old cunning fox used the tone of a priest as he lightly patted Yue Yang’s shoulders and continued to entice him, “If you beg me with all of your heart and sincerity, I can consider to help you and talk a few nice words to them. If you, brat, are still as rude like last time and have even tricked me and made me look like a fool, don’t blame me for not helping you out! Heheh, think about it carefully on your own!”

“What nonsense are you spouting! How could such a nice, honest and upright kid like me lie to others!” Yue Yang’s words

immediately made the old cunning fox fell to the ground.

“You dared to say that you haven’t lied?” The old cunning fox grabbed Yue Yang’s sleeves.

“I haven’t lied. Even if I lied, that was something that you have taught me. You are the teacher, I am the student. As the saying goes, ‘To teach without severity, is the teacher’s fault.’” Yue Yang defended himself boldly and confidently.

“You are really vicious!” The old cunning fox gave Yue Yang a thumbs up, “Let’s see how you handle the two girls’ families later on!”

“I haven’t stolen nor have I robbed, what would I be afraid of!” Yue Yang defended himself with all his might.

“But you have kidnapped other family’s girl... The little miss’ family is waiting right outside for you, in the Hall!” The old cunning fox’s expression was as if he was completely enjoying Yue Yang’s calamity, keen to watch what he would do next.

“What are you guys whispering about? Since you are fine now, I shall leave. By the way, you have destroyed my Imperial Palace Hall, but I shall let it go. I don’t live there anyway. But you have broken my Magic Cloud Phoenix White Jade Vase, and it cost over 1600 gold. When you have time, do remember to pay me back!” Princess Qian Qian, who had the [Six Records] Inherent Skill, had actually heard the conversation between Yue Yang and the old cunning fox, but she pretended not to hear it. Instead, she gave

Yue Yang a piece of IOU that had a heading of: ‘Yue Yang owes Princess Qian Qian 1600 gold’ written on top. She wanted Yue Yang to sign his name on the IOU.

“Bullshit!” Yue Yang immediately tore the IOU when he received it, before shouting towards the astonished Princess Qian Qian, “Who are we? How could you let a stinky vase come between our pure friendship!”

“When did we even have a pure friendship?” Princess Qian Qian replied furiously.

“We don’t? Alright then, goodbye, I shall not see you off!” Yue Yang waved his hands, gesturing his hands towards the door to direct Princess Qian Qian out of the room. His elder cousin, Yue Yu, was laughing secretly as she tried to pull Princess Qian Qian out of the room, persuading her to the best she could. Princess Qian Qian had wanted to bite him to death, but there were a lot of people in the room. Hence, she could only pretend to be a virtuous lady and bid farewell to Fourth Mother.

Fourth Mother then went to the Hall to tell the good news to the others, bringing the little girl along. Seemed like there were really quite a few people waiting outside.

Xiao Wen Li turned into a rainbow light and disappeared, while Hui Tai Lang rubbed its head on Yue Yang’s feet. After a while, it realized that Yue Yang had no time to pay attention to it, so it finally walked outside and continued to sleep, basking in the sunlight.

Yue Yang saw that Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others were all injured. He asked curiously, “What kind of devilish training have you guys gone through? How did you guys get so miserable?” Who would know that Yue Yang would sweat profusely at Ye Kong’s answer. Ye Kong replied, “No, no. Devilish training is a simple thing. We had taken the Starved Dog Range by the storm, fighting against the disciples of the Thousand Goblins Sect. That’s why we ended up like this... We had almost died, luckily we managed to stay alive! Aih, I only realized how weak and puny we are now...”

Fatty Hai, on the contrary, was proudly praising himself, feeling pleased with himself, “Although we didn’t manage to save Fourth Mother, we have defeated 2 Level 4 [Heroes] and 1 Level 5 [Grandmaster]. What a great battle accomplishment! Tsk tsk tsk, you didn’t hear it, but two days ago, I was praised a little by the school. Those people who had belittled me last time almost popped their eyes out. They didn’t know that I (oresama) was born into this world with the sole purpose of defeating those Thousand Goblins Sect disciples... It was really the loneliness of an expert!”

Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers immediately moved away from him, allowing him to blow his own trumpet on one side.

Yue Bing didn’t say anything, but she was thoroughly overjoyed.

“Two days ago? How did I come back? Was I home for two days already?” Yue Yang frowned. Could he really slept for two whole days?

“It seemed like Princess Qian Qian carried you back. We are not really sure, but you are not only home for two days. You have been unconscious for over 10 days. Today seems to be your 11th day!” When Ye Kong said this, Yue Yang immediately sweated profusely. He had dreamt for 11 whole days?

“What’s happening outside?” Yue Yang could sense that there were quite a lot of warriors talking outside in the Main Hall.

“Sister Yi Nan’s aunt has come over. Turns out Sister Yi Nan is a sister, not a brother...” Yue Bing felt like it was time for her to explain the truth to Yue Yang. She didn’t know that Yue Yang had already recognised Yi Nan as a girl on the first day they met. She had even thought that her idiot brother was not able to differentiate a girl and a guy because he had been cooped up in his house for too long.

“Ah? Are you sure? Yi Nan is a girl?” Yue Yang wanted to pretend to be extremely surprised, but he felt that he shouldn’t overdo it or Yue Bing would notice that something was wrong.

“You idiot, you have totally wasted a good chance to pick up girls! It’s all too late now... Just let me die!” Fatty Hai’s tears washed his whole face as he banged his head to the wall, looking extremely sad and miserable, as if he wanted to commit suicide and refused to let others stop him from doing so.

Chapter 192 – The Mystery Of The Pitiful Guy's Life

Outside the Main Hall.

Yue Yang and Yue Bing, together with Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Li Clan Brothers, all went towards the hall. Usually, they, the younger generation, did not have the qualifications to sit together with the older generations in a discussion. However, the head of Yi Nan's family announced that he wanted to meet Yue Yang, refusing to let him stay in the house and become a shut-in. Yue Yang broke out in sweat when he saw that Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu were also there. With the tigress of a Princess Qian Qian here, it wouldn't be convenient for him to speak some words.

Seemed like Princess Qian Qian had purposely stayed behind to wreck havoc and watch Yue Yang turn himself into a fool.

This tigress, it really wouldn't do if he didn't straighten her out soon...

The memory of that piece of spring that Princess Qian Qian revealed to Yue Yang flashed across his mind as he continued to imagine ways to push this girl down. Of course, on the outside, he pretended to be a good, honest and upright boy.

Fourth Mother was talking with a beautiful woman whose face was covered by a veil. Yue Yang's hearing had improved, he was able to hear what the two women were talking about, but he was unable to make sense of what they meant as they had used a

language that he had never heard before.

The little girl was eating some sweets on Fourth Mother's lap, her little mouth messy and dirty from eating. When she saw Yue Yang, she immediately jumped up and threw herself into his embrace.

She had even shoved the delicious and soft brown sugar rice cake that she had eaten halfway into her brother's mouth.

As for her elder sister, Yue Bing, she only raised her hand up, pretending to give it to her.

Not waiting for Yue Bing to react, she withdrew her hand again, pleased with herself. She tried to escape her sister with all her might, adamant on not giving her the brown sugar rice cakes.

Yue Bing glared at her in a bad temper, reaching out and pinching the little mischievous girl's nose. The little girl chuckled as she tried to dodge it, her laughter clear-sounding like bells ringing. Following that, she immediately ran with her little legs... the two sisters ran around the house, one running away and one catching. This scene made Yue Yang sigh in his heart. This warm home had finally recovered the liveliness and happiness it had before!

In the house, other than Princess Qian Qian, his elder cousin Yue Yu, Fourth Mother and the masked woman, there were also the old cunning fox and the eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie.

Fatty Hai was initially extremely cocky.

However, when he saw the eagle-eyed teacher, he immediately turned into a turtle. He almost shoved his head into his neck. Seemed like under the eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie's harsh training, Fatty Hai had received a mental trauma. Ye Kong and Li Clan Brothers hurriedly gave the old cunning fox, the Vice Principal, and their teacher, Xia Hou Wei Lie, a bow, pretending to be polite and obedient students. They started to greet Fourth Mother and the other woman, before finally sitting in one corner tidily. Yue Yang had known earlier that he couldn't hope for their help, but the way he saw it now, it seemed like their worth was nothing more than passer-bys who could only stand in a circle and watch.

Fourth Mother saw that Yue Yang had entered. She immediately beckoned Yue Yang, gesturing him to come over. She also introduced him, "San-er, this is your 'Brother Yi Nan's' aunt. Actually, Yi Nan is a girl. You have been shutting yourself at home far too much that you can't even differentiate a girl and a guy. If others knew about this, you would really be a joke!"

"I have always thought that Yi Nan was a little weird. How could there be a guy who doesn't like beautiful girls? For example, Master Hai would immediately drool when he saw a beautiful woman. Turns out that Yi Nan was actually a girl!" Yue Yang knew that he shouldn't pretend to be extremely shocked, especially when Yue Bing had already mentioned it to him once just now. If he was still shocked and surprised, that would look too fake. Right now, it would be best if he pretended to be silly, but not silly to the point of becoming imbecile. He only need to pretend that he was silly so that Fourth Mother had a way out of the embarrassing situation.

“How could you say it like that? Hurry and pay your respects to Yi Nan’s aunt!” Fourth Mother immediately scolded Yue Yang. He should have paid his respects to his senior when he saw them, how could he be so rude?

“Yes, yes. Yi Nan’s Aunt, please drink this tea!” Yue Yang’s skill at pretending to be a good kid was still as effective as he raised the tea cup and bestowed it to the masked woman. He had even personally poured another cup of tea and bestowed it to Fourth Mother.

Fourth Mother knew that this brat was not so polite usually. She was really amused seeing him so polite in front of strangers. He had even served her tea.

As she hid a smile, she quickly received his tea and ordered him to serve the old cunning fox and the eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie some tea too, with a stern voice.

The old cunning fox immediately became arrogant, calm and leisurely receiving Yue Yang’s tea.

As for Xia Hou Wei Lie, he seemed to have known that Yue yang was an Innate. Although Yue Yang was officially still his student, he immediately stood up when he received the teacup that Yue Yang had presented. Although his expression did not change, there was pride in his eagle-eyes.

An Innate Ranker had personally served him tea! This was

definitely something that was hard to come by!

If it were others, they would definitely not receive such a treatment.

When Yue Yang returned to Fourth Mother's side and sat down, Yi Nan's Aunt started to speak. She had been measuring Yue Yang up and down and she had liked him even more with each look. Although she didn't show it on the outside, she felt that Yi Nan really had good eyes.

"Your Fourth Mother, your birth mother and I were all born in the Valley of Butterflies and Hundred Flowers. Although we came from different clans, we are still considered one family. When it comes to age, I am a little older than your Fourth Mother. You can call me Second Aunt (Er Yi) in the future, or you can call me Aunt like Yi Nan. Yi Nan can also be counted as your far cousin." Yue Yang had come to a sudden realization when he heard Yi Nan's aunt's words. So it turned out that Fourth Mother was also someone from the Valley of Butterflies and Hundred Flowers. No wonder she could speak another language with Yi Nan's aunt.

The language that they were speaking just now, didn't sound like the Soaring Dragon Continent Language.

Yue Yang had never heard it before.

Seemed like Fourth Mother and the pitiful guy's mother were really mysteries, otherwise, the Thousand Goblins sect wouldn't kidnap Fourth Mother without reason to open that thing called

‘Heaven Stairway’.

What kind of place was the Heaven Stairway again?

Could it be like another Tong Tian Tower? Or could it be a different dimension like the Demon Abyss?

Yue Yang felt that the Soaring Dragon Continent looked normal and ordinary on the outside, but was actually hiding a lot of mysteries and secrets. For example, there were so many Innate Rankers, but why would they be adamant about training the younger generation in the Soaring Dragon Continent? Why didn't they take the talented younger generations away, enter the Tong Tian Tower and train them there? On the contrary, they even brought the beasts from Tong Tian Tower out and put them on the Soaring Dragon Continent, using them to teach the younger generation.

Another examples were the Gods Ruins, Heaven Stairway, Demonic Palace in the Falling Cangue Mountain, Thousand Goblins Sect, Four Great Sects and others. They were practically secret amongst secrets, mystery amongst mysteries!

Right now it also didn't seem like the Valley of Butterflies and Hundred Flowers was a simple place.

That was because Yue Yang realized that he couldn't see through Yi Nan's Aunt with his Level 3 [Divine Vision]. This masked woman probably had a strength in the level of the old cunning fox... There was still the Hundred Flowers Valley Master above

her, it was definitely not that easy!

As for the pitiful guy's mother, nobody mentioned her before. Yue Yang felt that she must definitely also be an exceptional person!

“We are not as strong we were last time, we had already declined. Your mother passed away early. The Hundred Flowers Clan will usually pass down their skills to a single person. However, right now, there's even fewer qualified successors to learn their skills. Now that we've found your Fourth Mother, you and your sister, it could be said that it's a meeting arranged by the heavens! As for the Butterflies Clan, although we don't have a strict rule like the Hundred Flowers Clan, only passing their skills to one bloodline, we still lack successors to pass down our skills. The world has been in chaos for these few years. Our Kingdom had been crushed by the Demonic Palace and the Thousand Goblins Sect combined attacks. Hundred Flowers Valley was attacked many times by other enemies, burnt to the ground. We had almost lost our own place... That's why Yi Nan hid her identity and pretended to be a thief. Her getting to know you and going on journey with you, was really a fated meeting...” Yue Yang's heart shook a little when he heard Yi Nan's Aunt's words.

Finally there was someone who mentioned some information with regards to the pitiful guy's mother. Hearing Yi Nan's Aunt's words, the pitiful guy's mother seemed to be the successor to the Hundred Flowers Clan?

The thing that made Yue Yang surprised was that the Valley of Butterflies and Hundred Flowers had actually governed a kingdom

before.

They were actually crushed by the combined attacks of the Demonic Palace and the Thousand Goblins Sect... This was not an easy feat. The Demonic Palace and the Thousand Goblins Sect were both powerful secret organizations. Especially the Demonic Palace, even Da Xia, Tian Luo and Zi Jin, the three great kingdoms, didn't dare to scorn them. The Valley of Butterflies and Hundred Flowers, being able to resist the attacks of both the Demonic Palace and the Thousand Goblins Sect at the same time, could actually be considered to be extremely strong.

“What was your Kingdom called previously?” Yue Yang was really curious. Every hundred years or so, there would be quite a few small kingdoms in the Soaring Dragon Continent that was destroyed. But he would never have thought that some of these kingdoms would be that strong, being able to resist the Demonic Palace and the Thousand Goblins Sect together.

“Our Kingdom is originally called the Dawn Kingdom. The outside world would usually call us ‘Guang Ming’ or ‘Ming’ Kingdom.” Yi Nan's Aunt seemed to be unwilling to talk about it too much as she explained to Yue Yang indifferently.

(Shiro: Guang Ming means radiant, ming means light)

“What?!” Yue Yang almost jumped out of shock.

This ‘Guang Ming’ or ‘Ming’ kingdom, Yue Yang had heard about them before.

The Ming Kingdom was originally a great kingdom, it was ranked the top 5 in the Soaring Dragon Continent. The weird thing was that this Kingdom disliked battles and wars, furthermore, only females would be selected as monarchs. The Ming Kingdom would rather pay a huge sum of 'Peace Offerings' to the surrounding kingdoms than send their soldiers out to war. Even a small kingdom the size of a pea located near the Ming Kingdom could demand a Peace Offering from them.

The Ming Kingdom was also the only Kingdom who wouldn't initiate an attack on any Kingdom.

When other kingdoms invaded them, they would rather send their rankers to stop the invasion and advise the invaders to retreat, offering a huge sum of money instead.

If City Masters rebelled or if they were attacked by enemies, the Ming Kingdom was also the only kingdom that would appease their citizens, allowing them to follow their City Masters and live in their new Kingdom. They would also give them a huge sum of money to redeem citizens who were still willing to continue to stay as citizens of the Ming Kingdom.

If there was a Kingdom in this world that could set a compassionate standard for other Kingdoms to follow, it was this Ming Kingdom which was ruled by women.

For an ordinary common folk, such a Kingdom was perfect.

However, for a warrior, such a kingdom was extremely

depressing, because there was no hope of battling at all. They only received beatings and never retaliated, what would such a Kingdom even count as?

Such a 'cowardly' kingdom should have been destroyed very quickly, but on the contrary, the history of the Ming Kingdom spanned over thousands of years. Other than Da Xia, Tian Luo and Zi Jin, the three great kingdoms, Ming Kingdom was one of the Kingdoms with the longest history. Furthermore, countless Rankers had originated from the Ming Kingdom. Even all the combined rankers that originated from Da Xia, Tian Luo and Zi Jin together might not be more than the Ming Kingdom... This Ming Kingdom, whose territory had diminished but number of Rankers had increased over the years, was a joke in the eyes of outsiders. Although there were so many Innate Rankers in the Ming Kingdom, they were invaded by kingdoms with no Innate Rankers. Furthermore, after being invaded, they did not even retaliate... No one knew the reason for how this Ming Kingdom, who had always ranked within the top 10 of the Soaring Dragon Continent for the past hundreds of years in terms of kingdom strength and territory, would suddenly disintegrate a few decades back. Various City Masters and City Lords rebelled against them, and in the end, the Ming Kingdom had become a small kingdom, only the most flourishing and thriving capital was left as its territory.

15 years ago, the Ming Kingdom's capital was suddenly attacked by various countries' armies and perished.

The Ming Kingdom's royal family did not ask for the protection of the other three great kingdoms, and they also didn't have any thoughts of retaliation. They only brought the Innate Rankers along with them and disappeared without any traces.

Yue Yang had read about this history before, and felt that the Ming Kingdom was extremely weird. How could they be so good natured, simply getting beaten and not retaliating at all?

Furthermore, such a kingdom, how were they able to last so long?

Kingdoms like Da Xia or Tian Luo, for a little thing, even the Emperor himself could personally stand up and give his all. The Heavenly Imperial Guardians also would threaten to destroy their enemies. Ming Kingdom Innate Rankers, on the other hand, had never mentioned on taking revenge or anything related to that. Could it be that these Innate Rankers were all made out of tofu?

If others said that it was because the Ming Kingdom's governance was not good, how could it last for thousands of years?

If it wasn't for them disintegrating suddenly, the Ming Kingdom should still have existed. It should still be one of the top 10 Kingdoms of Soaring Dragon Continent. Furthermore, its economy and country strength must have been one of the most flourishing ones.

What had actually happened in the past hundred years that made the Ming Kingdom disintegrate?

15 years ago, what had actually happened that caused the Ming Kingdom to perish? Yue Yang felt that there must have been a reason. Furthermore, this reason must be related to him, no, the

pitiful guy. This was because the pitiful guy's parents had passed away 15 years ago...

Could the pitiful guy's true identity be related to the reason of the destruction of the Ming Kingdom?

Yue Yang still remembered what the pitiful guy's parents had written in the diary. The secret must be hidden somewhere, there must be some kind of information recorded there. He might be able to pursue the truth and find out the mystery behind the pitiful guy's life. It might also help to explain why there would be so many Rankers joining their hands together to secretly harm a shut-in in within White Stone City who had never even come out from his house!

When he thought about this, Yue Yang suddenly wanted to read that diary again...

Chapter 193 – Eastern Sky King

“Why did the Ming Kingdom not retaliate against the war? What I mean is, if they were worried that the citizens would suffer casualties, they could definitely hire mercenary warriors. Wouldn’t that at least be better than not resisting at all?” Yue Yang really wanted to ask what Yi Nan’s Aunt was thinking.

“Regardless of whether it is Her Highness or the Valley Mistress, both of them are very kind and tolerant. They don’t like to fight wars. In their hearts, no matter whether it is a peasant or a hired mercenary, they are all human lives. You’re still too young to understand their love and care for life. In their hearts, human life is the most important thing to them. As for their country, glory and gold, all of these things are not important. We, the Butterflies and Hundred Flowers Clans, did not create the country for prestige. Rather, it is to better preserve the legacy of the clan throughout generations... Since both generations are going to be annihilated, the country isn’t important any longer. We’ll just leave the matters of dissolution or invasion to other people. Since we can’t manage it, then we might as well let our hands go. If there is no people, then why would we need that much land to do things?” The answer from Yi Nan’s aunt shocked Yue Yang.

Yue Yang never expected Yi Nan’s aunt to say this.

If it was another person, Yue Yang might have thought that the other person was a hypocrite.

However, when Yi Nan’s aunt, as well as Fourth Mother who was sitting beside her said these, Yue Yang suddenly felt that this was

very reasonable. If it was a person like Fourth Mother who cared deeply about relationships, he believed that she would govern the country in the same way. This was because people like Fourth Mother were kind by nature and did not have any desire to fight at all! They were used to resigning themselves to fate... It would be strange if they wanted to resist!

Yue Yang really wanted to ask about the identity of the pitiful guy's blood mother, but he was also afraid that the pitiful guy had known this long ago. He would be exposed if that were the case.

Moreover, the old fox, Xia Hou Wei Lie, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were also present. Even if he asked, it might not be a convenient place for answers.

"Since that's the case, if you need us kids to be your runner or anything, you can tell us." Of course, Yue Yang acted as an obedient child, trying as best as he could to leave a good impression in front of Yi Nan's aunt. It could be seen that Yi Nan's aunt paid great attention to Yi Nan's future. Otherwise, she would not personally come here, or even wait for Yue Yang to wake up before asking him questions.

"You're all just little kids. As long as you don't forget to cultivate, it's fine if you play around to your heart's content." Yi Nan's aunt laughed. "I'm not here to hire you as labour. I only heard that Yi Nan gave her necklace to you, so I wanted to see you."

"Ah, I didn't know at that time that she was... That time, she said that she would introduce her little sister to me. Does Yi Nan have a little sister?" Yue Yang asked while acting as if he knew nothing.

“She didn’t. She was an only child. It was not easy for us to protect her, too. She’s shy and did not dare to say the truth in front of you. Both the Butterfly and the Hundred Flowers’ Clan’s new generation had all withered away. A few days ago, I found out that Ah Xian was actually a descendant of the Hundred Flowers Clan. Now we have flourished and brought up two girls. I am deeply gratified. I have never imagined that the Hundred Flower’s Clan would have descendants, it was really a blessing from the heavens. A male descendant like you is very rare, you are the only one from both the Butterflies and the Hundred Flowers Clan this hundred years past.” Yue Yang immediately sweated profusely upon Yi Nan’s aunt’s words. He thought, what kind of infertility did they have in their clans? No wonder they didn’t even want their own country anymore, they didn’t even have a male descendant to continue their bloodline.

But they chose females as monarchs, so whether or not they have male successors wouldn’t matter that much to them right?

Yue Yang’s imagination ran wild, but he still couldn’t understand.

Yi Nan’s aunt did not specify if she wanted Yue Yang and Yi Nan to do something, she only wanted Yue Yang to spare some time and go to the Valley of Butterflies and Hundred Flowers to meet the Valley Mistress, and that it would be better if they could bring Fourth Mother, Yue Bing and Yue Shuang.

Then, she went on a long conversation with Fourth Mother in a language that Yue Yang didn’t understand, looking at Yue Yang at

times, as if their conversation topic was somehow related to himself.

Someone walked in with big strides from the courtyard outside. A voice as loud as gongs resounded thunderously before the person even walked in, “This dilapidated White Stone City is even worse than the place my servants came from. There’s not a single good places to visit, I’m almost bored to death! I say, Fourth Mistress, is your Xiao-san still sleeping? Not even pigs will sleep that long! Does he somehow know that I am coming, that’s why he is hiding himself and refusing to meet me? This is definitely not the way of a hero, I dislike this kind of shameless coward the most...”

Outside the door, a heroic looking man that looked like [Zhang Fei](#) strode in. He had an enormous build, around 2 metres tall. His stride was full of energy.

(Shiro: Zhang Fei is one of the most well-known heroes in Ancient China History)

When he came in, his head knocked against the lintel of the door.

A loud bang and a huge tremor ensued.

He had almost knocked the whole door over, but he simply rubbed his forehead, as if nothing had happened. He came in, grumbling about house the Yue Clan’s door was simply too small instead of acknowledging that he wasn’t careful enough when he entered just now, “I say, Fourth Mistress, your house architecture is really bad. When you build this house, how could you not build a good door? How do guests enter your house then?”

Yue Yang immediately laughed out when he heard this, “It’s because our family has no power! If we were born royalty, guests would need to bow their heads when they enter the room. If it’s that way, there wouldn’t be a problem even if our door is small.”

When that Zhang Fei-looking hero heard this, he immediately shook his head and lectured Yue Yang, “Brat, what do you understand? Having the strongest fist is the most important thing. What use could a shitty royal status would have? If you want others to be afraid of you, you must become a strong warrior. If your fists are stronger than anyone’s, everyone would be afraid of you and would bow their heads to you. This logic, let alone the relatives of the royal family, even if it is the Emperor himself, the same logic still applies... Isn’t Jun Wu You the Emperor of your country? He is the Emperor of one of the Three Great Kingdoms, the sovereign of his country. How cool does that sound? But when he sees me, he still had to call me ‘Big Brother’! Do you know why? It’s because my fists are stronger than his. If he didn’t call me ‘Big Brother’, I will pummel him. Have you understood my logic? I say, that’s the way of the world!”

“Listen to him speak, brother Hai. Didn’t he say he wouldn’t show off in front of the younger generation just now? Seems like he’s the ‘Big Brother’ now, although he’s the second amongst the three Thousand Years Old Old Men. When did he even become the ‘Big Brother’, why haven’t I heard about it?” At the door, the Da Xia Emperor, Jun Wu You, old man Yue Hai and two other middle-aged men walked in as they chattered.

Yue Yang also noticed that the two other middle-aged men did not seem like ordinary people. One of them looked like a ferocious

looking lion while the other looked like an obscure leopard.

Although he did not recognise them, but the strength of these two were probably not any weaker than the eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie.

If they were compared to the rankers in the Yue Clan Castle, they might perhaps be slightly weaker than Yue Shan, but they were definitely a few notches stronger than 2nd Uncle Yue Ling... Now that Yue Yang thought about the substitute Clan Master Yue Shan's presence and demeanor again, he felt that something was a little bit off... This Yue Shan shouldn't have a strength that was stronger than a Level 6 [Elder], yet Yue Yang couldn't see through him at that time. Now that he thought about it again, there really was something strange about Yue Shan!

If there was a chance, he would definitely need to investigate Yue Shan thoroughly. He gave Yue Yang a bad feeling. As for Yue Ling, it didn't matter. A mere [Elder] could be directly ignored!

Seeing Elder Yue Hai and Jun Wu You entering the house, Fourth Mother hurriedly stood up and bowed.

Jun Wu You waved his hands casually, signalling to her that formalities were not needed. Then, he walked over and sat in front of the old fox's desk. The eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie hurriedly came over to serve tea for Jun Wu You. The old fox, however, only nodded his head, still sitting in a lofty manner, putting on airs even in front of Jun Wu You.

Elder Yue Hai nodded his head towards Fourth Mother as a gesture, allowing her to get up and dispense the formality. Towards Yue Yang, he showed an expression of gratitude instead.

He patted Yue Yang's shoulders as he nodded resolutely and said, "Good boy!"

He seemed to be not very good in expressing his emotions, as he patted Yue Yang's shoulders again, then turned around and sat beside Jun Wu You. On the contrary, the Zhang Fei-looking hero who had taught Yue Yang a lesson before suddenly shouted as he surrounded Yue Yang and scrutinized him left and right, like a farmer who had come to a bull market and was trying to choose one for his farm, that kind of excitement and enthusiasm. He pointed his huge fingers towards Yue Yang as he turned around and asked Elder Yue Hai, "Big brother Hai, is this brat your trash Xiao-san? He didn't seem like trash... If this brat really is trash, then I'll dig my eyes out for you..."

"Aren't you here to pick a fight? If you want to praise him, go and wait in line, there's still a long line of people who wanted to praise him. It's not your turn yet!" The old fox was angry at Yue Yang for not amusing him just now, so he took the opportunity to incite the Zhang Fei-looking hero.

"Man, I would have forgotten if you hadn't mention it. I am really angry now that you mentioned it!" The Zhang Fei-looking hero immediately became furious as he grabbed Yue Yang's sleeves.

"Beat him up, just beat him up mercilessly! You don't have to

mind me at all!” The old fox poured oil to his fire.

“You can’t slap him, because older sister Luo Hua would be able to see it easily. If she felt sorry for him, Second Uncle, you’ll be in great trouble. You should just give him a few punches at places where she wouldn’t see. Otherwise you can just strip off his pants and spank his butt. That way, even if you beat him up mercilessly, he wouldn’t dare to complain against older sister Luo Hua. I guarantee that this idea will definitely work!” Princess Qian Qian was angry at Yue Yang for refuting her IOU just now, hence she tried very hard to instill some rotten ideas into the Zhang Fei-looking hero. Seemed like she had a close relationship with this fellow.

“With my god-like, natural strength, wouldn’t this brat vomit blood if I throw him a few punches?” The Zhang Fei-looking hero’s fists looked strong indeed. He gave others a fright when he swung it around.

“How could it be? That brat’s skin is extremely thick, he had a strong tolerance for beating!” The old fox had almost added that Yue Yang’s bones was made of iron.

“Then I wouldn’t stand on courtesy anymore. If I have an anger that’s burdening my heart, it really won’t be quenched until I beat up someone.” The Zhang Fei-looking hero was about to send a blow with his iron-hard fist towards Yue Yang’s stomach when Yue Yang suddenly shouted, “Stop!”

Yue Yang’s shout immediately surprised the Zhang Fei-looking hero. It was as if he didn’t understand why Yue Yang had shouted

for him to stop.

He felt that beating Yue Yang was the most righteous thing to do right now. Yue Yang should have allowed him to beat him up, if he refused, that would really be a disgraceful thing to do.

He asked in confusion, “What do you mean stop? Did you mean that I shouldn’t beat you up?”

Yue Yang immediately revealed his sunshine-like smile and nodded resolutely, “Of course you reserved the right to beat me up. However, why would such a virtuous, prestigious, honest, talented and most-respected elder like you want to beat me up? Everyone here knows that you have always been a kindhearted, benevolent, full of wisdom, courageous, filial to your elders, religious, a person who kept his promises, polite, highly educated, an elder worthy to be an example for the younger generation, upright, just, and although you have a god-like power, you have always been very modest and humble about it. Furthermore, you detest it if the strong bullies the weak. Having such an indomitable strong warrior like you as an elder is this younger one’s blessing and fortune. How could you be incited by that old cunning fox’s words? Could it be that you would allow those old cunning fox’s words, that even a three year old kid could see that he was trying to wedge a distance between us, affect your reputation? I think that is definitely not going to happen!”

When the Zhang Fei-looking hero heard this, he immediately let Yue Yang go.

Seeing that Yue Yang’s sleeves were a little crumpled, he also

helped him straightened them as he nodded, full of pretentiousness, “You are right! I just wanted to test your courage and insight just now. Now, I realized that although your abilities are lacking, but you have superb insight and bravery. You seem to be a talented kid. As for others trying to drive a wedge between us, don’t worry, I’m the wise and mighty Eastern Sky King, how could I not have realized it? You definitely don’t have to worry about that! I, the Eastern Sky King, had always been upright and just. Rest assured, I will definitely not beat you up. Although I have a god-like power, I will definitely not use violence!”

The old cunning fox’s head immediately fell to the ground the moment he heard it.

He had seen people who liked to hear praises and bootlicking, but he had never seen an...IDIOT who liked to hear praises and bootlicking!

Princess Qian Qian’s forehead was also filled with black lines of frowns. If it wasn’t for the fact that he was an elder, she was prepared to splash his face with hot tea so that this idiot could sober up.

“Idiot, you were swindled and you even helped the cheater to count his money! That brat had even kidnapped your daughter, why are you still talking bullshit reasoning with him!” The old cunning fox almost died of anger. He had initially thought that Yue Yang would somewhat be taught a lesson, but right now, it seems like there wouldn’t be such a possibility.

“Right! Why would I reason with a brat!” The Zhang Fei-looking

Eastern Sky King furiously raised his fists, poised to pummel Yue Yang to the ground.

“It’s alright if you don’t want to reason with me, but you are a highly respected elder, you should probably not treat a good person unjustly, right? Why do you want to beat me?” Yue Yang asked, calm and unruffled in the midst of the chaos.

“That... You have completely made me confused, but there’s definitely a reason for me to beat you up. Wait for me until I beat you up to my heart’s content first, then I’ll explain the reasons to you slowly!” The Eastern Sky King felt like he was definitely right, it was just that when Yue Yang asked him about it, he became a little confused and couldn’t remember the reason for wanting to beat this brat up.

“What will you do if you have actually accused me wrongly? Would you allow me to beat you back?” Yue Yang retorted.

“Of course not! I’m a magnificent Tian Luo King, I’m also your elder. It’s my right to beat you up, it’s also reasonable for me not to beat you up. If I beat you up wrongly, then it’s your own bad luck!” Eastern Sky King stated clearly that he would definitely not allow Yue Yang to beat him back, no matter if he had beaten him wrongly or not.

“You are indeed a most-respected elder, these words couldn’t be any truer!” Yue Yang smiled resolutely as he gave the Eastern Sky King a thumbs up, praising him. Finally when the Eastern Sky King was cheerful, Yue Yang asked in a cold tone, “Elder, we have never met nor knew each other before, but you have been shouting

and rampaging around the moment you barged into the room. Furthermore, you did this even in front of so many witness. If no one is here, you would have probably killed my whole family too! Is this how you behaved as a King and as a respected elder?!”

“I... I’m an old friend of your grandfather’s, we’ve been friends more than a hundred years. How could I do such a thing! These words of yours are practically slandering me!” The Eastern Sky Emperor’s anger blew through the roof.

“I see. This junior was mistaken. I ask for the forgiveness of the open-minded, forgiving, generous and lenient King.” Although Yue Yang’s sleeves were grabbed by the Eastern Sky King, he still managed to cup his hands and bowed politely.

“It’s nothing much... My benevolence is as wide as the oceans, I forgive your sins!” The Eastern Sky King would immediately smile ears-to-ears and be pleased with himself the moment he heard bootlickings.

“He’s a liar, he kidnaps your daughter...” The old cunning fox hurriedly reminded him.

“You liar! How dare you kidnap my precious daughter? See if I don’t beat you to death!” The Eastern Sky King immediately become hostile again, raising his fists up high.

“You say that I kidnapped your daughter?” Yue Yang asked suspiciously.

“That’s right.” Eastern Sky King was 100% sure.

“Kidnapping women and children and selling them as slaves is definitely a great sin, it must be punished severely. This point, I definitely support your view. But did you see it with your own eyes? Did you find your daughter in this house?” Yue Yang asked, turning the Zhang Fei-looking hero speechless once again. Where would he find the evidence? He had only heard about it.

“Idiot, he didn’t kidnap and sell your daughter. He only stole your daughter’s body and heart! He’s an ungrateful, fickle-minded lad. A casanova! He’s an unfaithful bastard who is determined to live a hedonistic life. What are you waiting for instead of beating him up?” The old fox was anxious. With the old fox’s words, the Eastern Sky King raised his fists once again. This time, he was determined to pummel Yue Yang to the ground no matter what Yue Yang would say.

“Wait, before you beat me to death, I would like to know your daughter’s name. Otherwise, I wouldn’t die in peace.” Yue Yang exhaled slowly.

“My darling daughter is obviously the most obedient, most beautiful, most adorable little Luo Hua! She was deceived by you, right now she has gone back to her Flower Garden and coop herself in there, crying night and day. She’s practically washing her face with tears. It’s my right to beat you up black and blue!” When the Eastern Sky King said this, Yue Yang immediately burst into cold sweat. How could a fellow like him have a daughter like Luo Hua? Seems like Luo Hua City Mistress’ excellent genes had all come from her mother, otherwise she would definitely become a

barbaric woman!

“This is a misunderstanding! I’m actually Luo Hua City Mistress’ Personal Guard...” Yue Yang hurriedly made an expression that he was on the Eastern Sky King’s side. He had even said resolutely, “Although I haven’t received my salary yet, I could honestly tell you that I have started work for half a month!”

“Personal Guard?” The Eastern Sky King was stunned, “You are my little Luo Hua’s Personal Guard?”

“She had requested me to be her Personal Guard long before, when we were trying to get the Beautiful Demonic Flower from the Hanging Pavilion in the Third Floor of Tong Tian Tower. However, I still had some pocket money then, so I had rejected her politely and did not accept her job offer. But you know me, I’m an extremely soft-hearted person, especially towards girls. I told her that I will consider it, I didn’t reject it completely. It was because I was afraid that your daughter would be sad. However, of course, your precious daughter was a reasonable person, a person who respects other’s wishes like you. She didn’t force me to be her Personal Guard.” The Eastern Sky King immediately let Yue Yang go when he heard his explanation, helping him to straighten his sleeves once again. Yue Yang mentioned his thanks before he continued to explain, “Afterwards, I went to the Despair Abyss in order to gather Starlight Serene Indigo Grass. I remembered that Luo Hua City Mistress was someone who loves flowers, so I invited her to gather some with me... A lot happened afterwards. Seeing that Luo Hua City Mistress was really sincere, I had agreed to be her Personal Guard afterwards. She even agreed when I stated my conditions, ‘Overtime pay will be twice the salary per hour and no work on holidays and public holidays’. Do you know that she was

just like you, a kindhearted person who was really considerate to others... She went home to cry? She shouldn't be. She did not even cry when she was doing that with me, why would she cry when she came home?"

"What did you do WITH HER?" The Eastern Sky Emperor almost exploded when he heard it. He almost wanted to strangle him to death.

"Roasting fish! I was roasting fish with her in Cloud Peak Lake, but she put too much salt on the fish. I criticised her a little, but she didn't cry at all at that time. I thought she wouldn't cry when she go home, but who would know..." Yue Yang shook his hands, acknowledging his mistake.

"You scared me... So it's only roasting fish!" Eastern Sky King patted his chest loudly, happy that nothing happened.

"It's not only roasting fish, we had also done..." Yue Yang had not finished speaking when the Eastern Sky King immediately raised him up to the air, looking extremely fierce, as if he wanted to swallow Yue Yang whole.

"What else have you done to her?"

"Make a flower crown... You also knew that your daughter loves flowers the most. I had created a flower crown that really suit her. She was even more beautiful under the starlight. Her charm is second to none! Especially when she was not wearing..." Yue Yang stopped halfway when he said this.

“She, what did she not wear?” The Eastern Sky King started to cry. This time it’s the end, his precious daughter did not wear any clothes, what else could have happened? It’s the end, it’s the end!

“She wasn’t wearing any...shoes. She had soaked those small and exquisite legs of hers in the lake. Under the sparkling starlight, the view was simply magnificent. I had almost wanted to recite a poem to appreciate the moment, it’s a pity that my literature is lacking. Furthermore, I was also bewitched by her ethereal beauty, her beauty was that kind of beauty that could shake heaven and earth, like a goddess descent, it was so indescribable that I couldn’t write a poem to describe her. Eh, why are you crying?” The Eastern Sky King hurriedly wiped his tears and revealed a smile when Yue Yang asked him.

“I didn’t cry, it’s happy tears! You are really little Luo Hua’s Personal Guard?” The Eastern Sky King patted Yue Yang’s shoulders intimately.

“It’s my honor. How could I lie to you?” Yue Yang puffed his chest up, looking extremely proud.

“You really didn’t do anything to her?” The Eastern Sky King asked.

“What could I do to her? Princess Qian Qian, that tigress, was also there at that time. If you don’t believe me, just go and ask her!” Yue Yang pointed at Princess Qian Qian who was laughing secretly. Princess Qian Qian saw Yue Yang glaring at her, as if

saying “If you really say it, then I’ll also say your secret. Let’s just all die together.”. She spat out her tongue and humphed, turned around and refused to look at him. However, her ears were pricked up, listening to him tricking the Eastern Sky King.

“Why don’t you say it earlier!” The Eastern Sky King was about to faint. Two girls, one guy, and the two girls were even rivals in love. It’s not one guy and one girl alone. Wasn’t he worried for nothing then?

Jun Wu You and the others pretended not to hear anything, but they were secretly laughing until their stomachs hurt.

They never thought that the Eastern Sky King who was nicknamed the “Fiery Barbarian Bull” could actually be led by the nose by his junior Yue Yang. He couldn’t unleash his exploding fiery temper, and had even almost fainted to the ground from Yue Yang’s words.

This fellow had even said that he would definitely be able to beat this cunning little brat up just now. He had finally eaten his own words now!

Seeing that the Eastern Sky King couldn’t even get angry anymore, Fourth Mother was not pleased. She rebuked Yue Yang and ordered him to apologize immediately, “You are really naughty. What are you doing instead of apologizing to the Eastern Sky King? There’s no business for you kids to be here, all of you just go out and play. We still need to discuss a few things...”

Princess Qian Qian gestured at Yue Yang to go outside, she had something to tell him.

If it was only her, Yue Yang would ignore her. This tigress had spent all her efforts to play tricks against him, he had not punished her for that! However, his elder cousin Yue Yu had also stood up and whispered in Yue Yang's ears, "Those subordinates of yours who participated in Fourth Mother's rescue, they were all almost annihilated. Only one was left and she was also gravely injured. I'm afraid she wouldn't live until tomorrow. She wants to see you before she die!"

Subordinates? When in the world did he have subordinates?

Yue Yang was perplexed.

Chapter 194 – Please Grant Me A Name, I Want To Become Human!

Yue Yang followed Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu to the White Stone City Medical Clinic.

He found out, in surprise, that the mysterious subordinate turned out to be the big-breasted tavern girl from the Eastern Tavern... Right now, the lower half of her body had already been crushed and she was on the brink of death, lying on the bed in the Medical Clinic. Although everyone in the Medical Clinic had tried their best to save her, her injuries were far too severe. Yue Yang did not even need to touch her to sense that her life was about to end. There was no hope for her to recover.

This big-breasted tavern girl, other than allowing her to help him to pawn off the reward from killing Tie Kuang, Yue Yang had not gotten into contact with her again.

Afterwards, Yue Yang had gone to Tong Tian Tower to search for Yue Bing, then brought Fourth Mother to go back to the Yue Clan Castle, and did a myriad of other things. He never saw her again. He also had no time to return to White Stone City again.

Why would she disguise herself as his subordinate and rescue Fourth Mother?

How did she know that Fourth Mother was in danger?

Even if Fourth Mother was in danger, how did she know the relationship between Fourth Mother and himself? This matter was simply too strange!

Yue Yang really couldn't understand it at all... The only thing that he could understand now was that this big-breasted tavern girl had no ulterior motives. She had even sacrificed her life to save Fourth Mother!

“There are a total of 13 of them. Other than the little girl who had disguised herself as Shuang-er and narrowly escaped death, the others had all sacrificed their lives, only she is left. She has stubbornly tried to stay alive, because she is determined to see you before she died!” Yue Yu's voice was choked with emotion as she summoned a ball of white light, placing it lightly on the tavern girl's body. If it were a normal patient, or even if it was a patient that was gravely injured, they would immediately be healed with this light. However, it did not have much effect on her. Although the tavern girl's body had recovered a little, for someone who was on the brink of death, the recovery didn't have much effect. The tavern girl could not even open her eyes.

“She is at her limit!” Princess Qian Qian said with a heavy heart.

“Brother, quick, think of a way...” Yue Bing hugged Yue Yang's arms as she wiped her tears. Not only her, even Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were shaking their heads and sighing in sadness. This tavern girl was a survivor that they managed to snatch back after going to the Starved Dog Range to fight against the Thousand Goblins Sect at the old cunning fox's and the eagle-eyed teacher's order. The others had all died and only one was left, but she was

also gravely injured.

“Let’s try it then!” If it were the Yue Yang before, he wouldn’t have any way. But he had just learnt a lot of Innate Qi controlling techniques and skills from the big loli in his Dream Realm. One of them was pertaining to a medical skill.

He reached out his hands and lightly placed it on the tavern girl’s forehead.

Innate Qi seeped into her forehead extremely gently, rousing her brain that was unconscious.

With Yue Yang’s current medical knowledge, he could only rouse an unconscious patient. Unless his medical knowledge increased by a hundredfold, he wouldn’t be able to save such a gravely injured patient. Even the Imperial Doctors sent by Jun Wu You had given up on her... Yue Yu’s beast was a healing-type, hence, she knew that it was a miracle for Yue Yang to be able to rouse an unconscious patient!

Very slowly, very slowly.

Colour slightly filled the tavern girl’s pale face as her eyelashes slowly trembled.

Under the joyful crowd’s watch, she slowly opened her eyes, looking through everyone’s faces for a while before finally landing her gaze on Yue Yang.

She immediately recognized him. A pleasant surprise filled the tavern girl's eyes, as she became more energized. Her lips trembled, as if she was trying to speak. Seeing that his skill really had an effect, Yue Yang hurriedly channeled more Innate Qi into the tavern girl's forehead.

“Really, it's really you. I thought I would never see you again.” The tavern girl's voice was weak, so weak that it almost couldn't be heard.

But Yue Yang's hearing was sharp. He nodded and comforted her, “It's me. Don't worry, your injuries will definitely get better. We will think of a way to heal your wounds. Thank you for saving my Fourth Mother and little sister! Right now, you shouldn't think about other things, just keep your mind on getting better. You will definitely get better!”

The tavern girl revealed a wry, weak smile, as she weakly said, “I, I already know that I won't get better. It's my own body, I, how could I not understand my own health... But it doesn't matter, I don't regret this, I feel like it's an honour instead... A small, insignificant person like me who had never done any big things or saved any person my whole life, my whole life... What happened to me was also my heartfelt wish... For a person like me, it's a disgrace for me to live, a sin for me to live. But I persisted on living, in order to take my revenge... Now I have taken my revenge and fulfilled my wish. I have no more regrets in my heart...”

As she said that, a kind of radiance surfaced in her face.

She was glowing.

It was as if all her wounds had become better, her eyes was shining with their usual brightness, her lips turned rosy, and even her difficult, gasping breath turned long and drawn-out...

Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu knew that this was a dying flash, a sudden healthy turn before she died.

The tavern girl's life ignited brightly for the last time, shining brilliantly before walking to the finish line.

“Actually, I, I had recognised you from the first time we met. You would usually bring your little sister out to play, and I would usually peek at you from my window. Although you always wore a mask when you came out at night to punish criminals, your eyes is one of a kind, I could immediately recognize you. This secret, I never told it to my sisters before, until Chang Dao came. He and his crooks were trying to find you. When I heard about the news, I immediately gathered my sisters. After a long discussion, they finally knew that the benefactor who helped them to take revenge was you... We decided to disguise ourselves as your subordinates and rescue the Madam and the little Miss. We thought that as long as we left White Stone City, those crooks wouldn't be able to find us... We didn't know that they were actually so skillful. We had separated and travelled in two groups, furthermore, we had already travelled so far away. But they still managed to catch up with us... This was a blunder on our part. Fortunately heavens have provided us with their protection and blessings, the Madam and the little miss are both fine...” The radiance in the tavern girl's face glowed even brighter, she was also very clear when she spoke.

“No, you have all done well in this matter. Without you girls, Fourth Mother and Shuang-er would have died. I would like to thank you on their behalf!” Yue Yang was full of gratitude and respect to this tavern girl.

Previously, Yue Yang had looked down upon these girls.

Afterwards, when he knew that they were actually forced by Tie Kuang, he had sympathized with them. However, he had never thought of trying to change their lives.

Who would have known that the favour he did them at that time, which was only killing Tie Kuang, would get such a big reciprocation. These humble tavern girls who were scorned by others had used their twelve lives to complete a magnificent and loyal feat, a feat that not even close families could do to each other. They had sacrificed their own lives and fled thousands of miles away with Fourth Mother. They had even used their own kid to disguise herself as Shuang-er and divert the enemy's attention.

When Yue Yang killed Tie Kuang at that time, he only wished to feed him to the Thorny Flower, he never thought of rescuing these tavern girls.

Yet, his insignificant action had actually been returned by a gratitude so benevolent like a gushing spring...

“Young master, you don't have to be sad. I had always wanted to do something for you, but I don't have the ability to do so. I was

extremely regretful in my heart. Being able to help you, even if it was only a little, is my greatest joy. I'm fine. Actually, I don't really want to live anymore. I will only just be a disgrace if I live. You don't know how happy I am to be able to die like this... Being able to see you once again before I die, I really have no more regrets!" the tavern girl smiled again. She was smiling so happily that even her eyes were smiling, as if she had done something that she was the most pleased with in her whole life. She was smiling from the bottom of her heart.

Yue Bing's tears flowed down relentlessly, her drops of tears wetting Yue Yang's arms.

Yue Yu was also crying uncontrollably...

The strong Princess Qian Qian was also quietly wiping her tears that had flowed out at some point.

Fatty Hai wanted to force himself not to cry. However, his face distorted badly as he failed to hold back his falling tears. He immediately gritted his teeth and forced his tears to stop.

Ye Kong had turned around, unable to watch any longer. The Li Clan Brothers were clenching their fists tightly. They were not experts in expressing themselves, they wanted to say something comforting, but they didn't know what best to say.

Yue Yang breathed in deeply as he tried to control his emotions. He looked at the tavern girl whose complexion had started to decline and knew that her time was almost up. He leaned closer

and asked gently, “Do you have any other wishes? What can I do to help you?”

“Then, please grant me a name... I don’t have a name.” The tavern girl’s voice became weaker.

“What?” Yue Yang was surprised. How could there be someone in the world without a name?

“I’m the daughter of a prisoner of war, a slave. I don’t have a name since young, I only have a number to identify myself. I’m just a lowly slave... Since I’m young, I have been sold here and there, and finally, when I grew up, I became a tool for people to vent their lust. I’m just a piece of flesh that allows people to play with recklessly, a slave with no dignity nor freedom, destined to be stepped on by thousands of people. There never have been anyone who treated me like a person before. Only you, young master, who looked at me as if I’m a person. Only you, young master, who treated me like a person... Young master, if only I could have met you earlier, how great would it be? I would even dream that I could live my life once again and become your servant my whole life. I don’t want to be sold here and there like last time, I, I don’t want to be a piece of flesh for others to play with. I want to become a person! In my next life.... Young master, if there’s a next life, please let me be your servant. You are the only one in this world who treated me like a person...”

“Young master, if there’s a next life... if there’s a next life...”

The tavern girl did not manage to wait for Yue Yang to give her a name before she breathed her last as she mumbled her last words.

Yue Yang closed his eyes tightly, trying to seal the pain and sadness in his heart.

A bead of tear that had formed in her unclosed eyes flowed from the corner of her eyes down to her cheeks.

Yue Yang reached out and covered the tavern girl's face with his hands, closing those doe eyes of hers lightly. He nodded resolutely as he replied, "I, I will definitely give you a name. You are a lowly slave last time who was sold here and there, but from this day onwards, you are my servant. You are not an object, you are a person. You are also not a piece of shameful flesh, you would be a person with dignity and freedom. Even without a life, nobody would dare to look down on you, because your master is me! I swear to make the people who hurt you pay a thousand, ten thousand times back..."

As if she had heard Yue Yang's words, the corners of the passed tavern girl's still mouth seemed to curve a little, as if she was smiling.

Yue Bing hugged her brother and cried out loud.

Fatty Hai banged his head on the wall as he completely burst into tears.

Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu held each other tightly. Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers' eyes were red, as they looked at Yue Yang... In their hearts, Yue Yang was omnipotent, someone who

could create a miracle even in despair. They hoped that Yue Yang could revive this tavern girl who didn't even have a name. She was worthy to become a person, even more than some other people!

But Yue Yang had no way at all. He didn't have the ability to resurrect the tavern girl.

Luo Hua City Mistress had said before that the Heaven Resurrection Crystal had been used up. If anyone in this world died, there would be no way to reverse the situation...

Yue Yang tried to think of another way. Could he conserve her body in ice?

Or could he use that 'Spirit Absorbing Pearl' that he snatched from Duke Xian, and seal the tavern girl's spirit?

But Yue Yang didn't know how to use the Spirit Absorbing Pearl, and he also didn't know what kind of result it would have. However, he couldn't hesitate now. Yue Yang immediately took out the Spirit Absorbing Pearl from his Lich Ring, prepared to place it on the tavern girl's forehead. However, a rainbow light suddenly flashed as Xiao Wen Li floated out from his body, her little hands stopping Yue Yang softly.

Yue Yang was immediately happy, could it be that his little darling had a good idea?

Chapter 195 – Spirit Of Flame And Smoke

Xiao Wen Li stopped Yue Yang. However, she didn't make a move.

She just looked at the dead lady with her head tilted to one side. She was blinking her eyes as if she was thinking of some solutions.

When all of them looked at her, putting their hopes on her, Xiao Wen Li could only shake her head inaudibly at Yue Yang indicated that she had no solution. Yue Bing embraced Xiao Wen Li and cried broken-heartedly, "Please think about it. There must be a way. You could certainly think of a good solution. Please think about it again. I beg you, please."

Ye Kong and the Li Brothers were watching Xiao Wen Li anxiously, hoping that she would perform a miracle.

Princess Qian Qian gripped Yue Yang's arms tightly while she embraced Yue Yu. She was extremely nervous. In fact, not only her, Yue Yang was extremely nervous too. He knew that Xiao Wen Li shook her head because she was really out of ideas, but he still hoped that there would be a miracle.

Xiao Wen Li was bewildered as Yue Bing embraced her and cried loudly.

She looked at Yue Yang. Suddenly, she made a hand gesture to Yue Yang.

Yue Yang was startled.

Could it be that Xiao Wen Li wanted to speak to him alone? As Yue Yang was struck by a thought, he took her in his arms. He asked her, pleasantly surprised, “Do you have a solution?”

Xiao Wen Li grabbed Yue Yang’s hand and bit his hand softly until the blood was coming out from his finger.

She blew the wound on Yue Yang’s finger with her small little mouth as she felt sorry for Yue Yang. She then pulled his finger towards the dead lady’s forehead and used the blood to draw a Rune on it.

When they saw her making her moves, everyone held their breath as they were afraid that they would disturb her.

Yue Yang felt that the Rune was a little familiar. It seemed like he had seen it somewhere else. However, Xiao Wen Li had already drawn a Contract Runic Circle on the dead lady’s forehead before Yue Yang could recall where he saw it before. Princess Qian Qian shook her head soundlessly. Although a human could form a contract with any beasts, it was impossible for a human to form a contract with another human. This Ancient Law could never be changed. A warrior could form a contract with a Humanoid Beast, but absolutely not with a human. It was impossible to form a contract with a weak human no matter how strong the warrior was.

Princess Qian Qian couldn't understand the Xiao Wen Li's actions but she knew that no contract could be made between humans.

Xiao Wen Li drew the runes all the way down from the dead lady's cheek, neck, shoulder and chest with blood as she held Yue Yang's finger.

Lastly, a giant Runic Circle was drawn on the position of the dead lady's heart again with Yue Yang's blood. As she finished drawing, she held Yue Yang's finger and kissed it. She felt sorry for Yue Yang. Her big and adorable eyes were filled with tears and was about to cry.

Actually Yue Yang didn't mind to lose some blood as long as there was hope. He wouldn't even mind it even if he had to pay a high price to save the tavern girl.

"I'm alright. Good girl, don't cry." Yue Yang comforted Xiao Wen Li by holding her in his arms softly and kissing her little cheek.

"Ung." Xiao Wen Li then did a hand gesture, trying to say that she needed some fire. It seemed like she wanted to burn the dead body of the lady.

"We'll go and get some alcohol and oil. We will be back in a short while." Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers immediately turned and dashed out. However, when they brought the alcohol and oil back, Xiao Wen Li shook her hands. She then pulled Yue Yang's hand and shook it.

Could it be that Yue Yang had to burn the body himself?

Ye Kong handed the alcohol to Yue Yang but Xiao Wen Li still shook her head.

Yue Yang was struck by a thought. Could it be that Xiao Wen Li wanted him to use [Nirvana's Flame]?

That [Nirvana Flame] was no joke. Once it was used, the whole area would probably be destroyed. It would put Yue Bing and Princess Qian Qian in danger.

As Yue Yang thought of the consequences, Yue Yang wrapped the dead body with a bedsheet. He had decided to bring the dead body to a suitable place then only he could think of a way to use [Nirvana's Flame].

He opened a Teleportation Scroll and raised the teleportation gate that led to the Dimension of Duel where he had fought against Tu Cheng.

Of course, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were scrambling to enter the teleportation gate. Princess Qian Qian, Yue Yu and Yue Bing were anxious too, hence they also entered the teleportation gate. The bodies of the Golden Giant, Tu Cheng and the Silver Giant, Kuang Zhan were still on the ground. The corpses of the Golden Dragon and Ancient Giant Beast were also found all over the ground disorderly. The volcanoes buried underground hadn't exploded. What surprised Yue Yang the most was that the bodies and corpses hadn't decayed and looked intact even though they were there for

more than ten days.

“Please stay away.” Yue Yang requested Ye Kong and the rest who were watching in a circle to step further away.

Ye Kong and the rest hurriedly moved back a few steps. Yue Yang looked at them helplessly. Seeing that they had not moved as far as he'd like, he flew further away himself, bring the dead body of the tavern girl with him.

Although he still couldn't use his Innate Strength now, when he unleashed his power, the impact from the energy was like a hurricane, immediately blowing Ye Kong and the others away with the shockwave.

Even the awfully heavy Fatty Hai was also blown away by the shockwave. As he fell down, he was so astonished that he couldn't speak. They knew that Yue Yang was very powerful, but they never expected that he was actually this strong, possessing such an unbelievable strength! Princess Qian Qian fared better as she already knew about Yue Yang's strength. However, both Yue Yu and Yue Bing were so stunned that they couldn't close their mouths.

Yue Bing immediately summoned her grimoire as she saw Yue Yang intended to enhance the explosion even more.

On the other side, Fatty Hai also clumsily summoned his grimoire. After a long time, he finally summoned his grimoire. With their protective shields erected, Yue Yang didn't have to

worry that his [Nirvana's Flame] would hurt Yue Bing and the rest.

Yue Yang attempted to condense [Nirvana's Flame] on his palm.

It was easier to control [Nirvana's Flame] in his Innate State. Yue Yang still couldn't summon [Nirvana's Flame] smoothly after he tried hard for a long time. Xiao Wen Li gestured at Yue Yang not to be distressed. She held Yue Yang's legs tightly with her little hands as she waited for him quietly. Then, suddenly, a dark golden Ancient Rune appeared on Yue Yang's body and the [Nirvana's Flame] finally condensed on Yue Yang's palm. The dead body of the tavern girl was burned into ashes in just a second.

There seemed to be a kind of Runic Circle burning inside the [Nirvana's Flame] for two seconds.

However, the dead body of the tavern girl had vanished in a puff of smoke and disappeared without a trace as the [Nirvana's Flame] faded away on Yue Yang's palm. It was like the tavern girl had never existed in the world before.

Even Innate Rankers couldn't endure [Nirvana's Flame], let alone an ordinary lady.

Yue Yang was dumbstruck.

He never thought that he wouldn't even have time to regret his actions. The dead body of the tavern girl had been burned down within a second.

Seeing that her Resurrection Ritual had failed, Xiao Wen Li couldn't help but to hug Yue Yang and cried out loudly. It was the first time she had cried out so dejectedly. From her point of view, she had not only destroyed the chance to resurrect the lady, she had also wasted a lot of Yue Yang's blood. For a moment, she couldn't accept her failure and cried out loudly as she threw herself into Yue Yang's arm. Her tears spilled all over Yue Yang.

"It's ok. Don't cry. This is her fate. It's not your fault!" Yue Yang was very sad too, but resurrecting a dead person couldn't be forced. It was the lady's fate that she couldn't be revived. It was not Xiao Wen Li's fault.

"Wuwuwu..." Xiao Wen Li cried broken-heartedly.

This was the first time she cried like a child in front of Yue Yang. It was so different from her usual image as a little god of war.

Yue Yang breathed a gentle sigh. He caressed her back lightly and kissed her tears away gently.

He had tried his best, but he had failed...

The pitiful tavern girl's life was so desolate and sad. She even lost her only opportunity to revive.

She had lived tragically throughout her whole life. Yue Yang shook his head as he saw the others crying sorrowfully. After he

collected the dead bodies of Tu Cheng, Kuang Zhan, the Golden Dragon and Ancient Giant Beast, he held Xiao Wen Li who was still crying and prepared to leave this sad place.

Suddenly, a volcano which was hidden under the ground exploded.

Boom Boom!

The fiery lava spouted high to the sky along with the trembling sound that shook the ground.

Yue Yang was astounded. These volcano traps were actually designed by Tu Cheng to injure him. It would not explode if no one triggered them. Why did it suddenly break through and exploded?

Boom, boom, boom, boom.....

Ten volcano which were hidden under the ground exploded one by one. The blood-red lava spouted high up into the sky. The volcanic ash, thick smoke and the blood-red lava flowed out from the volcano. Before Yue Yang could react, Yue Yu suddenly screamed emotionally. "Come here, quick! Look here. There's a weird shadow there... Everyone, look!" Yue Yang looked at the direction where Yue Yu had pointed and discovered a weird shadow formed by flames and thick smokes flying hither and thither in the lava. It seemed like it was having fun as it moved in and out of the lava.

“What is that?” Yue Yang noticed that the shadow which was made up of around 30% flame and 70% thick smoke looked very similar to the dead tavern girl.

The shadow didn't have a solid body. Her body could barely be seen in the midst of raging flame and smoke. Her body changed irregularly, as if she could twist and deform anytime. For a moment, she became a column of smoke rising high up into the sky. In the next moment, she had become a fireball and smashed into the lava.

The lava was not only harmless to the shadow's body, but also increased its energy.

The thick smoke and lava from the volcano became part of the shadow's body as she moved in and out of the volcanoes.

Yue Yang caught a glimpse of a familiar rune on the forehead of the shadow. A bunch of indistinct Runic Circles which could barely be seen were found on her body too. This shadow was indeed the evolved tavern girl. She didn't die, instead, she became a 'Smoke Lady' whose body was made up of thick smoke and flame. She neither looked like a human nor beast. It was hard to categorized her into any category.

However, everyone was cheering for she was revived regardless of how she looked.

Xiao Wen Li was the happiest one. She held Yue Yang's neck and cheered out emotionally.

Although the Resurrection Ritual wasn't successful, it hadn't entirely failed either. Part of her thought was right. At least the lady who had wasted a lot of Yue Yang's blood had her soul revived, although her body was completely destroyed.

"She seems to not recognize us anymore..." When Princess Qian Qian called her a few times, the Smoke Lady who was made up of thick smoke and flame twisted her body and came up to stand in front of Princess Qian Qian as she swirled a pillar of thick smoke. She stared at Princess Qian Qian with her flaming eyes for a while and left as she couldn't recognize her. She looked like a child who had lost all her memory, and only cared about playing happily all by herself.

"It's alright as long as she is happy." Yue Yang smiled. Perhaps this was the best ending for the tavern girl.

If she still retained her previous life's memory, it would only make her suffer even more.

Without the restriction of the body, wasn't it better for her to have fun without care or worries? Sometimes it was a form of happiness when one's couldn't remember or understand a thing.

Yue Yu nodded her head as she agreed with Yue Yang. She also thought the same.

Yue Bing smiled brightly with her face which was still covered with tear stains. The storm had finally come to an end. She held

Yue Yang's arm, acted in a slightly coquetting manner, "Brother, let's bring her home even if she is in this form."

"Let her stay and live her life here. She belongs to this place. It might not be good for her to return to Soaring Dragon Continent." Yue Yang stroked lightly on Yue Bing's little head as he rejected her suggestion.

"Wouldn't she feel lonely if she stays here alone?" Yue Bing asked, as she was reluctant to be part with the lady.

"It doesn't matter. We will visit her when we are free." Yue Yang carried Xiao Wen Li with one of his hand as he opened a Teleportation Scroll with his other hand. They were getting ready to leave.

When the Smoke Lady who had only bothered to play happily all by herself saw the figure of Yue Yang carrying Xiao Wen Li, she whirled and stood right in front of Yue Yang as she looked at him without blinking her flaming eyes. Yue Yang waved at her to say goodbye. Suddenly, she approached Yue Yang and gazed into his eyes. She even extended her flaming fingers, as if trying to touch Yue Yang's eyes.

Princess Qian Qian was startled. Soon, she managed to react. "Yue Yang, she still has some memories. She still remember your eyes."

Suddenly, the Smoke Lady took back her hands, turn into a thick smoke and flew up to the sky.

She turned into a fireball as she flew high up to the sky, before throwing herself rapidly into the nearest volcano. She then continued to play happily with the lava. Apparently, she couldn't remember Yue Yang anymore. It was just some fragment of her memory that wouldn't affect her state of mind.

Everyone breathed a quiet sigh. Yue Yang only smiled.

As he turned to leave, the Smoke Lady swirled back rapidly again. She followed behind Yue Yang then swirled to the front to look at his eyes.

"Yue Yang, try to summon her. She might be your beast.... Just give it a try." In Princess Qian Qian's opinion, the Smoke Lady couldn't be called a human. She should belong to the category of element-type beast.

"Impossible. Human can't form contracts with other human. This is absolutely not going to work." Yue Yang also knew that warriors could only form contracts with beasts.

"Just give it a try. There's a Contract Circle on her forehead!" Not only Princess Qian Qian was doubtful. Everyone had seen the fact with their own eyes. The Smoke Lady couldn't be categorized as human anymore. Her memory had been lost while her body was formed by smoke and flame. The only thing left was her soul. All of them were wondering how this could happen.

Perhaps the Old Cunning Fox and Grandma Wu Teng would

know what was happening. The best thing now would be to bring her out of the place.

Yue Yang tried to summon her in his heart. He noticed that there really was a connection of thought with the Smoke Lady.

However, it was very weak.

He tried to recall her but he noticed that there was some kind of resisting thought that rejected him.

The Smoke Lady who stared into Yue Yang's eyes suddenly appeared shocked. She then transformed into a column of smoke, swirled high up into the sky, escaped into the lava and disappeared in an instant. Yue Yang was puzzled. He summoned Silver Grimoire. He felt dizzy when he opened it up.

As expected, a pattern of thick smoke and flame was added on the blank page.

Spirit of Flame and Smoke: Humanoid Element-Type, Silver-ranked Level 1, Incorporeal Body, Guardian Beast, Intangible, Special Skills – [Incorporeal Body], [Thick Smoke] and [Ignite].

Everyone was stunned as they looked at the book.

How could a perfectly ordinary human transform into a Guardian Beast?

They thought that one could only have one Guardian Beast. They didn't know that Yue Yang had many Guardian Beasts, but they had also never seen a case where a human transformed into a Guardian Beast. What surprised Yue Yang the most was that he couldn't control her. It proved that she had a high level of intelligence as she knew how to resist his will. Her intelligence level shouldn't be lower than the Bloody Queen. If she was properly trained, her future would certainly be unlimited.

"Forget it. This is good enough!" Yue Yang felt that a good ending for this matter was enough. Anyway, there were bunch of things which were beyond him.

"Yeah. This is the best thing that could ever happen. I was hoping for this to happen." When Yue Bing realized that the tavern girl who had saved her mother and younger sister wasn't dead and had become her elder brother's Guardian Beast, she was full of joy and happiness. She nodded her little head as she agreed with her elder brother.

When Yue Yang and the rest were about to leave, the Smoke Lady whirled out from the thick smoke and stared at Yue Yang's leaving figure curiously.

Although she had lost her memory, there were a few fragments of memories which made her feel like Yue Yang was different from the others. She just didn't know how to react properly.

Once they returned to White Stone City, Yue Yang asked Yue

Bing to go to the reception and call the Old Cunning Fox.

As the Old Cunning Fox listened to them, he jumped in shock, "You must be kidding me. Both of you must be working together to trick me so that you can see me being humiliated, right? How could a human become a beast? This is impossible! A human is dead if he or she is dead. They can never be revived or be transformed into a beast. What kind of expression are you giving me? I am the Vice Principal who is so knowledgeable that I know everything about the universe. It would be humiliating if I don't even know this kind of basic knowledge. Where is your proof? Let me see.... Oh! I'm going to faint!"

Chapter 196 – Mysterious Diary

The old cunning fox didn't understand the matter of the tavern girl turning into the spirit of flame and smoke too. Grandma Wu Teng was also not present, so Yue Yang decided not to pursue the matter anymore.

This matter, the lesser people knew, the better.

The people inside the Main Hall seemed to have finished their discussion and reached to a conclusion.

Yue Yang didn't know what they had discussed, but seeing that the old cunning fox was winking at him, it seemed like they weren't discussing a bad thing.

After their long discussion, the eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie brought Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others back, saying that he wanted to give them a special Hell Class. Ye Kong and the others felt that their powers were far too behind Yue Yang's and that they would only be burdens if they stayed with Yue Yang. They could only grit their teeth and followed the eagle-eyed teacher for their Hell Class. Even the previously lazy Fatty Hai had also started to work diligently, influenced by Yue Yang.

His improvement could practically pop the others' eyes out.

Before Ye Kong left, he asked Yue Yang if he would want to participate in the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament.

Yue Yang had even killed strong Innate Rankers like Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan, so he was initially uninterested in fighting against a bunch of school kids. But seeing how Yue Bing was hoping to see him in action, he finally nodded. Yue Bing really hoped that his brother could wash away his bad reputation of a useless trash in the country. When she saw that Yue Yang had agreed, she immediately nodded her head emotionally.

Although Yue Yang had wreak havoc in the Yue Clan's Castle previously, the number of people who knew that Yue Yang was no longer trash and was a super strong ranker instead was not many.

Yue Bing thought that if her brother swept through the competition and won the first place, there'd be no one else in the whole world who would ridicule him anymore.

“Go to Tong Tian Tower. You should first clear the Tong Tian Tower First Floor Trial Twelve Zodiac Temples. When you have cultivated a Holy Beast, we can go and complete the World Tree Quest together. You have improved quite a lot, but shouldn't you take care of your sister? Bring her along!” Princess Qian Qian didn't give Yue Yang a chance to rest, forcing him to work.

“Has your level rose to Level 5?” Yue Yu was worried about Yue Yang's level the most. If he had levelled up to Level 5 [Grandmaster], then he wouldn't be able to enter the Twelve Zodiac Temples.

“No.” Yue Yang normally didn't take out his grimoire during

battles, hence his level was still very low. He was only a Level 2 [Braveman].

“Go then!” Princess Qian Qian had already levelled up beyond level 5 due to her daily trainings since young with her teacher. She didn’t have any chance of entering the Twelve Zodiac Temples, so she was extremely envious of Yue Yang. Of course, in order to pursue the strongest power, she had focused on cultivating her Guardian Beast, hence her strength had far surpassed her peers. Other than Yue Yang, this brat with abnormal strength, all the others were not her opponents at all.

The old cunning fox had also supported Yue Yang’s training.

He indicated that he was willing to stay behind and help Yue Yang settle the rest of the matters, and also escort Fourth Mother and Shuang-er to a safe place to stay.

As Yue Yang’s power had increased by a lot to the point that he had even managed to kill the Thousand Goblins Sect’s disciples, Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan, the Thousand Goblins Sect would probably have no intention to attack Fourth Mother again in the meantime. After a long discussion, Elder Yue Hai, Jun Wu You and the old cunning fox had decided to send Fourth Mother into a secret and safe place for her safety. They wouldn’t let others know about her location.

As for the other things, such as the tavern girl’s families, they had also already ordered someone to bring them away to a safer place and allow them to begin a new life there. Yue Yang did not have to bother with all these.

Yue Yang really wanted to see Yi Nan and Luo Hua City Mistress, but they had both went into hiding and declined to see him.

It was as if they knew that their families had met Yue Yang, so they didn't want to see him.

Yi Nan was a little better, she had left Yue Yang a letter saying that she would be going home for a while. She would meet Yue Yang again later during the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament. Luo Hua City Mistress, on the other hand, didn't even leave any news for Yue Yang. Princess Qian Qian said that Luo Hua City Mistress was spending her time growing the Beautiful Demonic Flower and the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass at her home everyday, and was living a contented life. She probably had forgotten about Yue Yang completely.

As for the beautiful School Principal who looked like the mysterious beauty, Princess Qian Qian didn't mention about her at all, as if she had never existed.

Yue Yang wanted to ask her about the other girls, but he felt that Princess Qian Qian, this tigress, was already fed-up with jealousy when she mentioned Luo Hua City Mistress. If he asked her about the mysterious beauty too, she might even turn into a berserk tigress and attack him. In the end, he decided to endure his curiosity and didn't ask her about it. If his cousin Yue Yu and his sister Yue Bing weren't here, Yue Yang would definitely not let go of this opportunity. This tigress was actually a really nice girl. Her body was of top-quality and her strength was also powerful. As for her temperament and character... He would just ignore that. Most

importantly, this girl's [Six Records] Inherent Skill was a threat to him. The quicker he pushed her down and made her his woman, the faster that threat would disappear.

Although her father Jun Wu You was the Emperor, and that pushing down his daughter would probably made him very angry, pushing down the tigress had already been Yue Yang's long time wish, he would definitely not give up.

Maybe Princess Qian Qian had sensed that it would be dangerous if she stayed together with Yue Yang, hence she had purposely pulled Yue Yu to her side. She even pulled Yue Bing to her side too.

In front of his cousin and sister, it would be difficult for Yue Yang to turn into a Big Perverted Wolf.

Tong Tian Tower.

Returning to Tong Tian Tower First Floor, this time, Yue Yang felt really comfortable, having three beautiful companions with him. Previously, he had ran up the Royal Dragon Valley and was drenched in sweat. Now, he didn't even need a teleportation scroll, he had sat on a Flying Carriage pulled by a bunch of Deer-Eagles. Furthermore, there were even dinner provided from Princess Qian Qian.

(Shiro: I've no idea what a Deer-Eagle is. Here's the raws... 坐了由大群鹿鹰驾拉的‘空中马车’)

“I've never seen such a penny-pincher like you. What are you going to do with your pile of money?” Princess Qian Qian was almost driven mad by Yue Yang's refusal to spend a single cent.

“I’m keeping it for betrothal gifts!” Yue Yang defended himself shamelessly.

“...” Princess Qian Qian only rolled her eyes when she heard his answer. She became gloomy for a long time. As she sat on the Flying Carriage, she thought about kicking Yue Yang out of the carriage. Yue Bing had never taken a ride on this Flying Carriage that had a rental fee of 20 gold before. She was extremely happy as she looked at the amazing scenery from above. Yue Yang had flown on airplanes a lot of times before, so he didn’t think much of the slow moving Flying Carriage. Instead, he took the opportunity to read the mysterious diary that the pitiful guy’s parents had left him as the three girls chatted with each other.

Even with Level 3 [Divine Vision], he still couldn’t read through the hidden words. However, with the help of his [Traversing Naked Eye] state, he could read the information very vaguely.

In Yue Yang’s Dream Realm, under the Heavenly Sword Goddess who had turned into a big loli’s teachings, Yue Yang had also learned a type of Innate Sensing.

When he combined it altogether, he could vaguely sense the piece of information in the diary.

That piece of information seemed to be from the pitiful guy’s mother. She wrote: When cultivating a beast, it would have greater growth if it was cultivated for a longer period in each level. It would also be a good thing if the beast learn more skills and

experienced more breakthrough in each level... On the contrary, levelling beasts based on strength instead of teaching new skills was a bad thing for a beast's growth. She had also pointed out especially that a beast's growth could be divided into five types. The first type was strength levelling. This method allowed beasts to swallow Magic Cores to level up. This was the fastest way but the most harmful way of cultivating a beast. The second type was battle levelling. This method allowed beasts to learn and level up during battles. This was the best method to cultivate a beast but the slowest and the most dangerous one. It wouldn't be a problem for strong warriors, but for an ordinary, weak warrior with little power, allowing their beasts to level up solely with battles was practically a joke. This was because such method involved a high risk of the beast dying or become crippled during the battle. There was no guarantee for their beasts to stay alive. This method would be best for a powerful warrior who wanted to cultivate his Guardian Beast.

The third method was a combination of the first two, cultivating the beast by feeding them magic cores and participating in fights. This was a method that most warriors in the Soaring Dragon Continent had adopted. The levelling speed would be fast and this method would also cultivate beasts with stronger power. For ordinary warriors, this method was the best one, but for a strong warrior, this method was not the most optimal one. This was because the beast would reach their limits after levelling to a certain point. Other than anomalies, they would probably not be able to go very far.

The fourth method was to cultivate both the master and the beast together. As they grow together, their growth would become much stronger together. But not everyone could use this method. It was limited to their bodies' compatibilities.

Yue Yang realized that Princess Qian Qian was using this method. Luo Hua City Mistress and the mysterious beauty were sort of using a similar method too, but they did not only cultivate one beast alone like Princess Qian Qian, who only had her Guardian Beast.

What surprised Yue Yang was that the fifth method was sort of similar to his own cultivating method.

The pitiful guy's mother had pointed out that this method of cultivation could not be copied. The warrior must have a special type of body in order to make a 'Spirit Blood Contract' and turn a beast into his Guardian Beast. Then, after cultivating the Guardian Beast to Holy Beast and above, with a secret technique, the warrior would be able to evolve their beasts to Mythical Beasts or even higher. Yue Yang was surprised that the pitiful guy's mother had actually known about Spirit Blood Contract. Furthermore, he was aware that he had always been using this method to contract Beasts. However, he didn't do it purposely. The end result was coincidentally similar to what the pitiful guy's mother had described of the fifth method.

(Shiro: Spirit Blood Contract – refer to chapter 26)

Through the information from the mysterious diary, Yue Yang had managed to learn quite a lot of secret knowledge.

There were even more secret knowledge hidden deep inside the diary.

Yue Yang secretly sighed helplessly. If only his [Divine Vision] Inherent Skill could rise to Level 4 now, he would probably be able to read more secrets.

“The pitiful guy’s mom was definitely a very powerful person. So far, only Empress Fei Wen Li has known about the Spirit Blood Contract. If she also knew about it, she was definitely not an ordinary person!” Yue Yang sighed in his heart.

Now that Yue Yang thought about it carefully, he felt that his body must be ‘special’ because he had come from another world. He was different from the others.

Although the tavern girl had died, she had turned into his Guardian Beast and even formed a contract with him.

This was definitely impossible for a person from the Soaring Dragon Continent.

There was also the Bloody Queen, who had fused together with Phantom Shadow and became his Guardian Beast. Barbarian Cow Shadow was also a beast formed after Yue Yang used [Possession] on the Bronze Barbarian Cow. As for Xiao Wen Li, it was needless to say that she was his Guardian Beast. Her contract was drawn by Empress Fei Wen Li herself right in front of him when she was still in incubation.

There were the mysterious Golden Beast and the Reaper Mantis which was still in incubation too. They were also related to his blood!

Even the Thorny Flower Demoness liked to lick his blood...

Yue Yang thought about it carefully and felt that he should probably investigate more in this direction. Regretfully, his Level 3 [Divine Vision] still could not see through the whole bulk of information in the mysterious diary. The amount of information that Yue Yang could see from the secret diary left behind by the pitiful guy's mother was very limited.

“What book are you reading?” Princess Qian Qian was very curious.

“Porn.” Yue Yang was afraid of this tigress' curiosity. He immediately replied with a perverted answer to put an end to her curiosity.

Princess Qian Qian punched him, but did not say anything else. Having her sensitive [Six Records] Inherent Skill, she could tell that this brat was lying. Although Princess Qian Qian was curious about the secret that he didn't want anyone to know, if he didn't tell her, she wouldn't pursue the matter. Yue Yu was blushing a little when she heard Yue Yang's answer. As she awkwardly brush a glance on the book, she realized that Yue Yang was only holding a diary in his hands. She immediately sighed in relief, as she realized that her naughty cousin was actually only teasing Princess Qian Qian.

Yue Bing had never thought that her brother would do something bad, and she knew that her brother particularly liked to

tease Princess Qian Qian. She chuckled happily. Right now, she had laughed even more times in a day than she did in a month compared to last time. She was slowly walking out of her lonely and gloomy space.

Returning to the Star's Domain, the group went straight to the entrance of the Twelve Zodiac Temples.

Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu couldn't enter. They waited outside as Yue Yang and his sister Yue Bing made a party and entered the Twelve Zodiac Temples.

As Yue Yang had cleared the Aries Temple previously, this time, both Yue Yang and Yue Bing were teleported to the Taurus Temple.

“Brother, let me lead the attack!” Yue Bing decided to perform an exceptional performance in front of her brother.

“No, I have a better idea.” Yue Yang suddenly thought about the secret methods on the mysterious diary. Maybe he could use these methods on Yue Bing.

Chapter 197 – Taurus Temple

Hearing Yue Yang's idea, Yue Bing immediately blushed excitedly and asked, "Can you really do that?"

Yue Yang had never tried it before, so he couldn't be sure. However, he caressed his sister's head and gave her a little motivation.

The Taurus Temple looked more or less like Aries Temple, but it was much bigger.

There wasn't any mechanical beasts in front, but there was a line of Ox-head statues. When Hui Tai Lang walked near them, those Ox-head statues suddenly turned into Ox-head warriors one by one. These Ox-head Warriors were not that high levelled, only Bronze-ranked Level 3. Yue Bing would probably be able to defeat all of them if she summoned two Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders. Yue Yang ordered Hui Tai Lang to stay behind and kill these Ox-head Warriors outside.

If it was the past Hui Tai Lang, it would probably not be able to handle it. However, after it went to the Cloud Peak Lake and fought the great battle with Tu Lie, levelling up into a Gold-ranked Ancient World Destroying Demon Wolf, its abilities had increased greatly.

Afterwards, it could even kill off the injured Giant Xing Meng.

It could be said that the current Hui Tai Lang was completely

different from that Iron-backed Demon Wolf who had entered the Aries Temple last time.

Yue Yang and Yue Bing charged towards the inner part of the temple. Those Ox-head Warriors intimidated and roared loudly at them, but they did not attack them, who were protected by protective shields. Instead, they all went straight towards Hui Tai Lang, which was disguising itself as a Bronze-ranked Level 3.

Pulling his sister's hand, Yue Yang charged towards the ring-shaped hallway surrounding them, and realized that there were close to a hundred Devil Eyes appearing everywhere.

These Devil Eyes floated in the air as they shot out white light from their giant eyeballs.

If it was any other warrior, they would definitely try to avoid the lights at first.

Furthermore, if it was a normal warrior, by the time they finished clearing the first wave of Ox-head Warriors, the half hour time limit would have been up. They would probably have trouble killing all these Devil Eyes. Right now, Yue Yang and Yue Bing had already barged into the Devil Eyes stage before a minute had even passed. There were close to a hundred Devil Eyes' [Eyeball Light Ray] shooting at them in disarray, but when the Devil Eyes realized that their enemies were all fine, they started screaming in fury, as if they wanted to intimidate their enemies with their will alone.

Yue Yang wasn't affected at all, but Yue Bing was a little shocked.

If she was the only one who was clearing the trial, she would definitely be afraid. But her brother was pulling her hands forward now, so Yue Bing's feet continued to run without stopping, charging through the hallway.

The Devil Eyes tried to chase after them, but retreated when they reached the end of the hallway, as if they were afraid of the BOSS that was up ahead in the next room.

“Heavens!” Yue Bing who had charged in was extremely shocked by the scene that greeted them, crying out in alarm.

A bunch of Barbarian Bulls had appeared right before Yue Yang and Yue Bing.

Ten giant Bronze Barbarian Bulls appeared, each of them Bronze-ranked Level 5. There were also five Barbarian Bulls that looked extremely strong with their bulging muscles and noses that breathed out fire. They were all Silver-ranked Level 5. Lastly, there were also two Gold-ranked Level 5 Barbarian Bulls. They had bodies larger than normal wooden houses. Their legs were bigger than Yue Yang and their eyes were bloody red, as if they were about to shed bloody tears. They glared at Yue Yang and Yue Bing, their gaze filled with killing intent. These two Gold-ranked Level 5 Gold Barbarian Bulls seemed to be mini-Bosses, there was a space, a territory in the middle of the two Gold Barbarian Bulls that they couldn't even approach.

Occupying 20% of the space, where there were no other monsters

in the area, that was the real BOSS. It was a White Bull who was lying on the ground sleeping like a log.

This White Bull was clearly not a Barbarian Bull, seemed like it did not have any kind of combat power.

On the outside, this White Bull looked the smallest amongst the bunch of Barbarian Bulls, completely unlike a BOSS. However, none of the Barbarian Bulls dared to go close to it. Yue Yang's eyes were sharp, he could clearly see that there was a Gold-ranked Artifact like the Golden Bell from Aries Temple, a Golden Hoop, hanging on the White Bull's nose.

The White Bull ignored Yue Yang's and Yue Bing's arrival, continuing to sleep soundly in its slumber.

Yue Yang realized there was something strange.

The pressure he felt from Tu Cheng's beasts, the Gold-ranked Level 7 Ancient Giant Beast and the Golden Dragon, were not as powerful as the pressure that he felt from this Gold-ranked Level 6 White Bull and the Three-headed Chimera from the Aries Temple. This White Bull, not only it was strong, it also seemed to be very intelligent... It gave Yue Yang the feeling that it had human intelligence.

If Yue Yang were to compare, he felt that Tu Cheng's Gold-ranked Level 7 Ancient Giant Beast and Golden Dragon were not as strong as the Gold-ranked Level 7 Reaper Mantis.

Why would their strength vary when their levels were the same?

Was it because one was a strengthening-type, and the other a fighting-type?

Yue Yang suddenly remembered something he had read from the mysterious diary, which was also mentioned by Grandma Wu Teng before...

Grandma Wu Teng said before that only a highly intelligent beast would be able to evolve into a Holy Beast and become stronger! The pitiful guy's mother had also mentioned one point, and that was a beast would have greater growth if it experienced more breakthroughs and longer cultivation period in each level! If he linked Grandma Wu Teng's point and the pitiful guy's mother's words, that would mean that two beasts of the same level, or even two identical beasts of the same level would have a different evolution path if they were cultivated differently. Their strength would also differ greatly.

Although Tu Cheng's Ancient Giant Beast and Golden Dragon was superior beasts and highly levelled, their strength were incomparable to the Reaper Mantis who had lived its life in the wild.

They were also incomparable to the Three-headed Chimera and the Gold-ranked White Bull who had guarded the Twelve Zodiacs Temple and possessed intelligence.

Although the Three-headed Chimera and the Gold White Bull

weren't Holy Beasts, they were not far from one.

A thought surfaced in Yue Yang's mind. If beasts grew in that way, would human cultivation be similar too? A lot of warriors had clambered to ascend to Level 4 or even Level 5, but they couldn't reach Level 6 their whole life afterwards. On the contrary, some other warriors who cultivated patiently and slowly, gaining strength steadily and advanced gradually could instead ascend to Level 6 [Elder] or even higher. For example, someone like Yue Bing, who had cultivated painstakingly all this while, her strength was comparable to some Level 5 [Grandmasters] and wouldn't be disadvantaged in a fight although she was only a Level 3 [Hero]... Could this mean that the longer a warrior cultivate, the more breakthrough he experience, the stronger he would be amongst people of his ranks?

Yue Yang couldn't be certain of this point.

But he decided to mentor Yue Bing in this way. He would not let her level up until her strength had far surpassed her level. In the end, she would naturally level up on her own.

Thinking of his own self, Yue Yang realized that he had gone through the same path.

"Bing-er, don't be afraid. We still have the protective shield now, so they wouldn't be able to do anything to us. Let's go. Go through the left of the hallway." Yue Yang now realized that other than the difference in strength in different levels, beasts of the same level could also have a great difference in strength. There was also a huge difference in strength between intelligent beasts and

ordinary beasts.

No wonder Grandma Wu Teng said that only an intelligent beast would be able to evolve into a Holy Beast.

The Gold-ranked Level 5 Gold Barbarian Bulls was actually supposed to be ten times weaker than this Gold-ranked Level 6 White Bull. But now it seemed that their strength differ by a hundred times.

When he fought that great battle with the Three-headed Chimera before, Xiao Wen Li had expended a huge amount of effort and had almost killed the Three-headed Chimera, but it had recovered to its initial state with the Aries Temple's magic. Now it seemed like this White Bull was not an easy opponent either. If Yue Yang could use his Innate Strength, he would definitely be able to defeat it easily. But under the Ancient Laws in this Twelve Zodiac Temples in the Star Domain, he could only watch without doing anything. Furthermore, he had used too much Innate Strength previously. Even if he could use Innate Strength here, Yue Yang would need at least three months to recover first... Initially, Yue Yang had thought that he could clear the rest of the 11 temples in one go, but it seemed like it was not possible now.

At the end of the left hallway, there were also a bunch of Ox-head Warriors.

Yue Yang and Yue Bing summoned their grimoires at the same time. Yue Bing summoned her two Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders, and after Yue Yang's orders, she put away her grimoire so that she wouldn't receive any battle experience points. Yue

Yang, on the other hand, had summoned his Barbarian Cow Shadow and Bloody Queen. He couldn't summon the Bloody Queen, but Xiao Wen Li had helped him to do so. Yue Yang was a little speechless. He was unexpectedly unable to control his own beasts and it was not only the Bloody Queen. It seemed like other than Xiao Wen Li and the Barbarian Cow Shadow, none of his other beasts were obedient to him.

The battle quickly ended, but Yue Yang didn't bring Yue Bing immediately to the right hallway afterwards. Instead, he looked around if there were any Artifacts.

According to convention, there should be some kind of Artifact here that would help them to clear the trial.

Yue Yang looked around the left hall, searching every nook and corner, and finally realized that other than an enormous painting on the wall, there wasn't anything.

On the huge painting, a few Ox-head Warriors was killing a Barbarian Bull. The painting looked extremely real. The Barbarian Bull was unleashing its Doom's Eyes, one of the Ox-head Warrior had already died from its attack. The Ox-head Warrior's comrades standing next to it were furiously brandishing their bloodied axes, slashing towards the Barbarian Bull... There was nothing wrong with this painting, and there was no secret mechanism to it either.

There was no Artifact, no peculiarities and no secret mechanisms.

Yue Yang was thoroughly bewildered.

Yue Yang didn't mind the half an hour time limit for their protective shield disappearing second by second, but as far as Yue Bing was concerned, this protective shield was their most important protection.

If she was to fight in more battles afterwards, she must definitely have this protective shield.

The beasts outside were all Barbarian Bulls, it wouldn't be a joke if they were attacked by the Barbarian Bull's Doom's Eyes.

Yue Yang carried Yue Bing as they hurried to the right hallway. They flew past the White Bull straight away. Yue Yang had predicted correctly, although those Gold-ranked Barbarian Bulls were furious, they did not dare to enter into the White Bull's territory. That White Bull on the other hand, simply snorted indifferently and continued its slumber. The Bloody Queen appeared in the sky, causing a riot within the bunch of Barbarian Bulls. The Bloody Queen was now Platinum-ranked Level 5 and it was also a Platinum King Beast. Her invisible pressure made the bunch of Barbarian Bulls a little bit indisposed.

Even the White Bull opened its eyes in its slumber, but when the Bloody Queen had flown past it, it continued to close its eyes and sleep.

The Barbarian Cow Shadow flew past them too.

The two huge Hundred Years Old Treant Defender had followed through clumsily.

The White Bull suddenly opened its eyes, and with one glare, it was as if the two huge Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders had been attacked by a hammer from the front, crashing back outside more than ten metres away. Fortunately the two Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders had strong vitality and health, they were only gravely injured and did not die. They climbed back up slowly and continued to follow their master... Yue Yang and Yue Bing who had already entered the entrance to the hallway, immediately returned. Looking at this scene, they were extremely surprised.

Yue Yang couldn't understand why this White Bull had attacked the Treant Defenders but allowed the Barbarian Cow Shadow to run past it. Why didn't it attack the Barbarian Cow Shadow?

Time waited for no man. Seeing that the Treant Defenders had not died, Yue Yang didn't have time to analyze, he immediately carried Yue Bing and returned back into the left hall.

The Bloody Queen's speed was extremely fast. She had already started to fight against the Ox-head Warriors in the right hall.

The Barbarian Cow Shadow followed into the battle.

Yue Yang carried Yue Bing and stood in the midst of the chaotic battlefield, staring at the right hall wall, dumbstruck... There was a painting that had been disordered into a sliding puzzle. Seems like they had to re-arrange this giant painting to the painting on

the left hall in order to activate the secret mechanism and acquire the Trial Artifact.

“My heavens, why did they like to make fun of people so much!” Yue Yang sweated profusely.

He had only cared about secret mechanisms or breaking seals just now. Although he had seen that left hall painting, he didn't remember every single thing in the painting. If they couldn't finish this sliding puzzle and couldn't activate the secret mechanism, they would definitely not be able to acquire the Trial Artifact. If there wasn't any time limit, Yue Yang could just run back and memorise the painting again. However, there was an hourglass in the right hall.

The hourglass had started when the Bloody Queen started to fight the Ox-head Warriors just now. The sand in the hourglass poured down continuously.

There was definitely not more than ten minutes until all the hourglass ends.

It would definitely be impossible to run back to the left hallway, observe and memorise the painting carefully, then run back to the right hallway to organize the sliding puzzles.

If it were another person, they would definitely not be able to do it too, because the others might not have even finished killing those Ox-head Warriors in ten minutes.

But Yue Yang didn't want to give up.

“Bing-er, take care of yourself. I will solve the sliding puzzle! We would only be able to acquire the Trial Artifact if we solve this sliding puzzle. Stand a little further away, because there might be traps activated by some secret mechanisms.” Yue Yang put Yue Bing down. He was uncertain if he could complete solving the sliding puzzle in ten minutes, especially when he couldn't remember a lot of details. Yue Yang only remembered that there was a bunch of Ox-head Warriors killing a Barbarian Cow. Right now, the painting had been divided into several blocks. When Yue Yang tried to solve it, he could only move the puzzles to right, up and down. He couldn't move it to the left, such a headache!

“Big brother, you can do it! Yue Bing was fully confident in Yue Yang.

“...” Yue Yang secretly cursed the designer of this wall sliding puzzle in his heart with all his might. He didn't know who was so cruel to make someone do this kind of thing.

Time passed by, second by second.

Yue Yang couldn't solve the wall sliding puzzle at all.

Yue Yang had thought about taking a hammer out and smashed this puzzle into pieces a few times, but he endured the impulse.

He reminded himself repeatedly, he must be calm. At this kind of

time, he must be calm, otherwise, it would be more haste, less speed. The designer of this Trial must have wanted to test the mind controls of the Trial challengers and waste their time, making them fail the Trial in the end. Since the designer had already designed this puzzle, there must be a way to finish this puzzle. There must also be enough time to finish this puzzle.

It couldn't be that there was no chances of solving it at all.

Yue Yang tried to use his senses, but it was no use.

This painting wasn't unusual in any way. It was just a simple mechanism, there was no shortcut to it. He must solve the painting completely before clearing this stage.

“Brother? Do, do you need my help? Let me help you!” Seeing that Yue Yang had stopped his hands from trying to restore the puzzle, Yue Bing immediately came over and comforted him. “Brother, we'll definitely be able to do this. Let's think of a way together!”

“Okay.” Yue Yang knew that Yue Bing wouldn't be able to help, but he smiled towards her.

It would be impossible trying to restore the puzzle using their memory.

They must find the most important crux of the puzzle... There must be a point that would help to restore the rest of the painting.

Seeing how the blocks could be moved the the right, up and down, there must be a piece that was the center of the painting. Only by finding that piece, would he be able to smoothly connect the rest of the blocks. Amongst the 28 blocks of puzzles, there must be one that would determine the location...

Is it that piece?

Is it that piece where the Barbarian Cow was glaring at an Ox-head Warrior? Or is it that piece where an Ox-head Warrior was furiously trying to slash at the Barbarian Cow?

If he was wrong, he would fail the Trial. How should he choose?

The sands in the hourglass seemed to fall even more quickly.

Time waited for no man.

Yue Yang felt that these two blocks had the most probability of being the crux of the puzzle. He gritted his teeth and finally decided to try it out.

Just as Yue Yang was about to jump, he felt a pain in his eyes all of a sudden. It was as there was a kind of dazzling light that penetrated into his brain through his closed eyelids, just like a pillar of light that suddenly appeared in the darkness... From Yue Bing's perspective, her brother was suddenly bathed in golden light. Even though Yue Yang's hands were covering his eyes, Yue Bing could see bursts of light shining through the slits of his

fingers. It was so bright that Yue Bing couldn't even see her brother clearly.

Yue Bing was thoroughly overjoyed. Could it be that her brother had some kind of a breakthrough at this time? Was it his [Camouflage] Inherent Skill that he was hiding?

Could it be that he had risen up in level after using his [Camouflage] Inherent Skill to solve the puzzle?

Chapter 198 – Artifacts, Choices, Secret Method

Yue Yang suddenly flew to the wall, his hands moving in a flash.

Before a minute even passed, the giant painting had already been restored. When he slowly floated back down to the ground, the whole hall shook as the heavy sound of a secret mechanism was activated.

Yue Bing didn't care about those other things, she only cared about her brother. Yue Yang immediately fell into her embrace the moment he dropped to the ground. Yue Bing held Yue Yang tightly, anxious and nervous, afraid that her brother had been injured. She saw that there were Golden Runes moving within Yue Yang's eyes, shining brightly like the sun. There were also some Runic Circles revolving in Yue Yang's forehead. Very quickly, those dazzling lights receded, and everything returned back to normal.

Her brother had finally returned back to the brother that she was familiar with. Yue Bing secretly sighed her relief in her heart. Seeing his brother flying all over the place just now really made her worried. She had even thought that her brother was about to abandon her and fly straight to the legendary Heaven Realm.

(Shiro: mild spoiler: Heaven Realm will appear in later chapters)

Let alone Yue Bing, even Yue Yang didn't know that his [Divine Vision] levelling up to Level 4 would cause such a strong reaction.

He could feel that his Level 4 [Divine Vision] had fused together with his [Traversing Naked Eye] flawlessly, forming a single new ability.

It was as if it was an ability that allowed him to see through objects.

But to get into that state was extremely tiring for Yue Yang, it also consumed a lot of Innate Qi.

At this [Divine Vision] just now, Yue Yang was even able to see through Yue Bing's snow-white body. He was so shocked that he immediately stopped his [Divine Vision] state. Otherwise, he would have seen some parts that he shouldn't see. Yue Yang lightly patted Yue Bing's head, consoling her, "It's fine, I'm fine. That... my [Camouflage] Inherent Skill has levelled up, I found the crux of the secret mechanism, so I managed to solve the puzzle. Let's look around and see what kind of Artifact is there!

In his heart, Yue Yang chanted, "I'm not a sis-con."

He chanted in his mind until his perverted thoughts disappeared, before he finally sighed in relief.

Yue Bing obviously did not know what Yue Yang was thinking in his heart, she was an extremely pure minded girl who never thought towards that direction before. She nodded innocently and followed Yue Yang obediently.

The secret mechanism had opened a pathway on the wall. After entering the secret pathway and walking for around ten meters, there was a sacrificial altar.

There were three Artifacts lined up on the sacrificial altar.

They were all different in sizes.

Yue Yang sweated profusely as he saw that there were a wooden plaque in front of the sacrificial altar, where the words “Choose Two” was written. Yue Yang obviously did not care about this rule. He had worked so hard to solve the painting puzzle. Only fools would follow the rules. He was about to swing his hand, throw that wooden plaque away and take all three Artifacts when Yue bing, the extremely obedient girl, immediately stopped her brother’s greedy actions. “The rule stated that we can only take two. I think it would be best if we only take two. It would be bad if we took more and activated some kind of secret mechanism that caused us to be locked in this room. Let’s just follow the rules and clear the trial!”

“Alright then. You can choose one!” Yue Yang had actually looked around and found no secret mechanisms in the surrounding walls at all.

Taking less or more wouldn’t concern activating some kind of mechanisms, but maybe it had something to do with the reward that they would receive after clearing the trial.

Yue Yang decided to endure it. He decided to focus on the

Intelligence Reward that they would receive after clearing the Trial instead. These Artifacts wouldn't be able to be compared to the Intelligence reward that the Ancient Laws would give them... Yue Bing chose a silver ring. Yue Yang saw that the ring only had poison detection properties, it was completely useless... But Yue Bing liked it a lot, so he didn't stop her. Yue Bing took the silver ring, but realised that it was not suitable for her fingers, her fingers were too small.

However, she couldn't bear to put it down just like that. Seeing Yue Yang observing her actions, she mischievously stick out her tongue.

Amongst the other two Artifacts, one was a pearl necklace.

Using his [Divine Vision], Yue Yang realized that it was actually a consumable item. It was called "Soul Pearl" and could only be used three times at the most to defend against Soul attacks.

If it were placed on another place, Yue Yang would definitely not pay attention to this trash of an Artifact. However, at this place, it was actually a very good item. This was because there were a bunch of Barbarian Bulls outside who could unleash their [Doom's Eyes] anytime. Their [Doom's Eyes] were practically killing machines that could destroy a person's soul immediately.

Although Yue Yang wasn't about to allow Yue Bing to participate in the battle, it would be safer for her to wear this.

Yue Yang placed the pearl necklace on her.

Yue Bing suddenly blushed a little, and said softly, “Mom said that it would be better for a girl not to wear pearls...”

Yue Yang was confused. He remembered that pearls had “soothing effects, promote Yin energy, and detoxification”. Why couldn’t girls wear pearls? He asked curiously, “Why can’t you wear it?”

“...” Yue Bing shook her head and didn’t explain it to Yue Yang. Instead, she just bowed her head obediently and allowed her brother to help her put on the pearl necklace.

Her pure white color of the pearl set an interesting contrast on her cream-white neck, to the point that Yue Yang had an impulse to place a kiss on her skin. But this was his sister, so Yue Yang could only gulp down his saliva and keep his wild imaginations under control. He put on his best good-brother-appearance and patted on Yue Bing’s black hair, nodding towards her, “I’ve put it on!”

The remaining Artifact was a silver dagger.

Yue Yang felt that this long dagger that was called “Eye Destroyer” should be an Artifact used to deal with the Devil Eyes outside. He already had a Dragon Slaying Dagger, so he didn’t need the Eye Destroyer... Yue Bing seemed to think that she had acted too selfishly, and placed the silver ring back on the sacrificial altar, thinking of her brother first. She picked up the silver dagger “Eye Destroyer”, ran over to Yue Yang and passed it to him, “Here!”

“Didn’t you like the ring?” Yue Yang didn’t understand. Why would she put the ring back?

“It’s okay, this dagger would be useful to you, brother. Furthermore, I already have the pearl necklace.” Yue Bing smiled splendidly, her smile beautiful like the first snow of the year. Her smile made Yue Yang a little dazed as he received the dagger. Then, he carefully put the dagger on her waist and said, “Here, I’ll give you another dagger. Use this to protect yourself!”

“Yeah!” Yue Bing nodded very resolutely.

As for the beautiful but useless poison detecting ring, Yue Bing had already forgotten all about it.

She felt that her first choice might not be suitable for her, because she was certain that her brother would choose the most suitable things for her, no matter if it were Artifacts or choices in her life.

Yue Yang left Yue Bing at the entrance of the right hallway. Right now, their protective shield had disappeared. If she went out and was glared by the bunch of Barbarian Bulls outside, even if she had the Soul Necklace, Yue Yang didn’t want to take the risk of losing Yue Bing. Yue Yang didn’t want her exposed to any kind of danger. Of course, he also couldn’t let her stand watch and do nothing, so he took out a Healing Crystal and healed her two Hundred Year Old Treant Defenders. At the same time, he brought the Bloody Queen and the Barbarian Cow Shadow to fight against the bunch of

Barbarian Bulls.

Yue Yang took up the two gold-ranked Barbarian Bulls personally.

Although the Bloody Queen and the Barbarian Cow Shadow could probably win the battle themselves, they would be gravely injured and exhausted with the presence of these two Gold-ranked Barbarian Bulls.

Yue Yang lured the two gold-ranked Barbarian Bulls to the left side pathway and entered it. The gold-ranked Barbarian Bulls couldn't follow him inside, hence they could only roar angrily from the outside. Yue Yang seized the opportunity to summon his Thorny Flower Demoness. He shouldn't waste the Ox-head Warrior's corpses. Of course, this matter must be kept secret from little Yue Bing... This matter about the Thorny Flower Demoness swallowing countless warriors whom she had not even finished digesting must never be known to anyone. Inside the two Thorny Flower Demons giant stalks, there were Tu Cheng's and Kuang Zhan's corpses too, which were still undigested.

The Thorny Flower Demoness seemed to be saving these two Innate Rankers' body for her third evolution to become the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen.

When Yue Yang summoned the Thorny Flower Demoness, he realized that the originally silver-ranked level 1 Thorny Flower Demoness had levelled up to gold-ranked level 1. Her previously 11, 12 years old looking body had also grown up, right now she looked around 13-14 year old. Seemed like she was a little bit smaller than

Yue Bing. Her chest had also started to develop little buns that looked incomparably cute... The clothes that Yue Yang gave her last time was too small for her now. Furthermore, the Thorny Flower Demoness didn't like to wear clothes at all. When she was summoned, she immediately jumped into Yue Yang's embrace, giggling happily.

After evolving, her intelligence seemed to have risen too. She now knew how to win her master's favor.

She even stick out her little tongue and licked Yue Yang's face like a cat.

Yue Yang sweated profusely. Fortunately Yue Bing did not see all this, otherwise, she would definitely mistake him for a lolicon...

"I don't have time to play with you. Wear these clothes immediately and clear up the corpses over there. I'm really busy. Let go, let me go!" The Thorny Flower Demoness was extremely mischievous, but Yue Yang's words were still effective on her. With his order, she immediately wore her clothes in front of Yue Yang. This time, although she didn't wore her pants on her head, she still couldn't differentiate the front and back parts of her clothes, especially her underwear. Yue Yang sweated even more when he saw this. He immediately stripped her clothes off and helped her put on her clothes himself.

When he was helping her put on her clothes, he thought about how he should go out and lure the two gold-ranked Barbarian Bull again, but he also thought about the magnificent view that he saw just now, igniting the fire in his heart secretly.

If this Thorny Flower Demoness grew up even more, seemed like she would evolve to become a mature, beautiful oneesan.

At that time, he would prefer to allow her to stay naked...

Yue Yang didn't dare to think further, afraid that he would have nosebleed.

Turning around, Yue Yang realized that Yue Bing's two Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders had already been killed by the Barbarian Bulls' [Doom's Eyes]. He hurriedly ordered the Bloody Queen to fly over and help, facing against the two gold-ranked Barbarian Bull. The Barbarian Cow Shadow had been strengthened with a Giant Phantom Shadow, so she could hold it on her own even fighting against a bunch of Barbarian Bulls. Other than those five silver-ranked Level 5 Barbarian Bulls who could match her strength, the other 10 bronze-ranked level 5 Barbarian Bulls could only try to provoke the Barbarian Cow Shadow and distract her attention. They didn't dare to come in front of the Barbarian Cow Shadow, otherwise they would probably be pummeled to the ground.

"Ah Man, combat skills, use your combat skills!" Yue Yang had taught the Barbarian Cow Shadow some combat skills previously, but she had not gotten used or had the chance to practice those combat skills. Hence she could only fight with her instinct.

Yue Yang could now feel the weaknesses of his Innate combat skills... Maybe Princess Qian Qian had brought him here to make

him realize where his weaknesses were. He only had the Innate Realm as his strongest combat skill. If it were another Innate, they wouldn't have his weakness, because they could only reach the Innate Realm with the help of their beasts. Then, after hundreds of years of cultivation, their skills would be very deep and their beasts' strength and level would also be very powerful. Innate Rankers who focused on raising their combat skills like Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan would probably have the weakest beasts amongst all Innate Rankers. Hence, when he killed those two, they didn't have strong beasts to protect their lives. In the end, they were killed instantly by him on his berserk state... If it were another Innate Ranker, even if they might not be a match for him, they wouldn't be killed so easily.

If Tu Cheng and his brother didn't depend on strengthening-type beasts, or if one of their beasts were a highly intelligent Holy Beast, would he be able to kill them easily?

One would only be able to walk properly if his legs were of the same length.

A person would be lame if one of their feet was longer and the other shorter.

Right now his combat skills had risen, but his beasts were still lacking.

This, this might be the reason why Princess Qian Qian wanted him to come here and clear the Twelve Zodiac Temples Trial. She wanted him to cultivate a Holy Beast and increase the strength of his beasts in overall.

“Brother, would that method really work?” Yue Bing saw Yue Yang had returned and happily asked him. She really wished that she could help her brother even a little, but her abilities were far too weak. The Bronze-ranked Level 5 Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders were strong enough to fight against an ordinary warrior. However, against a bunch of Barbarian Bulls, her Treant Defenders couldn’t defend themselves no matter how strong they were. They ended up being glared at by the [Doom’s Eyes] so many times by the Barbarian Bulls who were of the same levels as them.

Fortunately the Hundred Years Old Treant Defender was a Guardian Beast who would not truly die.

Yue Yang also didn’t know if the secret method pointed out by the mysterious diary would work, but he couldn’t say it out loud. He must make his sister be more confident.

He nodded certainly as he looked at Yue Bing.

If that secret method really worked, then Yue Yang would have the confidence to bring his sister along to clear the Twelve Zodiac Temples Trial.... If that secret method indeed worked, Yue Yang would even have the confidence to cultivate Yue Bing, Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian into Innate Rankers. However, they would have to suffer a little disadvantage, because that secret method was a little...

Chapter 199 – Secret Method, Yue Bing's Great Improvement!

The pitiful guy's mother had mentioned a secret method.

This secret method was suitable for two people who had a couple or husband and wife relationship. Furthermore, the better the relationship between the two were, the more effective the secret method would work. The first step to the secret method was for the couple to link their mind very closely together, as if there was nothing standing in between them. Then, they would have to channel their Spirit Qi towards each other, just like how warriors link their Spirit Qi with their beasts. The two of them must support each other's Spirit Qi, combining each other's strength to execute summoning skills. If this secret method was trained to a certain level, the two people could even unite and unleash combat skills together... The strength that come from the combination between combat skills and summoning skills was extremely powerful, it might even give rise to an unimaginable evolution.

Of course, the specific results vary with different people. However, even the worst fusion would be stronger than the strength of a single person alone!

This secret method that had already existed since the ancient times was lost in the recent thousands of years. The pitiful guy's mother had accidentally acquired this knowledge, but she believed that the secret method that she formulated was still incomplete. Otherwise, if two people truly fuse together, their strength would have increased at least ten times greater.

In the end, she re-named this secret method that she researched herself as [Body Fusion].

Originally, this [Body Fusion] was only meant for couples or husband-and-wife to cultivate, but Yue Yang couldn't help but to suggest it to Yue Bing.

Although Yue Yang was a big pervert, he actually didn't have any perverted intention to his sister. He also didn't have any intention to take advantage of his sister when he suggested this [Body Fusion] method, it's just that he couldn't help but want to help his sister, seeing that his sister's strength was still lacking.

Yue Bing was both obedient and stubborn, she would normally trained herself very hard.

However, she lacked a mentor in the plant-type beasts category, hence her growth was very slow. Yue Yang really couldn't bear it anymore, he felt that he had not done his duty as her brother.

As for the method to train this [Body Fusion], Yue Yang felt that as long as he didn't think of anything dishonest, there wouldn't be any problem.

Furthermore, Yue Bing would also not have any weird thoughts. She was just a pure-hearted, innocent little girl, who would think that her brother was only helping her to increase her strength. At the same time, Yue Yang also did not tell her everything about the secret method. He only told her to co-operate with him obediently and also that he would channel his Spirit Qi into her body. At that

time, she should also summon her beast using her own Spirit Qi.

“Brother, I’m ready.” Yue Bing placed her hands on her brother’s palms and slowly closed her eyes. She followed Yue Yang’s instructions and calmed her mind, emptying her thoughts.

Due to her trust and 100% confidence on her brother, she had successfully entered into her Spirit Realm naturally.

Other girls might encounter a mental block due to their wariness to their partner, but to Yue Bing, this mental block did not exist at all.

The one who was connecting with her mentally was her own brother.

Yue Bing was completely at ease.

Yue Yang was greatly surprised that Yue Bing was able to enter into her Spirit Realm at such a quick speed. The secret method had said that they would probably fail more than a hundred times when they first started, but Yue Bing had succeeded on her first try... It seemed like this girl’s mind was still pure like a sheet of white paper, with no distracting thoughts at all. Yue Yang secretly praised her and immediately tried to get rid of any distracting thoughts in his mind. He then slowly channeled his Innate Qi into Yue Bing’s body. Her body trembled a little but there wasn’t any resistance at all... The Innate Qi flowed through her arms and blood channel, just like it had moved in Yue Yang’s body. When the Innate Qi had flowed throughout her whole body, it came out

again from her other hand.

Even though only half of Yue Yang's Innate Qi had entered her body, it was still a lot for her, as her channels had not been opened yet.

She summoned her grimoire out on reflex.

Usually, she would need to rest an hour at least before she could summon her grimoire the second time.

Right now, it had not even been an hour yet, but she managed to summon her grimoire again successfully. Furthermore, she could summon it more relaxedly and more naturally, almost spending no effort at all.

Yue Bing felt a bright golden light was shining inside her Spirit Realm. She seemed to see her brother's figure inside the golden light. His face was hidden within the bright light, hence she couldn't see very clearly, but she could still feel his powerful power. His eyes were shining brightly like stars.

She felt her body becoming lighter and lighter, as if she was fusing together with the golden light.

Her body floated towards her brother.

She only realized that her brother was actually a giant when she flew nearer to him. He was at least 10 meters tall. Compared to

him, she was extremely tiny...

Her brother, who was bathed in golden light, reached out his golden, giant hands. His hands that was filled with dark golden Runic Circles easily caught her in his palms. Then, countless burst of energy erupted from his hands, making her own hands grow bigger at lightning speed!

Yue Bing realized that after she received her brother's power, she was also turning into a giant.

Standing on her brother's hands, when she reached out her hands, she felt that she could almost reached the blue sky above.

If she opened her eyes, she would realize that her physical body was floating above the ground. Her hands were still holding Yue Yang, but her body was floating almost one metre above the ground.

Behind her, a 10 metre tall green-coloured female giant that was emitting a dreamy green coloured light had appeared. She looked very similar to Yue Bing, but had a more mature look. Her beautiful, green hair was like the lush green leaves growing from thick trees. There was also a pair of green-coloured wings that was shining brightly on her back. There were leaves, flowers, rainbows... Yue Yang watched dumbstruck, however, afraid that the change in his mental state would affect Yue Bing's evolution, he hurriedly concentrated his mind, channeling his Innate Qi into Yue Bing's body relentlessly.

When her first blood channel was finally opened, Yue Bing let out a shout in her unconsciousness.

Golden light enveloped her body.

On the other hand, that green-coloured female giant bent her body over, drawing towards the golden light, entering into Yue Bing's body again.

Yue Bing's Beginner Silver-ranked Grimoire burst open with a golden light and levelled up to Intermediate Silver-ranked Grimoire on its own. At the same time, the pages quickly turned. On an empty page, a new illustration had appeared. It was the illustration of that green-coloured female giant bathed in golden light just now... Yue Bing's Qi exploded as her clothes turned into ashes. The shockwave from her Qi explosion shocked those Barbarian Bulls away. Even that White Bull which was sleeping soundly had opened its eyes and looked towards Yue Bing. Its eyes emitted a kind of intelligent light, but no one knew what it was thinking. The two Hundred Years Old Treant Defender who had died from [Doom's Eyes] had been re-summoned, and they kneeled respectfully in front of Yue Bing...

Yue Yang realized that Yue Bing's body was trembling as she suddenly fell from the air. He hurriedly caught her and hugged her in his embrace.

Not caring about the fact that she was naked and bare, Yue Yang immediately took out a set of clothings and put them on her body.

When he was done, he curiously looked at Yue Bing's Silver Grimoire that had just levelled up...

Green Light Tree Demoness: Humanoid element-type. Silver-ranked Level 1. Guardian Beast. Has an elemental body and connected to nature. Special Skill: [Regenerate], [Green Rush], [Spirit Root].

“Guardian Beast?” Yue Yang never thought that Yue Bing could also possess two Guardian Beasts.

Could this be an inborn potential that she already have initially?

Or could it be because of the influence of his Innate Qi? If he execute the same [Body Fusion] with Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian and the Mysterious Beauty, would they also evolve like Yue Bing? Also, has the current Yue Bing reached her limit or does she still have the potential to grow?

Yue Yang couldn't answer those questions, he also couldn't understand what had happened.

The only thing he knew was that this was an extremely good news!

What did obtaining another Guardian Beast signify for Yue Bing? Even a fool would know that this meant a brand new and unlimited future for her.

Compared to Yue Yang, the abnormal guy from another world who had N number of Guardian Beasts, Yue Bing might still be lacking. However, compared to other people, Yue Bing had already gained a huge advantage of another Guardian Beast when she was only at the starting line! Furthermore, this was only the beginning... Maybe, as their [Body Fusion] level up to higher realms, she would be able to undergo many more evolutions. The pitiful guy's mother had truly said it correctly. This kind of ancient, secret method, if it was used in the right way, would reap huge benefits for both parties involved.

When Yue Yang placed his hands on Yue Bing's Silver Grimoire and channeled his Innate Qi, like magic, the Green Light Tree Demoness female giant's figure appeared, almost as if she was summoned by him. She looked much smaller than she was just now, only around 3 metres tall. Her body was still transparent like before, but it was obvious that it looked better than just now. It had a bit more substance now. The Green Light Tree Demoness also seemed to possess some intelligence. She looked at Yue Yang full of curiosity, as if surprised that it wasn't her master who had summoned her, but Yue Yang instead.... She then threw two balls of green light onto the bodies of the two Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders. The two Treant Defenders' combat power immediately increased as they furiously charged towards the Bronze-ranked Barbarian Bulls. Attacking together, they had immediately sent a Bronze-ranked Barbarian Bull flying away.

The Green Light Tree Demoness looked at Yue Yang again before reaching her fingers out to touch Yue Yang's body. Realizing that she couldn't enter into Yue Yang's body, she shook her head before entering into Yue Bing's body again slowly.

“Unn...” Yue Bing’s eyelash slowly trembled as she opened her eyes, finally waking up.

When she realized that Yue Yang was holding her, she was immediately overjoyed as she hugged Yue Yang and shouted out, “Brother, I dreamt that you become very, very big! You are so big, like a huge building! And your whole body is also shining, shining so brightly, like the sun...”

When Yue Yang heard this, he sweated inwardly. This lass could actually enter into her Spirit Realm so easily. Even he himself couldn’t enter into his.

There seemed to be a boundless mystery surrounding the [Body Fusion] secret method that awaited him to investigate!

Yue Bing jumped up from her brother’s embrace, surprised to find out that her two Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders were actually fighting bravely against the Bronze-ranked Barbarian Bulls and were not at a disadvantage at all. She was confused as she tilted her head and asked Yue Yang, “Brother, how did my Treants get summoned again? Is this done by me in my dreams? Aih, why is there an additional title in my grimoire?” Yue Yang read where Yue Bing’s fingers had pointed to, and realized that at the back of her title of ‘Level 3 Beginner [Hero]’, there was an extra title: ‘Tree Spirit’.

Yue Yang remembered that at first, at the back of his own ‘Level 1 Apprentice’ title before, there was also another title that other people couldn’t see: ‘Innate’.

His title was dark golden in colour, while Yue Bing's new title was green in colour.

This might be related to her new abilities.

As Yue Bing turned over the pages of her grimoire, she realized that she had another Guardian Beast. She was immediately dumbstruck as she looked at Yue Yang in disbelief, as if she wanted her brother to ascertain her himself. Only then would she believe that this kind of unimaginable, nice surprise was actually a reality.

“Congrats, Bing-er! You have another Guardian Beast!” Yue Yang patted Yue Bing's head.

“Wa...” Who would know that Yue Bing had immediately cried as she threw herself into his embrace instead. Her tears flowed down like rain from her eyes relentlessly, unstoppable. She had only stopped crying after Yue Yang comforted her for a long time, as she smiled awkwardly, “I, I'm just too happy, too happy... Brother, did you give this to me? Thank you, brother!”

“No, this is something that you have on your own... Sigh. Alright, okay, it's nothing much to give you more Guardian Beasts. Good girl, don't cry anymore!” Seeing that Yue Bing didn't believe him no matter how he explained, Yue Yang decided to allow her to continue her beliefs. Although he didn't give her the Guardian Beast, the beast's appearance was more or less related to him. Yue Bing had never been so happy in her life. She wiped her tears as she laughed out loud. Her adorable expression that seemed like the

appearance of a rainbow after rain made Yue Yang stand in awe. The current Yue Bing was now completely different from her previous self, who was a lonely, masked widow. It was as if they were two different people.

Meanwhile, the battle outside had continued on. The Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man was stomping on the ground relentlessly, sending earthquakes to the enemy. She then charged forward and grabbed the Barbarian Bulls' horns, overturning their huge bodies to the ground.

The Bloody Queen circled around in the sky, flying here and there, swooping down to attack at times.

The Dragon Slaying Dagger in her hands had already killed 3 Bronze-ranked Barbarian Bulls and lured two Gold-ranked Barbarian Bulls far away.

At first, the outnumbered Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man was fighting bitterly, but as the Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders who had been given the blessings of the Green Light Tree Demoness entered the fray, she slowly got out from her disadvantageous position!

Yue Yang saw that the White Bull had finally stood up. Sensing that a tough battle was imminent, Yue Yang hurriedly ordered Yue Bing to stay inside the pathway as he charged towards the White Bull.

This White Bull, no matter if it was the Bloody Queen or the

Barbarian Cow Shadow, none would be its match.

Its match could only be Xiao Wen Li alone!

Chapter 200 – Barbarian Cow Shadow's Evolution

Due to the limitation of the Ancient Law, Yue Yang couldn't attack with combat skills at all. He could only fight with his beasts.

Yue Yang still couldn't be sure of the White Bull's strength though he had Level 4 [Divine Vision]. He just felt that the White Bull was stronger than the Three-headed Chimera that he faced before.

Xiao Wen Li transformed into a rainbow light and hovered around Yue Yang's body. Although Yue Yang couldn't attack, his fast speed and response were very useful in the battle. He managed to dodge the attack though he couldn't attack his opponent back. With Yue Yang's support, Xiao Wen Li's combat strength would be enhanced as well. The White Bull's eye, which was brimming with intelligence initially, started to show murderousness.

A terrifying, omnipresent wave of mental attack suddenly flashed as the White Bull glared at them.

If it were other beasts, they would have escaped long ago. However, Xiao Wen Li still remained calm as she reached towards Yue Yang with her hands, following him as he flew high to the sky.

Yue Yang summoned his Grimoire and raised his protective shield to block the attack when the mental attack struck on him.

At the same time, he also let Xiao Wen Li go so that she could fly towards the White Bull. Xiao Wen Li flew like an arrow from a high altitude. The weak point of the White Bull was located on the upper part of its back. This was the only angle where its eyes couldn't launch an attack. Although the White Bull has no blind spot on its front, back, left and right, the little space on the upper part of its back was still its blind spot.

The nearer Xiao Wen Li was to the White Bull's spine, the higher the chance that she would hit its blind spot. If it was in a high altitude, it would instead be easier for the White Bull to glare at its opponent.

Xiao Wen Li twisted her body lightly in the air. She altered her flight trajectory from time to time while she glided down splendidly in order to prevent the White Bull from turning back to stare at her.

The White Bull was good at executing its long-range mental attack wave, hence, its weakness must be in close combat.

Yue Yang was getting more knowledgeable and experienced in fighting against his enemies. He made the most rational tactical arrangement. When it was combined with Xiao Wen Li's extraordinary response and her automatic adjustment to Yue Yang, Yue Yang was confident that Xiao Wen Li could defeat the White Bull. As long as Xiao Wen Li could get close to the White Bull and used her [Binding] Inherent Skill, the White Bull would undoubtedly be defeated.

The Three-headed Chimera also lost to Xiao Wen Li in this way

before.

‘Moo...moo!’ Surprisingly, the White Bull stood up like a human all of a sudden. There was no more blind spot as it could turn around easily now. Its eyes stared at Xiao Wen Li who was flying around in high speed. Once again, the mental attack shockwave exploded.

Yue Yang flashed and appeared behind Xiao Wen Li all of a sudden. He carried her and disappeared when the mental attack wave was about to struck on her body.

He learned this from the Marquis of Zhi Jin. He rarely used this skill since it required a lot of Innate Qi. However, the situation was very critical. He had to save Xiao Wen Li instantly.

Although Xiao Wen Li would not die for real since she was a Guardian Beast, Yue Yang still didn’t wish to see her getting injured, let alone seeing her die. Yue Yang was unable to determine whether the White Bull or its mental attack wave blast possessed the ability to instantly kill its opponents like [Doom’s Eyes] or not.

He would not take any risk.

Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li gave up on their plan synchronously after they failed in their first surprise attack. They started moving again, looking for the best chance to attack patiently.

Among all the surprise attacks, this was the first time they

retreated first as their opponent could see through their tactics.

It seemed that the White Bull had a very high intelligence.

Yue Yang took the first move as he flew towards the White Bull. He took out the Gold Beast which had transformed into his wrist guard and targeted it to the White Bull. The wrist guard transformed into a dagger rapidly in mid air. Although Yue Yang couldn't attack or release Innate Qi, the dagger shot out the tip of blade to attack the right eye of the White Bull. The White Bull was lured by his attack, just as he had expected. It retreated by moving a few steps backwards ingeniously and avoided the Gold Beast's range of attack. The terrifying mental attack wave blast was unleashed again.

Yue Yang summoned the grimoire in a flash and raised his protective shield.

He managed to block the mental attack wave blast.

At the same time, Xiao Wen Li appeared from Yue Yang's back. Her Dual Icicle Blades immediately attacked the White Bull who had just unleashed its mental attack wave.

Any beasts would need a short period of time in between skills to unleash their skills repeatedly. The more powerful the attack was, the larger this gap would be!

Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li were aiming for this time gap.

However, the second mental attack wave blast had struck on them before Xiao Wen Li could use her [Binding] Inherent Skill. Its impact blew Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li off at the same time. In mid-air, Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li struck each other's palms and flew to two different direction at the same time.

The horrifying mental attack wave blast exploded like a mountain flash flood. It was even ten times stronger than the previous one.

Turned out that this White Bull was actually hiding its strength, It wanted to unleash the two continuous attacks as a surprise attack just now.

If Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li weren't alert throughout the battle, perhaps its surprise attack would have been successful. A Bronze Barbaric Bull which was located at more than thirty meters behind Yue Yang was hit by the mental attack wave blast. Its huge body was blown up in the air and flew a hundred meters away. None were sure whether it was dead or alive. Even the group of Barbarian Bulls at a hundred meters away were swayed due to the blow of the blast

The two Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders were destroyed and collapsed.

Yue Bing called out to Yue Yang, who disappeared to nowhere, as she threw balls of green flames to the Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders to heal their wounds after the blast was over.

Bloody Queen was also flying disorderly in the sky due to dizziness. She finally regained her stability after sometime.

The Barbarian Cow Shadow, Ah Man started running wildly as she saw the White Bull speeding towards Yue Bing.

“MOO!”

The Barbarian Cow Shadow hopped up high at the moment when the White Bull was about to run into Yue Bing. She laid heavy punches on the White Bull's back. The White Bull turned its head and glanced at Barbarian Cow Shadow with a red light shining in its eyes. Fortuitously, a red light also shined in Barbarian Cow Shadow's eyes... It was the showdown between [Doom's Eyes] versus [Doom's Eyes]!

The body of the White Bull swayed. It seemed dizzy but it didn't collapse.

On the other hand, the Barbarian Cow Shadow stayed still for a moment, but fell down at last. The Bloody Queen swooped down and a Banshee Scream burst out beside the White Bull's ear.

The White Bull swayed again, almost fainting due to the Banshee Scream.

Xiao Wen Li flashed out and slashed the White Bull's neck with her Dual Icicle Blades.

Ice coagulated rapidly. The White Bull was frozen into a large ice statue though it was struggling.

Yue Yang landed from the sky with his shattered clothes. He had no time to check on the Barbarian Cow Shadow. He waved his hands towards Yue Bing and indicated her to leave the place and return to the hallway.

Two Gold-ranked Barbaric Bull charged towards Yue Yang as if they wanted to kill Yue Yang with their large horns. Yue Yang was holding the dagger which was the mysterious beast's transformed form. It easily slashed one of the Gold-ranked Barbaric Bull's indestructible horn down without even the slightest effort. Xiao Wen Li was even faster. She had already reached the other Gold-ranked Barbaric Bull. As she reached out her hands, her Dual Icicle Blades penetrated the Gold-ranked Barbaric Bull's eyes deeply.

Right at this moment, the ice covering all around the White Bull broke into pieces.

A gigantic fist punched out from the crushed ice.

The target of the devastating punch was Bloody Queen who was flying down at a high speed to coordinate with Yue Yang's attack towards the Gold-ranked Barbaric Bull.

Bloody Queen didn't notice that she was flying toward the path of death. It was too late for Yue Yang to unsummon her. However, at the critical moment, a shadow jumped up and blocked the gigantic

fist.

Boom!

The gigantic fist knocked a hole on the shadows' body and broke through it.

The shadow caught the opponent's fist which was still forging ahead like nothing happen at all. The shadow grabbed the fist tightly with flame and smoke breathed out from its nose and mouth. The red light flashed on its eyes once more.

It was the Barbaric Cow Shadow who fell down on the ground a moment ago!

[Doom's Eyes] was launched once again!

There was a Gold Ox-head Giant standing behind the crushed ice. Her body wavered and seemed to fell on the ground. Before Xiao Wen Li could respond, the Bull-head Giant straighten up its knees and stood still on the ground.

When its eyes stared, a double mental attack wave blast exploded like mountain torrent.

Barbaric Cow Shadow, Ah Man reached out her hands and grabbed the gold ring of the Golden Ox-head Giant tightly. At the same time, golden rune appeared on her forehead.

The golden rune also appeared on the palms which were connected with the gold ring.

Gold light was flashing in the blast.

Suddenly, the gold ring separated from the Gold Ox-head Giant's nose. It then slipped onto Ah Man's wrist and became her gold bracelet. The runes on the gold bracelet were shining dazzlingly. As the Gold Ox-head Giant roared, the mental attack wave blast which were exploded at the same time just now messed up and turned up into a terrific explosion.

Booooooooooom!

The huge shockwave blew off everything.

Everything seemed insignificant in the terrific explosion.

Yue Bing lost her conscious once she felt the shockwave.

By the time she opened her eyes, she noticed that Yue Yang was letting Bloody Queen and Xiao Wen Li to bind up his wound which was still dripping with blood half-nakedly.

“Brother, where is the Ox-head Giant?” Yue Bing asked as she discovered that the scene was in a mess with Bronze, Silver and Gold Barbaric Bulls' bodies lying all over the place. It turned out

that the Gold Ox-head Giant was nowhere to be found and elder brother's rib was injured. A long wound which seemed like being pierced by the horn was found on his body. Bloody Queen also suffered from several injuries on her body too. However, her injuries were considered lighter if compared with Yue Yang.

The one who had the worst injuries was Barbarian Cow Shadow. Her chest and lower abdomen were in a complete mess.

Luckily, she didn't have a living physical body. Most importantly, she was a Guardian Spirit Beast. Else, she would have died if she was just a normal beast.

When Yue Yang found out that Yue Bing was awoken, he immediately waved his hand and said, "It's nothing. These are just some minor injuries. The Ox-head Giant has transformed back into a White Bull. Its power decreases as it loses its gold ring. It disappeared through teleportation after it transformed into a gold light. It seems that we have passed the battle of Taurus Temple successfully. I never thought it would be this tough."

Yue Bing still had a lingering fear. She never thought that the White Bull could transform into human form and became a female Ox-head warrior who was about the same size as the Barbarian Cow Shadow.

Furthermore, the female barbarian cow which the White Bull transformed was far more powerful than the Barbarian Cow Shadow.

Perhaps it was the Holy Beast which Grandma Wu Teng mentioned that it could transform into human form. No wonder it was so powerful.

She was not only able to emit a mental attack wave but also unleash [Doom's Eyes] twice. The most terrifying fact was that she was unharmable even when the Barbarian Cow Shadow glared at her with her [Doom's Eyes]. Fortunately, her brother was stronger than the White Bull. Otherwise, Yue Bing couldn't imagine how the battle would end. Yue Bing closed her eyes as she thought of it. Now she realized how big the gap was between her and her brother. If she didn't put in more effort then she might not be able to help her brother in the future.

She must cultivate hundred times harder later. Anyhow, she didn't want to burden her brother like what happened today anymore.

Yue Bing had made a decision in her heart.

Yue Yang had no idea what was playing in her mind.

He was also worried when he recalled the battle just now.

The gold ring was a divine artifact. He wasn't sure how long the 'human vs bull battle' would take if Barbarian Cow Shadow didn't remove it from the White Bull.

The corpses of Barbaric Bulls were kept in his Lich Ring. One of

the corpses of Gold-ranked Barbaric Bull was left for the purpose of reconstructing Ah Man's body. Yue Yang went to the left hall and brought out Little Thorny Flower Demoness while Yue Bing was taking her rest. When he ran to the outskirts of the temple, Hui Tai Lang had already killed all the Ox-head Warriors. However, it was a great challenge for it to oppose hundreds of Devil Eyes which were floating in the sky. Thus, Hui Tai Lang was still battling with them.

Bloody Queen flew over to help. She held a Dragon Slaying Dagger in her right hand and the silver dagger Eye Destroyer, which was borrowed from Yue Bing, in her left hand.

A [Banshee Scream] resounded.

The Devil Eyes nearby started falling from the sky one by one.

Even the Devil Eyes at the furthest distance were feeling dizzy.

Hui Tai Lang was finally looking great and powerful at the moment. It threw itself at the Devil Eyes and bit at them relentlessly. Its killing speed was even faster than Bloody Queen who was assassinating using her daggers. Although the Thorny Flower Demoness disliked the Devil Eyes' corpses, she still obeyed Yue Yang's command and reached her stumps out to swallow all the Devil Eyes be it alive or dead. The Bloody Queen could only stare blankly as she watched the Thorny Flower forest swallowing all the Devil Eyes alive. What power! She was indeed a killing machine who could kill anyone mercilessly!

“Quick. Clean up the battlefield now. I want my rewards!” Yue Yang didn’t bother to watch any longer. He turned around, ran back to Yue Bing and carried her while he asked Xiao Wen Li and the others to follow him.

As for reconstructing the body of the Barbarian Cow Shadow, Yue Yang kept that thought away at the mean time.

After clearing the Aries Temple, Yue Yang had received an Intelligence upgrade reward by the Ancient Law.

So what would he get for his reward after he cleared the Taurus Temple Trial?

Yue Yang was so anxious that he couldn’t wait anymore.

In his opinion, there should be a time limit for the reward. The reward would be greater if he finished the battle in a shorter time.

Thus, he didn’t bother to collect all the Ox-head Warriors’ corpses and magic cores. Instead, he immediately turned and ran after he killed all the monsters.

When Yue Yang anxiously arrived at the back of the temple, he realized that the secret mechanism over there was already opened. A painting of War Gods had appeared on the wall.

The Taurus Temple was sort of similar to the Aries Temple. The two Goddess Attendants statues that was on Aries Temple were

replaced by two Golden Ox-head Warriors statues which were holding an axe in their hands in the Taurus Temple instead. Yue Yang summoned his Grimoire. He felt very anxious since he was still unable to gain any reward after he had tried out all the solutions. Bloody Queen and Thorny Flower Demoness also entered the temple as they followed him. They had almost wanted to move the Ox-head Warriors statues away as they were running out of solutions.

Could it be that they didn't finish the battle on time?

Had the reward claiming time limit started from the second that the White Bull was transformed into a white light?

Yue Yang was in despair. If he knew about it earlier, he would have ran into the temple in the very first moment. The reward was gone since he wanted all the Devil Eyes to be killed. He failed at the last step though he had been acting very carefully and paying his utmost attention to every detail.

Xiao Wen Li held Yue Yang's thigh softly, her eyes blinking as if she was trying to comfort Yue Yang.

"It's ok!" Yue Yang stroked her little head lightly. He tried to think in another way. Why were the Goddess Attendants Statues at Taurus Temple so different from the ones at Aries Temple? At Aries Temple, he had to place his Crystal Card on the scales that the Goddess Attendants carried. Should he place the Crystal Card in the mouth of the Ox-head Warrior Statues? Or should he slash his Crystal Card across their eyes? Yue Yang took out the Crystal Card and tried it out. However, there were no effects at all. Yue

Yang had a feeling that he was about to figure something out but he just couldn't grasp it at that moment.

Suddenly, Xiao Wen Li pointed at the grimoire.

There was nothing in the grimoire. What did she mean?

A gold light suddenly flashed on the grimoire while Yue Yang was feeling puzzled. Barbarian Cow Shadow, Ah Man came out automatically without being summoned by Yue Yang.

She reached her hands towards Yue Yang and held the Crystal Card in his hands. Suddenly, a colourful light lighted up on the Crystal Card. Two shadows flew towards the body of the Ox-head Warriors Statues. Then, it turned into a violet red light inside the Ox-head Warriors' eyes. At last, the red light flew back into the eyes of the Barbarian Cow Shadow.

“Could it be that the reward is restricted to the bull-type beasts only?” Yue Yang looked at the Barbarian Cow Shadow's description on his grimoire once more. He found out that she had undergone an evolution with some new changes.